

PROVISIONS CARRIED ON THE SHIP "MARY & JOHN" IN 1630

By Burton W. Spear

For every 100 passengers in the Winthrop Fleet of 1630, certain provisions were carried on every ship. Assuming babies and small children were not counted, then only about 100 of the 140 "Mary and John" passengers would have been counted for provisions purposes. About 40 were 12 years of age or under. If the above assumptions are true, the "Mary and John" was loaded with the following provisions for the passengers only (excluding crew).

11,000 gallons of beer	1 and 1/2 bushels of mustard seed
1,500 gallons of water	20 gallons of oil
1,200 loaves of bread	2 firkins (casks) of soap
22 hogsheads of beef	2 rumlets (18 gal. cask) Spanish wine
40 bushels of peas	4,000 salted pollack (fish)
20 bushels of oatmeal	10 firkins (casks) of butter
1,400 salt cod	1,000 pounds of cheese
96 pounds of candles	20 gallons of brandy
2 tierces (42 wine gals.) of beer vinegar	

The above provisions could have weighed in excess of 150,000 pounds. There were about 15 sailors for every 100 passengers, so they required similar provisions. Since they had to make the return crossing to England, each was counted twice. So, the above figures may be increased by 30%, which means the total provision load may have been about 200,000 pounds, or 100 tons.

In addition, for every 100 male passengers over the age of 16 there were certain quantities of weapons that had to be carried. It is estimated that there were about 50 males on the "Mary and John" over age 16, so the ship should have been required to carry the following:

2 drums	2 extra drumheads	2 halberds*
4 cannons	1 partizen (soldier)	30 corselets (suits of armor)
1 ensign (flag)	40 bastard muskets	20 pikes*
5 full muskets	5 long fowling muskets	10 half pikes
45 pounds of shot	50 swords and belts	6 barrels of powder
1 bullet bag	6 barrels of powder	8 pieces of ordnance
5 horn flasks	1 fish net	bandoliers (carrying belts)

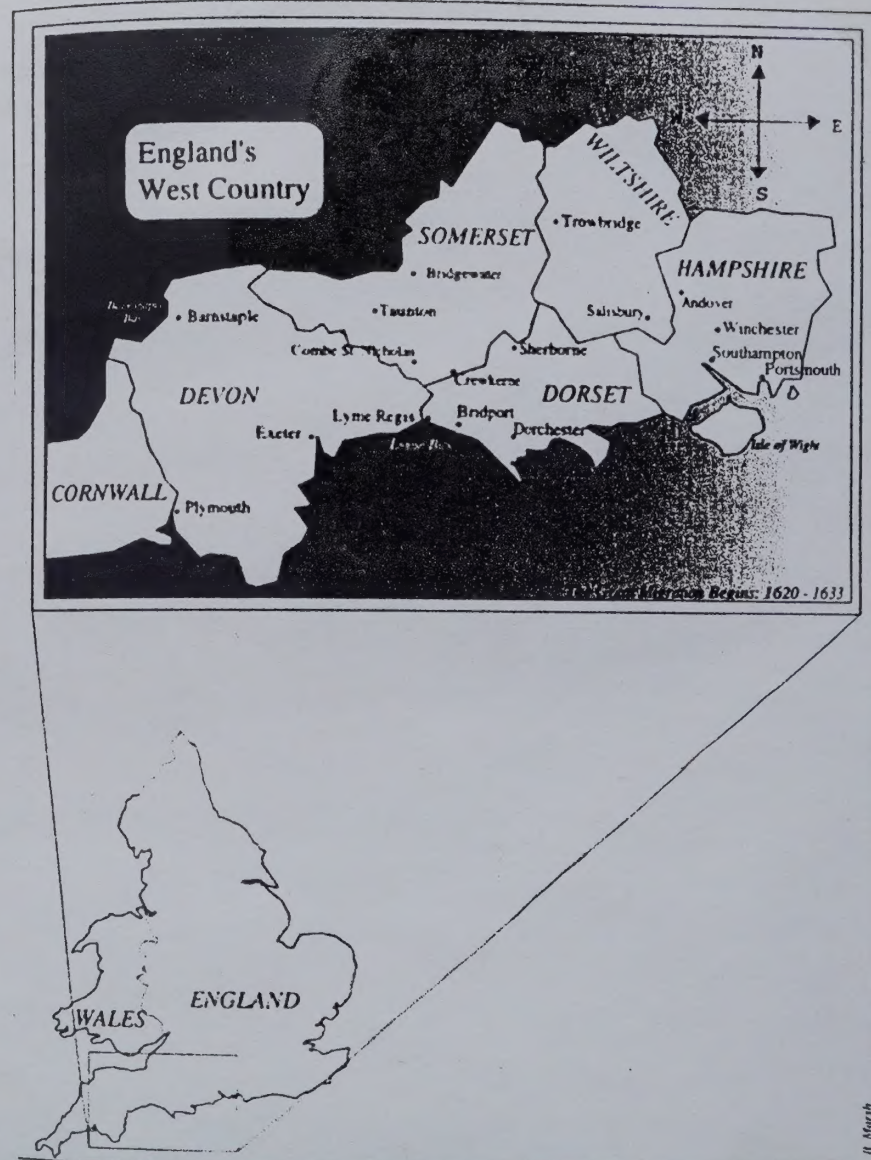
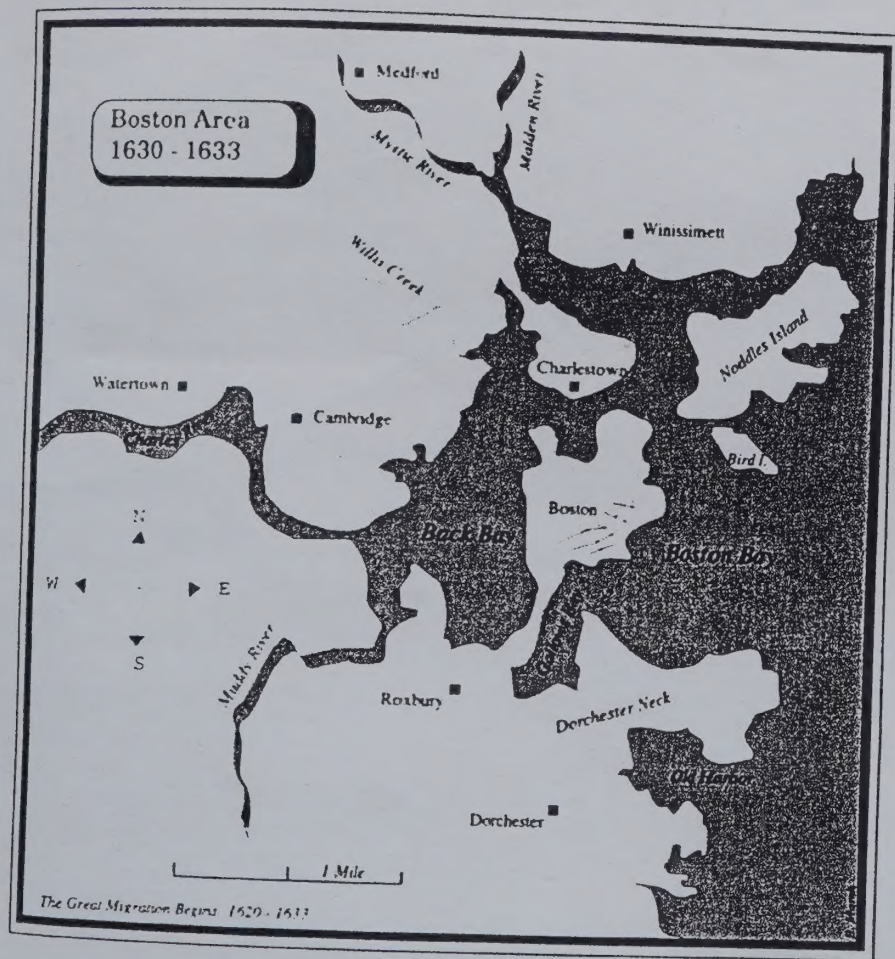
* halberds were a long handled weapon; pikes were long pointed weapons and half pikes were short pointed weapons.

Besides the necessary provisions and weapons, there were several other items that needed to be stowed on board ship for use during the long trip across the Atlantic. They included:

supply of linen	red knit caps	pint pewter bottles
shirts	plain shirts	French copper kettles
mats	bolsters	black hats
gloves	brass spoons	woolen cloth
shoes	bed ticks	quart pewter bottles
brass ladles	Norwich garters	peppering hops
Kersey suits	leather girdles	large quantity unleavened bread
	stockings	

- suits with doublets and hose made of leather lined with oil skin
- falling bands (the wide, white collar usually associated with the Puritan)
- waist coats of green cotton bound with red tape
- blankets made of Welch cotton sheets

That's not all that was carefully tucked aboard the small, crowded vessel. In preparation for the crops the settlers hoped to plant they took seeds, hoping to harvest such things as wheat, barley, rye, oats, beans, peas, peaches, plums, filberts (European hazel nuts), cherries, pears, apples, quince, pomegranates (red berry), licorice, hops, hemp, flax and currants. They also brought grape vines and apple seedlings. Other necessities included madder and woad, herb seeds to be used in the manufacture of red and blue dye. Finally, they took along such domestic animals as coneys (European rabbits), cattle, sheep and goats. The feed for these animals added more weight and took up valuable space.



2 July 1696; Grindall, 24 Aug. 1697; and Mary, 1698; but the last two d. soon. The names of these twenty ch. of wh. only five liv. to grow up, it is said are record. in the anc. fam. bible, and so, we presume, are the dates; one of wh. is impossible to be true.

RAY, or REA, CALEB, Boston, by w. Eliz. had Caleb, b. 19 Feb. 1683; and by w. Mary had Mary, 28 Aug. 1691. DANIEL, Plymouth 1631, rem. to Salem, and prob. was that freem. of 14 May 1634, spell. Wray in Col. Rec. and perhaps h. of Bethia, adm. of the ch. 1637, and Sept. of that yr. was on the gr. jury, liv. there 1644. He had d. Bethia wh. m. first the brave Capt. Thomas Lothrop, next Joseph Grafton, and last deac. William Goodhue. But other ch. were Joshua, Rebecca, and Sarah.

JAMES, Hingham, m. in Jan. 1682, wid. Hewett, perhaps relict of Thomas. JOSHUA, Salem, s. of Daniel, may have been brot. from Eng. freem. 1665, was a taverner, 1693. He m. 26 Feb. 1652, Sarah

Waters, possib. d. of Richard, wh. d. 19 May 1700, aged 70, had Daniel, b. 30 Mar. 1654, wh. serv. in Philip's war 1676; Rebecca, 4 Sept. 1656; Sarah, 10 Nov. 1658, d. soon; ano. Sarah, and Eliz. dates of whose b. are so confus. in Essex Inst. III. 16, that tho. it is clear, that one is false, we kn. not wh. besides Bethia, 3 Jan. 1663; Joshua, 6 Aug. 1664; John, 23 May 1666; and Hannah, 1 Aug. 1668. Rebecca m. that Samuel Stephens, k. Sept. 1675 at the fight of Bloody Brook, and her f. report. to the governm. that his br.-in-law, Capt. Thomas Lothrop, and his s.-in-law, Samuel Stephens, both k. by the Ind. in that serv. left fams. depend. on him. RICHARD, Warwick 1656. SIMON,

Braintree, came, it is said, from Braintree, Co. Essex, and d. 30 Sept. 1641. His will was copied on one of the lost pages of our Vol. I. in Prob. Court, if we may believe the Index; and his inv. of 20 Feb. foll. shows good est. Perhaps Mary, wh. m. 15 Nov. 1651, Samuel Deering, was his d. SIMON, Block isl. s. of the preced. an orig. propr. of the isl. in 1661, m. Mary d. of the first Nathaniel Thomas of Marshfield, had Mary, b. 19 May 1667; Dorothy, 16 Oct. 1669; Simon, 9 Apr. 1672; and Sibel, 19 Mar. 1675. He liv. to see num. progeny thro. male and fem. lines, and d. 17 Mar. 1737, in 102d yr. says the gr.-stone; and from him came into the fam. by subseq. interm. the Hon. Nathaniel Ray Thomas, one of his Majesty's Counsellors of Mass. Bay 1774.

RAYMOND, perhaps oft. RAYMENT, DANIEL, Lyme, youngest s. of Richard, m. Eliz. d. of Gabriel Harris, wh. d. 10 Aug. 1683, had Eliz. and Sarah; and m. next Rebecca, d. of John Lay, had Richard, Samuel, and perhaps others, and d. 1696. His wid. m. Samuel Gager of Norwich. JOHN, Beverly 1670, perhaps the freem. of 1683, d. in 87th yr. 18 Jan. 1703. JOHN, Beverly, possib. may be thot. s. of the preced.

P 906 E 78 Essex Hist Coll V3 1861

Extracts from the First Book of Births, Marriages and Deaths of the City of Salem MA copied by Ira J. Petch - starts p 11

p 11 -

Rea Sashua married to Sara Waters by Mr Joⁿ Endicott the 26th February '51; there son Danyell bo 30 1 mo, '54;

Rebecca bo 4 7 mo '56; daughter Sara bo 10 9 mo '58 & died —; 2^d da^r Sara bo 4th '61; da^r Elija. bo 3^d 11 mo '60; da^r Bethia borne 3 1st mo, '62; son Joshua borne 6th 6th mo, '64; (son Dan^l dec'd March 5, 1714-15;) son John borne 23^d 3^d mo, 1666; their da^r Hanne borne 1st 6 mo, 1668.

Note: This (except Daniel's death) old Julian Calendar exc Feb marriage)

Thus, Daniel was born November 30 1654. NZ

FULLER

The original bearers of the surname Fuller assumed the title of their occupation as a means of distinction. They were fullers of cloth, and their surname was most worthily borne in England for many generations by a family of fullers in what was then the greatest cloth market in the world. This Fuller family was of Redenhall Parish, Norfolk, England. Although William Fuller is believed to be the first known ancestor of the line, Robert Fuller (1539-1614) is the first of the line who is certainly known. Four members of this family were on the voyage of the *Mayflower* in 1620. They were the brothers, Samuel and Edward Fuller, and Edward's wife and son.

Fuller, Mayfl. pp. 3-6; Fuller, JFB p. 5; Chapin p. 168; Conant p. 145; Colket p. 115; NEHGR 1:209 (1847), NEHGR 4:33 (1850), NEHGR 9:286 (1855), NEHGR 55:192-196, 410-416 (1901), NEHGR 110:182 (1956); Hillsborough II:221; GPM Boston IV:1766; Barnstable pp. 371-381; Surry pp. 622-627, 710; Bullard pp. 194-197, 283, 284; NEFGM II:184; Enc. Mass. p. 195

Line 648

1. **William Fuller**, (ca 1433-aft 1492),
m.

ch. 2. **John Fuller**.

William Fuller, earliest known of this line, was born about 1433.

2. **John Fuller**, (ca 1460-1511),
m. ca 1480, **Alice**,
ch. **John Fuller**,
3. **William Fuller**,
Thomas Fuller,
Alice Fuller,
Robert Fuller.

John Fuller was born about 1460. He was a freeholder in Redenhall. He died before 17 May 1511, when his will was proved. In his will he is called yeoman, and he asks to be buried in the churchyard of Redenhall.

3. **William Fuller**, (ca 1483-),
m.
ch. 4. **John Fuller**,
William Fuller,
Robert Fuller.

4. **John Fuller**, (ca 1510-1559),
m. ca 1533, **Ann**,
ch. **John Fuller**,
Alice Fuller,
5. **Robert Fuller**.

*Are these the
parents of
Sarah Fuller, next
page?*

*DS#
26-172*

NOT OURS

John Fuller was born about 1510. He was buried 9 Feb 1559, at Redenhall.

5. **Robert Fuller**, (ca 1539-1614),

m. (1) 1573, **Sara Dunthorne**,

ch. **Thomas Fuller**, m. Anne,

6. **Edward Austin Fuller**,

Susannah Ann Fuller,

John Fuller, died in infancy,

Samuel Fuller, m. (1) Alice Glascock;
m. (2) Agnes Carpenter;
m. (3) Bridget Lee,

John Fuller, m. (1) Ann;
m. (2) Margaret Balls,

Edmond Fuller, died in infancy,

m. (2) Frances Blackwell,

ch. **Sarah Fuller**, m. James Spaulding,
Christopher Fuller, died in infancy,
Elizabeth Fuller,
Mary Fuller.

Robert Fuller was born about 1539, at Redenhall parish, Norfolk, England. He lived in comfortable circumstances, practicing his trade as a butcher. Robert married first, 29 Jan 1573, at Starston parish, Norfolk, Sara Dunthorne, or Dunkhorn. Redenhall and Starston are adjacent parishes. Sara, who was born about 1550, was buried 1 July 1584. Robert married second, Frances Blackwell. In his will, dated 19 May 1613, and proved 31 May 1614, Robert is called yeoman. Robert was buried 23 May 1614, at Redenhall parish.

6. **Edward Austin Fuller**, (1575-1621),
m. **Ann Hall**,

ch. 7. **Matthew Fuller**,

Samuel Fuller, m. **Jane Lothrop**. [649-7]

• **IMMIGRANT** •

Edward Fuller was baptized 4 Sep 1575, at Redenhall parish, county Norfolk, England. The name of his wife is not certainly known, but it is believed to be Ann Hall. Edward and his wife were among the English Separatists living in Leiden, Holland. Edward is mentioned in Leiden Judicial Archives 79, L, Folio 172 verso.

Edward Fuller, his wife, and son Samuel emigrated to New England on the ship *Mayflower* in 1620, landing at Plymouth, Massachusetts. Also on the ship was Edward's brother, Samuel Fuller, who became the noted physician of the Pilgrims. Edward and Samuel were signers of the *Mayflower Compact* in the cabin of the *Mayflower* before landing on Cape Cod, on 11 Nov 1620. Edward was the 23rd signer. The



25
Rea (or Ree) Co. Worcester AZ a bezant betw 4 crescents AR
Crest - out of a mural coronet AR a dragon's head AZ

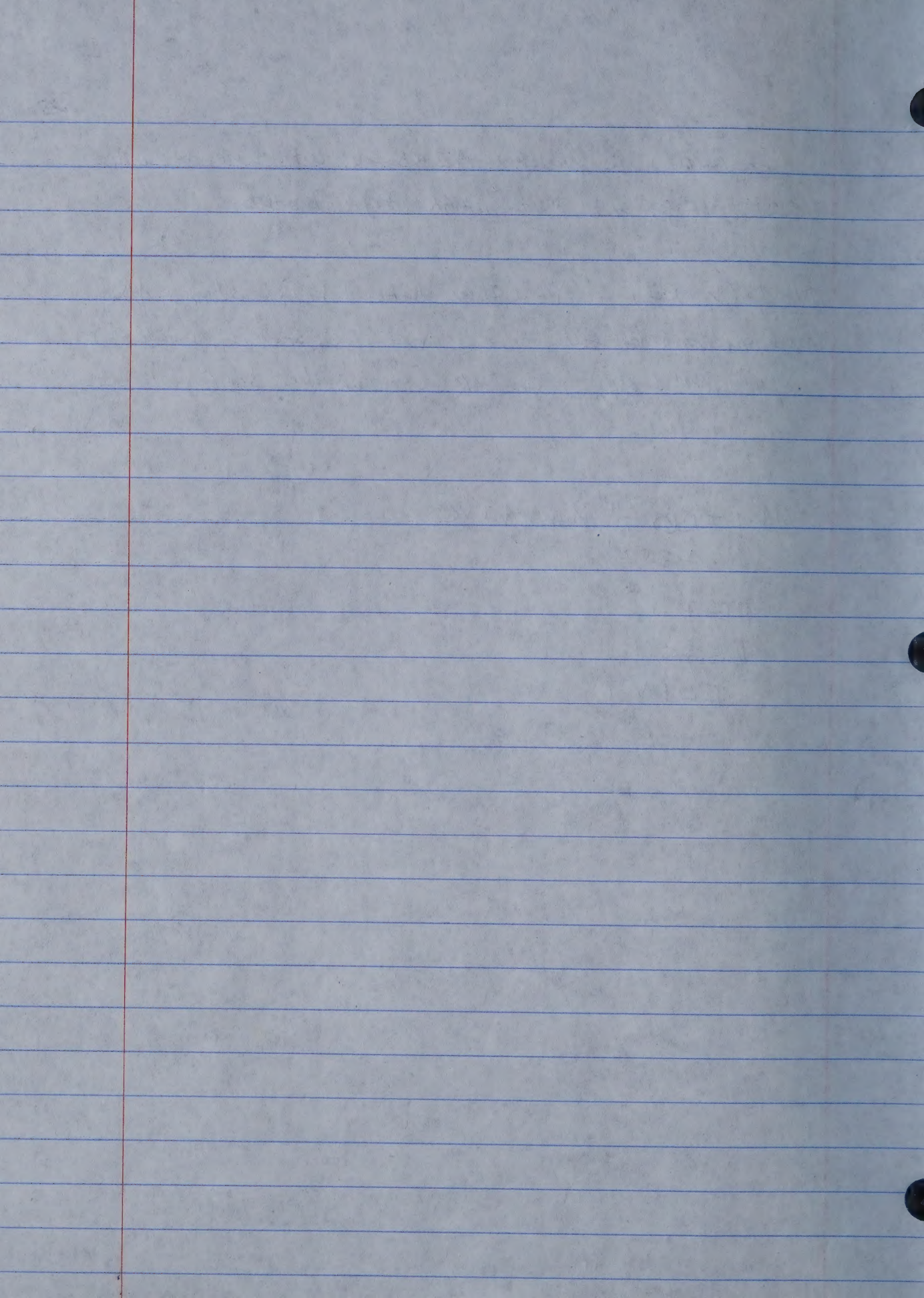
Flint (Norwich) AZ a chevron betw 3 flint stones AR
two lions combat GU (also for a professor in Scotland)
Another Vert 3 leopards faces AR (several others, similar)

WATLES - MANNING
PLASSE

REA

LEACIT

FLINT



REA

The book NORMAN PEOPLE pag 3

Rea - see Ray

Ray Turstin de Rea. Robert & Turstin de Rea,
Normandy 1180-98

Ralph & Robert de Rea were in England ca. 1272.
William de Ratis (Raye) in 1083 held lands
in Somerset, England.

LEACH on Medicos. Robert, William & Odeard
Hugh, Nicholas &

Durant ~~Arnold~~ Arnold Robert & William Medicos
in Normandy to 1190+

William, Robert, Julien, Alexander Medicos in England

1194. (NOTE: Medicos = Doctors & they were leaders of the barons)

PEDIGREE CHART

Norma Hansen Zaniewski
8924 W. Plainfield Ave.
Greenfield, WI 53228-2230

Person No. 1 on this chart is the same
person as No. _____ on chart No. _____

Chart No. _____

Date _____

b. Date of Birth
p.b. Place of Birth
m. Date of Marriage
d. Date of Death
p.d. Place of Death

2

Joshua Rea, Jr.
(Father of No. 1)
b. 26 Aug 1664
p.b. Salem
m. Oct 1685
p.m. Salem
d. Fall 1710
p.d. Salem

Spencer Waters
(Mother of No. 2)
b. 1620
p.b. London (E. Smithfield)
d. 19 Nov 1700
p.d. Salem

Fratern

1

Elizabeth Rea
b. 13 Aug 1687
p.b. Salem
m. Jan 1708
p.m. Danvers
d. 14 Dec 1711
p.d. Danvers

Maternal

(Sgt) John Leach
(Father of No. 3)
b. 23 July 1668
p.b. Rial Scott Salem
m. 22 May 1667, Salem
d. 15 March 1718
p.d. Salem

3

Elizabeth Leach
(Mother of No. 1)
b. 26 Dec 1668
p.b. Rial Scott Salem
d. 22 March 1716
p.d. Salem

Elizabeth Flint
(Mother of No. 3)
b. 20 Apr 1650
p.b. Salem
d. 28 Feb 1720
p.d. Salem

John TOWNE

(Spouse of No. 1)
b. 26 Feb 1678 d. 3 Nov 1714
p.b. Dorrville MA p.d.

8

Daniel Rea
(Father of No. 4)
b. ca 1600
p.b. Cambridge or Suffolk Eng
m. before 1628
d. Spring 1662
p.d. Salem, Essex Co.

9

Bethia
(Mother of No. 4)
b. 1663
p.b. Salem
d. 1663
p.d. Salem

10

Richard Waters
(Father of No. 5)
b. 27 March 1604
p.b. Bethel A. Weymouth London
m. before 1628
p.m. London
d. 25 July 1677
p.d. Salem

11

Rejoice Plasse
(Mother of No. 5)
b. Richard's step sister
p.b. 25 Dec. 1603
d. East Smithfield, London
p.d. after 1607
Salem

12

(Capt) Richard Leach
(Father of No. 6)
b. 1618
p.b. Ash Mawstock, Somerset Eng.
m. 1639
p.m. Salem
d. 29 May 1687
p.d. Rial Scott, Salem

13

Sarah Fuller
(Mother of No. 6)
b. ca 1620
p.b. before 1637
d. Salem
p.d. Salem

14

Thomas Flint
(Father of No. 7)
b. before 1645
p.b. Salem
m. 15 April 1687
p.d. Salem Village

15

Ann
(Mother of No. 7)
b. see m. John Southwick
p.b. 1668
d. 1668
p.d. Salem

16

(Father of No. 8,
Cont. on chart No. _____)

17

(Mother of No. 8,
Cont. on chart No. _____)

18

(Father of No. 9,
Cont. on chart No. _____)

19

(Mother of No. 9,
Cont. on chart No. _____)

20

James Waters
(Father of No. 10,
Cont. on chart No. _____)
b. 29 Aug 1565
m. before 1596 (1576)
d. 17 Feb 1617 with grave

21

Phoebe Manning
(Mother of No. 10,
Cont. on chart No. _____)
b. 15 - Dept
d. 16 - Salem MA colony

22

William Plasse
(Father of No. 11,
Cont. on chart No. _____)
b. 15 - 21
m. 19 July 1595 - Salem
d. 15 Aug 1640
p.d. Marjorie Smith

23

(Mother of No. 11,
Cont. on chart No. _____)
b. 16 Aug 1618

24

Lawrence Leach
(Father of No. 12,
Cont. on chart No. _____)
b. ca 1583
m. ca 1607 Ash
d. Somers

25

Elizabeth (Leach?)
(Mother of No. 12,
Cont. on chart No. _____)
b. 1585
d. 1674

26

C. Fuller
(Father of No. 13,
Cont. on chart No. _____)
b. d'm. before 1674

27

Anne ()
(Mother of No. 13,
Cont. on chart No. _____)
b. 16 - 16
d. Salem

28

Flint
(Father of No. 14,
Cont. on chart No. _____)
b. of Rowland
m. see to be from Flint notes
d. but unclear

29

(Mother of No. 14,
Cont. on chart No. _____)

30

(Father of No. 15,
Cont. on chart No. _____)

31

(Mother of No. 15,
Cont. on chart No. _____)

Handwritten notes at the top of the page, possibly a title or header.

Handwritten notes in the upper middle section.

Handwritten notes in the upper right section.

Handwritten notes in the middle left section.

Handwritten notes in the middle right section.

Handwritten notes in the lower middle left section.

Handwritten notes in the lower middle right section.

Handwritten notes in the lower left section.

Handwritten notes in the lower right section.

Handwritten notes in the bottom left section.

Handwritten notes in the bottom right section.

Handwritten notes in the bottom left section.

Handwritten notes in the bottom right section.

Handwritten notes in the bottom left section.

Handwritten notes in the bottom right section.

Handwritten notes at the very bottom right of the page.

Family Record

(Dodge Ancestors)
Family No.

Waters

①

Surname

Father — James WATERS

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	29	Aug	1568?		London?	England		
Death				London				
Buried	2	Feb	1617	St Botolph outside Aldgate	London			
Married		ca	1596					
Occupation	gunsmith			Military		Church	Puritan	
Places Lived	Resided at East Smithfield							
Other Wives								

His Father's Name

Waters (Richard or Henry?)

His Mother's Maiden Name

Mother — Phebe MANNING To Salem MA ca 1637

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			1571	Dorset	Kent	England		
Death		before	1646	Salem	Mass.	Bay Colony		
Buried								
Occupation				Military		Church	Puritan	
Places Lived								
Other Husbands	② 23 Feb 1618/9 William Plasse (-1646) with whom she came to Salem MA							

Her Father's Name

George Manning

Her Mother's Maiden Name

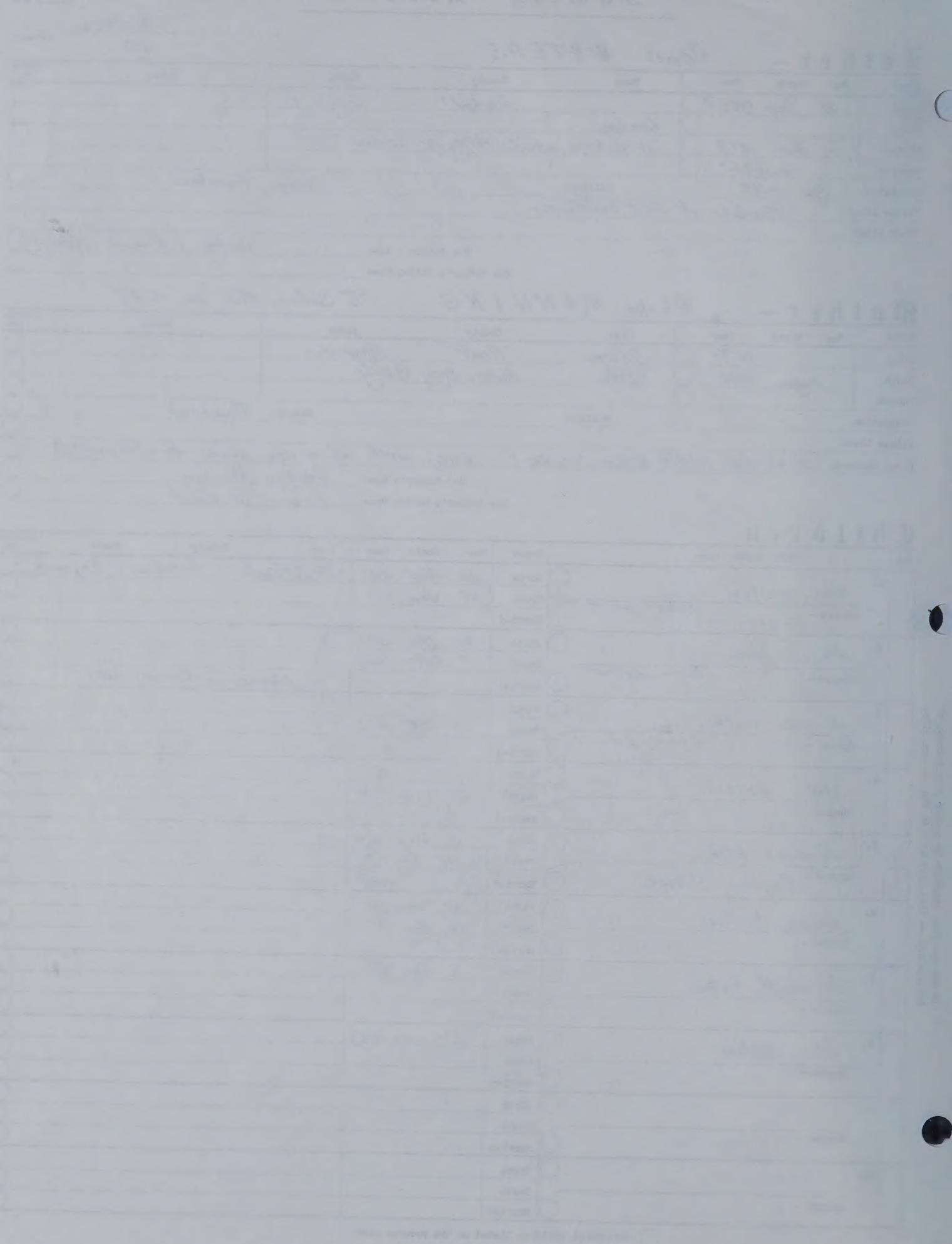
Joan Wallis

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	John Waters	Birth	30	Nov	1605	St Botolph's	London	England	
	Spouse - baby	Death	29	Jan	1601				
		Married							
2.	Phebe Waters	Birth	6	Dec	1602	} plague in London 1603			
	Spouse - baby	Death	7	Oct	1603				
		Married							
3.	Martha Waters	Birth							
	Spouse - baby	Death	8	Oct	1603				
		Married							
4.	John Waters	Birth			16				
	Spouse -	Death	21	July	1624				
		Married							
5.	Richard Waters	Birth	3	Mar	1604				
	Spouse - Rejoice Plasse	Death	25	July	1677				
		Married	Aug.		1629				
6.	Judith Waters	Birth	24	Jan	1607				
	Spouse - age 2 1/2	Death	18	Aug	1609				
		Married							
7.	Elizabeth Waters	Birth	9	Dec	1610				
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
8.	Mary Waters	Birth	24	Jan	1613				
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
9.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
10.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							

Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.



Family Record

Dodge Ancestry
Family No.

Plasse

Surname

Father - William PLASSE

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			1570			England		
Death	15 Apr	1646		Salem	Mass.	Bay Colony	(at home of Thomas Weekes admin of his est.)	
Buried								
Married	18 July	1586		St Botolph Aldgate	London	England		
Occupation	gunsmith			Military		Church	Puritan	
Places Lived	Seven years for High Street in Dec. 1585 (in gunsmith business with James Waters, Phoebe's first husband.)							
Other Wives	(2) Phoebe Manning on 8 Feb 1618							
His Father's Name							Plasse	
His Mother's Maiden Name								

Mother - Marjerie SMITH

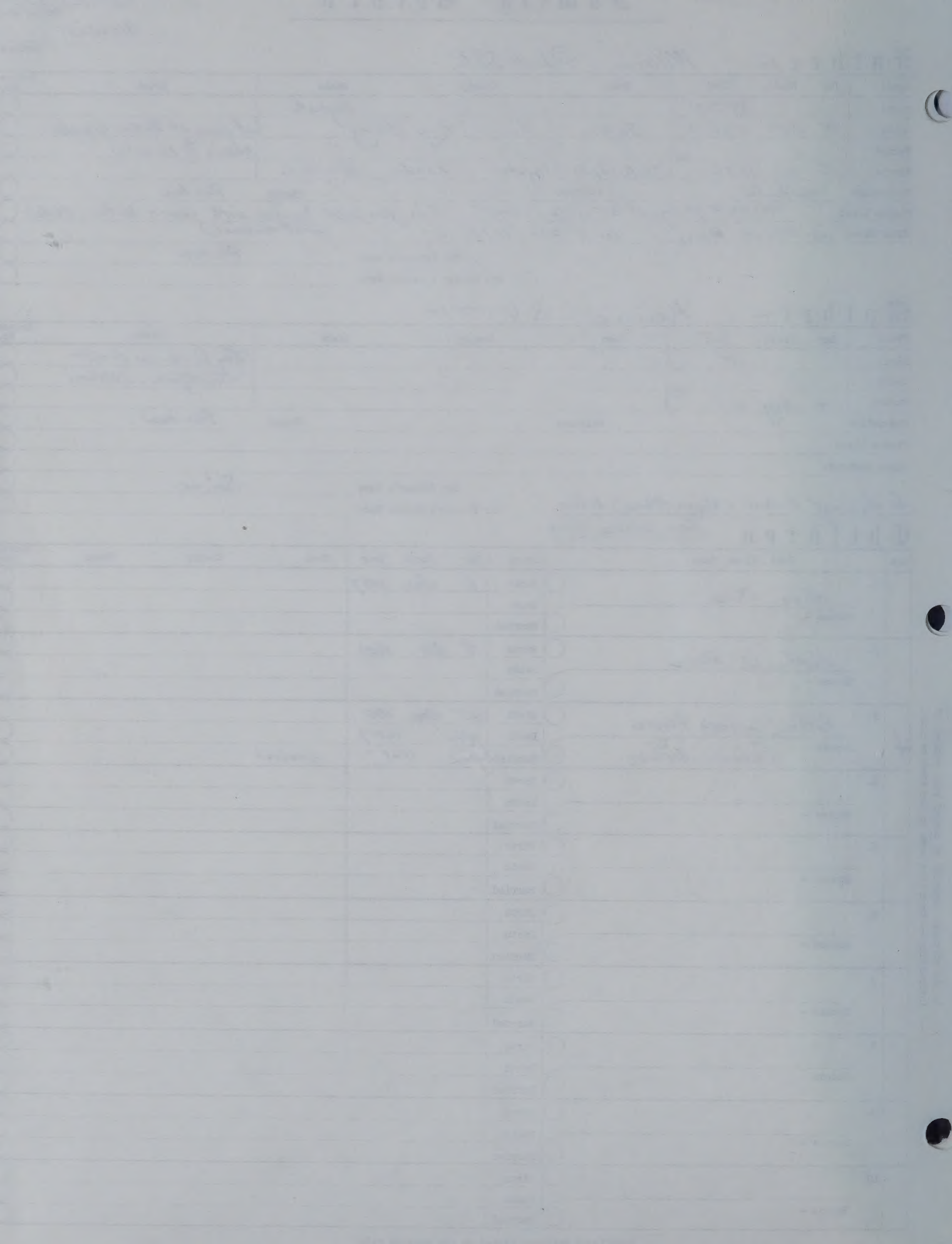
Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			15					
Death							They lived in East Smithfield, London	
Buried	4 Aug	1618						
Occupation				Military		Church	Puritan	
Places Lived								
Other Husbands								
Her Father's Name							Smith	
Her Mother's Maiden Name								

In children of Richard & Rejoice (Plasse) Waters
Children See Waters Family

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Mary Plasse	Birth	5	June	1597				
Spouse -		Death							
		Married							
2.	Nathaniel Plasse	Birth	16	Nov	1600				
Spouse -		Death							
		Married							
3.	Ruth (Rejoice) Plasse	Birth	25	Dec	1608				
Spouse -	Richard Waters	Death	after		1687				
		Married	on		1625	London			
4.		Birth							
Spouse -		Death							
		Married							
5.		Birth							
Spouse -		Death							
		Married							
6.		Birth							
Spouse -		Death							
		Married							
7.		Birth							
Spouse -		Death							
		Married							
8.		Birth							
Spouse -		Death							
		Married							
9.		Birth							
Spouse -		Death							
		Married							
10.		Birth							
Spouse -		Death							
		Married							

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information - then list each on the reverse side.



Family Record

(Dodge Ancestors)
Family No.

Father - George MANNING, "Gentleman" Manning Surname

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth								
Death	8 May	1582		Downe	Kent	England	Eldest son. Had younger boys John & Henry. Henry	
Buried							married to Greenwood in 1560	
Married	23 Aug	1543		"	"	"		
Occupation					Military	Church		
Places Lived	Downe House is 1/4 mi so. of the village of Downe (Charles Darwin later lived there)							
Other Wives								

His Father's Name John Manning (p. Downe 1542)

His Mother's Maiden Name Agnes Petley

Mother - Joan WALLS (or Wallys)

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1524					
Death	5	June	1582	Downe	Kent	England		
Buried								
Occupation					Military	Church		
Places Lived								
Other Husbands								

Her Father's Name Richard Wallys

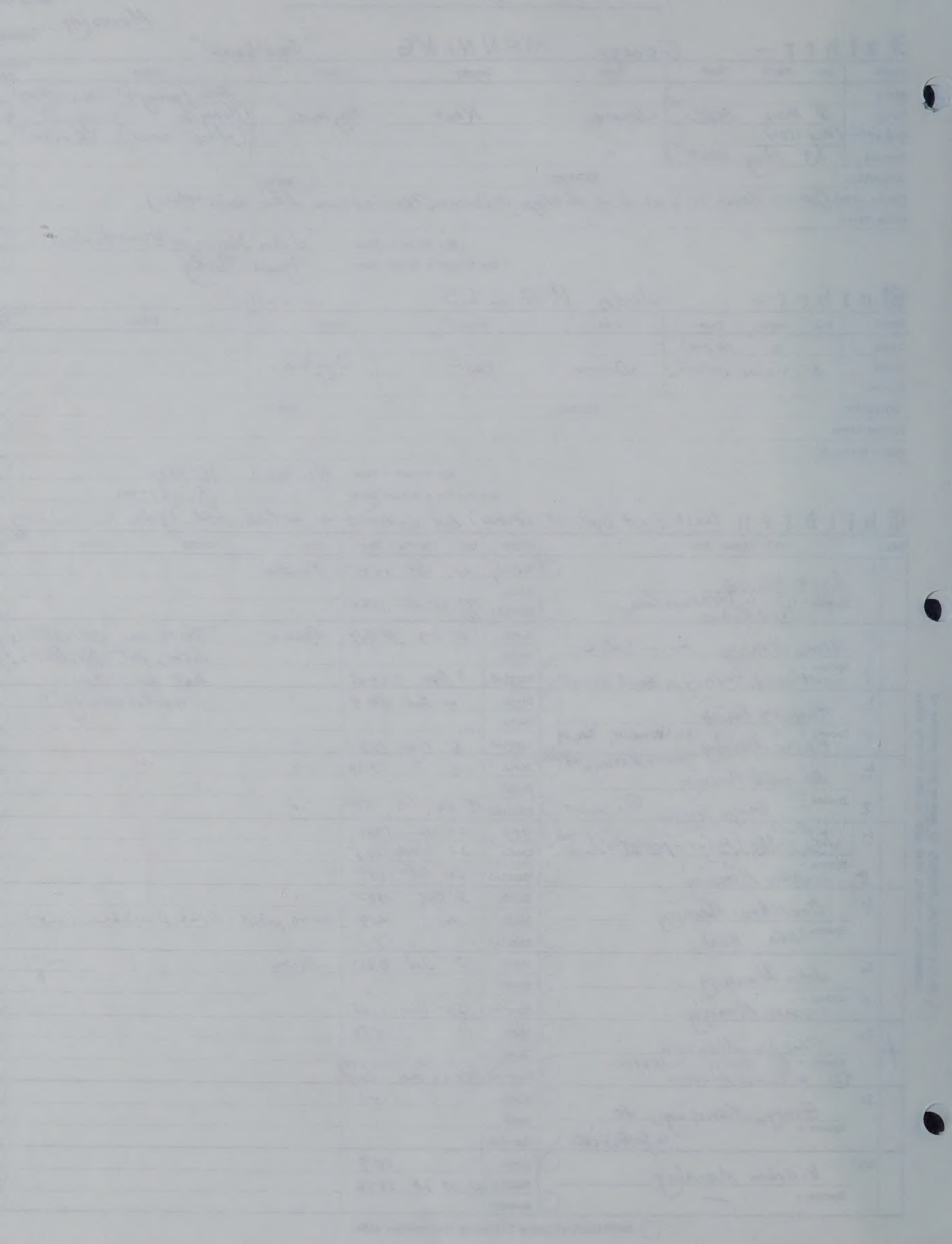
Her Mother's Maiden Name Burton

Children (last 3 not bapt at Downe but mentioned in father's will) (also Rose bar. 6 Aug 1554)

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Anne Manning	Birth	22 Oct	1545		Downe			
	Spouse - ① Thomas Lambart ② ? Richard	Death							
		Married	② 25 Nov	1563		"			
2.	Joane Manning m. - Welch	bp	30 Jan	1546		Downe			
		Death							
3	Katherine Manning m. Hugh? Kestrel	bp	3 Apr	1546					
4	Hamphrey Manning	bp	4 Feb	1549		"			
		Death							
5.	Peter Manning m. Elizabeth dect	bp	6 Aug	1553		"			
6.	Elizabeth Manning	bp	6 "	1554		"			
	① George Griffin ② ? Lambart	Death							
		Married	② 26 Nov	1582		"			
7	John Manning ? promoted to town	bp	20 Jan	1555					
	John Manning did not live	bp	July	1555		"			
8	Nicholas Manning	bp	28 Oct	1557		"			
9	Dorothie Manning	Birth	3 Oct	1558		"			
	John Webb	Death	Dec?	1634		Erith parish (1/2 mi E. Wickham/Kent)			
		Married		15					
10	John Manning	Birth	8 Jul	1560		Downe			
		Death							
11	Thomas Manning	bp	25 Jan	1561					
12	Phebe Manning	Birth		1571					
	Spouse - ① James Skaters ② William Plasse	Death							
		Married	② ca 1578/9 ③ 23 Feb	1588/9					
13	George Manning, Jr	Birth		1571					
	Spouse - in father's will	Death							
		Married							
14	William Manning	Birth		1571					
	Spouse -	Death	will 27 Feb	1596					
		Married							

Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information -- then list each on the reverse side.



Family Record

Family No. _____

Father - George MANNING

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	?	ca	1520			England		
Death	09 May	1582		of Downe	Kent			
Buried								
Married	23 Aug	1543						
Occupation				Military		Church		
Places Lived								
Other Wives								
						His Father's Name		
						His Mother's Maiden Name		

Mother - John WALLIS

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	?	ca	1523					
Death	05 June	1582						
Buried								
Occupation				Military		Church		
Places Lived								
Other Husbands								
						Her Father's Name		
						Her Mother's Maiden Name		

Children (ch - Rose, John + Nicholas died young - see own)

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Anne Manning	Birth	12 Oct	1545					
	Spouse - Thomas Lumont?	Death							
	Richard Scobell (bapt 1582)	Married	25 Nov	1563					
2.	John Manning	Birth	30 Jan	1546					
	Spouse - Welch	Death							
		Married							
3.	Katherine Manning	Birth	03 Apr	1548					
	Spouse - Hugh Underhill (bur 2)	Death			1627				
	Richard Goodson of Wrentham Kent	Married				Exminster	Dev		
4.	Hamphrey Manning	Birth	04 Feb	1549					
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
5.	Peter Manning	Birth	06 Aug	1553					
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
6.	Elizabeth Manning	Birth	06 Aug	1554					
	Spouse - Griffin Greene	Death							
		Married	28 Nov	1583					
7.	Dorothy Manning	Birth	03 Oct	1558					
	Spouse - John Webb	Death							
		Married	Dec	1634		East Devon	Dev		
8.	John Manning	Birth	08 July	1566					
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
9.	Thomas Manning	Birth	25 Jan	1561					
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
10.	Phoebe Manning	Birth	ca	1665					
	Spouse - Richard Underhill bur 02 Feb 1671	Death							
	William Blagden	Married	Jan	1678		of Botolph Claydon	England		

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information - then list each on the reverse side.

Jennings

Downe Rest ~~Mar~~ Egisto - dearest children?
of George & Jean Manning

Rose Manning 06 Aug 1954 (twin of Elizabeth?)

John + John (pre-1954) 20 June 1954

Nicholas Manning 28 Oct 1957

Family Record

Family No.

Waters

Father - Richard WATERS To Salem by 1637

Surname

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	6	3	Mar 1604	St Botolph Aldgate outside London	England		family in East Smithfield	
Death	15-16	1676		Salem	Essex	MA		
Buried	provd 28.5	1677						
Married	17	10	1625	London		England		
Occupation	gunsmith, retailer of beer			Military			Church Parishes - member 1st Ch 1637	
Places Lived	Salem						Thomas 27 Aug 1638	
Other Wives								

His Father's Name James Waters

His Mother's Maiden Name Phoebe Manning

Mother - Joyce PLASSE (also called Ratha and Rejora)

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	25	Dec	1603	St Botolph Aldgate	London	England	family in East Smithfield	
Death	after		1687	Salem	Essex	MA		
Buried								
Occupation				Military			Church Parishes	
Places Lived							member church 1641	
Other Husbands								

To children of Joshua & Sarah (Waters) Ree

Her Father's Name William Plasse

Her Mother's Maiden Name Marjorie Smith

Children (Besides the above, William 1 Dec 1620-1676 - Retired?) and (Martha - d after 1676) did not marry)

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Sarah Waters	Birth	ca		1630	London		England	
	Spouse - Joshua Ree	Death	19	May	1700	Salem	Essex	MA	
		Married	26	Feb	1651	Salem (Denver)			
2.	Phoebe Waters	Birth	ca		1633	London		England	
	Spouse - Thomas West	Death	16	Apr	1674	Salem			
		Married	11	Oct	1658	"			
3.	John Waters	Birth	27	Nov	1590	"			
	Spouse - Sarah Tompkins (1610-1674)	Death			1707/3	"			
		Married	1	Aug	1663	"			
4.	Elizabeth Waters	Birth	26	Feb	1642	1st Ch - Salem			
	Spouse - (age 20)	Death	4	Feb	1662	"			
		Married							
5.	Mary Waters	Birth	ca		1644	"			
	Spouse - Clement English (last street 1652)	Death	after		1685	"			
	@ John Stephens (a fisherman)	Married	27	Aug	1667	"			
6.	Abigail Waters	Birth	18	May	1645	1st Ch Salem			
	Spouse - William Purchard	Death							
		Married	26	Oct	1669				
7.	James Waters	Birth			1646	Salem			
	Spouse - Mary Stalworthy	Death	11	Jan	1704	1st Ch			
		Married	24	Mar	1669				
8.	Ezekiel Waters	Birth	4	Apr	1647	1st Ch Salem			
	Spouse - Mary	Death			1721	Salem			
		Married			ca 1670				
9.	Susanna Waters	Birth	1	Apr	1649	1st Ch Salem			
	Spouse - Benedict Palsifer (1625-1710)	Death			1726	1st Ch			
		Married	7	Feb	1673/4				
10.	Hannah Waters	Birth	30	Jan	1652	1st Ch Salem			
	Spouse - Joseph Strickland	Death				Salem			
		Married	10	Apr	1673	"			

Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information - then list each on the reverse side.

Plasse -

Plece originally identified with Pleiz de Pleetis, a Norman
baron family. Radolphus, Gouines, Ascrus de Plessescior
Pleiz, 2 Plessys - Normans 1190-95. Giles de Pleiz
was Seigneur of Brut in about 1283.

Please, Sir Edmond de, box 1306 Ave Aréolac Interp 343 gues
Cinder AZ

Plegz, Giles de, born 1207, he was paid £450 charges as at
 Domesday roll - his son Sir RICHARD (born 1317 & the battle of
 Bannockburn 1322) was paid £500 as at Domesday roll
 Also entered to John in Abbot's roll.

Plays William E III now and AZ & chief AR, 3 depletors GU

Plesset is, Hagh, Hagh der horizon 1299 from AR (6 ennets) (H. K. M. R.)
As much & Sir John in Galloway - 3 ennets in North of 1800
and Plesset, Ples Plescy & Plescis + Plessis

Also, Sir Henry is High of Ours (E.H. Roll) in the 6th row x
 Sir diff. wife & label 342 & his son in wife & hoston ^{AZ}

MANMIRG
Lambert Maignon 1180. Rikier ~~de~~ ANSETEL de MAIGNON
in NORMANDY. 1180. Richard and Henry Marling in England and 272.

The name Meaning

Norman Page pg 323

Meaning

Leobert, Maignon 1180,

Gass betel la Maignon, Henry 1180-88,

Richard, Henry, ~~Henry~~ Mering Ey 1272





Manning



305

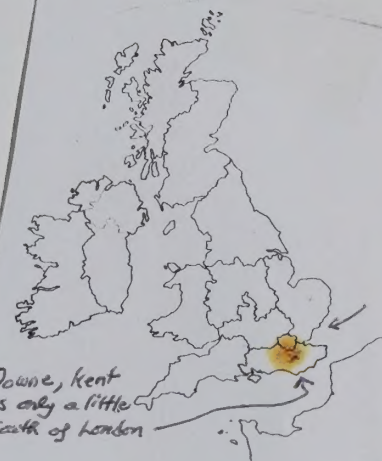
New England Historic Genealogical Society - "Roll of Arms"

#305 Manning, Phebe of Downe, Kent, England;

Came with her second husband, William Plasse to Salem MA ca 1637.

Arms: Gules a cross fleury between four trefails slipped gold.

These arms were carried by Crusader Simon de Manning, her ancestor.

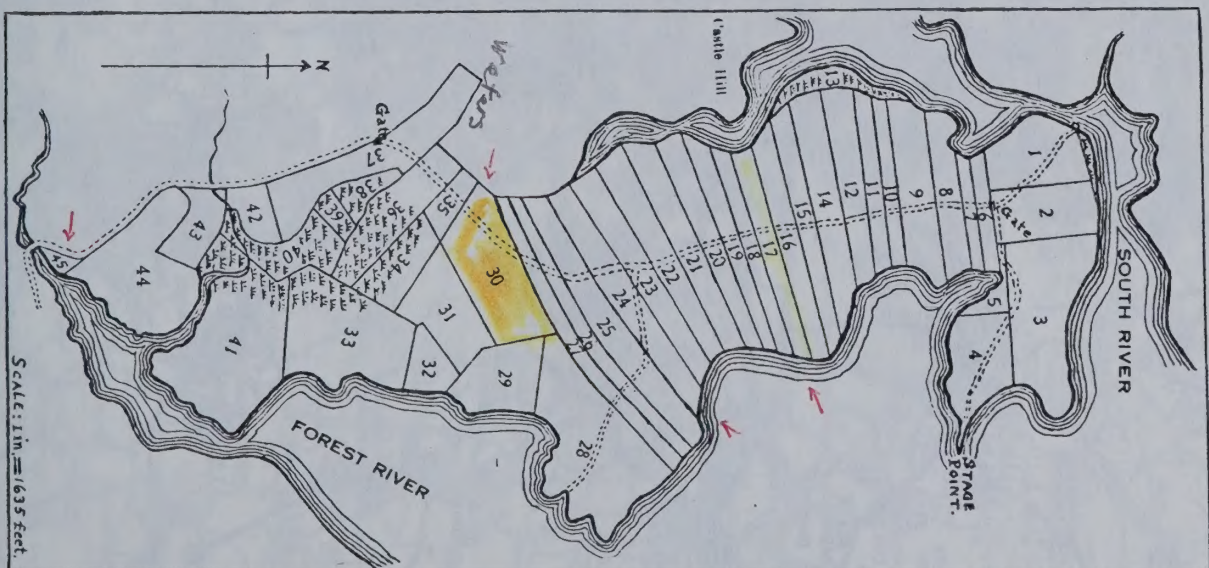






Waters

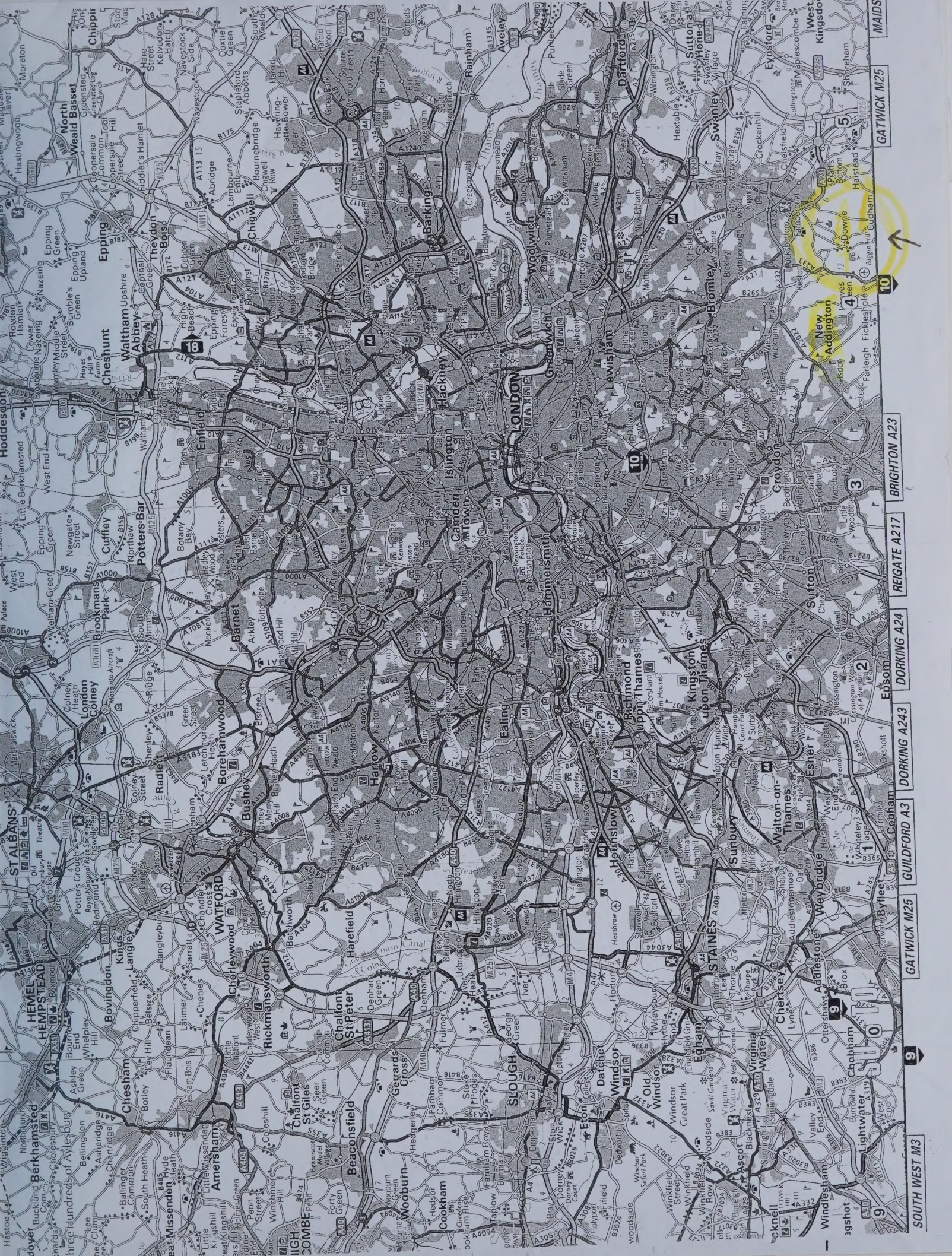
#86-William Torne, 1652 87-Richard Waters 100-Laurance Leach
 #6-Francis Skeery 1682 12-Daniel Rex 1655



DIVISION OF SOUTH FIELD.

#17-John Rea 1660
 24-Thom Browning 1658
 30-Richard Waters 1650
 45-William Pignat 1670





MAIDS

GATWICK M25

BRIGHTON A23

REIGATE A217

DORKING A24

DORKING A243

GUILDFORD A3

GATWICK M25

SOUTH WEST M3

WINDLESHAM

WINDLESHAM

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

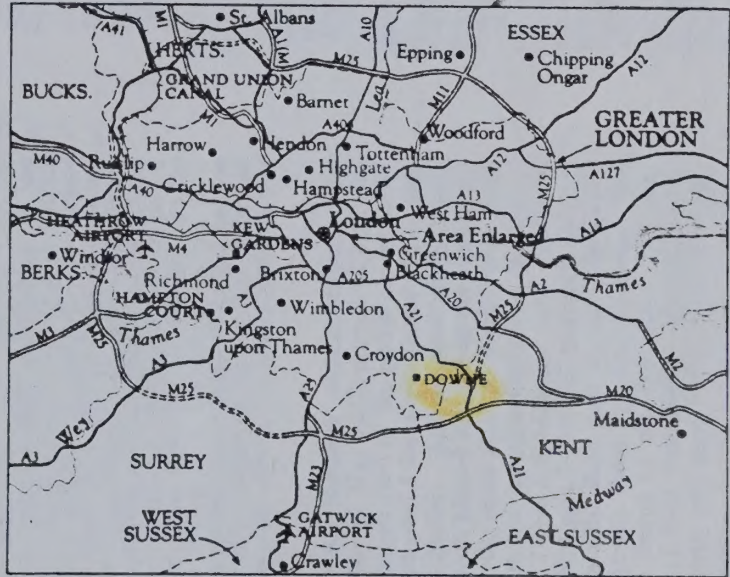
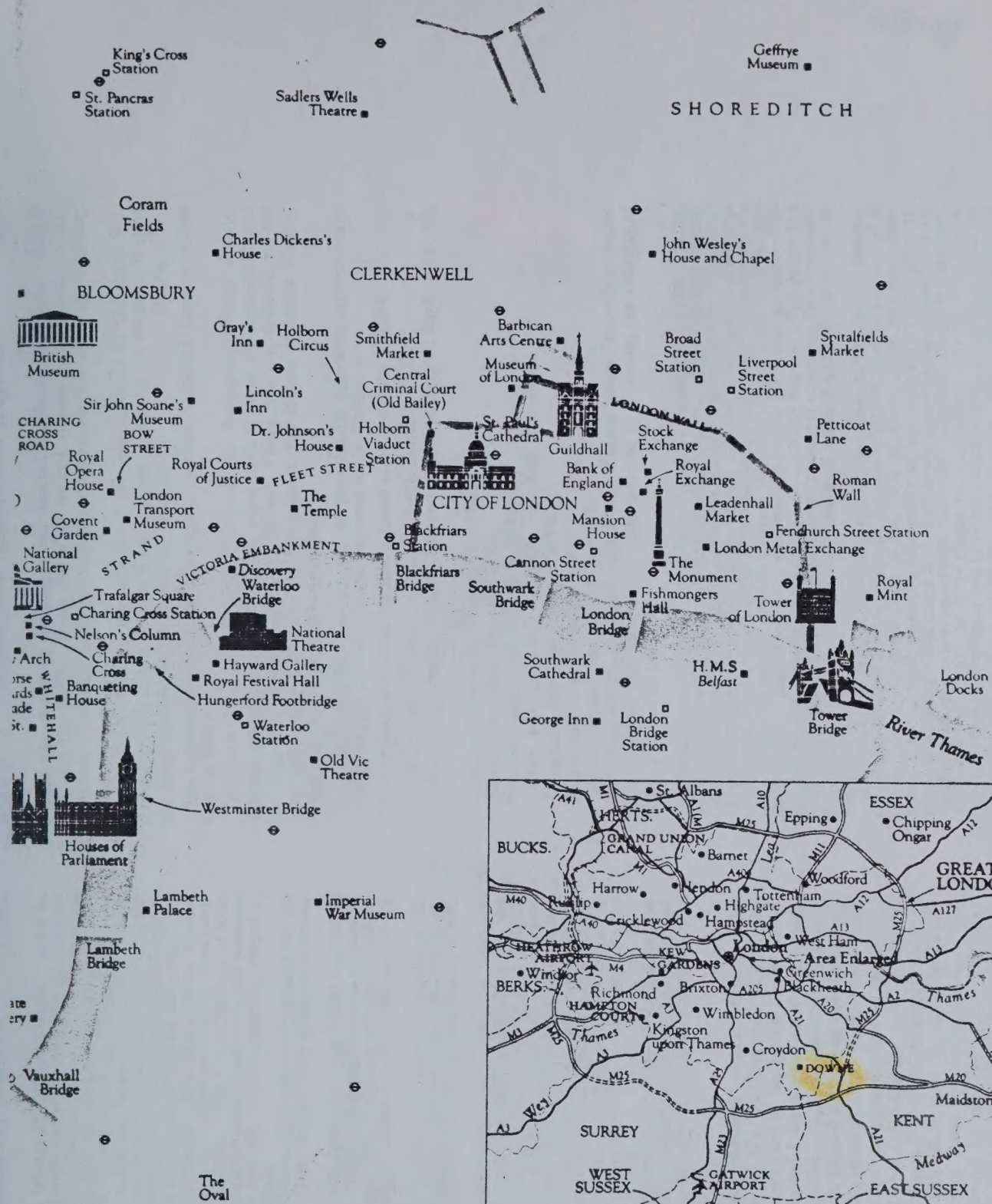
10

10

10

10

10



of Richard, of St. Mary Cray, younger brother of John of Downe. And I am confirmed in this by an extract which I made years ago from Morgan's Sphere of Gentry and also by Harl. MS. 1476. Thomas Manninge, whose will was proved 14 June 1583, was clearly another of these three sons of Richard.

I now come to some Mannings whom I cannot place at all, although they must have belonged to this family if we can accept the declaration of one of them, viz., Edmond Manning of Clifton in Dadington, Oxfordshire, who in his will (1588), besides mentioning brothers Matthew and Simon and sundry sisters, referred to Henry Manning of Kent as his cousin and named him and Henry Manning of Greenwich as two of his overseers. The family of his Kentish cousin, indeed, were to have the reversion of a house and land in Northamptonshire after the death of his brother Matthew. This Henry Manning of Kent must have been one of those eight brothers to whom I have referred above as the children of William Manning, for in his will, made in 1610 but proved in 1620, he speaks of this reversionary interest.

The William Manning who married Susanna Kirkener was probably the son of Hugh and so a nephew, of the half blood, to the Henry Manning of Greenwich who married Catherine Kirkener.

From the wills of John Morse (1615) and Anne Barnewell (1628) I am led to infer that the latter was that daughter of Thomas Willoughby, Dean of Rochester, who was married to Edward Manning. She afterwards became the wife of Mr. Henry Barnewell. Her daughter Joan married (1) John Morse and (2) Jeremy Biggs.

Henry Mannings the tallowchandler of London whose will was proved in 1632 must have been the fourth son of Peter and Elizabeth Manning. His will is important for its mention of his cousin Richard Waters, and Richard Waters signed the will as a witness.

The genealogical value of the will of John Webb (1624-1625) can hardly be overestimated, mentioning, as he does, wife Dorothy and brethren in law Thomas Manning and William Plasse. It is just this mention of William Plasse which settles the problem of the maternal ancestry of our Richard Waters of Salem. In the Manning pedigree (Harl. MS. 1548) we see that two of the daughters of George Manning of Downe were Dorathea ux. Joh's Webb and Phebe ux. Jacobi Waters. Now James Waters of London left a widow Phebe and a son Richard. William Plasse, a gunsmith, married this widow Phebe. A William Plasse, gunsmith, came to Salem and also a Richard Waters. At the death of William Plasse this Richard Waters calls himself son in law (*i. e.* stepson) of the deceased. In 1879 I found the will of James Waters of London and published a very meagre abstract of it (Gleanings &c. by Emmerton and Waters, Essex Institute; Salem, Mass., pp. 121-3). A larger abstract here follows.

JAMES WATERS of the parish of St. Buttolph without Algate, London, citizen and ironmonger of London, 17 May 1617, proved 16 February 1617. To be buried in the South church yard of the parish church of St. Buttolph without Algate, aforesaid, whereof I am a parishioner, in or near the place where my children do lie buried. And as concerning all such worldly goods and chattells as God hath blessed me, and at the time of my decease shall bless me withal, I will the same shall be divided into three equal parts and portions according to the laudable Custom of the City of London, one full third part whereof I give and bequeath unto my loving wife Phebe Waters, one other full third part I give and bequeath unto my loving child Richard Waters and the other third part thereof I reserve to myself, out of which I give and bequeath these legacies following. Mr. John Briggess parson of the parish church of St. Buttolph. The poor people inhabiting within the liberty of East Smithfield. My loving partner Samuel Rowlands. My most trusty and most loving friend Mr. Ambrose Jennings citizen and cordwainer of London. Leonard Fingerman of East Smithfield, shoemaker. Arthur Merryall of Stratford Bow, smith. Wife Phebe and son Richard to be joint executors and my foresaid loving

friends Mr. Ambrose Jennings and Samuel Rowlands overseers. And I will that the portion of my son shall be and remain in the hands of Mr. Ambrose Jennings until my said son shall accomplish the age of twenty and one years.

Wit: Rich: Greene Scr. and Rob^t Kitchen servants to the same Scr. Proved by the widow Phebe Waters, power reserved for Richard Waters the other executor when he should claim it: Meade, 17.

The following extract from Marriage Allegations, Bishop of London, should come in here:—

1618-19, Feb. 8. William Plasse of St. Botolphes wthoute Algate, London, gunmaker and a widower, aged xlvii^y yeres or thereabout and did alleg that he intendeth to marrie wth Phebe Waters, widowe, of the same pshe, aged xlvii^y yeres or there about, the Relicte of James Waters, Iremonger, deceased a yere since &c.

I am indebted to the Rev^d Charles H. Pope for the following extracts taken by him last year from the Parish Registers of St. Botolph's:—

The earliest mention of the family found at St. Botolph's Aldgate.

Frederick, son to Richard Waters, bapt. April 7, 1577.

John, son of James Waters, Citizen and Ironmonger, bapt. Nov. 30, 1600.

John, same name buried July 21, 1624.

Phebe, dau. bapt. Dec. 6, 1602.

*Richard, son, bapt. March 3, 1604.

Judith, dau. bapt. Jan. 24, 1607, bur. Aug. 12, 1609.

Elizabeth, dau. bapt. Dec. 9, 1610.

Mary, dau. bapt. June 24, 1613.

*James Waters buried Feb. 2, 1617.

"William Plasse, gunsmith; and Phebe Waters, widow, late wife to James Waters Citizen and Ironmonger were married by a license; the xxiii day of Februarie, A. D. 1618."

William Plasse, as I have said, came to Salem where the town in 1637 granted, for him and his wife, the house formerly Mr. Conant's, with a half acre of land attached, etc. and in 1643 they appointed a committee to provide for him a convenient room to work in and to set a forge, etc. He died in 1646 and his estate was administered by Thomas Wickes or Weeks whose wife Alice (afterwards the wife of Nicholas Potter) and two children, Hannah, wife of John Pickman, and Bethia, wife of John Archer, are afterwards found in occupancy of the real estate, which was opposite our Market place or Derby Square. The gunsmith's tools were found to be in the possession of Richard Waters who, in a document, now extant in the Court House at Salem, calls himself a son-in-law of the deceased.

This Richard Waters, son of James and Phebe (Manning) Waters of London, probably came to New England with his stepfather Mr. Plasse and settled in Salem. His house stood close to Cat Cove on Salem Neck near that estate once known as Hollingworth's, afterwards as Hathorne's Farm and more recently as Rowell's. The exact date of his death I have not ascertained, but the Inventory of his estate was taken 25-7-1677. His will, dated 16 July 1676, was proved 28-9-1677. In it he names wife Joyce and sons William, James, John and Ezekiel. William was to be maintained during his natural life by his brother Ezekiel, or if not by Ezekiel then by John. The daughters named are Martha, Abigail Punchard, Mary English, Susana Pulsier and Hanna Striker. The baptisms of some of these children are given in the Register of the First Church, Salem, as follows:—a child (probably John) bapt. 27-9-1640; Elizabeth bapt. 26-12-1642-3 (died 3-12-1662); Abigail bapt. 18-3-1645 (mar. William Punchard 26 Oct. 1669); Ezekiel bapt. 9-2-1647 (mar. and had issue); Susanna bapt.

1-2-1649 (mar. Benedict Pulsifer (Ipswich), Feb. 1673); Hannah bap. 30-11-1652-3 (mar. Joseph Striker 10-2-1673). Mary mar. Clement English 27 Aug. 1667. James removed to Topsfield, married and left issue, of whom Daniel (I believe) removed to Norfolk County, where he left issue. Besides the children above named I suspect that Richard and Joyce (or Rejoice) Waters had another daughter Phebe Waters whom I find married to Thomas West 11-8-1658. She died 16-2-1674, and Mr. West married (2) Mary Tennee 14-8-1674.

John Waters (son of Richard and Joyce) married 1-6-1663 Sara Tompkins a daughter of John Tompkins, bap. 1-11-1642. He lived in North Field, now North Salem, and owned land on Royal (or Riall) Side, now in Beverly. His will, dated 14 Feb. 1706-7, was sworn to as the will of John Waters Senr. 1 March 1707-8. He mentions his wife, without naming her, and names three sons, John, Richard and Nathaniel, and three daughters, Elizabeth (unmarried) and daughters Symonds and Jacobs. From the records I get the following children of John and Sara Waters.

Richard } born last of June 1664; died within a fortnight.
John }

John born 4 July 1665; mar. Mary ———.

Sara born 30 June 1667; mar. John Symonds 3 Mar. 1689-90.

Richard born 13 Nov. 1669; ancestor (I believe) of the Waters family of Sutton and Millbury.

Nathaniel born 6-12-1671; His widow Elizabeth received grant of admon. 5 Mar. 1717-18.

Samuel born 29 Mar. 1674; died five weeks after.

Samuel born 6 May 1675.

Elizabeth born 10-11-1677; Admon. gr. to her bro. John 13 Nov. 1734 (John Felton surety.).

Abigail bap. 6 May 1683; mar. John Jacobs.

John Waters junior (son of above) mar. Mary ———, whose parentage I have not learned, but who received baptism, as an adult, in First Church, Salem, 19 April 1702. He also lived in North Field and owned land on Royal Side. In his will, dated 10 Feb. 1741(2) and proved 5 April 1742 he calls himself housewright and names son John, daughter Sarah (unmarried) and daughters Mary Felton, Lydia Proctor, Eunice Gardner and Abigail Porter. From the records I get the following:—

John bap. 19 July 1702; mar. (1) Elizabeth Gardner 30 Nov. 1721 and (2) wid. Abigail Putnam 9 Dec. 1747.

Mary bap. 19 July 1702; mar. ——— Felton (see Genealogy of the Felton Family.).

Sarah bap. 19 July 1702; living single in 1760.

Lydia bap. 12 March 1704; mar. John Proctor junior 14 Dec. 1727.

Eunice bap. 18 Aug. 1706; mar. Thomas Gardner (pub. 21 Dec. 1728).

Abigail bap. 12 June 1709; mar. Eleazar Porter (pub. 2 Sept. 1732).

John Waters (son of above) married, as we have seen, two wives. His first wife, the mother of all his children, was Elizabeth Gardner, born 30 March 1701, eldest daughter of Mr. Abel Gardner (son of Samuel and Mary (White) Gardner) by Sarah, daughter of Mr. Israel and Elizabeth (Hathorne) Porter. The will of this John Waters, made 29 April 1760 and proved 26 May 1760, refers to his land in North Field on Royal Side and names wife Abigail, sisters Mary Felton, Lydia Proctor and Sarah Waters, sons John and Abel and daughters Elizabeth Jacobs, Mary Shillaber, Lydia Putnam, Abigail Waters and Eunice Waters. Of these daughters Mary, bap. 4 May 1735 was married, 2 December 1755 to Capt. William Shillaber. The late well known Fitch Poole Esq. married a granddaughter of this William and Mary (Waters) Shillaber and had by her (besides other issue) Elizabeth Poole now the wife of my friend Mr. George W. Benson of Salem.

Capt. John Proctor who married Lydia Waters (see above) died in 1773, leaving sons Benjamin, Silvester and Joseph Proctor and daughters Lydia Flint, Mary Osborne, Sarah Gould and Prudence Buxinton. His eldest son, John Proctor, had predeceased him (in 1771) leaving (with other issue) a son John-son Proctor who married, 31 Dec. 1789, another Lydia Waters, daughter of Abel Waters and grand daughter of John and Elizabeth (Gardner) Waters. They were the parents of Abel Proctor, the father of Lydia Waters, wife of the Rev.

Isaiah Thatcher, Thomas Emerson Proctor, recently deceased, Abel Johnson Proctor, also deceased (leaving an only son, Abel Harrison Proctor, now living) Mehitabel Cummings the wife of the Hon. James Phinney Baxter of Portland, Maine, Sarah Ann Emerson, wife of Allen L. Joslin, Mary Putnam, wife of the Rev. Wm. A. Lamb, Elizabeth Putnam, wife of Wm. H. Wetherill, Augusta (recently deceased), and Miss Ellen Osborn Proctor.

Sarah Waters, another daughter of Abel Waters and granddaughter of John and Elizabeth (Gardner) Waters, was married, 14 Nov. 1793, to Capt. Thomas Whittredge. Through this match other of our Salem and Boston families derive their descent from the family of Manning of Kent. — H. F. W.]

of Richard, of St. Mary Cray, younger brother of John of Downe. And I am confirmed in this by an extract which I made years ago from Morgan's Sphere of Gentry and also by Harl. MS. 1476. Thomas Manninge, whose will was proved 14 June 1583, was clearly another of these three sons of Richard.

I now come to some Mannings whom I cannot place at all, although they must have belonged to this family if we can accept the declaration of one of them, viz., Edmund Manning of Clifton in Dadington, Oxfordshire, who in his will (1588), besides mentioning brothers Matthew and Simon and sundry sisters, referred to Henry Manning of Kent as his cousin and named him and Henry Manning of Greenwich as two of his overseers. The family of his Kentish cousin, indeed, were to have the reversion of a house and land in Northamptonshire after the death of his brother Matthew. This Henry Manning of Kent must have been one of those eight brothers to whom I have referred above as the children of William Manning, for in his will, made in 1610 but proved in 1620, he speaks of this reversionary interest.

The William Manning who married Susanna Kirkener was probably the son of Hugh and so a nephew, of the half blood, to the Henry Manning of Greenwich who married Catherine Kirkener.

From the wills of John Morse (1615) and Anne Barnewell (1628) I am led to infer that the latter was that daughter of Thomas Willoughby, Dean of Rochester, who was married to Edward Manning. She afterwards became the wife of Mr. Henry Barnewell. Her daughter Joan married (1) John Morse and (2) Jeremy Biggs.

Henry Manninge the tallowchandler of London whose will was proved in 1632 must have been the fourth son of Peter and Elizabeth Manning. His will is important for its mention of his cousin Richard Waters, and Richard Waters signed the will as a witness.

The genealogical value of the will of John Webb (1624-1625) can hardly be overestimated, mentioning, as he does, wife Dorothy and brethren in law Thomas Manning and William Plasse. It is just this mention of William Plasse which settles the problem of the maternal ancestry of our Richard Waters of Salem. In the Manning pedigree (Harl. MS. 1548) we see that two of the daughters of George Manning of Downe were Dorathea ux. Johⁿ's Webb and Phebe ux. Jacobi Waters. Now James Waters of London left a widow Phebe and a son Richard. William Plasse, a gunsmith, married this widow Phebe. A William Plasse, gunsmith, came to Salem and also a Richard Waters. At the death of William Plasse this Richard Waters calls himself son in law (*i. e.* stepson) of the deceased. In 1879 I found the will of James Waters of London and published a very meagre abstract of it (Gleanings &c. by Emmerton and Waters, Essex Institute, Salem, Mass., pp. 121-3). A larger abstract here follows.

JAMES WATERS of the parish of St. Buttolph without Algate, London, citizen and ironmonger of London, 17 May 1617, proved 16 February 1617. To be buried in the South church yard of the parish church of St. Buttolph without Algate, aforesaid, whereof I am a parishioner, in or near the place where my children do lie buried. And as concerning all such worldly goods and chattells as God hath blessed me, and at the time of my decease shall bless me withal, I will the same shall be divided into three equal parts and portions according to the laudable Custom of the City of London, one full third part whereof I give and bequeath unto my loving wife Phebe Waters, one other full third part I give and bequeath unto my loving child Richard Waters and the other third part thereof I reserve to myself, out of which I give and bequeath these legacies following. Mr. John Briggess parson of the parish church of St. Buttolph. The poor people inhabiting within the liberty of East Smithfield. My loving partner Samuel Rowlands. My most trusty and most loving friend Mr. Ambrose Jennings citizen and cordwainer of London. Leonard Fingerman of East Smithfield, shoemaker. Arthur Merryall of Stratford Bow, smith. Wife Phebe and son Richard to be joint executors and my foresaid loving

friends Mr. Ambrose Jennings and Samuel Rowlands overseers. And I will that the portion of my son shall be and remain in the hands of Mr. Ambrose Jennings until my said son shall accomplish the age of twenty and one years.

Wit: Rich: Greene Scr. and Rob^t Kitchen servants to the same Scr. Proved by the widow Phebe Waters, power reserved for Richard Waters the other executor when he should claim it. Meade, 17.

The following extract from Marriage Allegations, Bishop of London, should come in here:—

1618-19, Feb. 8. William Plasse of St. Botolphes wthoute Algate, London, gunmaker and a widower, aged xlvii^y yeres or thereabout and did alleg that he intendeth to marrie wth Phebe Waters, widowe, of the same pshe, aged xlvii^y yeres or there about, the Relicte of James Waters, Iremonger, deceased a yere since &c.

I am indebted to the Rev^d Charles H. Pope for the following extracts taken by him last year from the Parish Registers of St. Botolph's:—

The earliest mention of the family found at St. Botolph's Aldgate.

Frederick, son to Richard Waters, bapt. April 7, 1577.

John, son of James Waters, Citizen and Ironmonger, bapt. Nov. 30, 1600.

John, same name buried July 21, 1624.

Phebe, dau. bapt. Dec. 6, 1602.

*Richard, son, bapt. March 3, 1604.

Judith, dau. bapt. Jan. 24, 1607, bur. Aug. 12, 1609.

Elizabeth, dau. bapt. Dec. 9, 1610.

Mary, dau. bapt. June 24, 1613.

*James Waters buried Feb. 2, 1617.

"William Plasse, gunsmith, and Phebe Waters, widow, late wife to James Waters Citizen and Ironmonger were married by a license, the xxiii day of Februarie, A. D. 1618."

William Plasse, as I have said, came to Salem where the town in 1637 granted, for him and his wife, the house formerly Mr. Conant's, with a half acre of land attached, etc. and in 1643 they appointed a committee to provide for him a convenient room to work in and to set a forge, etc. He died in 1646 and his estate was administered by Thomas Wickes or Weeks whose wife Alice (afterwards the wife of Nicholas Potter) and two children, Hannah, wife of John Pickman, and Bethia, wife of John Archer, are afterwards found in occupancy of the real estate, which was opposite our Market place or Derby Square. The gunsmith's tools were found to be in the possession of Richard Waters who, in a document, now extant in the Court House at Salem, calls himself a son-in-law of the deceased.

This Richard Waters, son of James and Phebe (Manning) Waters of London, probably came to New England with his stepfather Mr. Plasse and settled in Salem. His house stood close to Cat Cove on Salem Neck near that estate once known as Hollingworth's, afterwards as Hathorne's Farm and more recently as Rowell's. The exact date of his death I have not ascertained, but the Inventory of his estate was taken 25-7-1677. His will, dated 16 July 1676, was proved 28-9-1677. In it he names wife Joyce and sons William, James, John and Ezekiel. William was to be maintained during his natural life by his brother Ezekiel, or if not by Ezekiel then by John. The daughters named are Martha, Abigail Punchard, Mary English, Susana Pulsifer and Hanna Striker. The baptisms of some of these children are given in the Register of the First Church, Salem, as follows:—a child (probably John) bap. 27-9-1640; Elizabeth bap. 26-12-1642-3 (died 3-12-1662); Abigail bap. 18-3-1645 (mar. William Punchard 26 Oct. 1669); Ezekiel bap. 9-2-1647 (mar. and had issue); Susanna bap.

1-2-1649 (mar. Benedict Pulsifer (Ipswich), Feb. 1673); Hannah bap. 30-11-1652-3 (mar. Joseph Striker 10-2-1673). Mary mar. Clement English 27 Aug. 1667. James removed to Topsfield, married and left issue, of whom Daniel (I believe) removed to Norfolk County, where he left issue. Besides the children above named I suspect that Richard and Joyce (or Rejoice) Waters had another daughter Phebe Waters whom I find married to Thomas West 11-8-1658. She died 16-2-1674, and Mr. West married (2) Mary Tennee 14-8-1674.

John Waters (son of Richard and Joyce) married 1-6-1663 Sara Tompkins a daughter of John Tompkins, bap. 1-11-1642. He lived in North Field, now North Salem, and owned land on Royal (or Riall) Side, now in Beverly. His will, dated 14 Feb. 1706-7, was sworn to as the will of John Waters Senr. 1 March 1707-8. He mentions his wife, without naming her, and names three sons, John, Richard and Nathaniel, and three daughters, Elizabeth (unmarried) and daughters Symonds and Jacobs. From the records I get the following children of John and Sara Waters.

Richard } born last of June 1664; died within a fortnight.
John }

John born 4 July 1665; mar. Mary ———.

Sara born 30 June 1667; mar. John Symonds 3 Mar. 1689-90.

Richard born 13 Nov. 1669; ancestor (I believe) of the Waters family of Sutton and Millbury.

Nathaniel born 6-12-1671; His widow Elizabeth received grant of admon. 5 Mar. 1717-18.

Samuel born 29 Mar. 1674; died five weeks after.

Samuel born 6 May 1675.

Elizabeth born 10-11-1677; Admon. gr. to her bro. John 13 Nov. 1734 (John Felton surety.)

Abigail bap. 6 May 1683; mar. John Jacobs.

John Waters junior (son of above) mar. Mary ———, whose parentage I have not learned, but who received baptism, as an adult, in First Church, Salem, 19 April 1702. He also lived in North Field and owned land on Royal Side. In his will, dated 10 Feb. 1741(2) and proved 5 April 1742 he calls himself housewright and names son John, daughter Sarah (unmarried) and daughters Mary Felton, Lydia Proctor, Eunice Gardner and Abigail Porter. From the records I get the following: —

John bap. 19 July 1702; mar. (1) Elizabeth Gardner 30 Nov. 1721 and (2) wid. Abigail Putnam 9 Dec. 1747.

Mary bap. 19 July 1702; mar. ——— Felton (see Genealogy of the Felton Family.)

Sarah bap. 19 July 1702; living single in 1760.

Lydia bap. 12 March 1704; mar. John Proctor junior 14 Dec. 1727.

Eunice bap. 18 Aug. 1706; mar. Thomas Gardner (pub. 21 Dec. 1728).

Abigail bap. 12 June 1709; mar. Eleazar Porter (pub. 2 Sept. 1732).

John Waters (son of above) married, as we have seen, two wives. His first wife, the mother of all his children, was Elizabeth Gardner, born 30 March 1701, eldest daughter of Mr. Abel Gardner (son of Samuel and Mary (White) Gardner) by Sarah, daughter of Mr. Israel and Elizabeth (Hathorne) Porter. The will of this John Waters, made 29 April 1760 and proved 26 May 1760, refers to his land in North Field on Royal Side and names wife Abigail, sisters Mary Felton, Lydia Proctor and Sarah Waters, sons John and Abel and daughters Elizabeth Jacobs, Mary Shillaber, Lydia Putnam, Abigail Waters and Eunice Waters. Of these daughters Mary, bap. 4 May 1735 was married, 2 December 1755 to Capt. William Shillaber. The late well known Fitch Poole Esq. married a granddaughter of this William and Mary (Waters) Shillaber and had by her (besides other issue) Elizabeth Poole now the wife of my friend Mr. George W. Benson of Salem.

Capt. John Proctor who married Lydia Waters (see above) died in 1773, leaving sons Benjamin, Silvester and Joseph Proctor and daughters Lydia Flint, Mary Osborne, Sarah Gould and Prudence Buffinton. His eldest son, John Proctor, had predeceased him (in 1771) leaving (with other issue) a son John Proctor who married, 31 Dec. 1789, another Lydia Waters, daughter of Abel Waters and grand daughter of John and Elizabeth (Gardner) Waters. They were the parents of Abel Proctor, the father of Lydia Waters, wife of the Rev.

Isaiah Thatcher, Thomas Emerson Proctor, recently deceased, Abel Johnson Proctor, also deceased (leaving an only son, Abel Harrison Proctor, now living) Mehitabel Cummings the wife of the Hon. James Phinney Baxter of Portland, Maine, Sarah Ann Emerson, wife of Allen L. Joslin, Mary Putnam, wife of the Rev. Wm. A. Lamb, Elizabeth Putnam, wife of Wm. H. Wetherill, Augusta (recently deceased), and Miss Ellen Osborn Proctor.

Sarah Waters, another daughter of Abel Waters and granddaughter of John and Elizabeth (Gardner) Waters, was married, 14 Nov. 1793, to Capt. Thomas Whittredge. Through this match other of our Salem and Boston families derive their descent from the family of Manning of Kent. — H. F. W.]

ADDITIONAL NOTES ABOUT THE PROCTOR FAMILY.

In my researches made in the Court House at Salem about these Proctors I gathered certain facts which justify me, I believe, in venturing to correct Savage's statements about the first two John Proctors. He says that the first John Proctor of Ipswich came 1635 *æt.* 40, from London in the Susan and Ellen with wife Martha, *æt.* 28 and children, John 3 and Mary 1, and in a few years was settled at Salem. His wife died 13 June 1659; but he took a second wife of the same baptismal name who outlived him &c. Of John Proctor the son (afterwards condemned for witchcraft), he says that he married, December 1662, Elizabeth daughter of John Thorndike, who died in August (30th) 1672, and had, for a second wife, Elizabeth Bassett, married 1 April 1674.

Let me now give some of the facts which I have found. The transcripts from Ipswich town records give me the following births, deaths and marriages:

Mary dau. of John Prockter born 1 January 1657.

Mary dau. of John Prockter died—February 1657.

Martha dau. of John Prockter jun^r died 14 October 1658.

John son of John Prockter jun^r died in October 1658.

Benjamin son of John Prockter born 10 June 1659.

Martha wife of John Prockter died 13 June 1659.

John Prockter and Elizabeth Thorndick married—December 1662.

Martha dau. of John Prockter born 1 April and died 10 May 1665.

Benjamin Procter and Deborah Hart married—February 1673.

In the Court records and files I got certain depositions showing ages as follows:—

John Prockter Sen^r speaks of "my brother Giddens" 26 March 1667, calling himself aged 75 years. (George Gidding aged 59).

Benjamin Procter aged about 17 years in 1668.

John Procter, about 40, deposes 18-5-1676.

John Proctor being presented, 25-9-1678, for selling strong water and cider to Indians two of his children give their depositions 29-9-1678, viz^t. Elizabeth, his daughter, about 16, and Benjamin, his son, about 18.

John Proctor sen^r, about 54, and Benjamin Proctor, about 26, make depositions 30 November 1686.

The first John Proctor, of Ipswich (I doubt if he ever lived in Salem) must have died before 11 Oct. 1672, when an inventory of his estate was taken. His will, as Savage says, names wife Martha, grandchildren Martha Hadley and John Ha(dley,) daughters Martha White, Abigail Varney, Sarah Dodge and Hannah Weden and sons John, Joseph and Benjamin. Martha was probably the wife of James White (who was present in jail when the second John Proctor made his will), Abigail was the wife of Thomas Varney and Sarah was the wife of John Dodge (son of William Dodge senior).

In view of all these facts I would infer that all those children whose births and deaths were recorded in Ipswich during the years 1657, 1658 and 1659 and the Martha who was born and died in 1665 were the children of the second John Proctor; that the Mrs. Martha Proctor who died 13 June 1659 was his wife, not his father's, and that she died in childbed three days after the birth of her last

THE LONDON ORIGIN OF RICHARD¹ WATERS OF SALEM, MASSACHUSETTS

Revisited

By William Wyman Fiske

Over a century ago, Henry FitzGilbert Waters established that Richard¹ Waters of Salem, Massachusetts, was the son of James^A and Phebe (Manning) Waters, baptized at St. Botolph without Aldgate [or St. Botolph Aldgate] on 3 March 1604/5. Although Waters was able to identify the father of Phebe as George^B Manning of Downe, Kent, James^A Waters's origins were elusive. A review of the parish registers for St. Botolph Aldgate shows that Waters was working from an incomplete gleaning of Waters entries, credited to the Rev. Charles H. Pope.¹ A more complete summary of Waters entries is included below (those originally published by Waters are in italics, with those portions incorrectly transcribed crossed out, followed by nonitalicized corrections).² Note that Pope credited three baptisms to James^A Waters that were actually for children of Edward Waters.

1558	23 Nov.	Richard Waters and Jane Netters married.
1564	4 Nov.	George Waters and Jane Thorneton married.
1564	13 Nov.	Bartholomew Jesborde and Margaret Wotters married.
1571/2	10 Jan.	Richard Waters and Margeritt Browne married.
1574	30 May	Edward Reynolds and Elizabeth Waters married.
1576	17 July	Richard Waters and Em Shearman married.
1576/7	[19?] March	Alkelis Waters sonne to William Water baptized.
1577	7 April	Frederick sonne to Richard Waters baptized.
1577	28 Dec.	Richard Waters and Margaret Boington married.
1577/8	18 Feb.	Thomas Walter sonne to Richard Walter baptized.
1577/8	28 Feb.	Thomas Water sonne of Richard Water buried.
1580	26 Nov.	Symon Waters and Margaret Ott married.
1580/1	15 Jan.	Margaret Waters wieff of Richard Waters buried.
1581	3 May	Thomas Sparnner and Anne Waters married.
1581	11 July	Thomas Waters executed att wappinge buried.
1581	13 Aug.	Henrye Waters sonne to Symon Waters baptized.
1582	5 June	Thomas Water a younge man buried.

¹ Henry F. Waters, "Genealogical Gleanings in England," *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* [NEHGR] 51(1897):389-424, at 389-409, esp. 406-9; repr. in Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings in England*, 2 vols. (Boston, 1901), 2:1341-43 (hereafter cited as Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings*).

² St. Botolph Aldgate, London, parish registers [Family History Library (FHL), Salt Lake City, film #s 370,924 (baptisms and marriages, 1558-1625), 370,926 (burials, 1558-1625), 370,929 (baptisms and marriages, 1625-56), 370,927 (burials, 1625-62)].

1583	20 Oct.	Jeane Walter daughter to Symon Walter baptized.
1585	18 April	Alyce Waters daughter to John Waters baptized.
1585	29 June	Mary Waters daughter to Symon Waters baptized.
1585	3 Aug.	William Walter sonne to Thomas Walter baptized.
1586	11 Aug.	Henry Waters joyner howseholder buried.
1586	20 Sept.	Daniel Waters sonne of Henrye Waters buried.
1586	31 Dec.	Richard Waters an olde howseholder buried.
1587	26 Nov.	John Pyble and Anne Waters married.
1588	5 May	Alyce Waters daughter to Symon Waters cordyner baptized.
1588	27 May	Owen Bridger and Jane Waters married.
1589	22 June	Robert Whitmoore and Grace Waters married.
1589	27 Dec.	Lawrence Waters sonne to Symon Waters baptized.
1592	11 June	George Waters sonne to Symon Waters baptized.
1593	22 Aug.	George Waters sonne of Symon Waters buried.
1593	22 Aug.	Mary Waters daughter of Symon Waters buried.
1593	23 Aug.	Burial of Joane Waters daughter of Symon Waters buried.
1594	29 April	Henrye Ristropp and Margeritt Waters married.
1597	11 June	George Waters sonne to Symon Waters cordyner baptized.
1599	22 Dec.	Peter Sharpe and Jeane Waters married.
1600	30 Nov.	John sonne of James Waters, Citizen and Ironmonger, baptized.
1601/2	28 Jan.	"John Waters sonne to James Waters Iremonger" buried.
1602	30 June	"Margett Waters searvant to William Browne waterman" buried.
✓ 1602	1 Dec. ³	Phebe daughter of James Waters Iremonger baptized.
1603	8 Sept.	"Rice Savil servant two Mr James Walters" buried.
1603	21 Sept.	"Sara Walters daughter two Jeames Walters" buried.
1603	8 Oct.	"Martha Walters daughter two James Walters" buried.
1603	7 Dec.	"ffebe Walters daughter two James Walters" buried.
1604	16 Sept.	John Langton and Brygett Waters married.
1604/5	3 March	Richard Waters sonne to James Waters yremonger baptized.
1606	12 May	Henry Waters and Jane Browne married.
1607/8	24 Jan.	Judith Waters daughter of James Waters to Edward Waters, taylor in houndsditch baptized.
1609	12 Aug.	Judith Waters daughter to Edward Waters in houndsditch buried.
1609	3 Dec.	John Waters of harwich and Mary Spa[r?]me married by license.
1610	9 Dec.	Elizabeth Waters daughter of James Waters to Edward Waters, taylor in houndsditch, baptized.
1613	24 June	Mary Waters daughter of James Waters to Edward Waters, in the houndsditch baptized.
1615	6 Aug.	John Lake and Katherine Waters alias Bagnall by married license.
1616	6 Sept.	Edward Waters sonne to Edward and Johne Waters in houndsditch baptized.
✓ 1617/8	2 Feb.	James Waters, late Cittizen and Iron-monger who dwelt in East Smithfield, buried.
1617/8	12 Feb.	Francis Waters wife to Richard Waters tailor of Rosemarie Lane buried.
✓ 1618/9	23 Feb.	William Plasse, gunsmith, and Phebe Waters, widow, late wife to James Waters Citizen and Ironmonger were married by a license.
1620	23 April	Symon Waters sonne to Peter Waters a Travailing Marchant & Dorithie his reputed wife, lodgers, baptized.

³ Incorrectly 6 Dec. in Waters, "Gleanings," NEHGR 51(1897):407, and in Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings*, 2:1341.

1620	20 May	Thomas Walter sonne to Thomas [sic] Walter ⁴ Tailor & Hellen his wife baptized.
1620	21 May	Thomas Walter sonne to Richard Walter Tailor of the Tower precinct buried.
1620	13 Dec.	Anne Walter wife to John Walter Miller of Nightingale Ln buried.
1623	23 June	Jane Waters servant to Nicholas Oliver victualler of East Smithfield buried.
1624	21 July	John Waters, sonne to John Waters Shoemaker, buried.
1625	11 July	William Waters sonne to Richard Tailor & Hellen his wife buried.
1625	13 July	Giles Waters sonne to Richard Waters Tailor buried.
1625/6	24 Feb.	William Waters in the south Starre Yard buried.

"Jaemes Watters," apprentice to John Ball, was admitted to the Ironmongers' Company in 1592/3.⁵ His records in the Ironmongers' Company do not include any family information. The date of his admission suggests that he was born by, and most likely prior to, 1571. The birth year of his widow, Phebe (Manning) Waters, can be calculated as about 1571-72 from her marriage license to her second husband, William Plasse. James and Phebe (Manning) Waters's marriage should not have taken place until after the completion of James's apprenticeship and subsequent admission to the Ironmongers' Guild in early 1593. The first child recorded for James and Phebe in the baptismal registers of St. Botolph Aldgate is that of John on 30 November 1600. The parish registers of St. Leonard Eastcheap, however, reveal the baptisms of three earlier children.⁶

1595	7 Dec.	Dorothea Waters daughter of James.
1596	12 Dec.	Henry Waters son of James.
1598	12 Nov.	Martha Waters daughter of James.

It is therefore likely that James Waters married Phebe Manning sometime between mid 1593 and early 1595. The Martha Waters buried on 8 October 1603 at St. Botolph Aldgate is presumably the Martha baptized five years earlier at St. Leonard Eastcheap. Although Dorothy was possibly named after Phebe's sister Dorothy (Manning) Webb,⁷ there is at least an equal likelihood that both Dorothy and Henry were names taken from James Waters's family. It is therefore of interest to find both the 29 August 1568 baptism of a James Waters, son of Henry, at St. Giles Cripplegate⁸ and the 13 June 1563 marriage of Henry Waters to Doro-

⁴ The actual father was probably Richard Waters, whose son Thomas was buried the next day and whose wife in other entries is named Helen.

⁵ Freedom Admissions to the Ironmongers' Guild [FHL film #1,068,121]. Other apprentices of John Ball admitted to the company were: Humphrey Hooke [1604/5], Martin Bearde [1606/7], Phillip Bull [1611/2]. James Waters's apprentice John Candlande was admitted to the company in 1615/6.

⁶ St. Leonard Eastcheap, London, parish registers [FHL film #535,720].

⁷ Waters, "Gleanings," NEHGR 51(1897):400-1, 406; Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings*, 2:1334-35, 1340.

⁸ St. Giles Cripplegate, London, parish registers [FHL film #380,198].

this Stephenson at St. Mary Abchurch, London.⁹ No probate for either Henry or Dorothy (Stephenson) Waters has yet been found.

GENEALOGICAL SUMMARY

1 JAMES^A WATERS of St. Leonard Eastcheap and St. Botolph Aldgate, London, was born say 1568, and buried at St. Botolph Aldgate on 2 February 1617/8. He married between 1593 and 1595, PHEBE MANNING, daughter of George^B and Joan (Wallys) Manning of Downe, Kent.¹⁰ Phebe married second (by license of 8 February 1618/9),¹¹ at St. Botolph Aldgate on 23 February 1618/9, William¹ Plasse, gunmaker of St. Botolph Aldgate, with whom she immigrated to Salem, Massachusetts, presumably accompanied by her son Richard Waters; Plasse's origin will be covered in a later article.

James^A Waters's parentage remains unknown. It is tempting, given the naming of a son Richard by James and Phebe (Manning) Waters, to assume that the Richard Waters baptizing children as late as 1577 at St. Botolph Aldgate, presumably the "olde howseholder" buried on there 31 December 1586, was James's father. There is no evidence at this time, however, to either support or refute this possibility. Furthermore, it is probably significant that James chose to name his eldest (known) son Henry; looking to a more distant London parish, we find a James Waters, son of Henry, baptized at St. Giles Cripplegate on 29 August 1568 (see discussion above), possibly the son of Henry and Dorothy (Stephenson) Waters, who married at St. Mary Abchurch, London, on 13 June 1563.¹²

Children of James^A and Phebe (Manning) Waters:

- i DOROTHY WATERS, bp. St. Leonard Eastcheap, London, 7 Dec. 1595.
- ii HENRY WATERS, bp. St. Leonard Eastcheap, 12 Dec. 1596.
- iii MARTHA WATERS, bp. St. Leonard Eastcheap, 12 Nov. 1598, bur. St. Botolph Aldgate, 8 Oct. 1603.
- iv JOHN WATERS, bp. St. Botolph Aldgate, London, 30 Nov. 1600, bur. St. Botolph Aldgate, 28 Jan. 1601/2.
- v PHEBE WATERS, bp. St. Botolph Aldgate, 1 Dec. 1602, bur. St. Botolph Aldgate, 7 Dec. 1603.
- vi SARA WATERS, bur. St. Botolph Aldgate, 21 Sept. 1603.
- 2 vii RICHARD¹ WATERS, bp. St. Botolph Aldgate, 3 March 1604/5; m. JOYCE/REJOYCE ---.

2 RICHARD¹ WATERS (James^A) was baptized at St. Botolph Aldgate, London, on 3 March 1604[5], and died at Salem, Massachusetts, between the making of his will on 16 July 1676 and 25 7th month [September] 1677, when the inventory

⁹ St. Mary Abchurch, London, parish registers [FHL film #374,483].

¹⁰ Waters, "Gleanings," NEHGR 51(1897):404, 406; Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings*, 2:1328, 1340.

¹¹ Waters, "Gleanings," NEHGR 51(1897):407; Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings*, 2:1341.

¹² St. Giles Cripplegate, London, parish registers [FHL film #380,198].

was taken. Presumably following admission to the Ironmongers' Guild, by paternity, in 1625/6, Richard married JOYCE or REJOYCE.¹³ On 19 September 1646, Richard Waters certified that his "father-in-law" William Plasse, gunsmith, died in Salem on 15 2nd month [April] 1646.¹⁴ Richard's use of the term "father-in-law" has been interpreted in the modern sense with resultant confusion about his wife's maiden name. As pointed out by Henry Waters, this was Richard's way of identifying his stepfather, second husband of his mother, Phebe (Manning) (Waters) Plasse.

By 25 December 1637, when he received land grants in Salem, Richard and Joyce Waters had three children.¹⁵ The christenings of two of these can be found in London. First, the 7 October 1629 baptism of "Phebe daughter of Richard Waters of Wappingwall distiller & Joyce ux the 7 day at 9 [dayes old]" was discovered in the parish registers of St. Dunstan's Stepney.¹⁶ The identification of Richard Waters's occupation as "distiller" is of interest. Although he is known to have been an ironmonger, it is noteworthy that Richard Waters was licensed by Salem to "still and sell strong waters at retail" from 1663 to 1668.¹⁷ There can be little doubt that this is the correct couple or that this is the daughter of Richard and Joyce Waters who on 11 October 1658 married Thomas West of Salem.¹⁸ At St. John's Wapping, Middlesex, a second child was baptized on 13 January 1631/2: "William sonne of Richard & Joice Walters, ironmonger."¹⁹

On 9 April 1669, Robert Follett conveyed a lot in Salem to Richard Waters, gunsmith. On 24 October 1671, Waters conveyed the eastern part of the house he was building to his son Ezekiel Waters for his services to his parents. Waters conveyed part of his homestead on 7 4th month [June] 1671 to his daughter Abigail, wife of William Punchard, another portion to daughter Mary, wife of Clement English, on 2 July 1671, and a final portion to daughter Hannah, wife of Jo-

¹³ Freedom Admissions to the Ironmongers' Guild [FHL film #1,068,121]. Richard Waters's apprentice George Richardson Renalson [sic: Richardson crossed out and replaced with Renalson] was admitted 1634/5.

¹⁴ *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, 9 vols. (Salem, Mass., 1911-75), 1:108 (hereafter cited as *Essex Co. Court Records*).

¹⁵ In Dec. 1637, a division of land was made and the recipients recorded, along with the acreage allotted and the total number of individuals in the family unit. William Plasse's name immediately follows that of Richard (who is given the title "Mr"). The number preceding each man's name identifies the size of the family: two for William and Phebe Plasse. The Waters household totaled five, consistent with three of their children having been born by late 1637. (*Town Records of Salem, Massachusetts*, 3 vols. [Salem, 1868-1934], 1:103; see p. 61 for explanation of 25 Dec. 1637 dating of these land grants.)

¹⁶ Stepney, Middlesex, parish registers [FHL film #595,417].

¹⁷ *Essex Co. Court Records*, 3:78, 3:174, 4:40, 4:55.

¹⁸ *Vital Records of Salem, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849*, 6 vols. (Salem, 1916-25), 4:440 (hereafter cited as *Salem VRs*).

¹⁹ St. John Wapping, Middlesex, parish register, transcriptions [FHL film #416,737].

seph Striker on 26 October 1675. According to Sidney Perley, this area was known as Watertown or Waters' Town in the early eighteenth century.²⁰

The will of Richard Waters was dated 16 July 1676 and proved on 28 November 1677. "Being ancient," he made provisions for his wife, Joyce, in her widowhood and, subsequently, for son William: "I give what remains of my estate & my wives decease to my Son William to be Secured in the hands of my Sonn Ezekiel for to maintain his Brother William. . . ." Richard left 10s. apiece to [named in order] son James, son John, son Ezekiel, and daughter Martha. Also named were "the rest of my children viz Abigail punchard Mary English Susan Pulsiver and Hanah Striker. . . ." He appointed wife Joyce sole executrix and named "Loving friends Mr Edm. Batter, Mr Hilliard Verine, Sen[ior] & Christopher Babbidge & John Swinerton" overseers. The estate was valued at £148 10s 4d., with £16 1s. 10½d. in debts "to several persons."²¹ Richard Waters's will makes no mention of the family of daughter Phebe (Waters) West, by then deceased. Also not named is Sarah (Waters) Rea/Ray, who married Joshua Ray at Salem on 26 February 1651/[2?]²² and who died Salem on 19 May 1700, aged 70.²³ There is no evidence yet found to connect Sarah to this family other than the coincidence of her surname and the fact that she was of the right age to be the third unidentified child when Richard Waters received his Salem land grant in December 1637. Although no probate exists for Joyce or Rejoyce Waters, she was alive on 20 October 1687 when she acknowledged the following deed, recorded 15 February 1687/8, transferring her estate to son Ezeliel Waters:

To all Christian people to whom this present writing shall come: Rejoyce Waters of Salem in the county of Essex in New England, widow, & relict of Richard Waters, deceased, send greeting. Know ye that whereas Richard Waters my well beloved husband did in his last will & testament having date 16 July 1676 after all debts & funerall charges were paid will and bequeath his whole estate, to say, houses & lands, chattels, goods, debts or w[hate]ver estate belonging unto him, unto me Rejoyce Waters his then wife, and by his last will made sole executrix for me to have & to hold after his decease the time of my naturall life for my necessary use and comfort and in case I remaine a widdow to sell if needs require any parts or the whole of my houses & lands, provided it bee with the consent of my overseers: there fore be it now further knowne, that I the said Rejoyce Waters, relict & widdow of the deceased Richard Waters, having now not wherewithall to maintaine me comfort ably in my old age, but by selling my houses & lands, do now & have with the consent of my overseers, for a valuable sume of money to me in hand paid and se-

²⁰ Sidney Perley, "Salem in 1700, No. 20," *The Essex Antiquarian* 9(1905):114-23, at 122-22. The deeds are abstracted in Essex Society of Genealogists, *Essex County Deeds, 1639-1678* (Bowie, Md., 2003), 220-21 [Richard Waters to son Ezekiel Waters], 220 [Richard Waters to daughter Abigail, wife of William Punchard], 229 [Richard Waters to daughter Mary, wife of Clement English], 304 [Richard Waters to daughter Hanna, wife of Joseph Stricker], all with the consent of Richard Waters's wife, Joyce.

²¹ *The Probate Records of Essex County, Massachusetts*, 3 vols. (Salem, Mass., 1916-20), 3:183-85 (hereafter cited as *Essex Co. Probate Records*); *Essex Co. Court Records*, 6:382-83.

²² *Salem VRs*, 4:440.

²³ *Salem VRs*, 6:177.

Pulsipher, b. 5 Sept. 1678. 4. Joseph Pulsipher, b. 13 Nov. 1680. 5. Benjamin Pulsipher, b. 19 May 1683. 6. David Pulsipher, b. 27 Sept. 1685. 7. Jonathan Pulsipher, b. 25 Sept. 1687. 8. Joanna Pulsipher, b. 10 May 1691. 9. Margaret Pulsipher, b. 14 Feb. 1693/4.

x HANNAH WATERS, bp. Salem, 30 11m [Jan.] 1652/[3],⁶⁶ m. Salem, 2m [April] 1673, JOSEPH STRIKER.⁶⁷

Children of Joseph and Hannah² (Waters) Striker, b. and/or bp. Salem.⁶⁸ 1. Hannah Striker, b. 10 Jan. 1673/4. 2. Dorcas Striker, b. 2 March 1675/[6?], d. Ipswich, 2 May 1676.⁶⁹ 3. Deborah Striker, b. 17 June 1677. 4. Dorcas Striker (again), b. 4 April 1680, bp. Aug. 1680. 5. Joseph Striker, b. 14 9m [Nov.] 1681, bp. 28 May 1682. 6. Abigail Striker, b. 4 March 1683/4. 7. Benjamin Striker, b. 18 March 168[8]/9, bp. March 1689.

xi MARTHA WATERS. She is known only from her father's will (1676), which seems to indicate that she was then unmarried.

William Wyman Fiske (<billfiske@comcast.net>) is a physician practicing on Cape Cod, Massachusetts, where he lives with his wife and three daughters.

⁶⁶ Salem 1st Church Records, 23; Salem VRs, 2:396.

⁶⁷ Salem VRs, 4:439.

⁶⁸ Salem VRs, 2:329; Salem 1st Church Records, 33 [bp. Dorcas], 34 [bp. Joseph], 39 [bp. Benjamin].

⁶⁹ Salem VRs, 6:257.

THE DEVIL AND BETTY JACKSON

Contributed by David L. Greene, FASG, Editor

James Raine (1791–1858), the Durham, England, antiquary, left a memoir for his children. The following comes from his descriptions of people he knew in his childhood:

Betty [Jackson] was famous for her punctual attendance at the funerals of her neighbours, and still more famous for the quantity of funeral cake which she would eat on those occasions. There was a story that upon her deathbed she gave orders for two holes to be made in her coffin, one at each end, so that when the devil at one end came to claim her as his own she might escape by the other. She was buried at Wycliffe [co. Durham] on the 19th January 1802. . . .¹

But was her ploy successful?

Angela Marsden, ed., *A Raine Miscellany*, Surtees Soc. Pubs., 200 (1991):59–60.

THE DANIEL³ AND MARY (CLOYSE) WATERS FAMILY OF TOPSFIELD, MASSACHUSETTS, AND KILLINGLY, CONNECTICUT

By John Bradley Arthaud, FASG

Richard¹ Waters was baptized in St. Botolph Aldgate, London, on 3 March 1604/[5] and died at Salem, Massachusetts, between 16 July 1676 and 27 7th month [September] 1677, son of James^A and Phebe (Manning) Waters. His origin and extensive maternal ancestry have been published.¹ Occasional single-line descents with good documentation have appeared.² There has been, however, no thorough coverage of Richard Waters's descendants in the first five generations, despite his being the progenitor of a large colonial family. Later descendants include Presidents Taft, Coolidge,³ and likely George W. Bush.⁴ The following article will detail another single-line agnate descent from a grandson with mention of the daughters and their families in each generation.

1 DANIEL³ WATERS, son of James² Waters (Richard¹) and Mary (Stallworthie), was born at Topsfield, Massachusetts, on 29 March 1682⁵ and died at Killingly, Connecticut, between 28 November and 9 December 1754, the dates that his will was signed and "presented." He married at Topsfield on 19 December 1704, MARY³ CLOISE/CLOYSE,⁶ born at Salem, Massachusetts, on 6 5th month [July] 1677, daughter of Thomas² Cloyse (John¹) and Susannah (Lewis).⁷ She died, proba-

¹ Henry F. Waters, "Genealogical Gleanings in England: The Manning Family," *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* [NEHGR] 51(1897):389–409; John Brooks Threlfall, *The Ancestry of Reverend Henry Whitfield and His Wife Dorothy Sheafe of Guilford, Connecticut* (Madison, Wis., 1989), 70; William Wyman Fiske, "The London Origin of Richard¹ Waters of Salem, Massachusetts: Revisited," TAG 81(2006):172–82.

² Clifford L. Stott, "Sarah Waters, Second Wife of Nathaniel² Sanborn of Hampton, New Hampshire," *The New Hampshire Genealogical Record* 13(1996):145–51; Philomene Jenkins, *David Waters and Consider Law . . .* (Lincoln, Nebr., 1929); Jeanne Waters Strong, *One Waters Family* (Los Altos Hill, Calif., 1980).

³ Gary Boyd Roberts, *Ancestors of American Presidents: First Authoritative Edition* (Santa Clarita, Calif., 1995).

⁴ Gary Boyd Roberts, "Presidential Kinships of Barbara (Pierce) Bush," *New England Ancestors* 6 no. 4(2005):39–41, at 39.

⁵ *Vital Records of Topsfield, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849* (Topsfield, 1903), 108 (hereafter cited as *Topsfield VRs*); James Waters m. Mary Stallworthie on 24 March 1669/70 (*Topsfield VRs*, 196).

⁶ *Topsfield VRs*, 196.

⁷ *Vital Records of Salem, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849*, 6 vols. (Salem, 1916–25), 1:188; Sybil Noyes, Charles Thornton Libby, and Walter Goodwin Davis, *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* (Portland, 1928–32), 151–52. Mary Lovering Holman, *Ances-*

bly at Killingly after 9 December 1754 (see below). They moved from Essex County, Massachusetts, to Connecticut between 1716 and 1720.

On 27 June 1727, Daniel Waters of Killingly charged Henry Sparks, late of Plainfield, "now" of Killingly, with killing a two-year-old colt that belonged to Waters.⁸

On 3 February 1745/6, Daniel Waters, innholder of Killingly, Connecticut, "in consideration of the paternal love, affection, and good will . . . [toward] my well-beloved son David Waters," husbandman of Providence, Rhode Island, conveyed to David Waters a tract of land in Killingly.⁹ On 29 August 1748, Daniel Waters sold a tract of land in Killingly of about three acres for £100 paid by David Waters, yeoman of Killingly.¹⁰

On 6 April 1747, Daniel Waters granted two tracts of land totaling 64 acres in Killingly to "My Well Beloved Son In Law Benjamin Chilson" of Killingly and to "My Well Beloved Daughter Sarah Chilson the wife of the s^d Benjm Chilson."¹¹

Daniel Waters of Killingly signed his will on 28 November 1754 and made many provisions for his beloved wife Mary. He then left his son David Waters 40s. and mentioned former deeds to him. Six married daughters were named and provisions were made for adjustments concerning land distributed to his daughter Sarah before his death. If his son Jonathan were "to come," he was to be treated equally with the six daughters: Jemima Lee, Mary Moffitt, Susannah Johnson, Huldah Burt, Hannah Allyn, and Sarah Chilson/Chelson. Boaz Stevens of Killingly was the executor; witnesses were Lydia Cloyse, Robert Haven, and Daniel Davis. The two men presented the will on 9 December 1754; it was exhibited the following day. A land division was dated 24 January 1756.¹²

On 9 December 1754, Mary Waters of Killingly, widow of Daniel Waters, for £100 paid by Phinehas Lee of Killingly, Joseph Moffitt, James Johnson, Aaron Allyn, all of Sturbridge, Worcester County, Massachusetts, and Henry Burt of Brimfield, Hampshire County, Massachusetts, quitclaimed all her right in the dowry of the estate of her late husband. A day later, David Waters for £500 acquitted the same men for their interest in his father's estate.¹³

try of John Harrington Stevens and His Wife Frances Helen Miller, 2 vols. (n.p. 1948–51), 1:165–66, suggested that Mary Cloyse, daughter of Peter² and Hannah (Littlefield) Cloyse, "prob." m. Daniel Waters, a suggestion that was excluded 20 years earlier by Noyes, Libby, and Davis; Alicia Crane Williams, *Stone–Gregg Genealogy* . . . (Baltimore, 1987), 73, follows Holman.

⁸ Marcella Houle Pasay, *Windham County, Connecticut, County Court Records 1726–1732 Abstracts of Volume 1* (Bowie, Md., 2000), 18, citing 1:77.

⁹ Killingly, Conn., Deeds, 5:28 [Family History Library (FHL) film #4,659].

¹⁰ Killingly Deeds, 5:113 [FHL film #4,659].

¹¹ Killingly Deeds, 5:64 [photocopy].

¹² Plainfield, Conn., Probate District, file 2193 [FHL film #1,018,791].

¹³ Killingly Deeds, 6:25, rec. 23 Dec. 1754 [FHL film #4,660].

Children of Daniel³ and Mary (Cloyse) Waters, 1st 8 b. in Topsfield, Mass.:¹⁴

- i MARY⁴ WATERS, b. 3 March 1705/6, d. Topsfield, 28 May 1706.
- ii HANNAH WATERS, b. 2 March 1706/7, d. Topsfield, 4 Feb. 1709/[10?].
- 2 iii DAVID WATERS, b. 16 Oct. 1708; m. MARGERY WHITMORE.
- iv JEMIMA WATERS, b. 8 March 1709/10; m. ca. 1729, PHINEHAS LEE, of Killingly, son of Samuel and Mary (—) Lee.¹⁵ Phinehas Lee of Killingly signed his will 20 Jan. 1781 and named his "well beloved" wife, Jemima. His daughter Elizabeth was to live with her mother and son Joel had several responsibilities for his mother. Reference was made to what his son Phinehas had received from his grandfather Waters. Sons Elijah and Daniel and daughters Jemima, Abigail, Sabina [Sabra], Kezia, and Rachel were mentioned without any surnames for the daughters. A granddaughter Sabina [Sabra] Tarbel was to receive her unnamed mother's share. Phinehas's wife and son Joel were the executors.¹⁶

As the granddaughter was mentioned between Abigail and Sabra, she was almost certainly a daughter of Huldah Lee.

Children of Phinehas and Jemima⁴ (Waters) Lee, b. in Killingly, Conn.¹⁷

- 1 Samuel Lee, b. 4 June 1730, d. between 1 May 1756 and 2 Sept. 1756, when his will was signed and presented. He named his mother; brothers Elijah Lee, Daniel Lee, Joel Lee; and sisters Abigail Lee, Elizabeth Lee, Huldah Lee, Sabra Lee, Rachel Lee, and Keziah Lee.¹⁸ Interestingly, neither his father nor his brother Phinehas was mentioned.
- 2 Silas Lee, b. 6 Sept. 1731; not mentioned in the will of his brother Samuel (1756) or his father (1781).
- 3 Phinehas Lee, b. 9 March 1732/3, living 20 Jan. 1781 (father's will).
- 4 Jemima Lee, b. 28 Oct. 1734, living 20 Jan. 1781.
- 5 Abigail Lee, b. 28 June 1737, living 20 Jan. 1781.
- 6 Elisabeth Lee, b. 27 March 1739, living 20 Jan. 1781.
- 7 Huldah Lee, b. 12 Jan. 1740/[1], d. probably Sturbridge, Mass., 4 Oct. 1773; m. Thompson, Conn., 30 April 1766, John Tarbel, "both of Sturbridge,"¹⁹ bp. Woodstock, Conn., 4 July 1742, d. Sturbridge, July 1820.²⁰
- 8 Elijah Lee, b. 12 Jan. 1742/3, living 20 Jan. 1781.
- 9 Daniel Lee, b. 26 Aug. 1744, living 20 Jan. 1781.
- 10 Sabra Lee, b. 23 Feb. 1745/6, living 20 Jan. 1781.

¹⁴ *Topsfield VRs*, 108 [births], 255 [deaths of Mary and Hannah].

¹⁵ Marion Edwards Lee, *The Lee's [sic] of New England and Some Allied Families* (Ponca City, Okla., 1981), 7.

¹⁶ Pomfret, Conn., Probate District, file 2587 [FHL film #1,027,098].

¹⁷ Killingly, Conn., Births, Marriages, Deaths 1708–1850 (Barbour Collection, Connecticut State Library, 1920), 110 (hereafter cited as Killingly VRs).

¹⁸ Pomfret Probate District, file 2588 [FHL film #1,027,098].

¹⁹ Frederic William Bailey, *Early Connecticut Marriages, as Found on Ancient Church Records Prior to 1800*, 7 vols. (Hartford, 1896–1906), 2:56; Charles Henry Wight, "Thomas Tarbell and Some of His Descendants," NEHGR 61(1907):70–75, 165–72, 299–302, at 172, names three children for this couple, but no Sabra. Huldah is given three different death dates and ages all correctly from *Vital Records of Sturbridge, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850* (Boston, 1906), 380 (hereafter cited as *Sturbridge VRs*); 4 Oct. 1773, 23; 4 Oct. 1773 in 33rd year; and 7 Oct. 1778, 30. The date of 4 Oct. 1773 "fits" with her birth.

²⁰ Wight, "Thomas Tarbell," NEHGR 61(1907):165 [bp.], 172 [three different dates for death that correspond to *Sturbridge VRs*, 380].

11 Joel Lee, b. 28 Dec. 1747, living 20 Jan. 1781.

12 Rachel Lee, b. 27 May 1750, living 20 Jan. 1781; possibly m. her 1st cousin, Job Johnson (no. 1. vi. 10 below)

13 Keziah Lee, b. 13 Aug. 1754, living 20 Jan. 1781.

- v MARY WATERS (again), b. 27 Oct. 1711; m. say 1730, JOSEPH MOFFIT[T], b. Newbury, Mass., 11 July 1703.²¹ They were of Sturbridge, Mass., when her father's land was divided on 24 Jan. 1756. There is no probate record for Joseph in Worcester Co., Mass.

Children of Joseph and Mary⁴ (Waters) Moffit[t], all except the 1st b. Sturbridge, Mass.²²

1 Hannah Moffit[t], bp. Killingly, 31 Jan. 1731/2,²³ presumably d. young.

2 Mary Moffit[t], b. 29 Aug. 1732.

3 Daniel Moffit[t], b. 2 Aug. 1734.

4 Keziah Moffit[t], b. 30 May 1736.

5 Joseph Moffit[t], b. 2 July 1738.

6 Aquilla Moffit[t], b. 18 May 1740.

7 Sarah Moffit[t], b. 28 April 1742.

8 Jonathan Moffit[t], b. 18 April 1744.

9 Mehitable Moffit[t], b. 4 Feb. 1745/6.

10 Hannah Moffit[t] (again) (twin), b. 24 March 174[7]/8.

11 Zebulon Moffit[t] (twin), b. 24 March 174[7]/8.

12 Jesse Moffit[t], b. 26 March 1749.

13 Priscilla Moffit[t], b. 18 April 1752.; ~~bp. [Jan. 24, sic].~~²⁴

- vi SUSANNAH WATERS, b. 7 Aug. 1713, d. Sturbridge, 9 or 10 April 1774;²⁵ m. Killingly, 19 Dec. 1732, JAMES JOHNSON,²⁶ b. say 1710, d. Sturbridge, 1 or 2 April 1788, of unknown ancestry. On 8 April 1769, James and Susannah Johnson of Sturbridge, who both signed by mark, sold 27 acres and 10 rods in Killingly for £16 to Samuel Danielson of Killingly. The land was bounded in part by land formerly owned by Phineas Lee.²⁷ On 12 May 1775, James Johnson, of Sturbridge, again signed by mark when he sold 42 acres in Killingly for £21 to Thomas Dennison.²⁸ There is no probate record in Worcester Co. for James Johnson.

²¹ Eva L. Moffatt, *The Ancestors of Nancy Maria Moffatt, Wife of Daniel Freeman Britton*, ed. Geoffrey Gilbert, 2 vols. in 1, mimeographed (Victoria, B.C., 1952), 1:21–22. Joseph's birth is not in the *Vital Records of Newbury, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849*, 2 vols. (Salem, Mass., 1911), or in *Vital Records of Newburyport, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849*, 2 vols. (Salem, 1911).

²² *Sturbridge VRs*, 91, for last 12 children. 1st 3 sons in *Daughters of the American Revolution, DAR Patriot Index Centennial Edition*, 3 vols. (Washington, D.C., 1990 [sic: 1994]), 3:2049–50.

²³ Moffatt, *Moffatt Ancestry*, 2:21.

²⁴ The strikethrough is in *Sturbridge VRs* including the "sic."

²⁵ *Sturbridge VRs*, 347 [both deaths].

²⁶ Ellen D. Larned, *Church Records of Killingly, Connecticut* (Lambertville, N.J., 1984), 11; repr. from *Putnam's Monthly Historical Magazine* 3(1895), 4(1896), 5(1897), 7(1899), [Putnam's] *Genealogical Quarterly Magazine* 1(1900).

²⁷ *Killingly Deeds*, 10:368, ack. 8 April 1769, rec. 10 April 1780 [FHL film #4,662].

²⁸ *Killingly Deeds*, 11:6; ack. at Windham, 7 May 1776, rec. 17 Feb. 1781 [FHL film #4,662]. Comfort Johnson was a witness.

Children of James and Susanna⁴ (Waters) Jo[h]nson, b. Sturbridge, Mass.:²⁹

1 Lydia Johnson, b. 10 May 1733, d. Sturbridge, 7 Jan. 1757; m. there, 7 Sept. 1749, Benjamin Scott.

2 Susanna Johnson, b. 13 March 1735/[6?], d. Sturbridge, 1 Aug. 1766; m. (1) Sturbridge, 12 Feb. 1756, Joseph⁵ Sollis (*Joseph⁴, Thomas³, John², Michael¹*), b. Beverly, Mass., 20 April 1731, d. Sturbridge, 20 Nov. 1757. She m. (2) Sturbridge, 17 July 1764, Eliphalet Allen, who d. there, 20 Nov. 1783.³⁰

3 Abigail Johnson, b. 1 Aug. 1737, d. Sturbridge, 29 April 1808 in 72nd year; m. (int.) Sturbridge, Malachi Partridge/Partridge, "of Charlton."³¹

4 James Johnson, b. 19 May 1740; m. Hannah Harding.

5 Lucy Johnson, b. 8 Sept. 1741, d. Sturbridge, 11 June 1819, aged 77 years, 8 months, 22 days; m. Sturbridge, 18 Dec. 1766, Oliver Mason.³²

6 Barachiah Johnson, b. 5 Nov. 1743, d. Sturbridge, 26 June 1746.³³

7 Isaac Johnson, b. 7 July 1746 [sic], bp. 14 July 1745, d. Sturbridge, 15 Sept. 1746.³⁴

8 John Johnson, b. "17 sic ?" July 1746 [sic], bp. 27 [March] 1746 [sic], d. Sturbridge, 1 Aug. 1746.³⁵

9 Comfort Johnson, b. 3 Dec. 1747; m. Eunice Mason.

10 Job Johnson, b. 29 March 1750; possibly m. his 1st cousin, Rachel Lee of T[h]ompson (no. 1. iv. 12 above).

11 Elijah Johnson, b. 2 May 1751; no further record found.

12 Timothy Johnson, bp. 1st Church, Sturbridge, [2 Dec. 17]52;³⁶ no further record found.

13 Hannah Johnson, bp. 1st Church, Sturbridge, 25 Aug. 1754; no further record found.

14 Mary Johnson, bp. 1st Church, Sturbridge, 23 March 1756. Possibly the woman of that name who m. Sturbridge, 31 Jan. 1775, Jacob Mason.³⁷

- vii ABIGAIL WATERS, b. 8 Dec. 1715 [sic]; although not mentioned in father's will, she might have been the woman of this name who m. Killingly, 19 May 1737, EBENE-

²⁹ *Sturbridge VRs*, 75–76, last 3 bps. in the Congregational Church; bps. also for Isaac and John, with minor variations and bracketed inconsistencies. George M. Whitaker, *Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths of the Town of Sturbridge, from the Settlement of the Town to 1816* (Southbridge, Mass., 1879), 3–9, has the first 11 children (chronological). This work indicates that births from 1722 to 1738 occurred at other places and has the births of James and Lucy each exactly one year later than the alphabetical *Sturbridge VRs*, published in 1906. Dates for Isaac and John have many minor variations, which are not belabored here; they may have been twins.

³⁰ *Sturbridge VRs*, 76, 222, 269 [2nd m.], 298 [Allen's death]; John Bradley Arthaud, "The Sallows–Solas–Sollis–Sollace Family: Mariners of Salem and Beverly, Massachusetts," TAG 72 (1997):1–14, 115–34, at 132.

³¹ *Sturbridge VRs*, 76, 222, 363 [birth, marriage, and death].

³² *Sturbridge VRs*, 76, 221, 355. The discrepancy between her recorded and calculated birth date [20 Sept. 1741] is possibly due to calendar change in 1752.

³³ *Sturbridge VRs*, 348.

³⁴ *Sturbridge VRs*, 348, "son of James and Susannah."

³⁵ *Sturbridge VRs*, 348.

³⁶ *Sturbridge VRs*, 76.

³⁷ *Sturbridge VRs*, 222.

ZER FAY of New Medfield.³⁸ If she d. childless or with children who had d. before 28 Nov. 1754, there would be no reason to mention her in the will.

- viii HANNAH WATERS (again), b. 5 June 1716 [*sic*], d. Sturbridge, 17 Aug. 1778 "in 63 y"; m. Killingly, 4 Oct. 1738, AARON ALLEN,³⁹ b. ca. 1715, d. Sturbridge, 3 May 1794, aged 78 or 79.⁴⁰ They were of Sturbridge when her father's land was divided in 1756. Aaron m. (2) Sturbridge, 9 Aug. 1786, Mrs. Catherine (—) Smith, a widow of Charlton, Mass.⁴¹ Aaron Allen, gentleman of Sturbridge, signed his will 24 Aug. 1791 and named his sons Aaron Allen Jr., Simeon Allen, Ithamar Allen, Caleb Allen, and Elisha Allen, the executor, and daughters Elizabeth, "wife of John Allen," and Prudence, "wife of Mark Stacy."⁴² The following document states that an agreement about property made prior to Allen's marriage "in 1787" had been lost and the executor asked that consideration of that agreement be made.⁴³

Children of Aaron and Hannah⁴ (Waters) Allen, b. Sturbridge, Mass.:⁴⁴

- 1 Aaron Allen, b. 22 Aug. 1739, d. Sturbridge, 30 Nov. 1818, aged 79; m. Sturbridge, 15 March 1764, Abigail Allen.⁴⁵ Children in Sturbridge.
- 2 Simeon Allen, b. 26 June 1741, d. Sturbridge, 23 Jan. 1807, aged 65 or 64; m. Sturbridge, 4 June 1766, Sarah Puffer of Upton (int. Bellingham).⁴⁶ Children in Sturbridge.
- 3 Elizabeth Allen, b. 29 March 1743, d. Sturbridge, 1 June 1803, aged 60 or in 62nd year; m. (int.) Sturbridge, 17 Oct. 1765, John Allen.⁴⁷ Children in Sturbridge.
- 4 Thankful Allen, b. 29 June 1745, d. Sturbridge, 3 May 1759.
- 5 Prudence Allen, b. 1 Dec. 1747; m. (int.) Sturbridge, 17 June 1770, Mark Stacy.⁴⁸ Children in Sturbridge.
- 6 Reuben Allen, b. 12 Nov. 1749, d. Sturbridge, 5 Nov. 1754.
- 7 Ithamar Allen, b. 9 Oct. 1751; m. Sturbridge, 30 Sept. 1773, Dolley Pinchion/Pincheon.⁴⁹ Children in Sturbridge.
- 8 Joel Allen, b. 26 Oct. 1753, d. Sturbridge, 27 Aug. 1754.⁵⁰
- 9 Caleb Allen, b. 25 June 1755, d. Sturbridge, 22 Aug. 1839, aged 84; m. Brookfield, Mass., 22 May 1777, Rhoda Allen.⁵¹ Children in Sturbridge.

³⁸ Larned, *Killingly Church Records*, 12.

³⁹ Larned, *Killingly Church Records*, 12.

⁴⁰ *Sturbridge VRs*, 297–98 [deaths].

⁴¹ *Sturbridge VRs*, 151.

⁴² Worcester Co. Probate Records, 26:98–99 [FHL film #856,315].

⁴³ Worcester Co. Probate Records, 26:99 [FHL film #856,315].

⁴⁴ *Sturbridge VRs*, 10–11, 14–15 [births] and 300 [deaths of 4 unmarried children]. Frank Allen Hutchinson, *Genealogical and Historical Sketches of the Allen Family of Dedham and Medfield, Mass., 1637–1890* (Lowell, Mass., 1896), 20–21, has an incomplete and flawed account of this couple. Hannah is incorrectly identified as Hannah Morse.

⁴⁵ *Sturbridge VRs*, 151 [marriage], 298 [death].

⁴⁶ *Sturbridge VRs*, 154 [marriage], 300 [death].

⁴⁷ *Sturbridge VRs*, 152 [marriage], 298 [death].

⁴⁸ *Sturbridge VRs*, 153.

⁴⁹ *Sturbridge VRs*, 153. No death for him in *Sturbridge VRs*.

⁵⁰ *Sturbridge VRs*, 299.

⁵¹ *Sturbridge VRs*, 298 [death], 152 [marriage] where he is termed "of Brookfield." Also *Vital Records of Brookfield, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849* (Worcester, Mass., 1909), 253, where she is "of Sturbridge." Both were b. in Sturbridge.

10 Amasa Allen, b. 27 Sept. 1757, d. Sturbridge, 26 Oct. 1759.

11 Elisha Allen, b. 20 Nov. 1759, d. Sturbridge, 30 Jan. 1818, aged 58; m. (int.) Sturbridge, 17 Nov. 1783, Cyinda Morris[s].⁵² Children in Sturbridge.

12 Hannah Allen, b. 29 Sept. 1762, d. Sturbridge, 27 Oct. 1762.

ix JONATHAN WATERS, b. say 1718; known only from father's will.

x SARAH WATERS, b. 16 June 1720;⁵³ m. BENJAMIN CHILLSON/CHELSON. They were "of Killingly," 6 April 1747, when her father granted them land. No record of them after the birth of their son Benjamin has been found.

Children of Benjamin and Sarah⁴ (Waters) Chillson, b. Killingly, Conn.:⁵⁴

1 David Chillson, b. 15 April 1745.

2 Abigail Chillson, b. 9 Oct. 1746.

3 Waters Chillson, b. 3 Oct. 1748.

4 Sarah Chillson, b. 10 March 1750 [1749/50?].

5 Benjamin Chillson, b. 27 Jan. 1752, presumably 1751/2, with the calendar change later that year; m. Killingly, 24 April 1776, Lydia Converse.⁵⁵

xi HULDAH WATERS, b. Killingly, 21 Aug. 1722,⁵⁶ d. Brimfield, Mass., 4 April 1758;⁵⁷ m. say 1743, HENRY BURT. They were living in Brimfield in 1756 when her father's estate was settled. Henry m. (2) Brimfield, 8 March 1759, Hannah Miller.⁵⁸ A probate record for him has not been found in Hampshire Co., Mass.

Children of Henry and Huldah⁴ (Waters) Burt:⁵⁹

1 Jonathan Burt, b. Brimfield, 12 April 1745, d. Brimfield, 1 Feb. 1749/50.⁶⁰

2 Bethiah Burt, b. Brimfield, 1 June 1747.

3 Huldah Burt, bp. Brimfield, [—] July 1749.

4 Submit Burt, b. Sturbridge, 23 Sept. 1751.⁶¹

5 Zeruiah/Zerviah Burt, b. Brimfield, 3 May 1753,⁶² probably the woman of that name who m. Brimfield, 21 Jan. 1772, Samuel Willard.⁶³

2 DAVID⁴ WATERS (*Daniel*³, *James*², *Richard*¹) was born in Topsfield, Massachusetts, on 16 October 1708 and died after 19 March 1757 when he sold land. He married in Killingly, Connecticut, on 14 February 1727/[8?], "MARGARY" WHITMORE,⁶⁴ born say 1707 and died after 5 December 1750 (birth of last child),

⁵² *Sturbridge VRs*, 298 [death], 152 [marriage].

⁵³ *Killingly VRs*, 169.

⁵⁴ *Killingly VRs*, 43.

⁵⁵ *Killingly VRs*, 43.

⁵⁶ *Killingly VRs*, 169.

⁵⁷ *Brimfield VRs*, 275 [Huldah, w. Henry Jr.].

⁵⁸ *Brimfield VRs*, 174.

⁵⁹ *Brimfield VRs*, 35–36 [4 children].

⁶⁰ *Brimfield VRs*, 275 [Huldah, w. Henry Jr.].

⁶¹ *Sturbridge VRs*, 27 [the only pertinent Burt entry in the *Sturbridge VRs*].

⁶² "d. Henry and Huldah, [Zerviah, d. Henry Jr. CR]."

⁶³ *Brimfield VRs*, 174.

⁶⁴ *Killingly VRs*, 169.

daughter of Thomas and Mary (Waters)⁶⁵ Whitmore.⁶⁶ Thomas Whitmore, who died in Killingly on 23 January 1751/2,⁶⁷ mentioned "my beloved daughter Margery Waters" in his will.⁶⁸

In the mid-1740s, David lived transiently in Providence, Rhode Island, as noted in land transactions above and in the birth record of the second daughter named Mary. On 20 November 1748, David Waters, yeoman of Killingly, paid £30 to [his father-in-law] Thomas Whitmore, yeoman of Killingly, for Whitmore's "first pitch in the patentee right in the common land in Killingly being number 6," which contained 30 acres.⁶⁹

On 14 March 1749/50, David Waters received £50 from Jonathan Grover of Killingly for 98½ acres.⁷⁰ On 26 March 1752, David Waters of Killingly, yeoman, received £325 in Bills of Credit from John Brooks of Killingly, yeoman, for 30 acres.⁷¹ David Waters received £4900 in Bills of Credit on 20 June 1755 from James Day of Killingly, blacksmith. The first parcel of land was 200 acres, bounded by five mile river, James Day's land and Daniel Davis's land, and included a small island in the head of said River. The second parcel of land was 60 acres near the above land.⁷²

On 27 September 1756, David Waters, yeoman of Killingly, "in consideration of love and affection that I have for my eldest son Daniel Waters" conveyed a tract of land in Pomfret of about 25 acres. The same day, David Waters with very similar wording also conveyed two tracts, "both of them contain about 40 acres," in Killingly, to his eldest son Daniel Waters.⁷³

David Waters received £109 1s. 9½d. on 19 March 1757 from Ebenezer Kingsbury of Plainfield for a tract of land in Killingly containing a building and improvements. It was bounded by Silas Huchens, Stephen Spaulding, Jonathan Grover, Daniel Waters, and the heirs of Nathaniel Spaulding of Plainfield.⁷⁴

Children of David⁶ and Margery (Whitmore) Waters, b. Killingly, Conn.:⁷⁵

- i MARY² WATERS, b. 15 Aug. 1729, presumably d. young.
- ii MEHETABLE WATERS, b. 14 June 1731, presumably d. young.

⁶⁵ Mary was the daughter of Samuel and Mary (Hudson) Waters (William H. W[hitmore]. "Gleanings #9," NEHGR 18[1864]:264-68, at 265). There is no known connection between Samuel Waters of Woburn and the descendants of Richard¹ Waters.

⁶⁶ Charles Hudson, *History of Lexington, Mass.*, rev. ed., 2 vols. (Boston, 1913), 2:751-52, which has an incomplete list of children and a gap between 1702 and 1709.

⁶⁷ Barbour Collection, 20:378.

⁶⁸ Plainfield Probate District, file 2257.

⁶⁹ Killingly Deeds, 5:149 [FHL film #4,660].

⁷⁰ Killingly Deeds, 6:38; rec. 3 Sept. 1754 [FHL film #4,660].

⁷¹ Killingly Deeds, 6:7; rec. 7 March 1758 [FHL film #4,660].

⁷² Killingly Deeds, 6:62; rec. 16 Oct. 1755 [FHL film #4,660].

⁷³ Killingly Deeds, 6:168-68A, 168A-69 [FHL film #4,660].

⁷⁴ Killingly Deeds, 6:216; rec. 11 Feb. 1758 [FHL film #4,660].

- iii MERCY WATERS, b. 13 Dec. 1733.
- 3 iv DANIEL WATERS, b. 13 March 1735/6; m. LUCY SPAULDING.
- v ABIGAIL WATERS, b. 10 Oct. 1738.
- vi ELIZABETH WATERS, b. 3 Jan. 1740/1.
- vii ABEL WATERS, b. 3 June 1743.
- viii ABEL WATERS (again), b. 23 [—] 1745.
- ix MARY WATERS (again), b. Providence, R.I., 12 Feb. 174[5]/6.⁷⁶
- x MEHETABLE WATERS (again), b. 5 Feb. 1747/8 [daughter of David and Mary (sic)].
- xi RHODA WATERS, b. 5 Dec. 1750.

3 DANIEL⁵ WATERS (*David*⁴, *Daniel*³, *James*², *Richard*¹) was born at Killingly, Connecticut, on 13 March 1735/6 and married there on 21 September 1756, LUCY SPAULDING.⁷⁷ She was born at Killingly on 3 May 1737, daughter of Stephen and Mary (Lawrence) Spaulding.⁷⁸ Neither Daniel nor Lucy has been found after the birth of their last child in 1770, except for his appearance on the Lexington alarm list.

On 17 May 1758, Daniel Waters of Killingly, yeoman, was paid £50 by Michael Hulet Jr. of Killingly for 40 acres. One parcel was bounded by the land of John Fer- man, Simon Spaulding, and Stephen Spaulding; the second parcel was bounded by land of Jonathan Grover and the heirs of Nathaniel Spaulding of Plainfield.⁷⁹

Lieutenant Daniel Waters of Killingly served seven days on the Lexington Alarm List.⁸⁰ There is no probate record for him in the Pomfret probate district from 1752 to 1830.

Children of Daniel⁵ and Lucy (Spaulding) Waters, b. in Killingly, Conn.:⁸¹ no later history for any has yet been found:

- i MARY⁶ WATERS, b. June 1757.
- ii JONATHAN WATERS, b. 13 Aug. 1759.
- iii BETTY WATERS, b. 28 Sept. 1761.
- iv LUCY WATERS, b. 18 March 1764.
- v HANNAH WATERS, b. 13 April 1766.
- vi DAVID WATERS, b. 7 Aug. 1768.
- vii RUTH WATERS, b. 25 Oct. 1770.

I would like to thank Phyllis Todd for locating many of the Waters land records in Killingly and Julie Otto for assistance with Connecticut probate records.

John Bradley Arthaud, M.D. (123 Lantana Way, San Antonio TX 78258-2948), is a retired surgical pathologist. In November 2006, he was elected a Fellow of the American Society of Genealogists.

⁷⁶ Also as daughter of David and Mary [sic], b. 12 Feb. 1745/6.

⁷⁷ Killingly VRs, 169.

⁷⁸ Charles Warren Spaulding, *The Spaulding Memorial* (Chicago, 1897), 113-14; *The Barbour Collection of Connecticut Town Vital Records*, 20(Baltimore, 1994), 350 [her birth and marriage].

⁷⁹ Killingly Deeds, 6:237; rec. same day [FHL film #4,660].

⁸⁰ *Record of Service of Connecticut Men in the I.—War of the Revolution. II.—War of 1812. III.—Mexican War* (Hartford, 1889), 14.

⁸¹ Killingly VRs, 169.

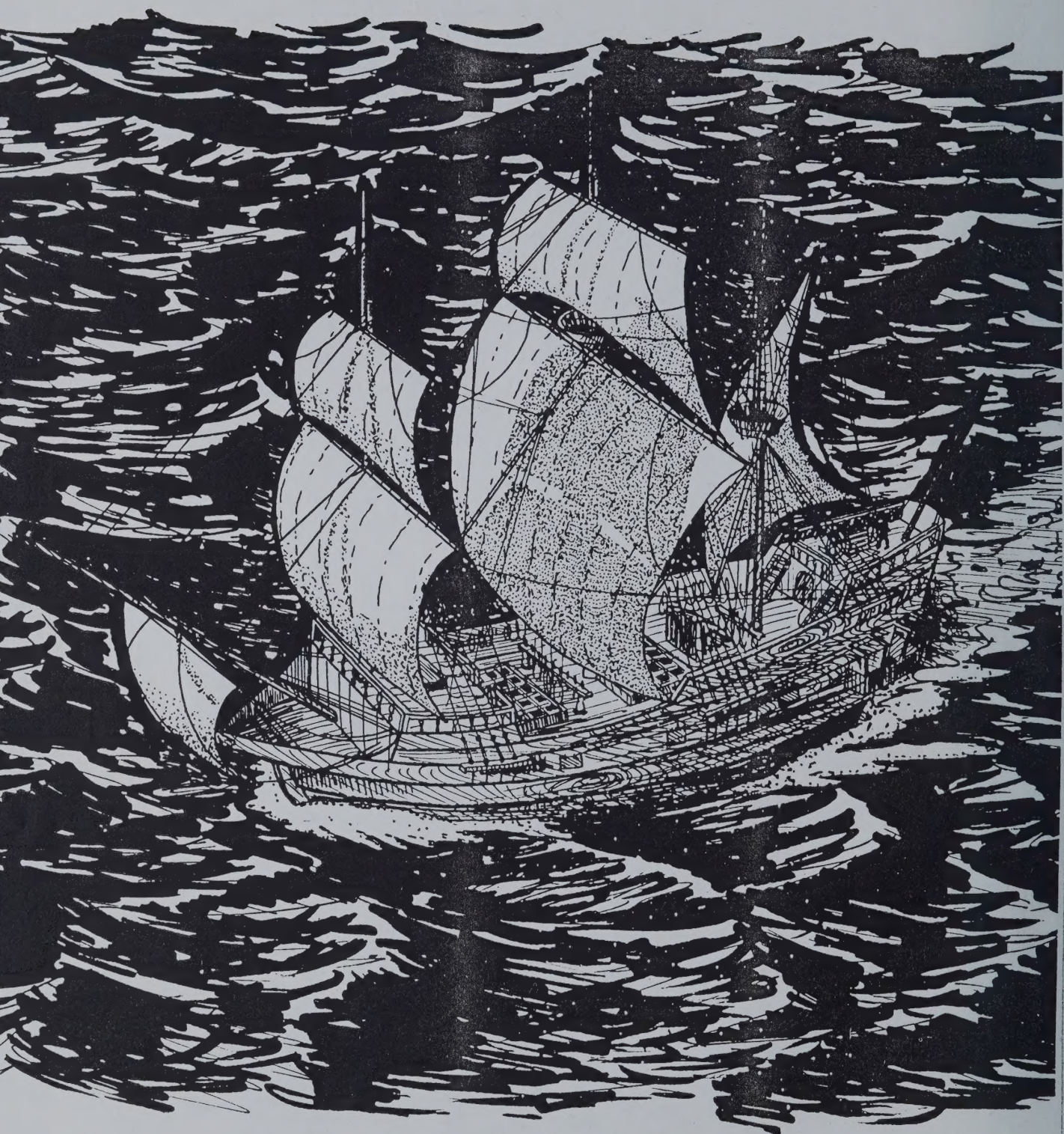
ONE WATERS FAMILY

SOME DESCENDANTS OF JAMES WATERS OF ST. BOTOLPH ALDGATE, LONDON

One branch of the Waters family through the male line including RICHARD WATERS, who settled in Salem, Massachusetts in 1636

Allied families include: Manning, Plasse, Tompkins, King, Gardner, Bancroft, Beebe, Goodrich, Beal and Shoemake

Jeanne Waters Strong
26969 Beaver Lane, Los Altos Hills, California
1980



Illustrated by MICHAEL WOODARD



JAMES WATERS

The parentage of James Waters, father of Richard Waters, the emigrant to New England, has not been positively established by this writer, but one possibility appears in the parish register of St. Giles Cripplegate, London. This is the christening of James, son of Henry Waters, on August 29, 1568. (1) There are two marriages for Henry Waters listed in other parish registers. One is to Dorothe Stephenson in June 1563 at St. Mary Abchurch. Henry had a daughter, Mary, who was christened there in April 1564. (2) The second marriage is to Agnes Mounck on August 9, 1565 at St. Mary Magdellan, Milk Street. (3) Of course, these Henry Waters may be three different men.

Ironmongers' Company

James Waters is first mentioned in the records of the Ironmongers' Company of London in 1586 when at a Quarter Court meeting held on April 26, William Burner or Bourne paid two shillings, six pence for presenting James as his apprentice. (4) In the Presentment Book for the period 1515 to 1680 there appears James' signature following his written statement:

Memorandum that I, James Waters, apprentice unto William Burner ironmonger, due promise by my faith and trothe to be obedient unto the masters and wardens of the Ironmongers and their successors duringe my life. In witness hereunto I sett my hand the 26th day of Aprill 1586. by me James Waters.

Memorandum that I, James Waters, apprentice unto William Burner ironmonger, due promise by my faith & trothe to be obedient unto the masters and wardens of the Ironmongers and their successors duringe my life. In witness hereunto I sett my hand the 26th day of Aprill 1586 by me James Waters

Ironmongers' Hall was first located on Fenchurch Street, purchased in 1457 and rebuilt in 1587, escaped the great fire of 1666 and rebuilt in 1750. In the War of 1914-18 the Hall was destroyed by German Aircraft about noon July 7, 1917 and the site sold. The present Hall is erected on portion of the marsh which formerly existed outside the ancient wall of the City of London and which was filled up by Nicholas Leat, Alderman, Master of the Company in the years 1616, 1626 and 1627. (5) The Hall is now surrounded by modern buildings in an area called the Barbican.

The Ironmongers' Company is the tenth of the twelve great livery companies of the City of London. Edward the fourth granted their charter in 1463. Every member of a city company is a citizen of London, but every citizen is not a member of a company. There are two grades of citizens: one free of the city only and the other free of both city and company, the latter freeman being designated "citizen and ironmonger". (6)

4

The Livery Companies tended to improve the moral and social conditions of the people, and their main object was the promotion of the prosperity of the trades with which they were associated. They became influential bodies, exercising absolute jurisdiction over their respective trades. One very important right which the companies possessed was the right of search in order to detect dishonest practices in their own crafts, with the right to punish offenders and to keep out and suppress foreigners.

Methods of becoming a Freeman in the Ironmongers' Company were by patrimony, apprenticeship, redemption, and honorary. To be eligible for admission by patrimony, an applicant must be born after his father's admission to the Freedom of the Company. In a book of orders belonging to the Company, an Act of Common Council of 1556 is cited for the prevention of early marriages. It was enacted that no one should be made Free of the City by reason of apprenticeship or redemption until he had obtained the age of 24 and apprenticeship was not to be accomplished earlier than that age. To be admitted to the Freedom of the Company by redemption, an applicant must be proposed and seconded by two members of the court.

Unlike any other City Company, membership of the Ironmongers' Company falls into two categories, the Livery, forming the court, and the Yeomanry. In 1570 the Livery numbered 54 persons. The Yeomanry are the future members of the Livery. (7)

At a Court held on the 16th day of October 1592 John Ball (8) paid 12 pence for the oath of James Waters, late apprentice of William Burner. (9)

James Waters paid his dues of two shillings, 8 pence to the Company in 1595 and continued through 1617, the year he died. There is a Samuel Waters listed in 1596 as being in arrears two and one half years. (10)

At the Quarter Court held April 29, 1600, "there is found divers fault in the scales and weights belonging to those whose names be under written and according to the ordinances of this hall they are fined at 40 shillings apiece to amend the same:

Mr. Francis Stitch, Mr. Thomas Edwards, William Popgrorne and Robert Cosbe.

And for the like offence of those who did not appear they are fined at 40 shillings apiece and for not appearing after warning 12 pence apiece:

Francis Curkor, Merchabll Pye, Marko Porte, James Waters, Nathaniel Lone and John Richardson." (11)

At a Quarter Court held August 18, 1601, James Waters, among others, was fined six shillings, eight pence which he gave to the Master Warden. The entry goes on to state "at the next quarter court the Company will have further consideration of them in respect it is their sixth offence (defective weights)."

At a court held on June 24, 1602 James Waters was named as suretie of 100 pounds bequested by Mrs. Dane for the benefit of Clement Burkes, Richard Waters and Jonathan Wellington, drapers. (13)

At a court held September 20, 1606, it is ordered that James Waters with his sureties, Jonathan

Wellington and Richard Waters, drapers, Ambrose Jennings, cordwainer, shall have 50 pounds of Master Heydon's bequest for four years. (14)

At a court held February 13, 1606 it was ordered that James Waters, Ironmonger with his sureties Richard Waters, draper and James Chapman, clothmaker in Abchurch Lane shall have 50 pounds of Master Alderman Heydon's bequest for four years. (15)

At a quarter court held January 15, 1610, James Waters is ordered to pay in the 50 pounds now due, and where he requestith the same it is ordered that he stands suitor again, and if no other come in, then he to have the same again upon good sureties. (16)

James Waters, Ironmonger, suitor at the court held in April, 1611 for the 50 pounds lately paid by him upon the securities of William Fynch, salter, and William Hudson, brownbaker, and it was ordered that the said Hudson be inquired of.

At the court held May 31, 1611 James Waters is ordered to have the 50 pounds, part of the one hundred given by Alderman Heydon for four years upon the securitie of William Finch, salter, John Ball, ironmonger and William Hudson, brownbaker.

The above entries taken from the Ironmongers' Court Book give evidence of James' friends and working associates and an indication that his financial condition was substantially influenced by the lending policies of the Company



James Waters and Phebe Manning

James probably married Phebe Manning, daughter of George Manning, soon after he became a freeman. Evidence for this conclusion is contained in the will of Phebe's brother, William Manning of London. It was written on February 27, 1596 and he bequeaths to his sister, Phebe Waters, five pounds of lawfull money of England to be paid unto her within one year after his death, "and if she shall far long live Jacob's the same to return unto my executors hereunder named." William mentions his brothers, John and Thomas as well as cousin Elizabeth Lambert. The will was proved in 1608. (19)

Phebe Manning's father, George Manning of Downe, Kent, died in 1583. His will mentions his wife, Johan, and sons, Thomas, John, George, William and Peter. George and William "should be sent to writing school for one year, then apprenticed for eight years and then receive 50 pounds each. Thomas and John should be given 50 pounds when their apprenticeship expires." He mentions his daughters, Elizabeth Greene, Anne Brownhall, Katherine Underhill, Joan Welch, Dorothie and Phebe. Dorothie was to get 30 pounds when she married. Phebe was to be sent to school under the tuition of Dorothie during the term of six years and was to receive 30 pounds when she married. He mentions brothers, John and Henry. The overseers of the will were Richard Brownhall, Hugh Underhill and Griffin Greene. (20)

The Manning Family - Connection to Geoffrey Chaucer

The Mannings were the most distinguished of the early families of Downe. Before settling in Downe they were in the neighboring parish of Cudham, where their ancestry is traced back to Simon Manning who went to the crusades under Richard the first. A second Simon Manning married a relative of the poet Geoffrey Chaucer and in 1382 witnessed a deed relating to land in Downe parish. Their son, John, owned land there in 1405, married Juliana Brockhill Wallys, a widow, and died in 1436. Their son, John, had a son, Hugh Manning, who settled in St. Mar Cray. Hugh's son, John, married Agnes Petley and he is the first of the Mannings who is specified in land transactions as "of Downe". This John Manning died in 1542. His eldest son, George, married Joan Walls in the following year and spent the whole of his life in Downe. His brother, Henry, moved to Greenwich in 1560. George and Joan had twelve children in sixteen years of whom four died as infants. After this they had three more, Phebe, George and William, who were not baptized at Downe. (21)

Downe Parish Register

Baptisms:

Anne, daughter of George Manning,	October 22, 1545	<i>Source & Bmille</i>
Joane, same	January 30, 1546	<i>4000</i>
Katherine, same	April 3, 1548	<i>1000</i> <i>Griffin</i> <i>Hugh Underhill</i> <i>Mr. Richard Greene</i>
Humphrey, son of George Manning,	February 4, 1549	
Peter, same	August 6, 1553	
Elizabeth, daughter of George Manning,	August 6, 1554	<i>Green</i>
John and John, sons of George Manning,	June 20, 1555	
Nicholas, same	July 9, 1557	
Doritie, daughter of George Manning,	October 3, 1558	<i>Webb</i>
John, son of George Manning,	July 8, 1560	
Thomas, same	January 25, 1561	
<i>Phebe</i>		

Marriages:

George Manning married Joan Walls August 23, 1543

Anne Manning married Thomas Lambert November 25, 1563

Elizabeth Manning married Griffin Greene November 26, 1582

Burials:

Rose, daughter of George Manning, August 6, 1554

John and John, sons of George Manning, June 20, 1555

Nicholas, son of George Manning, October 28, 1557

George Manning, May 8, 1582

✓ Joan Manning, widow, June 5, 1582 (22)

In Downe there is still standing the house that was once occupied by members of the Manning family. It is presently a national memorial known as Darwin's house where Charles Darwin lived and worked for forty years. Down House is one quarter mile south of the village. The spelling of its name preserves that in use by Darwin and before his time, when the Ordnance Survey map and general practice agreed to the form without the final "e". The story goes that the use of that letter was resumed at the instance of the post office authorities, in order to avoid confusion with County Down in Ireland. (21)

Phebe's sister, Dorothea, married John Webb. His will was written on April 29, 1624 and proved February 1, 1625. (23) He lived at East Wickham, Kent, and bequeathed his house at Welling to his wife, Dorothy. He names sons Peter, John and Oliph, the eldest, and daughters Anne Best and Jane Barnard. His overseers were "my beloved brother in law Thomas Manning and William Plasse." They were also witnesses to the will. The parish register for Greenwich (1615-1636) lists the burial of John Webbe, a man, on February 1, 1625.

Dorothea Webb's will was written November 17, 1634 and proved in January 1634 (old style calendar). She was of Erith parish and 76 years of age when she bequeathed household items to her son, John, and the rest of her estate to her daughter's husband, Henry Barnard, whom she named sole executor. (24)

St. Botolph Aldgate Parish, London

John Stow wrote his "Survey of London" in 1598 and describes the parish church of St. Botolph in a large cemetery or churchyard. "This church hath been lately new built at the special charges of the priors of the Holy Trinity; patrons thereof, as it appeareth by the arms of that house, engraven on the stone work. The parishioners of this parish being of late years mightily increased, the church is pestered with lofts and seats for them." (25)

The parish manuscripts of St. Botolph Aldgate are deposited at Guildhall Library in London. They contain references to a Waters family as early as November 23, 1558 when a Richard Waters married Jane Netters. The first christening listed for Waters is Atkelis, son of William, on March 19, 1576, followed by Frederick, son of Richard, on April 7, 1577. James Waters is first mentioned in the parish register on November 30, 1600, when his son, John, was christened. James is described as a citizen and ironmonger. The infant, John, died and was buried January 28, 1601. These dates are based on the old style calendar and we see that John lived about fourteen months. (27) Phebe was christened December 6, 1602 and buried December 7, 1603. The parish register lists other children of James. These were Sarah, buried September 21, 1603

mi before 1600
1600

and Martha who was buried October 8, 1603. (28) These children evidently were victims of the plague. Richard, son of James, was christened March 3, 1604. (29)

The plague of 1603 is described by F. P. Wilson. It was the result of unsanitary conditions and extensive trade with the countries of Europe, especially Holland. The poor in the more seriously infected parishes suffered great distress. In June 1603, ten guineas were voted for the poor of St. Botolph Aldgate, the money to be paid in weekly doles of 30 shillings. All public meetings and feasts in London were postponed. Queen Elizabeth had died on March 24 and the coronation of James took place in London; he promptly returned to Hampton Court to avoid infection. Plague deaths showed an increase of more than one thousand a week in the summer months and many townspeople left London. Regular doctors deserted the city but plenty of imposters sprang up to fill their places. The plague continued in the fall putting an end to export trade and curtailing domestic trade. The theaters were closed for nearly a year. Taxes, duties, customs, all brought in nothing; the treasury was penniless. Between December 1602 and December 1603, 34,244 people died; of these, 30,578 died of the plague. In St. Botolph Aldgate parish the number who died from plague was 1,280. By December 1603 people began to return to London. The plague continued but at a lower mortality rate from 1604 to 1611. During those years Shakespeare wrote the tragedies which deal with the depths of human suffering. But he also wrote romantic comedies. (30)

Vestry Minutes of St. Botolph Aldgate

The vestry minutes reveal that on April 1, 1608 it was agreed that James Waters and others be sidemen for the next year for East Smithfield. James' signature is shown at the end of the minutes written May 2, 1608. He continued as a vestryman in 1609, 1610 and 1611. On September 19, 1611 John Briggs became curate to St. Botolph Aldgate; he is named in James' will. At the vestry meeting on April 8, 1613 William Plasse was named a sideman. James does not appear in the vestry minutes of meetings in 1615, but William Plasse and Samuel Rowlands are listed. Samuel Rowlands is named in James' will. James was chosen churchwarden at the vestry meeting of April 4, 1616. Samuel Rowlands was named churchwarden on April 25, 1617. The last vestry minutes showing James were written October 31, 1617. See next page for a copy of these minutes. At the meeting held December 30, 1617, William Plasse and Samuel Rowlands are listed, but James is not. The entry for the meeting dated April 10, 1618 states "at the vestry named John Atkinson and Samuel Rowlands (in ye behalf of James Waters, late churchwarden deceased)----." William Plasse was named churchwarden at this meeting. He married Phebe Waters, James' widow, in February 1618, almost a year later. (31)

Churchwardens Accounts for St. Botolph Aldgate

The record of payments for burial of James' children appears in the Churchwardens Accounts. "On January 25, 1601 received pay at the burial of John Walters, a child, for the grounds in the south churchyard." On October 7, 1603, payment was received for the burial of Phebe Walters for the common grounds, coffined. On October 8, 1603, payment was received for the burial of Martha Walters for the common grounds. (32)

William Plasse

In the Parish Clerk's Memos, William Plasse is named as scavenger for High Street in December, 1595. (33) His first banns to marry Marjerie Smith were read July 4, 1596; the second banns on July 11, the third banns on July 17, and they were married July 19, 1596. "Mary Plas,

At a Vestrey shoulde the xxxjth day of October. Anno Domini 1617. 9

Item it was decreed at the vestrey within-named, That there shall be, & paid for the use of the parish aforesaid, for every parishioner that shall be buried in the New Buriall place next unto Rosemarie lane (that is about the Age of seven yeares, if he worpe be Coffind, two shillinge

Item, That there shall be paid, for every parishioner that shall be buried in the said place, that is under the Age of seven yeares, if the Corpes be Coffind, Twelvet pence, for the use of the parish,

Also, it was decreed at the said vestrey, That no person whatsoever, that is to be Married at our parish Church, shall at no time hereafter have any offeringe there, upon any Sabbath day when the Holy Communion is to be Celebrated there. neither with Basons nor other wise, because such daies are appointed for Collections for the poore of the parish. And for the Confirmation of these Orders and decrees aforesaid, All the said vestrey-men at this time assembled, have herewith sett their handes,

For the Ward of Portsoken,

Thomas Winton Deane
John Carpenter

The mark E W of Edward Owen

will + pite

Mark

The Mark of John & Thomas
William Winton

The Mark of R K Robert Hall

John Scott

John Winton

For the Libertie of East Smithfield.

John Bristow

John Bristow

John Bristow

John Bristow

James Winton

John Winton

Samuel Rowlands

John Winton

daughter of William Plas, a gunmaker dwelling in East Smithfield, was christened June 5, 1597." (34) Nathaniel Plasse, son of William Plasse, gunmaker, was christened November 16, 1600. (35) In parish manuscript 9220 there is a listing for Ruthe Plasse, daughter of William, who was christened December 25, 1603. This Ruthe could be Rejoice who married Richard Waters, son of James. "Margarie Plasse, wife of William Plasse, a snaphaunce maker for gunns, was buried August 4, 1618." (36)

James Waters' Burial

"James Waters, citizen and ironmonger who dwelt in East Smithfield, and was one of the churchwardens of our parish, was buried the second day of February 1617, who was buried in the south churchyard, a knell with the great bell." (37) The churchwardens' accounts of February 2, 1617 describe a similar entry - "received (payment) the second day for the burial of James Waters one of our churchwardens who was buried in the south churchyard and had the Black cloth and a knell with the Great Bell." (38)

Civil Records of James Waters

At the Public Record Office on Chancery Lane in London James Waters is listed on a parchment subsidy roll for Ossulstone Hundred dated September 24, 1600. He was living in East Smithfield and was taxed 3 pounds, 8 shillings. He was not listed in the 1598 roll. (39)

The Middlesex County Records contain a reference to James on December 20, 1608. From the Gaol Delivery Register Roll, "Recognizances, taken before Sir William Waad, knt. J.P. Lt. of the Tower of London, of Daniel Hitch of Whitechappell, yeoman and James Waters of Eastsmythfeilde ironmonger in the sum of 10 pounds each and of William Claiton of Eastsmythfeilde victualler, in the sum of 20 pounds; for the appearance of the said William Claiton at the next session of the Peace, to answer for sufferinge playes to be played in his house in the night season." (40)

Men Mentioned in James Waters' Will

John Briggs, parson of St. Botolph Aldgate, became curate in 1611. Visiting ministers would sometimes preach suggesting his sermons were not popular in the parish. (41)

Samuel Rowlands, partner to James, was named a churchwarden on April 25, 1617. He was earlier a sideman and a vestryman at St. Botolph Aldgate. (42) The administration of his estate was in the Archdeaconry Court of London on April 21, 1627. (43)

Ambrose Jennings, whom James named as "my most trusted and most loving friend", was a citizen and cordwainer of London. He was in partnership with William Crosse of London and his brother, Abraham Jennings of Plymouth for the purpose of exporting goods to New England in 1624. (44) His will, dated May 28, 1625, names his wife, Hester. (45)

The full text of James Waters' will appears on the following page. The register copy may be seen at the Public Record Office on Chancery Lane, London.

The Will of James Waters

In the name of God, Amen. The seaventeenth day of May Anno Dm 1617. And in the fifteenth year of the raigne of our Sovereign Lorde James, by the grace of God, Kinge of England, Franncce and Ireland, Defender of the faith, and of Scotland the fiftyith: I, James Waters of the parish of St. Buttolph without Algate London and cittizen and Ironmonger of London beinge in good and perfect health mynde and memory laude and pray, so I therefore give unto Almytie God and weighing and considering with my self the mutabilitie of this life and the certeyntie of death and to the end I may be better prepared and settled in my mynde whensoever ye shall please God to call me out of this fraile and wretched life, I do by the permission of God make and declare this my present testament wherein is contained my last will in manner and forme followinge, that is to say, First and above all thinges I comende my soule into the handes of Almightye God hopinge and assuredlie beleevinge through the death and passion of Jesus Christ to be saved and to obtain permission and forgiveness of all my sinnes, my bodie I comitt to the earth from whence it came to be buried in the south church yard of the parish church of St. Buttolph without Algate aforesaid whereof, I am a parishioner in or near the place where my children do lye buried. And as concerning all such worthwhile goods and chattills as God hath blessed me and at the tyme of my decease shall bless me with all, I will the same shall be devided into equal partes and portons accordinge to the laudable custom of the City of London, one full third parte whereof I give and bequeath unto my lovinge wife Phebe Waters, one full third part I give and bequeath unto my lovinge childe Richard Waters and the other third parte thereof I reserve to myselfe out of which I give and bequeath theise legacies followinge, that is to saye, I give and bequeath unto my lovinge frende Mr. John Briggs, parson of the parish church of St. Buttolph aforesaid the some of twenty shillings of lawfull English money to the end he shall preache at my funerall. Item, I give and bequeath to and amongst the poore people inhabitinge within the libertie of East Smithfeild in the parish aforesaid the some of twenty five shillings eight pence sterling to be given by my lovinge partner Samuell Rowlands and the collector for the poore of the said parish for the tyme beinge where most needs to them shall approuve. Item, I give and bequeath unto my most trusted and most lovinge frend Mr. Ambrose Jennings, citizen and cordwainer of London the some of twenty five shillings and eight pence of lawfull English money to buy him a ringe. Item, I give and bequeath unto my lovinge partner Samuell Rowlands the some of twenty five shillings and eight pence of like lawfull English money to buy him a ringe, both which ringes I desire my said two frends to weare in remembrance of me. And I will that their severall legacies shallbe payd unto them within one moneth next after my decease. Item, I give and bequeath unto Leonard Fingerman of East Smithfield aforesaid shoemaker my cultfusian suite of apparell and one payer of wollen stockings. Item, I give and bequeath unto Arthur Merryall of Stratford Bow, in the countie of Middlesex, smyth, my playne suite of fusian. The rest and residue of all and singular my goods and chattells before herein not given nor bequeathed, I fullie and wholie give and bequeath unto my lovinge wife Phebe Waters and my said sonne Richard Waters whome I make and doe ordayne jointly Executors of this my last will and testament. And I doe nominate and appointe my foresaid lovinge frendes Mr. Ambrose Jennings and Samuell Rowlands overseers of this my last will desiringe them to see the same dulye apointed as my trust is in them. And I will that the portion of my said sonne's shall be and remaine in the handes of Mr. Ambrose Jennings untill my said sonne shall accomplish the age of twentie and one yeares (if the said Ambrose Jennings shall be longe live) to the end he may make the most proffitt thereof to the use of my sonne. And in case it shall please God to call the said Ambrose Jennings out of this life before

12

James Waters' Will Continued

my said sonne shall accomplish the age of twentie and one yeares that then within three monthes next after the decease of the said Ambrose the said portion of my sonne shall be payd by his executors into the Chamber of London. And I do by this presents revoke and dissolve of all former willes and bequeaths by me in any wise heretofore made, and this to stand for and as my last will and testament. In witness whereof to this my present testament and last will, I the said James Waters have sett my hand and seale, dated the day and yeare first above written. Sealed and declared by the within named James Waters for and as the last will of the said James the day of the date within written in the presence of Richard Greene, Sr. and Robert Kitchen, scrivener.

The will was proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury on February 6, 1617. At that time the first day of the year was March 25, and it remained so until 1752. (46)

Phebe Waters Marries William Plasse

From extracts of Marriage Licenses Granted by the Bishops of London 1598-1639, on February 8, 1618, "William Plasse of St. Botulphes without Aldgate, London, gunmaker, and a widower, aged 48 yeres or thereabout and did alleg that he intended to marrie with Phebe Waters, widowe, of the same parish aged 47 years or thereabout, the relicte of James Waters, Iremonger, deceased a yere since, and of the truthe of the premisses as also that he knoweth of noe lawfull lett or impediment by reason of anie precontracts or otherwise to hinder this intended marriage he made faiethe and desired license for them to be married together in the parish church of St. Botulphe aforesaid." (47) The marriage took place at St. Botolph Aldgate on February 23, 1618. (48)

16¹⁸
47
—
1

16¹⁸
47
—
15 71 Phebe
Aint

JAMES WATERS' REFERENCES

- (1) St. Giles Cripplegate Parish Register, MS 6419/1 at Guildhall Library, London
- (2) St. Mary Abchurch Parish Register, MS 7666 at Guildhall Library
- (3) Harleian Society, Volume 72 at Guildhall Library
- (4) Ironmongers' Court Book, 1555, page 168 at Guildhall Library
- (5) From a wall plaque at Ironmongers' Hall, Barbican, London
- (6) T.C. Noble, "A Brief History of the Worshipful Company of Ironmongers, London 1351-1889" at Guildhall Library
- (7) J.M. Adams Beck, "The Ironmongers' Company, An Historical Note", London 1954
- (8) Will of John Ball, Citizen and Ironmonger of St. Botolph Billingsgate, 1625 in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 5 Clarke at the Public Record Office, Chancery Lane
- (9) Ironmongers' Court Book, 1555, page 213
- (10) Yeomanry Quarterage Book of the Ironmongers' Company 1593-1628 at Guildhall Library
- (11) Ironmongers' Court Book, 1555, page 260A
- (12) Same, page 272A
- (13) Same, page 278A
- (14) Ironmongers' Court Book, MS 16967/2, page 31B at Guildhall Library
- (15) Same, page 33B
- (16) Same, page 90
- (17) Same, page 96B
- (18) Same, page 97
- (19) Will of William Manning, London, 1608, P.C.C. 18 Windebank, page 141
- (20) Will of George Manning, Downe, Kent, 1583, P.C.C. 27 Rowe, page 212
- (21) O.J.R. Howarth and Eleanor K. Howarth, "A History of Darwin's Parish, Downe, Kent, 1933
- (22) Downe, Kent Parish Register at the Kent County Record Office, Maidstone, the College of Arms, London and MS 33914 at the British Museum Library
- (23) Will of John Webb of East Wickham, Kent, 1625, Rochester Wills, Volume 21, folio 176 at the Kent County Record Office, Maidstone
- (24) Will of Dorothie Webb, of Erith, Kent, 1634, Rochester Wills, folio 42
- (25) John Stow, "Survey of London, 1598", an Everyman Paperback Book, 1970
- (26) St. Botolph Aldgate Parish Register, MS 9233 and MS 9235/2
- (27) March 25, 1601 was the first day of the year 1601.
- (28) St. Botolph Aldgate Parish Register, MS 9222/1 and MS 9235/2
- (29) Same, MS 9220 and MS 9223
- (30) F.P. Wilson, "The Plague in Shakespeare's London" at Guildhall Library
- (31) Vestry Minutes of St. Botolph Aldgate, MS 9236 at Guildhall Library
- (32) St. Botolph Aldgate Parish Register, MS 9235/2
- (33) Parish Clerk's Memos (1594-96 and 1598-1600), MS 9234/5 at Guildhall Library
- (34) Same, 1596-97, MS 9234/6
- (35) St. Botolph Aldgate Parish Register, Baptisms 1594-1607, MS 9223
- (36) Same, MS 9233
- (37) Parish Clerk's Memos, 1616-1625, MS 9234/8, page 39
- (38) St. Botolph Aldgate Parish Register, MS 9235/2
- (39) Lay Subsidy Rolls, E.179, 142/234, 1600, at Public Record Office, Chancery Lane
- (40) Calendar of Sessions, Middlesex County Records (Old Series), Volume 2, page 47
- (41) Dorothy Ann Williams, "London Puritism: The Parish of St. Botolph Without Aldgate" 1968 at Guildhall Library

References for James Waters (continued)

- (42) Vestry Minutes of St. Botolph Aldgate, Bodleian Library, Oxford
- (43) Administration of Samuel Rowlands, 1627, Archdeaconry Court of London, AB6, at Guildhall Library
- (44) Wilbur D. Spencer, "Pioneers on Maine Rivers", 1930 at Stanford Library
- (45) Will of Ambrose Jennings, May 28, 1625, P.C.C. 66 Clarke at the Public Record Office, Chancery Lane
- (46) Will of James Waters, May 17, 1617, P.C.C. 17 Meade
- (47) Essex Institute Historical Collections, Volume 28, 1891, Henry F. Waters, "Extracts From Marriage Licenses Granted by the Bishop of London 1598-1639".
- (48) St. Botolph Aldgate Parish Register, MS 9220

RICHARD WATERS, son of James and Phebe, was baptized at St. Botolph Aldgate, London on March 3, 1604. Records of Richard's marriage have not been found, but it is believed that he married Joyce or Rejoice Plasse, daughter of William Plasse, his step-father. No record of baptism has been found for Joyce, but Ruthe Plasse, daughter to William was christened December 25, 1603 at St. Botolph Aldgate, London. Richard's descendants follow:

- 1. William 1626
- 2. Martha
- 3. Sara (1630-1700) X 1651 Joshua Rea
- 4. Phebe d. 1674 X 1658 Thomas West
- 5. JOHN (1640-1708) X 1663 Sarah Tompkins 1642 see next chapter
- 6. Elizabeth (1642-62)
- 7. Abigail 1645 X 1669 William Punchard
- 8. Ezekiel 1647
- 9. Mary X 1667 Clement English/ John Stephens
- 10. James X 1669 Mary Stalworthy/1695 Rachel Hart
- 11. Susana 1649 X 1673 Benedict Pulsiver
- 12. Hannah 1652 X 1673 Joseph Stricker

RICHARD WATERS (1604-1677)

Richard Waters, son of James and Phebe, is listed in the parish register of St. Botolph Aldgate, London under christenings for March 3, 1604. (1) The next reference to Richard appears in the records of the Ironmongers Company dated April 26, 1626 when he was admitted into the freedom of the company by patrimony and took his oath. (2) The Ironmongers Cash Book lists various payments by Richard between 1625 and 1636 in which year his name is crossed off the roster. Then in 1637 through 1651 Richard is listed as owing money to the company, perhaps as the result of a loan obtained from them. (3) At a court on November 18, 1634, "George Richardson, late apprentice to Richard Waters, was admitted into the freedom of this company." (4)

Richard's son, William, is listed in the parish register of St. Botolph Aldgate. It states that on December 1, 1626 William Waters, son of Richard of Eastsmithfield, was christened. (5)

✓ In 1632 Richard's cousin, Henry Manning, left him a bequest of ten shillings. Richard witnessed this will. (6) Henry Manning was the son of Peter Manning, Phebe's brother. ✓

Why Did Richard Waters Emigrate to New England?

Richard and his father-in-law, William Plasse, may have read William Wood's "New England Prospect", first published in London in 1629 and again in 1634, 1635, 1637 and 1639. Wood described settlements including Salem and Indian Villages in New England, the bays and harbors, the weather and seasons of the year, saying "the climate is good for Englishmen." He wrote "there is iron stone, and the Indians informe us that they can lead us to the mountains of blacke lead, and have shown us lead ore." Wood further wrote "it will not be amisse to shew you what men be most fit for these plantations. First, men of good working and contriving heads, a well experienced commonwealth man for the good of the body politicke in matters of advice and counsell, a well skilled and industrious husbandman, for tillage and improvements of grounds; an ingenious carpenter, a cunning joyner, a handie cooper, and a good brick maker, a tyler and a smith, a leather dresser, a gardner and a taylour: one that hath good skill in the trade of fishing is of special use, and so is a good fowler. If there be any that hath skill in any of these trades, if he can transport himselfe, he needs not feare but he may improve his time and endeavors to his own benefit and comfort."

Wood advised "lest I forget a thing of so great importance, no man must neglect to provide for himselfe, or those belonging to him, his munition for the defence of himselfe and the countrey. For there is no man there that beares a head, but that beares military armes: even boyes of fourteene years of age are practised with men in militarie discipline, every three weeks." He claimed that immigrants should bring provision for a year and a half so they would not "feare want until they can by industry and labour provide for their living". He advised that they "bring on their voyage salt, beef, pork, salt fish, butter, cheese, pease, pottage water grewell, biskets and beere, conserves and claret wine--it is a very comfortable thing for the stomache or such as are sea sicke. Prunes are good to be stewed, sugar for many things, eggs, bacon, rise, poultry and some weather sheep to kill aboard the ship. Baked meats will keep about a week or nine days at sea. Juice of lemons well put up is good to either prevent or cure the scurvy." (7)

A study of the probate records indicate two primary reasons why immigration to Essex County, Massachusetts might have seemed desirable in the 17th century: 1. financial success in all occupations, and 2. there was no group which pre-empted the ownership of land or the exercise

of political power. As a result there existed a chance for economic independence and with it the opportunity for a degree of social and political equality which could not be attained in England at that time. (8)

Salem: Richard Waters' Home

In 1606 a joint stock company was organized in London and Plymouth, England, to colonize America. The London branch was to have control of the coast 34 to 38 degrees north comprising Virginia, and the Plymouth branch from 41 to 45 degrees north comprising New England. The intervening territory was to belong to the company which would first plant a self-sustaining colony, but was meanwhile seized by the Dutch. Roger Conant gathered together a group of men including John Balch, John Woodbury and Peter Palfrey and in 1626 settled on the Salem peninsula then called Naumkeag. John Endecott and other men of means came to Salem in 1628. These "old planters" with their families numbered about 35.

The General Court in Boston had jurisdiction over local towns until March 1636 when towns like Salem were vested with the control of their own affairs and quarterly courts were set up in the various localities. Salem freemen had the power to dispose of their own land, to grant lots, levy penalties, choose their officers and surveyors, tax collectors and treasurers. The earliest record of the town is the Book of Grants containing transcripts from the records of all matters pertaining to land, beginning October 1, 1634, and the Book of Records which begins December 26, 1636 containing all the proceedings of the town. Hardly had the town records begun before the question of roads came to the fore. It was agreed to leave room for highways for carts to bring home wood. This probably described the reservation for Essex Street in Salem. The lot next to Captain Endecott's was reserved for a highway four pole broad (66 feet) and this is Washington Street. One of the first problems of the town was how to handle the cattle. Land in the west of town was for common pasture and cow houses were built on the South River and on Endecott's farm. There were regulations about damage by the cattle. The farmer's cows were to be taxed if kept on the town pastures and the town cows were to pay if they encroached on the farms. (9)

There were two groups of inhabitants of Salem in these early days; the immigrants from the west country of England who had great influence from 1630 to 1633, and the East Anglia immigrants who started to arrive in 1633 reaching a peak in 1635 and tapering off through 1638. Richard Waters was a late comer in this second group. Many of the East Anglians were "separatists", that is, rejecting the Church of England doctrine entirely as opposed to the Puritan ideal which was a middle ground. In December 1636 Hugh Peter, the Salem Church pastor, wrote a new covenant that condemned separatist behaviour and reaffirmed the Puritan ideal. The members of the church were to sign it or be excommunicated. (10)

In January 1635 the town fathers decided that "the least family shall have ten acres, but greater families may have more, according to their numbers." But by January 1637 the new immigrants were so numerous that the selectmen rescinded the guarantee and determined that "such lots are to be set out according to the descretion of the town". The land division of 1636 defined trends that dated from 1634 and blocked the town's lands out into three major segments: peninsula, fields and farms. As early as February 1636 (the last month of the year) west country small landowners were settling where the Old Planters were, across the harbor, while the East Anglicans organized the peninsula and the north and south fields for open field farming. (11)

Richard Waters' and William Plasse's Land in Salem

✓ The Book of Records dated December 26, 1636 to July 12, 1637 contains a listing for Richard Waters granting him ten acres.

✓ January 2, 1636 - John Abbie is received "for inhabitant and is to have one acre lott for a house next beyond the Gunsmiths."

✓ July 4, 1637 - At a town meeting "William Plaise requested a tenne acre lott and it was granted."

✓ August 21, 1637 - At a town meeting "it's ordered that Mr. Connant's house, ground and half acre of corne standing on same next unto Mr. Jon. Fisk shalbe bought by the Towne forould Mr. William Plaise and the Towne to mak payment thereof. It's ordered that the house of Mr. Connant's situated next unto Mr. Jn. Fisk with halfe acre ground with the corne now standing thereon, is appointed by this meeting for the use of William Plase and his wife that now is, to them for the time of their life and what costs the said Wm. Plase shalbe att for his use and behouefe the Towne at the end of ther life shalbe willing to allow his eyers executors or assigns the value that the same shalbe worth, voted."

✓ December 25, 1637 - In the handwriting of Roger Conant, the town record contains a list of divisions of the marsh and meadowlands. Names appearing in a column include Wm. Hathorne who received one acre for his family of ten persons. Mr. Waters received three quarters acre for his family of five. Will Plais received one half acre for his family of two. ✓

✓ March 31, 1638 - "It is agreed that Mr. Hathorne shall have all the marsh ground lying and being before the gunsmithes house or lott as also the medow or marsh along to the little brooke betwixt the two hills, in consideration of his many imployments for towne and countrie so long as he is continued in such affaires, or the like."

✓ April 23, 1638 - "Granted to Wm. Hathorne, all that salt marsh lying along the South river on the west side from the house of Richard Waters, to the little brooke called the frost fish brooke coming forth between the two hills, being about 3 or 4 acres and this was granted to him and his heirs forever." (12) The waters of the pastures nearer town discharge through Frost Fish Brooke into the Mill Pond, just above the cliffs in Stearne's Pasture opposite Castle Hill. (13) These town records suggest that Richard Waters lived first in the area of Salem now bounded by Washington, Norman, Summer and Gedney Streets.

Extracts from records kept by Reverend John Fiske list Richard Waters as a member of the First Church of Salem in 1637. (14)

✓ Richard Waters mentioned in an early will

✓ December 17, 1638 - Richard Hafeeld of Ipswich in New England wrote a will naming Richard as owing two pounds, ten shillings. (15)

Richard Waters Becomes a Freeman

From the Salem Quarterly Court Records and Files: Richard Waters is listed below the oath of a freeman noted on the last page of the first book of court records - "June Court 62". (16) He is on a list of persons made free on May 22, 1639 in the records of the Massachusetts Bay Company. (17)

William Plasse in Salem*is Phebe dead by now?*

✓ December 4, 1643 - At a general town meeting a committee was appointed to "provide for William Plaise a convenient room to worke in, and to sett up a forge for him and wood and other necessities for him, to the value of four pounds to be paid out of this rate which is to be made, 25 pounds and forthwith leavyed."

✓ September 30, 1644 - At a general town meeting "William Plaise is ordered to have out of the last rate of 53 pounds the some of 40 shillings to buy him some cloth."

✓ November 18, 1645 - At a town meeting "Granted a bill of 5 pounds to Good: Plaise."

✓ April 15, 1646 - William died at the home of Thomas Weekes.

April 20, 1646 - At a meeting of the seven selectmen, "Mr. Bartholomew and Peter Palfry *Phebe dead before 1646* are to prise the goods of William Plaise. Ordered that the towne is to beare 29 shillings of the chardges towards William Plais his keeping in his sickness and his buriall, and the rest is to be paid by Richard Waters. The whole amount is 2 pounds, 19 shillings, 6 pence." (18)

✓ The Inventory of the Estate of William Plasse

One fetherbedd, twoe fether bolsters, one great Bible, one psalme booke, one ould Chest, tooles that Richard Walters hath that he must give accompt of.

"And whereas ffyve pownds was given to the sd Plasse by the Towne which I gathered up in Corne for him, I did thus Discharge it, viz: Imprimis By so much unto my self for dyett & elce yt I had Laid out befor ye Towne granted him 5 li. ye some of 2 li. & out of the 3 li. Left I pd for 1 pr shoes, 6 s.; cloth to make him a Capp, 3 s. 6 d.; a pair of stockings, 2 s. 4 d.; for steele Iron & Cole, 4 s.; total 2 li. 15 s. 10d.; spent in dyett, 2 li. 4 s. 2 d.; total 5 li."

In hands of Richard Walters: One chere & stoole, one anvile, 2 vices, one smale beakhorne, 2 hamers, one smale and one great; one old pair of Bellows, 18 files, 1 pr. vice Tongs, 1 pr. snuffers with a bras chayne & 3 kegs, 2 storne plates, 2 pr. & 1/2 of forging tongs, 2 match Locks, 2 stock nail tooles, 2 brok Iron bolsters & a drill boxe, 7 forging hott punches, 2 Iron wrenches, 1 brass Lampe, 1 litle hackhamer, 2 pan bores & galloes, 25 smale Could punches, 1 burnishying steele & a harth staff, 3 hartopps part. brok, 1 old pr. mittins, 1 turne vice, 5 fil hafts & a flatt bord, 10 li.; 8 oz of old bushell Iron, 1 li., 8 oz of Lead, one wrench for breech pl.

✓ Charges of Thomas Weekes for William Plasse in his sickness: For Veale & Fowle, 5 s. 2 d.; sugar, 4 s. 9 d.; Bread, 1 s. 2 d.; beare, 1 s. 7 d.; more for egges, 6 d.; spices, 6 d.; 2 weekes board before he fell sick, 9 s.; for a debt that I am ingaged to Goodman Rumball before he fell sick, 3 s. 6d.; coffin, 6 s.; bread and beare att his buryinge, 5 s.; for Goodwife Ager, 1 s.; for the Grave makeinge, 1 s.; for wood & aleven dayes tendance as you maye thinke meete, 2 li. 10s. 2 d.; more the towne is willing to allowe him for buriall & atendance of him, 9 s. 10 d.; total 3 li. (19)

20

John Waters was baptized November 27, 1640. The printed Salem Vital Records list at the end of the Waters' births, "_____, ch. Richard baptized 27th day, 9th month, 1640" according to church records. (20) See next chapter.

✓ Joyce Waters, wife of Richard, became a member of the First Church of Salem in 1641. (21)

Richard Waters in Salem Court Records

September 9, 1652 - Richard Waters vs. Francis Nurce at the Salem Quarterly Court claiming trespassing. (22)

September 30, 1657 - Richard Waters was a witness to the will of Thomas Scudder. (23)

Richard's Land Negotiations

February 25, 1653 - Richard Waters of Salem, Gunsmith "sold to Walter Price for six pounds one tenne acre lott in the South feild in Salem." (24) This was probably the original ten acres Richard was granted when he first arrived in Salem. He had apparently sold it first to John Talby but no deed passed between them. (25)

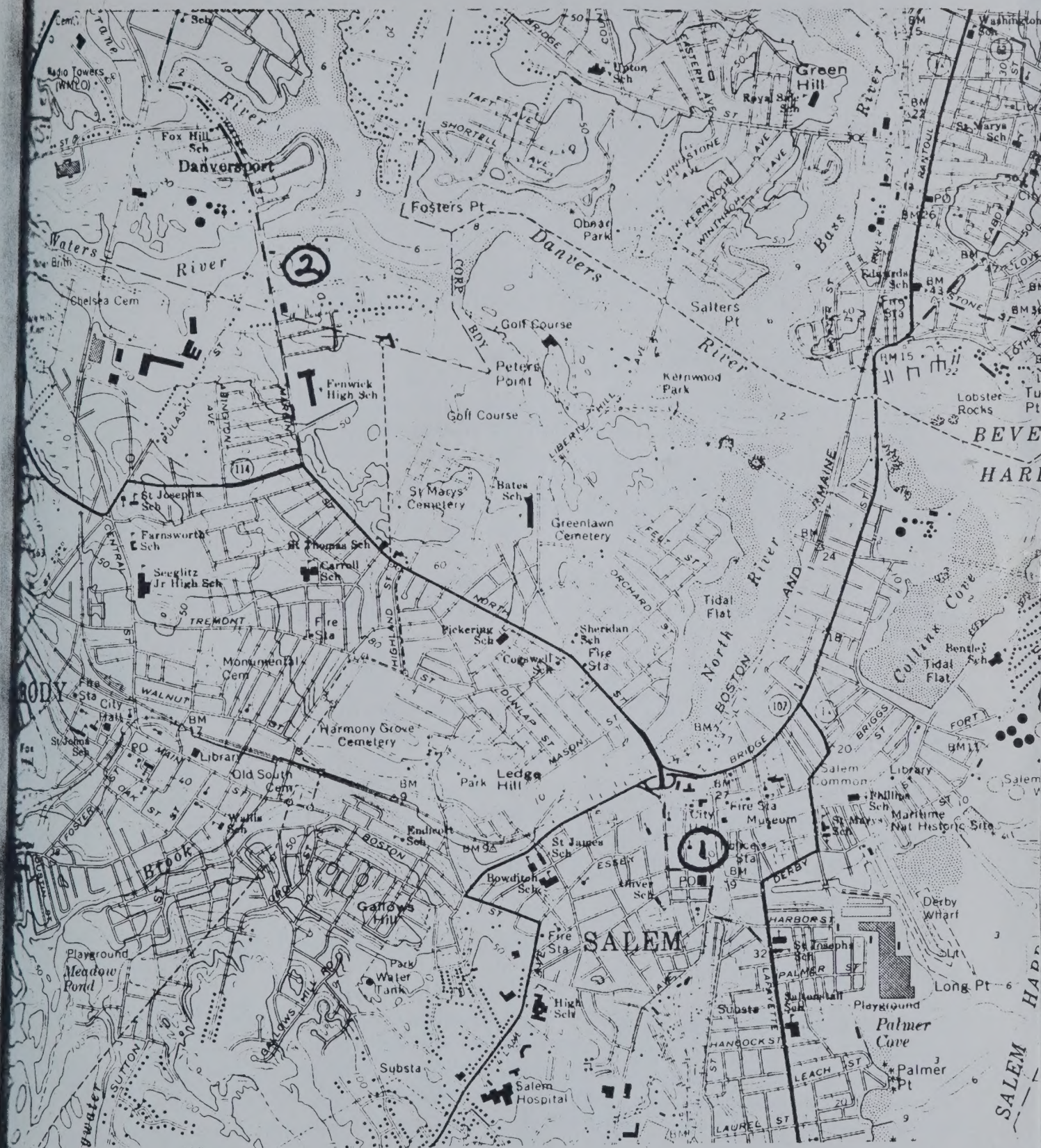
✓ November 25, 1658 - Richard and Joyce Waters sold to George Jacobs one house and ten acre lot with orchard, trees and fence for 16 pounds, "as it was delivered to me and hath lying to the westermost side of it, the five acre lott of John Tompkins and one the eastermost side the end of Henry Cooke's lott, next the water side and another end of a lott of Thomas Gardeners", etc. This is property now in Danvers. Joyce Waters "yielded up her thirds." It was witnessed by William Hathorne. (26)

April 9, 1669 - Richard Waters of Salem, gunsmith, bought from Robert Follett for six pounds 10 shillings a parcel of land containing about one and one quarter acre, "in the towne of Salem, neere Catt cove upon the Town neck and is bounded by the land of me the said Robert Follett and the land of George Burch to the southeasterly and with a parcell of land of Humfry Woodbery lying unfenced to the northwesterly", etc. And "it is to be understood that the said Richard Waters, his heires and assigns doe sett up and maintaine forever upon his their own cost and charge all that midle or partition fence that runs between the land of me the said Robert and the premises, which containes about fourteene ordinary lengths of railles, be it more or less, with a good sufficient fence." Witnessed by Hillyard Veren and recorded by him on April 10, 1669. (27)

July 2, 1671 - Richard conveyed part of this property to his daughter, Mary English. Mr. English had erected a house on the lot before the date of the deed. He was lost at sea in 1682. The lot with house and a small cowhouse was appraised at 25 pounds. Mary married second John Stephens of Salem, a fisherman. (28)

September 4, 1671 - Richard conveyed part of this property to his daughter, Abigail Punchard, who had just erected a house thereon. (29)

October 24, 1671 - Richard Waters erected a new house on his property and before it was finished conveyed the eastern half of it and that part of the lot to his son, Ezekiel, for his services to the father and mother to that time. Richard died possessed of the western half of the house and that part of the lot in 1677. It was appraised at 70 pounds. (30)



US Department of the Interior Geological Survey 1970

1. Richard Waters lived in this area beginning about 1636.
2. Richard sold ten acres to George Jacobs in 1658.
3. Richard bought an acre and one quarter from Robert Follett in 1669.

October 26, 1675 - Richard Waters conveyed to his daughter, Hannah Striker, part of his original lot on Salem Neck. (31)

Richard's Salem Town Business

In 1665 Richard Waters was a petitioner, among thirty-two men, urging compliance by the governor of Massachusetts to the crown's requests. (32)

In the town records of Salem (1659-1680) we find "Richard Watters is allowed to sell bear and ale in his house by retaile" 1668, July 8. (33)

In November 1670 Richard was among many Salem townspeople who petitioned the Ipswich Court to prohibit the sale of beer, ale and cider by Anthony Ashby. (34)

Richard Waters' Other Children

William, possibly the first born, was christened December 1, 1626 at St. Botolph Aldgate in London and was mentioned in Richard's will, written in 1676 - "I give what remains of my estate at my wives decease to my son William to be secured in the hands of my sonne Ezekiel for to maintain his Brother William during his natural life; in case my son Ezekiel be not willing to keep him, if my son John undertake it then he shall have William's estate during his natural life-----". (35)

Martha was unmarried in 1676 when Richard mentioned her in his will - "to my daughter Martha ten shillings provided there be left 40 pound clear estate at my son William's decease."

Sara was born about 1630, probably in London. She married Joshua Rea, Sr. February 26, 1651 in Salem. She died May 19, 1700 age 70 years. (36) She is not mentioned in Richard's will. Children born to Sara were Daniel 1654, Rebecca 1656, Sara 1658, Elizabeth 1659, Sara 1661, Bethiah 1662, Joshua 1664, John 1666, and Hannah 1668. (37)

Phebe married Thomas West October 11, 1658 in Salem. She died April 16, 1674. Phebe's children included Samuel 1659, who married Rhoda Meacham and died in 1685; Benjamin 1665, who married Hannah Shaddock in 1692 and died in 1733; Joseph 1663, who married Bethiah Marston in 1703 and died in 1739; and John 1667, who married Mary Webster. (38) In Salem Quarterly Court Records, Phebe is mentioned as a witness in a case on December 21, 1648. (39)

Elizabeth was baptized at the First Salem Church February 26, 1642 and died, unmarried, February 4, 1662. (40)

Abigail was baptized May 18, 1645 at the First Salem Church. She married William Punchard October 26, 1669. Children born to them were Abigail 1670, Mary (1673-78), William 1677, and Sarah 1685. (41) They also had a son, John born in 1682 who married Martha Hooper in 1706. John and Martha had a son, John (1708-67) who married Hannah Marston in 1730. (42) Richard conveyed part of his property to Abigail in 1671. (43)

Ezekiel was baptized April 4, 1647 at the First Salem Church. His children were Samuel 1673, Mary 1676, Elizabeth 1678, Ezekiel 1680, Sarah 1682, Joyce 1684, Susanna 1686, Elias 1688, died in infancy, Ebenezer 1690, Martha 1692, Pricilla 1693, and Daniel 1695. (44)

Ezekiel was mentioned in Richard Waters' will - "Ezekiel shall have the first refussal of said house and ground." The Salem Town Records state that Constable Ezekiell Waters was at a meeting of the selectmen June 14, 1683. At a meeting of householders on July 5, 1689 Ezekiel Waters was chosen among others as a cutter of fish. (45)

Mary married Clement English on August 27, 1667. Their children were Mary 1668, Elizabeth 1670, and Joseph 1672. (46) She married second John Stephens. In 1671 Richard conveyed part of his property at Cat Cove to Mary. (47)

James married Mary Stalworthy March 24, 1669. Their children were Mary 1670, Elizabeth 1672, Abigail 1677, Samuel (1679-1743) who married Anne Stirling, Daniel 1682 who married Mary Cloice in 1704, Elizabeth 1684, Stalworthy 1685, Roger 1686, John who married Rebecca Wells, and Sarah who married Nathaniel Samborne. (48)

Susana was baptized at the First Salem Church April 1, 1649. She married in 1673 Benedict Pulsiver of Ipswich. (49) She is mentioned in Richard's will - "I do declare and it is my will that the piece of ground for a houseplott which I formerly gave to my daughter Susanna by word of mouth she shall have and enjoy forthwith and forever hereafter."

Hannah was baptized at the First Church of Salem January 30, 1652. She married Joseph Striker April 10, 1673. Their children were Hannah 1674, Dorcas 1676, died young, Deborah 1677, Dorcas 1680, Joseph 1681, Abigail 1684, and Benjamin 1689. (50)

Richard Waters' will is printed on the following page. The original is on file at the Essex County Probate Office in Salem, Massachusetts.

Overseers Mentioned in Richard's Will

Hilliard Veren - arrived on the ship "James of London" in Salem in June, 1635 from Wiltshire, England with Joshua and Philip Veren and Edmond Batter. The Verens were ropers by trade. Hilliard was collector for Salem and Marblehead in 1681. He was also a deacon of the church. He died in about 1685.

Edmond Batter - received a grant of 100 acres in the vicinity of Peabody in 1635. He became a deputy in 1637. He was a selectman and member of the General Court. Mr. Batter died about 1685.

Christopher Babbidge - was a tax collector. He was still living in 1700.

John Swinerton - was a prominent doctor. (9)

✓ October 20, 1687 - Rejoyce Waters conveyed to her son, Ezekiel one half acre, the western portion of the house and a brew house and well. Mary Stevens' name was erased and Ezekiel Waters written in. Thus, Ezekiel became the owner of the entire homestead. His heirs conveyed their interest to Nathaniel Andrew in 1742. This little settlement was called Watertown (or Waters' Town) early in the 18th century. (51)

The will of Richard Waters "being ancient" dated July 16, 1676, and proved September 28, 1677 in Salem Court:

"after All my real Debts be truly paid out of my estate with which charge doth arise about my Funerall, I do will and bequeath my whole Estate that God hath given me in this world to say house and Lands chattells, goods, Debts, or whatever Estate I have or of rights belongs to me, movable or unmovable, To Joyce my beloved Wife for her to have and to hold after my decease the time of her natural life for her necessary use and comfort, and for that end whilst she remain my widow to have Liberty for her necessity to sell any pt of the sd Estate first of the movable and afterward of ye house and Land if need require (provided it be with the advise and assistance of my overseers hereafter named), but in case she married then to have no power to sell allinate or dispose of ye sd estat but to keep the housing in tenantable repair and the movables from damage to be disposed of as followeth:

"It (item) I give what remains of my estate at my wives decease to my son William to be Secured in the hands of my sonne Ezekiel for to maintain his Brother William During his natural life, in case my son Ezekiel be not willing to Keep him if my son John undertake it then he shall have Wm's estate during his naturall life and at Williams Death to be disposed of as followeth,

It. I give to my son James ten shillings, And to my son John ten shillings and to my Daughter Martha ten shillings provided there be left 40 pound clear estate at my son Williams Decease. Also my will is that the rest of my children viz Abigail Punchard, Mary English, Susan Pulsifer and Hannah Striker who neither of them have had any pt. or portion of my estate already as my fore mentioned children have had, shall have the rest of my estate that shall be left at my son Williams Decease (the legacies to my other Children being paid or deducted out as aforesaid to be equally devided between them be the Estate more or less it being likely that what is left then will be most in the House and Ground. Therefore my will is that my son Ezekiel shall have the first refusall of the sd house and Ground, and next any one of my children. If neither of them will not or cannot, then it may be sold to any other psons, to be devided as aforsd further I do declare and it is my will that the piece of ground for a houseplott which I formerly gave my Daughter Susanna by word of mouth shee shall have and enjoy forthwith and forever hereafter.

It. I entreat my Loving friends Mr. Edm. Batter, Mr. Hilliard Verine, Senr., and Christoper Babbidge and John Swinerton to be my overseers, to take care that this my will be truly and faithfully pformed.

It. I appoynt Joyce my sd beloved wife to be my sole exec."

Witnesses, Hilliard Verine Sr. and John Swinerton.

Inventory of the estate of Richard Waters taken July 25, 1677 by John Swinerton and Hilliard Verin Sr.

The western end of the dwelling House with the brew house and about halfe an Acre of Land, 70 li. (pounds); 8 dozen of quart stone Juggs, 2 li.; a Copper with Worme and Appurtenance, Tubs, barrells with all the lumber in the brew house and wood, 6 li.; Cash, 3 li. 19s.; a standing bedstead with bed, bolster, and 3 pillows, Rugg, blankets, sheets, vallence, and Curtains withall appurtinances, 7 li.; A Truckle bed and bedding, 2 li. 10s.; wearing apparil woolin and linin, 5 li.; 3 old chests wheel and cards, 10s.; in the Hall, earthen and wooden platters and pewter potts, 8 s.; 4 old chayers, Table, Stooles, payles and lumber, 10 s.; 7 yds of blew linin, 7 s.; swyne, 4 li.; Ropes and Tacles, 4 li. 12 s.; Iron, viz 2 pots, Lettle, tongs, fire shovel and hawks, 1 li.; in the hal Chamber 4 bu of wheat and a bbl of meale 1 li. 16s.; 4 linin p of sheets, bags and lumber, 2 li. 13s.; Creditor by severall psons, 28 li. 7s, 4d.; total 148 li. 10s. 4d. Debtor to several psons, 16 li. 1s. 2d.



RICHARD WATERS' REFERENCES

In The Text

- (1) St. Botolph Aldgate Parish Record, MS 9220 at Guildhall Library, London
- (2) Court Book of Ironmongers' Archives, MS 16967, Volume 3, page 339 at Guildhall Library
Also: Ironmongers Freedom List, MS 16977
- (3) Cash Book of Ironmongers, MS 16987, Volume 3 and 4 at Guildhall Library
- (4) Court Book of Ironmongers, MS 16967, Volume 4
- (5) St. Botolph Aldgate Parish Record MS 9224
- (6) Will of Henry Manning of London, August 31, 1632, P.C.C. 91 Audley at Public Record Office, London
- (7) William Wood, "New England Prospect", 1629 at Stanford Library
- (8) Manfred Jones, "The Wills of the Early Settlers of Essex, Massachusetts" in the Essex Institute Historical Collection, Volume 96, page 235 at Stanford Library
- (9) John Duncan Phillips, "Salem in the 17th Century", 1933 at Stanford Library
- (10) Richard P. Gildrie, "Salem, Massachusetts: A Covenant Community (1626-83)", 1975
- (11) Same
- (12) Town Records of Salem, Massachusetts (1634-59) in Essex Institute Historical Collection Volume 9 at Stanford Library
- (13) G. L. Streeter, "Historical Notices of Salem Scenery", EIHC Volume 2
- (14) EIHC Volume 1, page 39
- (15) New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Volume 3, page 156 at Stanford Lib.
- (16) Essex Antiquarian Volume 4, page 58 at Stanford Library
- (17) Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, "Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England", Volume 1, page 375 (1628-41) at Stanford Library
- (18) Town Records of Salem, EIHC Volume 9
- (19) Salem Quarterly Court Records, Volume 1, at Essex Institute, Salem, Massachusetts
- (20) New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Volume 2, page 399
- (21) Joseph B. Felt, "The Annals of Salem From Its First Settlement", 1927 at Stanford Library
- (22) Salem Quarterly Court Records, Volume 1, page 272
- (23) EIHC Volume 1, page 51
Also: Essex Antiquarian, Volume 7, page 125
- (24) Essex Registry of Deeds, Southern District, Book 1, page 62 at Salem, Massachusetts
- (25) Same, Book 1, page 23
- (26) Same, Book 2, page 25
- (27) Same, Book 3, page 176
- (28) Same, Book 3, page 148
Also: Essex Antiquarian Volume 9
- (29) Same, Book 3, page 134
- (30) Same, Book 3, page 134
- (31) Same, Book 4, page 127
- (32) James Savage, "A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England", Vol. 4 page 435 at Stanford Library
- (33) EIHC Volume 41, page 135
- (34) Sidney Perley, "History of Salem, Massachusetts", Volume 3 at Sutro Library
- (35) Essex County Probate Registry, Book 301, page 109 at Salem, Massachusetts
- (36) Vital Records of Salem, Massachusetts, Volume 6 at Sutro Library
- (37) Sidney Perley, "History of Salem, Massachusetts"
- (38) Beatrice West Seitz, "West, Barker, Hodges - New York to Wisconsin, 1836-46", 1971
Also: EIHC Volume 3, page 237

References for Richard Waters (continued)

- (39) Essex Institute Historical Collections, Volume I, page 157
- (40) Vital Records of Salem, Massachusetts
- (41) EIHC Volume 3, page 13
- (42) New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Volume II, page 188
- (43) Essex Registry of Deeds, Book 3, page 134
- (44) Vital Records of Salem, Massachusetts
- (45) EIHC Volume 68
- (46) EIHC Volume 2
- (47) Essex Registry of Deeds, Book 3, page 148
- (48) Vital Records of Topsfield, Massachusetts at San Francisco Public Library
 - Also: Salem Quarterly Court Records, Volume 5
 - Also: Notes in Waters file at Essex Institute, Salem, Massachusetts
 - Also: EIHC Volume 24, page 190
- (49) Sidney Perley, "History of Salem, Massachusetts", Volume I, page 383
- (50) EIHC Volume 3, page 144
 - Also: James Savage, "A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England", Volume 4, page 224
- (51) Essex Registry of Deeds, Book 8, page 29
 - Also: Essex Antiquarian Volume 9

Henry Wetters, who furnished the following chart
has fair a reputation in his profession of English
knives of Americans who come to New England.

The Merricks were a well to-do gentle family.
Some of what ~~Wetters~~ Wetters wrote was quite
correct but, as I learned from records in Salt
Lake City, part of this is plain wrong -
especially the Brandon serminal connection.

More accurate search would reveal that the
family are of Norse descent who came to
England from the Continent,
Norwich People PJ 322 575

Manning

Leahat Meig na (1888). Written Arthur Leake, 1888,
Norrwich 1888. Pease & Manning (of that date)
were in England 1272 (or 3000).
Manning (Manning was of the same family.)

During the summer of 1961, the following
the first meeting was held on the 1st of July
at the home of the late Mr. J. H. Jones
The first meeting was held on the 1st of July
at the home of the late Mr. J. H. Jones
The first meeting was held on the 1st of July
at the home of the late Mr. J. H. Jones
The first meeting was held on the 1st of July
at the home of the late Mr. J. H. Jones

The second meeting was held on the 8th of July
at the home of the late Mr. J. H. Jones
The second meeting was held on the 8th of July
at the home of the late Mr. J. H. Jones
The second meeting was held on the 8th of July
at the home of the late Mr. J. H. Jones
The second meeting was held on the 8th of July
at the home of the late Mr. J. H. Jones

The third meeting was held on the 15th of July
at the home of the late Mr. J. H. Jones
The third meeting was held on the 15th of July
at the home of the late Mr. J. H. Jones
The third meeting was held on the 15th of July
at the home of the late Mr. J. H. Jones
The third meeting was held on the 15th of July
at the home of the late Mr. J. H. Jones

MANNING,

Clement, servant to John Cross of Ipswich in 1638. [Court Rec.]

George, shoemaker, Sudbury; propr. 1640. Rem. to Boston, m. 15 (5) 1653, Mary Haroden. He m. in Boston, 13 (1) 1655, Hannah Blanchard, widow. Ch. Elizabeth b. March 19, 1657, Mary b. Dec. 15, 1659, Elizabeth d. Feb. 4, 1660, Elizabeth b. Oct. 13, 1661, James b. March 6, 1663, Mary b. Nov. 3, 1666, Sarah b. March 19, 1668, John b. Oct. 11, 1671; Hannah Manninge of sister Dinsdale was bapt. 23 (12) 1672, and Adam Dinsdale, of the same; Joseph b. Nov. 6, 1674.

John, Ipswich, propr. 1634. Susan, Ipswich, propr. 1638.

John, merchant, Boston, 1643. Had acct. with Nicholas Treroise 26 (3) 1645. Bond of theirs made at the Island of Fyall 22 (9) 1647. [A.] His son John was b. 25 (3) 1643; dau. Mary was b. 4 (3) 1644, and his wife Abigail d. 25 (3) 1644. By second wife Anne, who was adm. chh. 15 (3) 1647, he had son Ebenezer b. about 3 (1) 1646-7, and bapt. 16 (3) 1647, John bapt. 24 (7) 1648, ae. about 4 days, Anne b. March 13, 1651, Ephraim b. Aug. 10, 1655.

Thomas, husbandman, Ipswich, propr. 1638. Sold house and land 15 March, 1647. Deposited in 1671, ae. about 76 years.

Inv. of his est. taken 30 Sept. 1675, presented by Daniel M.

Cousin

William, Cambridge, propr. 1638, frm. May 13, 1640. Apprenticed at 15 years of age. Came to N. E. with wife. Spent some weeks at Roxbury; came to Cambridge. Lost wife and child. [Rel.] [Second] wife Susanna d. Oct. 16, 1650. [Third] wife Dorothy. Ch. William, Jr., (propr. 1646, d. 14 March, 1690, ae. 76 years,) Hannah b. 21 (4) 1642, (m. David Walsbie,) Samuel b. 21 (5) 1644, Sarah b. 28 (11) 1645, Abigail b. in 1647, d. in 1648; John b. 31 (1) 1649, and Mary also bapt at Camb. [Mi.] He rem. to Boston.

Made will 17 Feb. 1665, prob. April 28, 1666; two thirds of the est. he had before his last marriage, he beq. to his son William Manning; rest to his gr. son Samuel Walsbie. [Reg. XV.] The widow Dorothy d. at Camb. July 26, 1692, ae. 80 years. [Gr. St.]

William Manning, above was descended from Phebe's grandfather. No known relation to the others.

WATERS, WATTERS,

Anthony, Marshfield, atba. 1643, propr. 1645.

John, Boston or Charlestown, memb. chh. with wife Francis, in 1630. Both d. before Nov. 29, 1630. "My servant, old Waters of Neyland." [W.] Mary, [a dau.?] adm. chh. Bo. 1632-3.

Lawrence, carpenter, Watertown, propr. 1636-7. Planted the intervale between Penacook and Still rivers before 1647; a region then included in Lancaster. Son-in-law of Richard Linton. [Suff. De. I, 79 and 85.] Rem. in 1675 to Charlestown, where his son Stephen resided. Wife Anna; ch. Lawrence b. 14 Feb. 1634, Sarah b. Dec. 7, 1636, Mary b. Jan. 27, 1637-8, Rebecca b. 1639, d. 1640, Daniel b. 6 (12) 1641, Stephen b. Jan. 24, 1642, Joseph b. at Lancaster 29 (2) 1647, Jacob and Rachel b. 1 (1) 1649, Rachel d. 31 (1) 1649, Samuel b. 14 (11) 1651, Johannah b. 26 (1) 1652, d. 21 (2) 1654, Ephraim b. 27 (11) 1655, d. 17 (4) 1659, Rebecca, (m. at Lancaster 4 (11) 1664, Josiah Whetcombe).

He d. Dec. 9, 1687, ae. near 85 years. [Mdx. Rec.]

Richard, bapt. at St. Botolph Aldersgate, London, Eng., March 3, 1604, son of James Waters, citizen and ironmonger, and his wife, Phebe, dau. of Mr. George Manning, gent. of Downe, Kent. James W. was bur. Feb. 2, 1617, and the widow m. 2, Feb. 23, 1618, William Plasse, gunmaker; they came to Salem, N. E. where Richard had his home from about 1636. He was a gunsmith. Frm. 22 May, 1639. Propr. He deeded land to dau. Mary and her husband, Clement English, in 1673. His wife Joyce, was adm. chh. 23 (3) 1641. Ch. rec. here, a dau. bapt. 27 (9) 1640, Eliza bapt. 26 (12) 1642, d. 4 (12) 1662, Abigail bapt. 18 (3) 1645, (m. 26 Oct. 1669, Wm. Punchard,) Ezekiel bapt. 9 (2) 1647, Susanna bapt. 1 (2) 1649, (m. — Pulsifer,) Hannah bapt. 30 (11) 1652, (m. — Striker,) Sarah, [a dau.?] (m. 26 Feb. 1651, Joshua Ray,) Phebe, [a dau.?] (m. 11 (8) 1658, Thomas West; she d. 16 April, 1674;) Mary, (m. 27 Aug. 1667, Clement English,) Martha, William, John and James also named in will. He signed his will 16 July, 1676; it was prob. 28 (9) 1677; he beq. to wife Joyce and ch. William, Ezekiel, John, James, Martha, Abigail Punchard, Mary English, Susanna Pulsifer and Hannah Striker.

Essex Co. Quarterly Court - held at Ipswich Sep 1646

Richard Waters* certified that his father-in-law, William Plasse, gunsmith, died in Salem 15 : 2 : 1646.

(According to the old Julian calendar the second ms. was April.)
Salem Q.C. Nov 1652. Richard Waters v. Francis Nowe.
Tres Pass. For impounding three cows & one heifer.

PLACE, PLAICE, PLAISE, PLASSE, PLASE,

Peter, laborer, yeoman, Boston, adm. chh. 4 (2) 1646, frm. May 6, 1646. Wife Alice adm. chh. 18 (1) 1643; ch. Hannah b. 20 (11) 1642, (m. Stephen Talby,) Elizabeth b. 29 (7) 1644, Joseph b. 19 (8) 1646, Peter bapt. 30 (11) 1647, ae. about 3 days, Peter bapt. 17 (4) 1649, ae. about 2 days, John bapt. 1 (7) 1650, Elizabeth b. Oct. 21, 1652, d. 8 (6) 1654, Sarah b. Sept. 3, 1657.

Admin. of his est. gr. 22 April, 1675, to his widow Alice; and was assumed by her son John, mariner, after her death, Oct. 1, 1681.

Thomas, Cambridge, propr., sold before 1639, Boston, frm. May 13, 1640.

William, gunsmith, from the parish of St. Botolph, Aldersgate, London, came to Salem about 1637. Had special arrangements made for his residence and shop because of his business. His wife was Phebe (Manning), widow of James Waters of the same parish, and mother of Richard Waters of Salem.

He d. April 15, 1646, at the house of Thomas Weeks of S.; admin. of his est. 5 (6) 1646.

For derivation of this surname, see The Annals People, pg 365, 366.

originally 1879 London, rpr GPC 1989

under Plaice, Place

originally identified with Plaiz, or de Hesselis, a Norman baron's family. Ralaphus, Gardinus, Ascus de Plaissecio, Plaisur, Heiz, or Plessys, Normandy 1180-95 (Cres) Giles de Plays was summoned by writ as a baron in 1293.

Manning and Waters, next page

Clippings, Coats

Founders of American Families by Herodiah Capet p 16

WATERS

EDWARD Came to Virginia on the "Patience" 1610, Elizabeth City 623, d by 18 Sept 1630, Great Hornemead, Herefordshire, England. Burgess. lieutenant. *Waters and kindred families* 1902/3; Jester, *Adventurers*.

LAURENCE Watertown (Mass.) 1634, Lancaster 1642, Charlestown 676, d there 9 Dec 1687. Carpenter. Stevens-Miller, v 1.

RICHARD Salem (Mass.) probably 1636, d by 25 July 1677. Gunsmith. freeman. Proprietor. ner 51:406 (anc); *Waters family of Marietta, Ohio* 1882 (pamph); Pope.

NEHER 85: 466-7 "Memoirs" (of deceased members) desc from Sarah's bro.

ASA WILSON WATERS, A.B., LL.B., A.M., of Cambridge, Mass., a resident member since 1920, was born at Marietta, Ohio, 4 March 1850, the son of Asa Bradford and Annette Searle (Howes) Waters, and died at Cambridge 4 August 1927.

He was a descendant of Richard¹ Waters, who was at Salem, Mass., as early as 1637, through John,² Samuel,³ Samuel⁴ of Stoughton, Mass., Zebulun⁵ of Stoughton, who married Alice Bradford, a great-granddaughter of Gov. William Bradford of the Plymouth Colony, Capt. Asa,⁶ a soldier of the Revolution, Asa,⁷ and Asa Bradford,⁸ his father, who was born at Watervliet, N. Y., 26 October 1818. His mother was born at Madison, Ind., 2 September 1827, the daughter of John, M.D., and Eliza (Hale) Howes.

Asa Wilson Waters received his early education in the public schools of Chillicothe and Cincinnati, Ohio, was a pupil in the preparatory school of Wabash College, Crawfordsville, Ind., 1864-1866, and was admitted to the Freshman class of Wabash College in 1866. On account of his health, however, he was kept out of college for a year, and then entered Marietta College in 1867. He remained there for two years, but, on the completion of his Sophomore year, finding that his health was so impaired by asthma that a change of climate was necessary, he entered Dartmouth College, and received there the degree of Bachelor of Arts in 1871. Then he studied law at the Law School of the University of Cincinnati, took there the degree of Bachelor of Laws in 1874, and was admitted to practice in the Ohio courts in the same year. Soon afterwards he was admitted to practice in the United States courts.

From 1874 to 1887 he was actively engaged in professional work at Cincinnati, was solicitor of Hamilton County in 1880, and for several years was attorney for that county. In 1880 Marietta College conferred on him the honorary degree of Master of Arts.

The years from 1887 to 1898 were spent in the Far West, in search of health. In 1898 he was designated by the United States Comptroller of the Currency as attorney for the receiver of a Philadelphia national bank

that had failed, and from 1898 to 1906 all legal business connected with the Comptroller's work in Philadelphia was referred to him. In the last-mentioned year his health forced him to give up this position.

He then turned again to academic studies, was enrolled in the Graduate School of Arts and Sciences at Harvard University in 1906-1908, and received from Harvard the degree of Master of Arts in 1907. From that time on he resided in Cambridge, and gave much time to historical matters.

He was a member of the American Bar Association and the Pennsylvania Bar Association and also of the Massachusetts Society of Mayflower Descendants. One of the two Bibles that had belonged to Gov. William Bradford had descended to Mr. Waters's father; and in 1903 Mr. Waters presented it to the Pilgrim Society of Plymouth.

Mr. Waters married at Oakland, Md., 1 September 1886, Nellie Dawson, who died at Cambridge 20 November 1917, daughter of John, M.D., and Adelia (Winans) Dawson of Columbus, Ohio. They had no children.

Waters & Manning

The Norman People

publ. anonymously - London 1874
(reprint 1988 - GRC) says -

pg 322 Manning (also Manning)

Lambert Maigorn, 1180; William, Anshatel

Le Maigorn, Normandy 1180-95 (MRS)

Richard, Henry Manning, Engl. c

1272 (R.H.) (Rotoleam Handwritten)

P 442. Waters - for Walters - does local name

P 439 Walters - see Walters. Arminially identified

Walters - Robert, Drogo, William, Hugh Walters

Normandy 1180-95 (MRS); Osbert, Robert,

William Walters 1198 (16);

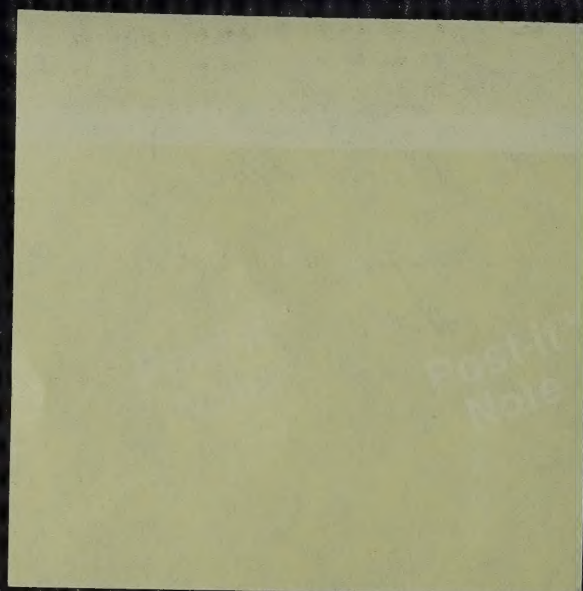
Hugh Walters, Essex, 1184 (R.C.R.); John, Richard

William Walters, England c1272 (Rotoleam Handwritten)

Did any of the above have any connection with our early Mannings & Waters? Especially since we know there is no Manning in Saxony, contrary to the legend.

This promises more on
the Plesse line.

We should be debt
for that.



THE LONDON ORIGIN OF RICHARD¹ WATERS OF SALEM, MASSACHUSETTS

Revisited

By William Wyman Fiske

Over a century ago, Henry FitzGilbert Waters established that Richard¹ Waters of Salem, Massachusetts, was the son of James^A and Phebe (Manning) Waters, baptized at St. Botolph without Aldgate [or St. Botolph Aldgate] on 3 March 1604/5. Although Waters was able to identify the father of Phebe as George^B Manning of Downe, Kent, James^A Waters's origins were elusive. A review of the parish registers for St. Botolph Aldgate shows that Waters was working from an incomplete gleaning of Waters entries, credited to the Rev. Charles H. Pope.¹ A more complete summary of Waters entries is included below (those originally published by Waters are in italics, with those portions incorrectly transcribed crossed out, followed by nonitalicized corrections).² Note that Pope credited three baptisms to James^A Waters that were actually for children of Edward Waters.

1558	23 Nov.	Richard Waters and Jane Netters married.
1564	4 Nov.	George Waters and Jane Thorneton married.
1564	13 Nov.	Bartholomew Jesborde and Margaret Wotters married.
1571/2	10 Jan.	Richard Waters and Margeritt Browne married.
1574	30 May	Edward Reynolds and Elizabeth Waters married.
1576	17 July	Richard Waters and Em Shearman married.
1576/7	[19?] March	Alkelis Waters sonne to William Water baptized.
1577	7 April	Frederick sonne to Richard Waters baptized.
1577	28 Dec.	Richard Waters and Margaret Boington married.
1577/8	18 Feb.	Thomas Walter sonne to Richard Walter baptized.
1577/8	28 Feb.	Thomas Water sonne of Richard Water buried.
1580	26 Nov.	Symon Waters and Margaret Ott married.
1580/1	15 Jan.	Margarett Waters wieff of Richard Waters buried.
1581	3 May	Thomas Sparner and Anne Waters married.
1581	11 July	Thomas Waters executed att wappinge buried.
1581	13 Aug.	Henrye Waters sonne to Symon Waters baptized.
1582	5 June	Thomas Water a younge man buried.

¹ Henry F. Waters, "Genealogical Gleanings in England," *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* [NEHGR] 51(1897):389-424, at 389-409, esp. 406-9; repr. in Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings in England*, 2 vols. (Boston, 1901), 2:1341-43 (hereafter cited as Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings*).

² St. Botolph Aldgate, London, parish registers [Family History Library (FHL), Salt Lake City, film #s 370,924 (baptisms and marriages, 1558-1625), 370,926 (burials, 1558-1625), 370,929 (baptisms and marriages, 1625-56), 370,927 (burials, 1625-62)].

1583	20 Oct.	Jeane Walter daughter to Symon Walter baptized.
1585	18 April	Alyce Waters daughter to John Waters baptized.
1585	29 June	Mary Waters daughter to Symon Waters baptized.
1585	3 Aug.	William Walter sonne to Thomas Walter baptized.
1586	11 Aug.	Henry Waters joyner howseholder buried.
1586	20 Sept.	Daniel Waters sonne of Henrye Waters buried.
1586	31 Dec.	Richard Waters an olde howseholder buried.
1587	26 Nov.	John Pyble and Anne Waters married.
1588	5 May	Alyce Waters daughter to Symon Waters cordyner baptized.
1588	27 May	Owen Bridger and Jane Waters married.
1589	22 June	Robert Whitmoore and Grace Waters married.
1589	27 Dec.	Lawrence Waters sonne to Symon Waters baptized.
1592	11 June	George Waters sonne to Symon Waters baptized.
1593	22 Aug.	George Waters sonne of Symon Waters buried.
1593	22 Aug.	Mary Waters daughter of Symon Waters buried.
1593	23 Aug.	Burial of Joane Waters daughter of Symon Waters buried.
1594	29 April	Henrye Ristropp and Margeritt Waters married.
1597	11 June	George Waters sonne to Symon Waters cordyner baptized.
1599	22 Dec.	Peter Sharpe and Jeane Waters married.
1600	30 Nov.	<i>John sonne of James Waters, Citizen and Ironmonger, baptized.</i>
1601/2	28 Jan.	"John Waters sonne to James Waters Iremonger" buried.
1602	30 June	"Margett Waters searvant to William Browne waterman" buried.
1602	1 Dec. ³	<i>Phebe daughter of James Waters Iremonger baptized.</i>
1603	8 Sept.	"Rice Savil servant two Mr James Walters" buried.
1603	21 Sept.	"Sara Walters daughter two Jeames Walters" buried.
1603	8 Oct.	"Martha Walters daughter two James Walters" buried.
1603	7 Dec.	"ffebe Walters daughter two James Walters" buried.
1604	16 Sept.	John Langton and Brygett Waters married.
1604/5	3 March	<i>Richard Waters sonne to James Waters yremonger baptized.</i>
1606	12 May	Henry Waters and Jane Browne married.
1607/8	24 Jan.	<i>Judith Waters daughter of James Waters</i> to Edward Waters, taylor in hounsdtich baptized.
1609	12 Aug.	<i>Judith Waters</i> daughter to Edward Waters in hounsdtich buried.
1609	3 Dec.	John Waters of harwich and Mary Spa[r?]me married by license.
1610	9 Dec.	<i>Elizabeth Waters daughter of James Waters</i> to Edward Waters, taylor in hounsdtich, baptized.
1613	24 June	<i>Mary Waters daughter of James Waters</i> to Edward Waters, in the hounsdtich baptized.
1615	6 Aug.	John Lake and Katherine Waters alias Bagnall by married license.
1616	6 Sept.	Edward Waters sonne to Edward and Johne Waters in hounsdtich baptized.
1617/8	2 Feb.	<i>James Waters</i> , late Cittizen and Iron-monger who dwelt in East Smithfield, buried.
1617/8	12 Feb.	Francis Waters wife to Richard Waters tailor of Rosemarie Lane buried.
1618/9	23 Feb.	<i>William Plasse, gunsmith, and Phebe Waters, widow, late wife to James Waters Citizen and Ironmonger were married by a license.</i>
1620	23 April	Symon Waters sonne to Peter Waters a Travailing Marchant & Dorithie his reputed wife, lodgers, baptized.

³ Incorrectly 6 Dec. in Waters, "Gleanings," NEHGR 51(1897):407, and in Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings*, 2:1341.

Note: This records more possible 172 kin but does not prove anything not clearly proven:

- 1620 20 May Thomas Walter sonne to Thomas [sic] Walter⁴ Tailor & Hellen his wife baptized.
- 1620 21 May Thomas Walter sonne to Richard Walter Tailor of the Tower precynct buried.
- 1620 13 Dec. Anne Walter wife to John Walter Miller of Nightingale Ln buried.
- 1623 23 June Jane Waters servant to Nicholas Oliver victualler of East Smithfield buried.
- 1624 21 July John Waters, sonne to John Waters Shoemaker, buried.
- 1625 11 July William Waters sonne to Richard Tailor & Hellen his wife buried.
- 1625 13 July Giles Waters sonne to Richard Waters Tailor buried.
- 1625/6 24 Feb. William Waters in the south Starre Yard buried.

"Jaemes Watters," apprentice to John Ball, was admitted to the Ironmongers' Company in 1592/3.⁵ His records in the Ironmongers' Company do not include any family information. The date of his admission suggests that he was born by, and most likely prior to, 1571. The birth year of his widow, Phebe (Manning) Waters, can be calculated as about 1571-72 from her marriage license to her second husband, William Plasse. James and Phebe (Manning) Waters's marriage should not have taken place until after the completion of James's apprenticeship and subsequent admission to the Ironmongers' Guild in early 1593. The first child recorded for James and Phebe in the baptismal registers of St. Botolph Aldgate is that of John on 30 November 1600. The parish registers of St. Leonard Eastcheap, however, reveal the baptisms of three earlier children:⁶

- 1595 7 Dec. Dorothea Waters daughter of James.
- 1596 12 Dec. Henry Waters son of James.
- 1598 12 Nov. Martha Waters daughter of James.

It is therefore likely that James Waters married Phebe Manning sometime between mid 1593 and early 1595. The Martha Waters buried on 8 October 1603 at St. Botolph Aldgate is presumably the Martha baptized five years earlier at St. Leonard Eastcheap. Although Dorothy was possibly named after Phebe's sister Dorothy (Manning) Webb,⁷ there is at least an equal likelihood that both Dorothy and Henry were names taken from James Waters's family. It is therefore of interest to find both the 29 August 1568 baptism of a James Waters, son of Henry, at St. Giles Cripplegate⁸ and the 13 June 1563 marriage of Henry Waters to Doro-

⁴ The actual father was probably Richard Waters, whose son Thomas was buried the next day and whose wife in other entries is named Helen.

⁵ Freedom Admissions to the Ironmongers' Guild [FHL film #1,068,121]. Other apprentices of John Ball admitted to the company were: Humphrey Hooke [1604/5], Martin Bearde [1606/7], Phillip Bull [1611/2]. James Waters's apprentice John Candlande was admitted to the company in 1615/6.

⁶ St. Leonard Eastcheap, London, parish registers [FHL film #535,720].

⁷ Waters, "Gleanings," NEHGR 51(1897):400-1, 406; Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings*, 2:1334-35, 1340.

⁸ St. Giles Cripplegate, London, parish registers [FHL film #380,198].

thy Stephenson at St. Mary Abchurch, London.⁹ No probate for either Henry Dorothy (Stephenson) Waters has yet been found.

GENEALOGICAL SUMMARY

1 JAMES^A WATERS of St. Leonard Eastcheap and St. Botolph Aldgate, London was born say 1568; and buried at St. Botolph Aldgate on 2 February 1617/8. married between 1593 and 1595, PHEBE MANNING, daughter of George^B and J (Wallys) Manning of Downe, Kent.¹⁰ Phebe married second (by license of 8 February 1618/9),¹¹ at St. Botolph Aldgate on 23 February 1618/9, William¹ Plasse, gunmaker of St. Botolph Aldgate, with whom she immigrated to Salem, Massachusetts, presumably accompanied by her son Richard Waters; Plasse's origin will be covered in a later article.

James^A Waters's parentage remains unknown. It is tempting, given the name of a son Richard by James and Phebe (Manning) Waters, to assume that the Richard Waters baptizing children as late as 1577 at St. Botolph Aldgate, presumably the "olde howseholder" buried on there 31 December 1586, was James's father. There is no evidence at this time, however, to either support or refute this possibility. Furthermore, it is probably significant that James chose to name his eldest (known) son Henry; looking to a more distant London parish, we find a James Waters, son of Henry, baptized at St. Giles Cripplegate on 29 August 1568 (see discussion above), possibly the son of Henry and Dorothy (Stephenson) Waters who married at St. Mary Abchurch, London, on 13 June 1563.¹²

Children of James^A and Phebe (Manning) Waters:

- i DOROTHY WATERS, bp. St. Leonard Eastcheap, London, 7 Dec. 1595.
- ii HENRY WATERS, bp. St. Leonard Eastcheap, 12 Dec. 1596.
- iii MARTHA WATERS, bp. St. Leonard Eastcheap, 12 Nov. 1598, bur. St. Botolph Aldgate, 8 Oct. 1603.
- iv JOHN WATERS, bp. St. Botolph Aldgate, London, 30 Nov. 1600, bur. St. Botolph Aldgate, 28 Jan. 1601/2.
- v PHEBE WATERS, bp. St. Botolph Aldgate, 1 Dec. 1602, bur. St. Botolph Aldgate, Dec. 1603.
- vi SARA WATERS, bur. St. Botolph Aldgate, 21 Sept. 1603.
- 2 vii RICHARD¹ WATERS, bp. St. Botolph Aldgate, 3 March 1604/5; m. JOYCE/REJOYCE

2 RICHARD¹ WATERS (James^A) was baptized at St. Botolph Aldgate, London on 3 March 1604[5], and died at Salem, Massachusetts, between the making of his will on 16 July 1676 and 25 7th month [September] 1677, when the inventory

⁹ St. Mary Abchurch, London, parish registers [FHL film #374,483].

¹⁰ Waters, "Gleanings," NEHGR 51(1897):404, 406; Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings*, 2:1328, 1340.

¹¹ Waters, "Gleanings," NEHGR 51(1897):407; Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings*, 2:1341.

¹² St. Giles Cripplegate, London, parish registers [FHL film #380,198].

was taken. Presumably following admission to the Ironmongers' Guild, by pater-
nity, in 1625/6, Richard married JOYCE or REJOYCE —.¹³ On 19 September 1646,
Richard Waters certified that his "father-in-law" William Plasse, gunsmith, died
in Salem on 15 2nd month [April] 1646.¹⁴ Richard's use of the term "father-in-
law" has been interpreted in the modern sense with resultant confusion about his
wife's maiden name. As pointed out by Henry Waters, this was Richard's way of
identifying his stepfather, second husband of his mother, Phebe (Manning)
(Waters) Plasse.

By 25 December 1637, when he received land grants in Salem, Richard and
Joyce Waters had three children.¹⁵ The christenings of two of these can be found
in London. First, the 7 October 1629 baptism of "Phebe daughter of Richard
Waters of Wappingwall distiller & Joyce ux the 7 day at 9 [dayes old]" was dis-
covered in the parish registers of St. Dunstan's Stepney.¹⁶ The identification of
Richard Waters's occupation as "distiller" is of interest. Although he is known to
have been an ironmonger, it is noteworthy that Richard Waters was licensed by
Salem to "still and sell strong waters at retail" from 1663 to 1668.¹⁷ There can be
little doubt that this is the correct couple or that this is the daughter of Richard
and Joyce Waters who on 11 October 1658 married Thomas West of Salem.¹⁸ At
St. John's Wapping, Middlesex, a second child was baptized on 13 January
1631/2: "William sonne of Richard & Joice Walters, ironmonger."¹⁹

On 9 April 1669, Robert Follett conveyed a lot in Salem to Richard Waters,
gunsmith. On 24 October 1671, Waters conveyed the eastern part of the house he
was building to his son Ezekiel Waters for his services to his parents. Waters
conveyed part of his homestead on 7 4th month [June] 1671 to his daughter Abi-
gail, wife of William Punchard, another portion to daughter Mary, wife of Clem-
ent English, on 2 July 1671, and a final portion to daughter Hannah, wife of Jo-

¹³ Freedom Admissions to the Ironmongers' Guild [FHL film #1,068,121]. Richard Waters's
apprentice George ~~Richardson~~ Renalson [*sic*: Richardson crossed out and replaced with Renal-
son] was admitted 1634/5.

¹⁴ *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, 9 vols. (Salem, Mass., 1911–
75), 1:108 (hereafter cited as *Essex Co. Court Records*).

¹⁵ In Dec. 1637, a division of land was made and the recipients recorded, along with the
acreage allotted and the total number of individuals in the family unit. William Plasse's name
immediately follows that of Richard (who is given the title "Mr"). The number preceding each
man's name identifies the size of the family: two for William and Phebe Plasse. The Waters
household totaled five, consistent with three of their children having been born by late 1637.
(*Town Records of Salem, Massachusetts*, 3 vols. [Salem, 1868–1934], 1:103; see p. 61 for expla-
nation of 25 Dec. 1637 dating of these land grants.)

¹⁶ Stepney, Middlesex, parish registers [FHL film #595,417].

¹⁷ *Essex Co. Court Records*, 3:78, 3:174, 4:40, 4:55.

¹⁸ *Vital Records of Salem, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849*, 6 vols. (Salem,
1916–25), 4:440 (hereafter cited as *Salem VRs*).

¹⁹ St. John Wapping, Middlesex, parish register, transcriptions [FHL film #416,737].

seph Striker on 26 October 1675. According to Sidney Perley, this area was
known as Watertown or Waters' Town in the early eighteenth century.²⁰

The will of Richard Waters was dated 16 July 1676 and proved on 28 Novem-
ber 1677. "Being ancient," he made provisions for his wife, Joyce, in her widow-
hood and, subsequently, for son William: "I give what remains of my estate at
my wives decease to my Son William to be Secured in the hands of my Sonne
Ezekiel for to maintain his Brother William. . . ." Richard left 10s. apiece to
[named in order] son James, son John, son Ezekiel, and daughter Martha. Also
named were "the rest of my children viz Abigail punchard Mary English Susana
Pulsiver and Hanah Striker. . . ." He appointed wife Joyce sole executrix and
named "Loving friends Mr Edm. Bätter, Mr Hilliard Verine, Sen[io]r & Christo-
pher Babbidge & John Swinerton" overseers. The estate was valued at £148 10s.
4d., with £16 1s. 10½d. in debts "to several persons."²¹ Richard Waters's will
makes no mention of the family of daughter Phebe (Waters) West, by then de-
ceased. Also not named is Sarah (Waters) Rea/Ray, who married Joshua Ray at
Salem on 26 February 1651[2?]²² and who died Salem on 19 May 1700, aged
70.²³ There is no evidence yet found to connect Sarah to this family other than
the coincidence of her surname and the fact that she was of the right age to be the
third unidentified child when Richard Waters received his Salem land grant in
December 1637. Although no probate exists for Joyce or Rejoyce Waters, she
was alive on 20 October 1687 when she acknowledged the following deed, re-
corded 15 February 1687/8, transferring her estate to son Ezeliel Waters:

To all Christian people to whom this present writing shall come: Rejoyce Waters of Salem in the
county of Essex in New England, widdow, & relicte of Richard Waters, deceased, send greeting.
Know ye that whereas Richard Waters my well beloved husband did in his last will & testament
having date 16 July 1676 after all debts & funerall charges were paid will and bequeath his whole
estate, to say, houses & lands, chattels, goods, debts or w[ha]tever estate belonging unto him,
unto me Rejoyce Waters his then wife, and by his last will made sole executrix for me to have &
to hold after his decease the time of my naturall life for my neccessary use and comfort and in
case I remaine a widdow to sell if needs require any parts or the whole of my houses & lands,
provided it bee with the consent of my overseers: there fore be it now further knowne, that I the
s[ai]d Rejoyce Waters, relict & widdow of the deceased Richard Waters, having now not where-
withall to maintaine me comfort ably in my old age, but by selling my houses & lands, do now &
have with the consent of my overseers, for a valuable sume of money to me in hand paid and se-

²⁰ Sidney Perley, "Salem in 1700, No. 20," *The Essex Antiquarian* 9(1905):114–23, at 122–
22. The deeds are abstracted in Essex Society of Genealogists, *Essex County Deeds, 1639–1678*
. . . (Bowie, Md., 2003), 220–21 [Richard Waters to son Ezekiel Waters], 220 [Richard Waters to
daughter Abigail, wife of William Punchard], 229 [Richard Waters to daughter Mary, wife of
Clement English], 304 [Richard Waters to daughter Hanna, wife of Joseph Stricker], all with the
consent of Richard Waters's wife, Joyce.

²¹ *The Probate Records of Essex County, Massachusetts*, 3 vols. (Salem, Mass., 1916–20),
3:183–85 (hereafter cited as *Essex Co. Probate Records*); *Essex Co. Court Records*, 6:382–83.

²² *Salem VRs*, 4:440.

²³ *Salem VRs*, 6:177.

Sarah is
an ancestor

cured to be paid, by my son Ezekiel Waters of Salem in the county of Essex as afores[ai]d, sold . . . released and quitt claimed & by these presents . . . do fully, clearly and absolutely sell, aliene . . . and forever quittclaime . . . unto my son Ezekiel Waters his heires executors administrators & assignes . . . all such estate, right, interest . . . whatsoever which the s[ai]d Rejoyce Waters as afores[ai]d widow ever had or now have left me by my husband Richard Waters, late deceased, in & to the afores[ai]d houses & land, the land being about halfe an acre more or less bounded & abutted as followeth vis: upon the northeast corner of my son Ezekiel Waters small garden plott belonging to his own housing and [description of adjoining property, including land of William Punchard] . . . all those who have a part in the ground or house lotts w[hi]ch was of or belonging unto my husband Richard Waters his ground shall have for themselves & their hiers forever free liberty of egress & regress to the well now in being to fetch water for their or any of their uses praying for . . . In wittnes whereof I the s[ai]d Rejoyce Waters have hereunto sett my hand & seale this 20th day of October Anno Domini 1687 & in the third year of his Majesties Raigne King James the Second over England.

Witnessed by William Punchard and John [H?]arber

the marke of Rejoyce Waters & a seale.

Rejoyce Waters personally appearing acknowledged the above written instrument to be her act & deed, & Mr. John Swinnerton & Mr. Christopher Babbidge overseers of the last will & testament of Richard Waters were also present & consenting there unto this 20th day of October 1687 before me Bartho: Gedney.²⁴

Children of Richard¹ and Joyce/Rejoyce (—) Waters (the bp. of an unnamed child of Richard Waters, Salem, 27 9m [Nov.] 1640,²⁵ could belong to James, John, or Mary):

- i PHEBE² WATERS, bp. St. Dunstan's, Stepney, Middlesex, 7 Oct. 1629, aged 9 days, d. Salem, Mass., 16 April 1674;²⁶ m. Salem, 11 8m [Oct.] 1658, THOMAS WEST.²⁷ Following Phebe's death, Thomas West m. (2) Salem, 14 8m [Oct.] 1674, Mary Tennee.²⁸ Phebe Waters testified 21 Feb. 1648/9 at Salem Quarterly Court in a case against William Goodwin, servant of John Hathorne, accused of theft, lying, and "rebellious carriage towards his master and dame."²⁹

Children of Thomas and Phebe² (Waters) West, b. and bp. Salem:³⁰ 1. *Samuel West*, b. 23 March 1659/60, bp. 25 1m [March] 1666. 2. *Joseph West*, b. 3 7m [Sept.] 1663, bp. 25 1m [March] 1666. 3. *Benjamin West*, b. 1 Oct. 1665, bp. 25 1m [March] 1666. 4. *John West*, b. 9 7m [Sept.] 1667, bp. 20 1m [March] 1667/8.

- ii WILLIAM WATERS, bp. St. John's, Wapping, Middlesex, 13 Jan. 1631/2; the July 1676 will of his father clearly makes provisions for son William. It is unclear why William required care. He appears to have been competent one month earlier, in June 1676, when he and Ezekiel Waters proved the will of Pasco Foot Sr. of Salem, dated 21 Sept. 1670.³¹ It is possible that Richard's will, dated 16 July 1676, was motivated by a recent change in William's health.

²⁴ Essex Co. Deeds, 8:28.

²⁵ Richard D. Pierce, ed., *The Records of the First Church in Salem, Massachusetts, 1629–1736* (Salem, 1974), 18 (hereafter cited as *Salem 1st Church Records*); *Salem VRs*, 2:399.

²⁶ *Salem VRs*, 6:323.

²⁷ *Salem VRs*, 4:440.

²⁸ *Salem VRs*, 4:455.

²⁹ *Essex Co. Court Records*, 1:156–57.

³⁰ *Salem VRs*, 2:410–13; *Salem 1st Church Records*, 27.

³¹ *Essex Co. Probate Records*, 2:230; *Essex Co. Court Records*, 4:398.

Richard's son William should not be confused with William Waters of Marblehead, despite the similarity in their ages.³² On 30 4m [June] 1657, William Waters of Marblehead was appointed administrator of the estate of his father, Stephen Waters, deceased.³³

- iii JAMES WATERS, d. Topsfield, Mass., 11 Sept. 1704;³⁴ m. Topsfield, 24 March 1669/70, MARY STALLWORTHIE.³⁵ She d. by 22 May 1695 when James m. (2) at Topsfield, RACHEL HART of Ipswich.³⁶ In March of 1671/2, James Waters won a verdict of slander against Patrick Morrin.³⁷ Mary, wife of James Waters, on 19 Dec. 1671 offered graphic testimony that Morrin had previously assaulted her while her husband was away from their home. Morrin was subsequently fined and ordered whipped for "abuse to the wife of James Watters" (the corporal punishment was remitted).³⁸

Children of James² and Mary (Stallworthie) Waters, b. Topsfield, Mass.:³⁹ 1. *Mary Waters*, b. 7 Feb. 1669/70. 2. *Elizabeth Waters*, b. 23 May 1672. 3. *Sarah Waters*, b. say 1674. 4. *Abigail Waters*, b. Topsfield, 21 April 1677. 5. *Samuel Waters*, b. 22 May 1679. 6. *Daniel Waters*, b. 29 March 1682. In an agreement for exemption for militia service dated 14 Oct. 1707, Daniel agreed "to take my mother in law [i.e., stepmother] Waters into my care & keeping and to clear the town [Topsfield] from any furdur charge or trouble about her."⁴⁰ [Daniel's descendants are followed in John Bradley Arthaud's article in this issue.] 7. *Stalworthie Waters*, b. 9 Feb. 1685/6 [sic]. 8. *Roger Waters*, b. 17 Feb. 1685/6 [sic].

Child of James and Rachel (Hart) Waters, b. Topsfield: 9. *Elizabeth Waters*, b. 17 Feb. 1700/1.⁴¹

- iv JOHN WATERS, d. between 14 Feb. 1706/7 and 1 March 1707/8, the dates that his will was executed and proved;⁴² m. Salem, Mass., 1 6m [Aug.] 1663, SARAH² TOMP-

³² On 24 1m [March] 1673/[4], William Waters, "aged about thirty-eight years," was deposited in the suit of *John Peach vs. the heirs of John and Florence Hart* regarding details of a conversation with Samuel Archer near "Mr Waltons [sic] house in Marblehead," consistent with a birth year for William of about 1635 (*Essex Co. Court Records*, 5:168–69). William m. Hannah (Peach) Bradford, widow of John Bradford. William Waters of Marblehead d. in 1684, leaving an estate of £122 12s., which was divided among his surviving children: William (eldest son), Thomas, Hannah, and Mary Waters (*Essex Co. Court Records*, 9:404–5).

³³ *Essex Co. Court Records*, 2:42.

³⁴ *Vital Records of Topsfield, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849* (Topsfield, 1903), 255 (hereafter cited as *Topsfield VRs*).

³⁵ *Topsfield VRs*, 196. In April 1663, Zacheus Curtis was sentenced "to stand an hour at the court door with a paper in his hat written in great letters, 'For setting up a faulse purpose of marriage att Topsfield'" after having falsely published an intention of marriage between James Waters and Elisabeth Redington "being contra to the intention of the parties and without their knowledge" (*Essex Co. Court Records*, 3:65).

³⁶ *Topsfield VRs*, 196.

³⁷ *Essex Co. Court Records*, 5:2.

³⁸ *Essex Co. Court Records*, 5:21–22.

³⁹ Clifford L. Stott, "Sarah Waters, Second Wife of Nathaniel² Sanborn of Hampton, New Hampshire," *The New Hampshire Genealogical Record* 13(1996):145–51, at 149; *Topsfield VRs*, 108.

⁴⁰ George Francis Dow, *History of Topsfield, Massachusetts* (Topsfield, 1940), 148.

⁴¹ *Topsfield VRs*, 108.

⁴² Waters, "Gleanings," *NEHGR* 61(1907):408; Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings*, 2:1342.

KINS,⁴³ bp. Salem, 11 Jan. 1642/[3], daughter of John¹ and Margaret (Goodman) Tompkins.⁴⁴

Children of John² and Sarah (Tompkins) Waters, b. and/or bp. Salem, Mass.:⁴⁵ 1. John Waters (twin), b. 30 June 1664, d. July 1664.⁴⁶ 2. Richard Waters (twin), b. 30 June 1664, d. July 1664.⁴⁷ 3. John Waters (again), b. 4 July 1665, bp. 14 July 1678. 4. Sarah Waters, b. 30 6m [Aug.] 1667, bp. 14 July 1678. 5. Richard Waters (again), b. 13 Nov. 1669, bp. 14 July 1678. 6. Nathaniel Waters, b. 6 12m [Feb.] 1671/[2], bp. 14 July 1678. 7. Samuel Waters, b. 29 March 1674, d. infancy. 8. Samuel Waters (again), b. 6 May 1675, bp. 14 July 1678. 9. Elizabeth Waters, b. 10 11m [Jan.] 1677/[8], bp. 14 July 1678. 10. Abigail Waters, bp. 20 May 1683.

v MARY WATERS, m. (1) Salem, 27 Aug. 1667, CLEMENT ENGLISH,⁴⁸ who d. Salem, 23 10m [Dec.] 1682.⁴⁹ Mary m. (2) JOHN STEVENS/STEPHENS of Salem, fisherman.⁵⁰

⁴³ Salem VRs, 4:439.

⁴⁴ Salem 1st Church Records, 19.

⁴⁵ Waters, "Gleanings," NEHGR 61(1907):408; Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings*, 2:1342; Salem VRs, 2:395-99; Salem 1st Church Records, 32 [bp. John, Sarah, Richard, Nathaniel, Samuel, Elizabeth "of Sister John Waters"], 35 [bp. Abigail].

⁴⁶ Salem VRs, 6:310.

⁴⁷ Salem VRs 6:311.

⁴⁸ Salem VRs, 4:440.

⁴⁹ Salem VRs, 5:231.

⁵⁰ Proof of this marriage is found in the following Essex County Deed (7:51), dated 8 Sept. 1685 and recorded 16 Oct. 1685:

Know all men by these presents that I Mary Stephens, attorney of my husband Jno. Stevens of Salem, fisherman & administratrix of the estate of my late husband Clemen English of Salem afores[ai]d deceased for & in consideration of the sum of twenty pounds due unto Mr. Samuell Gardner Junior baker of Salem being a debt contracted & made by my afores[ai]d husband English deceased & not having wherewith otherwise to satisfy and pay all the s[ai]d debt have given & granted & by these presents doe give . . . unto the afores[ai]d Samuell Gardner all that our dwelling house & outhousinge thereunto belonging, scituate & being in Salem afores[ai]d, with all the lands thereunto belonging & appertaininge bounded between the land that was formerly George Burche his land and the land of Robert Follett accordingly as it is particularly bounded in my father Waters in his deed of guift [*sic*] to me, which is herewith delivered unto the s[ai]d Gardner To have & to hould . . . and herein I oblige my selfe as administratrix afores[ai]d & my s[ai]d husband Jno. Stevens as his attorney & our heires, executors, administrators & assignes, as witness my hand & seale this twenty 8th day of September, one thousand & six hundred eighty five.

Immediately following the document is Mary's husband's declaration of her power of attorney, dated 8 Sept. 1685 and recorded 16 Oct. 1685:

To all Christian people: Jno: Stevens of Salem in the county of Essex, in New England, sendeth greeting: Know yee that whereas the said Stevens have lately married the Widdow Mary English, widdow relict of Clement English deceased, who is alsoe administratrix of the estate of s[ai]d late husband & there being debts due from the s[ai]d estate, especially to Samuell Gardner Junior the sume of twenty pounds & no moveable estate to pay the same, I do hereby therefore constitute, ordayne, impower & in my place sett my s[ai]d wife Mary English my true & lawfull attorney in my place & stead to make sale of the house & land w[h]ich we are now possessed of that formerly was the estate of the s[ai]d English & all appurtenances thereunto belonging unto the s[ai]d Mr Samuell Gardner & to his heires. . .

Children of Clement and Mary² (Waters) English, b. and/or bp. Salem:⁵¹ 1. Mary English, b. 18 Feb. 1668/9, bp. 6 June 1669. 2. Elizabeth English, b. 9 Feb. 1670/1; bp. April 1671. 3. Joseph English, b. 12 March 1672/[3?]. 4. Benjamin English, b. 19 8m [Oct.] 1676. 5. Abigail English, b. 6 Dec. 1680, bp. 12 June 1681, d. Salem, 16 Oct. 1697.⁵² 6. Clement English, b. 7 March 1682/3, bp. 17 June 1683.

vi ELIZABETH WATERS, bp. Salem, 26 12m [Feb.] 1642/[3],⁵³ d. there, 4 12m [Feb.] 1662/3.⁵⁴

vii ABIGAIL WATERS, bp. Salem, 18 3m [May] 1645;⁵⁵ m. Salem, 26 Oct. 1669, WILLIAM PUNCHARD.⁵⁶

Children of William and Abigail² (Waters) Punchard, b. and/or bp. Salem:⁵⁷ 1. Abigail Punchard, b. 3 7m [Sept.] 1670, bp. 7 April 1671. 2. Mary Punchard, b. 17 Jan. 1673/[4?]. 3. William Punchard, b. 11 Nov. 1677, bp. 18 Nov. 1677. 4. John Punchard, b. 2 April 1682, bp. 18 June 1682. 5. Abigail Punchard (again), bp. May 1684. 6. Sarah Punchard, b. 27 Oct. 1685.

viii EZEKIEL WATERS, bp. Salem, 4 2m [April] 1647;⁵⁸ m. MARY —.⁵⁹

Children of Ezekiel² and Mary (—) Waters, b. and/or bp. Salem:⁶⁰ 1. Samuel Waters, b. 3 Sept. 1673. 2. Mary Waters, b. 19 April 1676. 3. Elizabeth Waters, b. 4 Aug. 1678, probably the unnamed child of "Ez." bp. July 1680. 4. Ezekiel Waters, b. 1 Aug. 1680. 5. Sarah Waters, b. 9 Aug. 1682, probably the unnamed child of Ezekiel bp. Aug. 1682. 6. Joyce Waters, b. 9 March 1684/75. 7. Susannah Waters, b. 1 Jan. 1685/6. 8. Elias Waters, b. 11 May 1688, d. 30 June 1688. 9. Ebenezer Waters, bp. 26 Oct. 1690. 10. Martha Waters, bp. Oct. 1692. 11. Priscilla Waters, bp. Feb. 1693/[4]. 12. Daniel Waters, bp. 9 Feb. 1695/[6].

ix SUSANNA WATERS, bp. Salem, 1 2m [April] 1649,⁶¹ d. Ipswich, 21 Dec. 1726,⁶² as the widow Susanna Pulsipher; m. Ipswich, Mass., Feb. 1673/4,⁶³ as his 2nd wife, BENEDICT PULSIPHER.⁶⁴

Children of Benedict and Susanna² (Waters) Pulsipher, b. Ipswich:⁶⁵ 1. Richard Pulsipher, b. 31 May 1675. 2. William Pulsipher, b. 12 Dec. 1676. 3. Susannah

⁵¹ Salem VRs, 1:282; Salem 1st Church Records, 28 [bp. Mary], 29 [bp. Elizabeth], 34 [bp. Abigail], 35 [bp. Clement].

⁵² Salem VRs, 5:231.

⁵³ Salem VRs, 2:396.

⁵⁴ Salem VRs, 6:310.

⁵⁵ Salem 1st Church Records, 20; Salem VRs, 2:396.

⁵⁶ Salem VRs, 4:439.

⁵⁷ Salem VRs, 2:204-6; Salem 1st Church Records, 29 [bp. Abigail], 32 [bp. William], 34 [bp. John], 36 [bp. Abigail].

⁵⁸ Salem 1st Church Records, 21; Salem VRs, 2:396.

⁵⁹ Salem VRs, 2:396.

⁶⁰ Salem VRs, 2:395-99; Salem 1st Church Records, 33 [bp. unnamed child], 35 [bp. unnamed child], 41 [bp. Ebenezer], 41 [bp. Martha], 42 [bp. Priscilla], 43 [bp. Daniel].

⁶¹ Salem 1st Church Records, 22; Salem VRs 2:398.

⁶² Vital Records of Ipswich, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849, 2 vols. (Salem, 1910), 2:656 (hereafter cited as Ipswich VRs).

⁶³ The 1st wife of Benedict Pulsifer d. Ipswich, 16 July 1673 (Ipswich VRs, 2:657), presumably the mother of Elizabeth Pulsifer, Benedict's daughter, b. Ipswich, 4 Dec. 1669 (Ipswich VRs, 1:308).

⁶⁴ Ipswich VRs, 2:446.

⁶⁵ Ipswich VRs, 1:307-9.

Pulsipher, b. 5 Sept. 1678. 4. *Joseph Pulsipher*, b. 13 Nov. 1680. 5. *Benjamin Pulsipher*, b. 19 May 1683. 6. *David Pulsipher*, b. 27 Sept. 1685. 7. *Jonathan Pulsipher*, b. 25 Sept. 1687. 8. *Joanna Pulsipher*, b. 10 May 1691. 9. *Margaret Pulsipher*, b. 14 Feb. 1693/4.

x HANNAH WATERS, bp. Salem, 30 11m [Jan.] 1652/[3];⁶⁶ m. Salem, 2m [April] 1673, JOSEPH STRIKER.⁶⁷

Children of Joseph and Hannah² (Waters) Striker, b. and/or bp. Salem:⁶⁸ 1. *Hannah Striker*, b. 10 Jan. 1673/4. 2. *Dorcas Striker*, b. 2 March 1675/[6?], d. Ipswich, 2 May 1676.⁶⁹ 3. *Deborah Striker*, b. 17 June 1677. 4. *Dorcas Striker* (again), b. 4 April 1680, bp. Aug. 1680. 5. *Joseph Striker*, b. 14 9m [Nov.] 1681, bp. 28 May 1682. 6. *Abigail Striker*, b. 4 March 1683/4. 7. *Benjamin Striker*, b. 18 March 168[8]/9, bp. March 1689.

xi MARTHA WATERS. She is known only from her father's will (1676), which seems to indicate that she was then unmarried.

William Wyman Fiske (<billfiske@comcast.net>) is a physician practicing on Cape Cod, Massachusetts, where he lives with his wife and three daughters.

⁶⁶ *Salem 1st Church Records*, 23; *Salem VRs*, 2:396.

⁶⁷ *Salem VRs*, 4:439.

⁶⁸ *Salem VRs*, 2:329; *Salem 1st Church Records*, 33 [bp. Dorcas], 34 [bp. Joseph], 39 [bp. Benjamin].

⁶⁹ *Salem VRs*, 6:257.

THE DEVIL AND BETTY JACKSON

Contributed by David L. Greene, FASG, Editor

James Raine (1791–1858), the Durham, England, antiquary, left a memoir for his children. The following comes from his descriptions of people he knew in his childhood:

Betty [Jackson] was famous for her punctual attendance at the funerals of her neighbours, and still more famous for the quantity of funeral cake which she would eat on those occasions. There was a story that upon her deathbed she gave orders for two holes to be made in her coffin, one at each end, so that when the devil at one end came to claim her as his own she might escape by the other. She was buried at Wycliffe [co. Durham] on the 19th January 1802. . . .

But was her poetry successful?

THE DANIEL³ AND MARY (CLOYSE) WATERS FAMILY OF TOPSFIELD, MASSACHUSETTS, AND KILLINGLY, CONNECTICUT

By John Bradley Arthaud, FASG

Richard¹ Waters was baptized in St. Botolph Aldgate, London, on 3 March 1604/[5] and died at Salem, Massachusetts, between 16 July 1676 and 27 7th month [September] 1677, son of James^A and Phebe (Manning) Waters. His origin and extensive maternal ancestry have been published.¹ Occasional single-line descents with good documentation have appeared.² There has been, however, no thorough coverage of Richard Waters's descendants in the first five generations, despite his being the progenitor of a large colonial family. Later descendants include Presidents Taft, Coolidge,³ and likely George W. Bush.⁴ The following article will detail another single-line agnate descent from a grandson with mention of the daughters and their families in each generation.

1 DANIEL³ WATERS, son of James² Waters (*Richard*¹) and Mary (Stallworthie), was born at Topsfield, Massachusetts, on 29 March 1682⁵ and died at Killingly, Connecticut, between 28 November and 9 December 1754, the dates that his will was signed and "presented." He married at Topsfield on 19 December 1704, MARY³ CLOISE/CLOYSE,⁶ born at Salem, Massachusetts, on 6 5th month [July] 1677, daughter of Thomas² Cloyse (*John*¹) and Susannah (Lewis).⁷ She died, proba-

¹ Henry F. Waters, "Genealogical Gleanings in England: The Manning Family," *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* [NEHGR] 51(1897):389–409; John Brooks Threlfall, *The Ancestry of Reverend Henry Whitfield and His Wife Dorothy Sheafe of Guilford, Connecticut* (Madison, Wis., 1989), 70; William Wyman Fiske, "The London Origin of Richard¹ Waters of Salem, Massachusetts: Revisited," TAG 81(2006):172–82.

² Clifford L. Stott, "Sarah Waters, Second Wife of Nathaniel² Sanborn of Hampton, New Hampshire," *The New Hampshire Genealogical Record* 13(1996):145–51; Philomene Jenkins, *David Waters and Consider Law . . .* (Lincoln, Nebr., 1929); Jeanne Waters Strong, *One Waters Family* (Los Altos Hill, Calif., 1980).

³ Gary Boyd Roberts, *Ancestors of American Presidents: First Authoritative Edition* (Santa Clarita, Calif., 1995).

⁴ Gary Boyd Roberts, "Presidential Kinships of Barbara (Pierce) Bush," *New England Ancestors* 6 no. 4(2005):39–41, at 39.

⁵ *Vital Records of Topsfield, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849* (Topsfield, 1903), 108 (hereafter cited as *Topsfield VRs*); James Waters m. Mary Stallworthie on 24 March 1669/70 (*Topsfield VRs*, 196).

⁶ *Topsfield VRs*, 196.

⁷ *Vital Records of Salem, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849*, 6 vols. (Salem, 1916–25), 1:188; Sybil Noyes, Charles Thornton Libby, and Walter Goodwin Davis, *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* (Portland, 1928–32), 151–52. Mary Lovering Holman, *Ances-*

¹ Angela Marsden, ed., *A Raine Miscellany*, Surtees Soc. Pubs., 200 (1991):59–60.

Genealogical Gleanings in England - by H. F. Waters

WATERS.

James Waters, of St. Buttolph without Aldgate London, citizen and ironmonger of London; 17 May, 1617, proved 16 Feb'y, 1617; to be buried in St. Buttolph's parish, near children; wife Phebe and son Richard Waters (under twenty-one years of age) legatees; partner Samuel Rowland. [Meade, L. 17.]

122 -4

It was thought that here we might look for the parentage of Richard Waters, the gunsmith, of Salem, ancestor of the well-known family seated in and about Sutton and Milbury, Middlesex County, Massachusetts, there being no lineal descendant now living, so far as is known, to bear up the family name in this old home of the first settler.⁸ The good fortune which sometimes rewards the diligence of a plodding antiquary enabled us soon to change this mere guess into a definite statement as of an absolute fact. While spending an hour or two with the distinguished antiquary, Col. Joseph L. Chester, LL.D., at his home, 124 Southwark Park Road, London, S. E., a glimpse into one of his volumes of MSS. revealed the following, which is published with his kind consent:—

1618-19 Feb'y 18, William Plasse of St. Botolph Aldgate, London, gunmaker, and Phebe Waters, of same, widow of James Waters Ironmonger at St. Botolph aforesaid, have license to marry granted them by the Bishop of London.

This item to one acquainted with Salem records made everything as clear as noonday. William Plasse was a gunsmith to whom the town of Salem granted, in 1637, for him and his wife the house formerly Mr Conant's, with a half acre of land attached, etc.—and in 1643 appointed a committee to provide for him a convenient room to work in and to set a forge, etc. He died in 1646 and his estate was administered by Thomas Wickes or Weeks, whose wife Alice (afterwards wife of Nicholas Potter) and two children, Hannah, wife of John Pickman, and Bethia wife of John Archer, are afterwards found in occupancy of the real estate. The gunsmith's tools were said to be in the possession of Richard Waters, who calls himself a son-in-law of the deceased. Mr. Waters seems first to have lived near the head of Broad street, but must very early have removed to the neck near Cat Cove, where he conveyed building lots to two or three of his children, forming a hamlet afterwards known as Watertown and which remained among his descendants until the middle of the last century. His will, written with his own hand (a beautiful specimen of penmanship) was made 16 July, 1676 and proved 28-9^{mo} 1677. He mentions wife Joyce, sons James, John, Ezekiel and William, and daughters Abigail Punchard, Mary English, Susanna Pulcifer and Hannah Striker. His (probably eldest) son James settled in Topsfield, John in North Fields, Salem, giving name to Waters River, Ezekiel remained in the homestead and William was left in the keeping of his brother Ezekiel. It is through John that the present known branches of this family derive their descent, although it is thought there are descendants of James in Norfolk County. It is to be hoped that some of them will be interested enough in their lineage to follow up the clew which the courtesy of Col. Chester has here put into their hands.

⁸ Of those who now bear the name of Waters in Salem, three distinct families have been traced, viz:—one settled chiefly in North Salem, descended from William Waters, an early settler of Boston, another, in the East parish, whose ancestor, Lawrence Waters, settled first in Watertown but removed to Lancaster on the founding of that settlement, and a third family whose progenitor came from England in the last century. Besides these there are a few of this name whose ancestry has not been ascertained, but probably not descended from Richard Waters.

Was our James Waters related to Christopher
as right? If so he must have had
Yorkshire roots.

pg 32

Feb. 8 William Plasse² of St. Botulphes wthoute Algate, London, gunmaker, and a widower aged xlviiith yeres or thereabout and did alleg that he intendeth to marrie wth Phebe Waters, widowe, of the same poshe aged xlviiith yeres or there about, the Relicte of James Waters, Ironmonger, deceased a yere since, and of the truth of the p^rmisses as alsoe that he knoweth of noe lawfull lett or impedim^t by reason of anie p^rcontracte or otherwise to hinder this intended marriage he made faiethe and desired license for them to be married together in the pishe Church of St. Botulphie aforesaid.

Christopher Waters, clerke; 16 Feb'y 1615, proved 26 Feb'y 1615; to elder son Christopher 70^s, 27^s whereof he shall receive from Ezekiel Davye, Register to the Lord Bishop of Doune in Ireland. If he shall die before arriving at the age of twenty-one then it shall come to younger son Lawrence. If both of them die without issue then it is to go to the benefit of the children of Allen Washington, clerk, parson of Sharnford, Co. Leicester; to Lawrence 70^s &c.; wife Johane mentioned; then follows an enumeration of assets, among which appear:—

Houses in Cambridge; Debts due to Mr. Waters—Mr Sparkes 100^s, Mr Ezekiel Davies 27^s, Books 18^s, apparell 10^s, a clocke and 3 watches 12^s, money in Mr Hamonds handes 20^s, in Mr^s Luffnam's hande 6^s, due by twoe bills at Thursby 6^s 13^s, 3 trunks at Chester, one hogshead 13^s, my Lord of Derry for twoe moneths service 212-13-0, Rent due at Midsomer next at Cambridge 10^s. [Cope, L. 20.]

In the Admon. Acet. Book for that year Mr Waters is said to have been lately while he lived in the parish of St. Botolph without Aldersgate London; but it is to be noticed that his real estate was in Cambridge. So the testator of the following will, which had already been noted, must be regarded as his father:—

Christopher Waters, of the parish of Holy Trinity, Cambridge; 30 March, 1583, proved 26 Aug., 1583; to son Christopher, at twenty years of age two houses and shop and a booth in Sturbridge Fair; daughters Elyn and Alice; wife Jane; my sister's child at London; to every one of my brother's children in the North Countrie 20^s apiece; Agnes Waters; John Male; John Ball;⁹ brother Benne; Mr. Lawrence Staunton M^r of Arts and Fellow of St. John's College, executor. [Rowe, L. 42.]

The mention made of a "brother's children in the North Countrie" and the fact that the Rev^d Allen Washington, who perhaps married one of the daughters of the elder Christopher Waters, and whose children were the residuary legatees of the Rev^d Christopher Waters in the event of the death of his two sons without issue, belonged to the Sedbergh family of Washington (according to Col. Chester, whose authority is indisputable on matters relating to that family), led to the suggestion that Yorkshire or Westmoreland might be the home of this line of Waters. It was soon found that there was a family of Watters (as the name was generally written) settled about Brafferton and Cundall, two villages in the North Riding of Yorkshire, adjoining each other and within five or six miles of Ripon and of Boroughbridge.

over

William Knyvett, of Thorntonbrigg, Esq. (parish of Brafferton), in his will, of 13 Aug. 1557, mentions his "servand Laurence Watter." The following will evidently relates to this family:—

James Wattar, of Latton, Co. Essex, yeoman; 12 Sept., 1571, proved 17 Oct., 1572; to be buried in the church of Latton before my ladies pewe; to James Altham, Esq., my good Mr., my great ringe of goulde

* A John Ball was one of the first three men who removed from Watertown to Lancaster in 1643, the other two being Richard Linton and his son-in-law Lawrence Waters.

havinge upon ye one syde of y^t letters that serveth to my name and upon the other syde a deathes hed, and the some of VI^s XIII^s IIII^d w^{ch} I have owinge me of my brother Lawrance Wattar dwellinge in Coundall in the Cowntie of Yorke yeoman, w^{ch} some of VI^s XIII^s IIII^d I paid for him to one M^r Cheney a silke wever in London for a childs q^{te} w^{ch} my sayed brother stodee bownde to see answered in yt he married the mother of the sayed childe w^{ch} I lent unto him. And I will that my executour make recoverie thereof. And the same money so recovered I will to my sayed M^r. Item I giue to my good ladie and Mres my best jewell of goulde wth a great stone sett in yt. And my great Danske chest. Item I giue to Mres Martha my ladies daughter a rynge of goulde wth a deathes hed graven upon yt. And a paier of swete gloves of myne. Item I giue to M^r Thomas Altham my Mrs eldest soñe my best shirte wroughte wth blacke. And my best doublett striped wth sylke. Item I giue to M^r Edward Altham my M^{rs} second soñe a shirte edged wth syluer and a newe canvas doublett cutt. Item I giue to M^r James Altham my Mrs thirde soñe my rapier dager wth all sheathes bothe of Veluett and lether to them apteyninge. Item I giue to M^r John Altham my Mrs fourthe soñe a handkercher edged wth blacke. Item I giue to M^r Mathew Altham my Mrs fyfeth soñe a handkercher edged wth blacke. Item I giue to Mistres Mary Reynolds my ladies neece a crosse of syluer and gilte sett wth fyve stones. Item I giue to Dorothy Dorrell my ladies waightinge woman a dozen of new napkins wth a new towell to them belonging and XXIII^s in money. Item I giue unto Emanuell Wollaye grocer in money Tenne Poundes. Item to the poore within the parrishe of Latten in money XV^s w^{ch} I will shalbe given at my bury^{ng} according to the discrecon of my executour. The resadew of all my goods cattells dewtyes and substances, my debts paid and my ffunerall expences perfourmed, and this my presant testament and last will fulfilled and accōplished I doe whollie giue and bequeath to Emanuell Wollaye. And of this my present testament I doe make and ordaine the said Emanuell Wollaye by theis pūts my full and sole executor. [Daper, L. 31.]

Lawrence Watters, of Cundall; 1594, proved at Boroughbridge 1595; wife Alee; father in law William Watson; sons William, Francis and Thomas, and sundry daughters; a brother William; a brother's children; &c. [Richmondshire Wills.]

Robert Watter, of Cundall, an eminent merchant of York, was twice lord mayor thereof, viz.: 1591 and 1603. He entertained King James VI of Scotland on his way to London to be enthroned as king of England and was knighted by that monarch 20 April, 1603 at Grimston, near Tadcaster, at the house of Sir Edmond Stanhope, where the King lodged that night, and whither the mayor went to meet him by appointment. Sir Robert died 12 May, 1612, and was buried in the choir of the Church of St. Crux, under a goodly monument ornamented with the effigies of his wife and three children and with several other figures and bearing this inscription;—

Sir Robert Watter Knt Alderman and twice Lord Mayor of this city. A Father to the Poore, a Friend to the Comynalty of this citty, and a good Benefactor to this church, who dyed May 12, 1612. Margaret his wife deceased March 30, 1608, and their three children. (Knight)

He bequeathed to the Mayor and Commonalty of the city 120^l, to pay yearly 10^l towards the maintenance of the Parson of Crux Church and his successors; and gave to the Lord Mayor and city one golden chain, weight 20 ounces, three goblets parcel gilt; and willed that an Hospital should be erected out of his houses in Neute Gate York for the perpetual maintenance of ten persons, appointing 3^l per Annum for the Reader's stipend, and 2^l per Annum to every one of the rest. Sir Robert's next heir was his brother William Watter, who was likewise Lord Mayor of York 1612. He married — Noel of Lancashire. His eldest surviving son, Christopher Watters of Cundall married Anne daughter of Sir Thomas Strickland of Thorntonbrigg and had issue. The arms of Walter of Cundall as shewn in Edmondson's Heraldry were: *Argent a chevron engrailed between three chess-rooms Sable*. The arms of Sir Robert Watter differed from these in having the chevron charged with *three crescents Or*. *Crest:—An arm vested Gules turned up Argent, holding in hand proper a chess-rook Sable*.

This Cundall family are said to be descended from a Richard Wartyr, who was merchant in York, Sheriff in 1431 and Lord Mayor in 1436 and 1451, and represented the city in Parliament at Westminster 1434. We are told that he had a brother William Warter, prior of Warter, Co. York, 1424, another brother Francis, or Nicholas Warter vicar of St. Mary's, York, 1429 and Bishop of Dromore, and three sons, viz.: Henry, who was the ancestor of the Cundall family and of a branch which settled in Surrey and another in Durham, Christopher, who settled in London, was an alderman of Farringdon within and Sheriff of London 1451, and John, from whom descended the Warter family of Shropshire. There was a Lawrence Waters of Thornbrough in North Riding of York, who died 1613 and administration was granted to his widow Ann 5 Aug., 1613.

It will be remembered that Christopher Waters, of Cambridge (in 1583) appointed as executor Mr. Lawrence Staunton, who is said by Col. Chester to have been buried at Uffington in Lincolnshire. As a possible ciew then, the following will should be preserved.

Christopher Waters, of Uffington, Co. Lincoln, yeoman; 8 June, 1581, proved 18 May, 1582; to be buried in Croxson; to eldest son, Salomon, the house he now dwelleth in called Westhall, with reversion to son Thomas, then to John son of brother Thomas Waters; daughter Elizabeth Turpin; brother Anthony Waters and his daughter Luce Waters; Thomas and Frances Waters my brother's children; wife Margaret; St. George Hatley (a parish in Cambridgeshire) referred to and "debts in Cambridge" spoken of. [Tirwhite, L. 19.]

The following will is presented on account of the mention of a Lord family:—

Oliver Waters, of Hatcliffe, Co. Lincoln, clerke; 8 Dec., 1620, proved 10 May, 1621; daughter Anne Waters; daughter Rachell Lord and her children Robert, Mary, Rachell and Hester; to godson Oliver Waters my sealing ring of golde; Thomas Waters, youngest son of Richard Waters; a cottage in Great Grimsbye spoken of; son Richard Waters to be executor. [Dale, L. 41.]

Edward Waters, of Elizabeth City, Virginia, gentleman; will signed at Great Hornemead, Hertfordshire, 20 Aug., 1630, proved 18 Sept., 1630; to son William lands in Virginia; all other goods in England, Virginia, Ireland or elsewhere, to be sold by advice of brother John Waters of Middleham, Yorkshire; wife Mrs. Grace Waters, daughter Margaret. [Scroope, L. 81.]

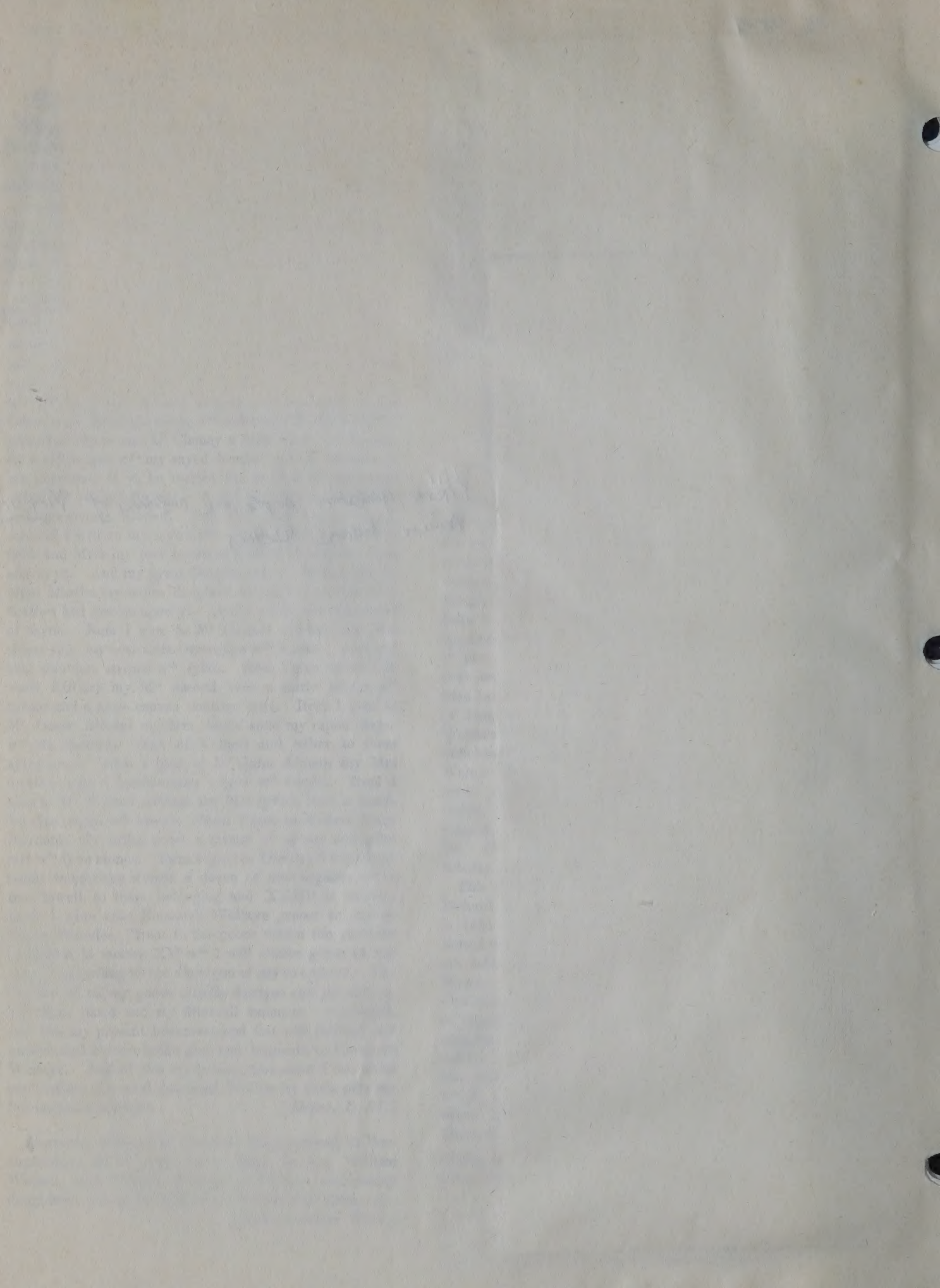
It was not until the compilation of these notes that careful reading and investigation led to the discovery that the will of which the above is but a meagre abstract may be considered the final chapter in the record of an eventful and romantic life (N. E. Hist. and Gen. Reg. XXXI, p. 393). It seems that this was the Edward Waters who came out with Sir George Somers and Sir Thomas Yates to make a settlement in Virginia, and, in July, 1609, with others of the passengers and crew of the Sea Venture, was wrecked on "the still vex'd Bermoothes." During their enforced stay upon one of these islands, he is said to have killed a man in a quarrel, and was arrested therefor and bound to a tree; but one of his friends cutting the rope in the night, he escaped to another part of the island. When the shipwrecked party set sail in May, 1610, in two small vessels which they had built during the winter, called the Patience and the Deliverance, Waters and a man named Christopher Carter were left behind. In the latter part of the summer Sir George Somers returned to the Bermudas, and died there, and his kinsman, Matthew Somers, taking command, set sail for England, leaving Edward Chard behind.

These three then, Waters, Carter and Chard, were sole inhabitants of the Somers Isles, and "monarchs of all they surveyed" until the arrival of Moore and his colony in 1612, when, says the record "As soon as we landed all our company, we went to prayer and gave thanks unto the Lord for our safe arrival, and whilst we were at prayer, we saw three men coming down to us." Again, under date of April 28, 1612, a writer says:—The climate I hold to be very good and agreeable with our constitutions of England, for the three men which were left there are very fat and fair, not tanned or burned in the sun so much as we which came last."

Edward Waters and Christopher Carter became members of the Governor's Council; but, about 1618, went to Virginia, where the former settled on the south bank of the James River. At the taking of the census, in 1624, he was thirty-nine years of age, and his wife, Grace, who came in 1618 in the ship Diana, was only twenty years of age; and at that time they had a son William. At the time of the massacre, in 1622, Waters and his family were taken prisoners by the Indians, but were rescued and carried to a place now known as Hampton. In 1625, a daughter, Margaret, is spoken of, who was doubtless the one named in his will. In 1628-9, he was a commissioner for the district between Southampton River and Fox Hill; and he was also a member of the County Court.

I have not yet digested this, but considering the high birth James Waters' wife Phoebe Manning; it should not be surprising if he, also, was of distinguished ancestry.

These Yorkshire people are relatives of Virginia
Providence Edward Waters



This genealogy is about the line of our
Phoebe Manning's distant cousin, William
Manning of Cambridge. (By that time
Phoebe was Mrs William Flesse.)

This contains some errors, but is helpful.

(William Manning of Cambridge just not copied
here.)

Phoebe's
brother
went to
Ireland

start
here

THE GENEALOGICAL AND BIOGRAPHICAL HISTORY OF THE MANNING FAMILIES OF NEW ENGLAND.

MISCELLANEOUS ARTICLES.

THE EARLIEST MANNINGS KNOWN TO HISTORY.

THE ancestors of the present members of the Manning families early founded in this country were from England, where representatives of the general family had long been numerous. It is claimed that British records, published by order of Parliament, show that the name occurred in twenty-two counties in that kingdom as early as the year 1272. The predecessors of these early inhabitants went to England from what is now Germany. All Englishmen of the present time make this statement. The name is now common in Ireland, and by some of its possessors is supposed to be purely Irish, but in the course of an extensive correspondence the writer has found that all highly educated Irishmen agree on two points; first, that the name was there introduced by emigrants from England, and secondly, that at a more remote period the family was of the same origin as has been mentioned above. These accounts differ slightly as to the particular Continental province whence their ancestors came, but nine-tenths of them unite in saying that the family was of Saxon origin. Fortunately, we have something more definite and of a previous date to aid us. In Hasted's Kent (County of Kent, England), published in 1797, occurs the following reference to the Mannings: "They are said to be descended from an ancient and noble family which took its name from Manning, a town in Saxony, whence they came to England before the Conquest."

Simon de Manning was the earliest representative of the family mentioned by Hasted, and of him there is now general knowledge in England. His home was at Downe, County Kent.

Manning

He lived in the time of King Richard I, who reigned A.D. 1189-1199, and "was the first of the English barons to take up the cross and go with King Richard to the Holy Wars" in the Second Crusade, when he was knighted. This was considerably later than the Conquest, but in a subsequent part of this article will be found a statement tending to bridge this gap.

After the time of the above Simon the family steadily increased in numbers, and when this country was settled, it was, as before stated, numerous in England. Wills and other valuable papers are on record there, and the admirable work of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society, in having abstracts thereof made and printed in their "Register," makes it possible to learn of many different persons of the Manning name who lived and died prior to 1700. None of the ancient wills thus far examined mentions relatives in America, and until something of the kind is discovered it can only be said that we know the general race from which we have descended. The connection exists, but the connecting link has not been found. Despite this fact it is believed that interest will be felt in an account which mentions some of these early Mannings, and that, instead of resorting to selections from different publications, it may be well to quote what is said by Hasted. His mention of the family has the merit of age, and nowhere else has anything been found that is at once so connected and comprehensive. It here follows:

DOWNE.—John Manning was of Cowdham, and died in the 14th year of King Henry IV [A.D. 1412], "leaving John Manning, his son, who by Juliana, daughter and heir of Richard Brockhill, had Hugh Manning of St. Mary's Cray, who married the daughter of Sir William Brandon, by whom he had two sons, of whom Richard, the youngest, settled at St. Mary's Cray, where his posterity continued until within these few years;" and John, the eldest, married Agnes, daughter of John Petley, of Downe, "who, on the division of the inheritance of the Petley heirs became entitled to the manor of Downe-court. He died possessed of it in the 35th year of King Henry VIII [1543], and lies buried with Agnes his wife in this church. His descendant, Peter Manning, Esq., of Trowmer, in the reign of King James I [1603-1625] alienated this manor, and in 1657 it was in possession of John Palmer;" but "the seat itself, since called Downe Court, was by his son, Henry Manning, Esq., of Greenwich, separated from the

manor and sold to Sir Francis Carew. Downe is within the ecclesiastical jurisdiction of the diocese of Rochester. It is a peculiar of the archbishop of Canterbury, and as such is in the deanery of Shoreham. In the great chancel of the church, on the south side of the altar, is a gravestone and brass plate with inscription in black letter for John Manning and Agnes his wife; he died in 1543; above, a shield of arms, being a cross flory between four cinquefoils impaling two bends ingrailed and a canton. On the south side, a gravestone and memorial for Edward Manning, once of Prince Charles' household, youngest son of Peter Manning, Esq., of Trowmer, and Elizabeth his wife, daughter and coheir of Jacob Verzelini, lord of the manor of Downe, cdt. 1622, æt. 20."

COWDHAM.—"Richard de Chersholt had property in the hamlet of Bertrey, or Bettred, and held the reeveship of the manor of Bertrey under Geoffrey de Say, who discharged him from this office in the 15th year of King Edward II [A.D. 1316]. He died without male issue, and his daughter and heir carried the estate, which he held in it, in marriage to William de Manning who died in the 17th year of King Edward III [A.D. 1343]. He was the son of Stephen de Manning, of whom there is mention in old deeds of the time of King Edward I [A.D. 1272-1302], who descended from Simon de Manning to whom John Silvester, of Westerham, demised land by deed in the 14th year of King Richard I [A.D. 1202], and who was engaged in the holy war against the Saracens under that king. They are said to be descended from an ancient and noble family which took its name from Manning, a town in Saxony, whence they came to England before the Conquest, and some of them are said to have settled in Friesland. They bore for their arms, Gules, a cross potence, or flory, between four cinquefoils or. From him it descended to Hugh Manning who settled at St. Mary's Cray and left two sons, of whom John, the elder, was of Downe, and Richard, the younger, of Kevington in St. Mary's Cray, where his posterity remained until within these few years. Kevington was for some generations the residence of the Mannings. In the reign of King Henry IV [A.D. 1399-1413] John Manning was settled in the parish of Cowdham. His son of the same name was also of that parish, and died 14 Henry VI [A.D. 1435], leaving by Juliana, his wife, daughter of Richard Brockhill, one son, Hugh Manning, who was of St. Mary's Cray and married the daughter of Sir William Brandon, kins-

Chersholt
Chersholt

gen 3

gen 1

ERROR They were Normans

gen 7

woman to Charles, duke of Suffolk, by whom he had two sons—John, who settled at Downe, from whom descended the Mannings of Downe, Halsted and Westerham; and Richard, who continued at St. Mary's Cray and had three sons; of whom Richard,* son of Thomas, the eldest, is said in his epitaph to have been of Manning's Hall, the old family seat. He lies buried in this church with the rest of his family. The Heraldic Visitations of Kent, 1619, gives the arms of Manning—Gules, a cross potence between four cinquefoils or. Notwithstanding which it appears by their monuments and gravestones in this church, which was the burial place of the family for many generations, that the Mannings of this parish bore the cinquefoils in their coat of arms flipt; those of Westerham bore, a chevron between three cinquefoils flipt. John Manning, youngest son of Richard above mentioned, was of Kevington, and had two sons, Edward, who was bred to the law, and Richard; the former of whom succeeded to this manor in 1640. Edward Manning, great grandson of Edward, the youngest son of Edward above mentioned, succeeded at length to Kevington and married Anne, only daughter of Sir Henry Onslow. He died in 1703 and was buried in this church; on which Richard Manning, Esq., their eldest surviving son, succeeded to the manor and resided at Kevington, where he died 1753 without issue."

CHURCH AT ST. MARY'S CRAY.—"In the great chancel, within the rails of the altar, a mural monument for one of the Manning family, the arms at the top are defaced; on the south side, within the rails, an altar tomb, on which are the figures of a gentleman and lady finely engraved in brass, and over them an inscription for Richard, son of John Manning, gent., who married Rachael, one of the daughters and coheirs of William White of Hempsted, in Middlesex, with whom he lived thirty-nine years, and died in 1604, æt. 63, without issue, leaving her surviving; above are the arms of Manning, Gules, a cross potence between four cinquefoils flipt or, a cross for difference. On the north side, within the rails, opposite the above, is an altar tomb with a brass plate, with an inscription for Richard, son of Tho. Manning, who dwelt and died at Manning's Hall, the old homestead of the family. He died in 1605, æt. 72. On a gravestone without the rails,

* This sentence lacks clearness, but the meaning seems to be that the second Richard was son of Thomas, and that the latter was "the eldest son" of the first Richard.

a memorial for Edward, son of Edward Manning, Esq., who married the only daughter of Sir Henry Onslow of Drungwick, in Sussex, by whom he had fifteen children, nine of whom are here buried, and Thomas was then living, ob. 1703, æt. 49; above are these arms, quarterly, 1st, Manning, as above; 2d, a cross between twelve crozlets fitchee impaling a fess between six rooks. A memorial for Edward, son of Edw. Manning, Esq., and Anne his wife, daughter of Geff. Nightingale, Esq., of Newport Pond, in Essex. He died in 1640, æt. 65; she died in 1659, æt. 79. Richard Manning, Esq., died in 1753, æt. 54; above are these arms, quarterly; 1st and 4th, Manning; 2d, a bend counter-changed; 3d, a cross between twelve cross crozlet, fitchee; at the bottom, in a lozenge, the arms of Manning impaling per pale ermine a rose. On the hatchment against the screen, on the north side, are the arms of Manning, a crescent for difference, and over them an inscription shewing, that under a stone in this chancel lies buried Thomas Manning, of the exchequer office, gent. of Clifford's inn, second son of Edw. Manning, Esq., of this parish. He died unmarried in 1704. On the north side of the altar is a boarded pannel, shewing that the same was erected by Stephen Parker and Anne, his wife, daughter of Sir Henry Onslow, to the memory of her three children, Edward, Elizabeth and Anne Manning, who lie buried in this church by their father, Edward Manning, Esq."

THE HUNDRED OF WESTERHAM.—Hill Park, in the latter part of Queen Elizabeth's reign became the property of "Jacob Verzelini, Esq., of Downe, in this county, a Venetian born, and he died possessed of it in the 5th of King James I [A.D. 1607]. By his daughter Elizabeth it went in marriage to Peter Manning, Esq., of Trowmer, in the parish of Downe, one of whose descendants, in the next reign of Charles I, passed it away to Mr. Ranulph Manning of London, a branch of them, who bore for their arms, Argent, a chevron gules, between three cinquefoils of the second, in whose family it remained till the year 1718, when it was alienated." . . . "Westerham is in the ecclesiastical jurisdiction of the diocese of Rochester, and deanery of Malling." In the church "is an inscription to Nicholas Manning, gent., obt. 1723, and Mary his wife, daughter of Samuel Missenden, Esq.," and also the altar tombs of "Thomas Manning, Esq., of Valence, obt. 1695, and for Susan, his wife, daughter of Sir Thomas Dacas, obt. 1654."

Of the extracts here given from Hasted's Kent that relating to Downe has here been slightly recast, and the article on the Hundred of Westerham is abridged, while the accounts of Cowdham and the Church of St. Mary's Cray are given without any change.

Ten years ago an American gentleman sent an English photographer to the church, and the report of the latter is here given:

"We visited the church of St. Mary's Cray, Kent, on August 11, 1891, for the purpose of photographing the monuments which covered the walls of the church to various members of the Manning family from 1100 to 1640. Finding the walls of the church quite clear of memorial stones, etc., we made inquiries of the verger, who told us that the present church was rebuilt about 1650, and since that date has been restored several times. The monuments from 1100 to 1640 appear to have been destroyed at the time of building the present church in the year 1650. Nothing which referred to the Mannings could be found in the present church, except two monuments of slate with bronze figures on the floor of the sanctuary, one either side of the altar, and these being right in the corner of the church, it was impossible to take a photograph. The following are exact copies: 'Here Richard Manning lies, Son of Thomas Manning, he dwelt & died at Mannings' Hall. He departed Sept^r 22nd A.D. 1605 in the 72nd year of his age.' The second read: 'Here lyeth buried the body of Richard Manning, Son of John Manning Gent. Who tooke to wife Rachael one of y^e Daughters & Co heyres of W^m White of Hamsteed in Middlesex with whome having happily lyved to the service of God, & relief of the poore 39 yeares, in the 63^d yeare of his age he dyed without issue the 18 Jan^y 1604 his wife yet surviving purposeth by God's permission to be here, interred by him at her death in whose fellowship she enjoyed y^e comfort of her life.'"

These two stones are mentioned by Hasted. To one who has followed the evidence thus far several questions naturally arise, with a desire to have a confusion of statements removed. As it cannot now be done, the matter will not be enlarged upon here.

Cardinal Manning wrote, in 1884, as follows: "As to the family in England there were three branches, one in Kent, a second in Sussex, and a third in Norfolk, all bearing the same shield, a cross with four trefoils, the crests slightly varying, an

eagle's head on a crown, with either two feathers or two palm branches; the motto the same in all cases I know of except one, viz., *Malo mori quam foedari*" [I would rather die than be disgraced].

It has been shown that the family name was at one time De Manning, but that the prefix was finally dropped. Mark Antony Lower, M.A., F.S.A., in his "Dictionary of the Family Names of the United Kingdom," showing the derivation of surnames, says:

"MANNING. An ancient personal name, still seen in Manningham, Mannington, Mannington, etc. Mr. Ferguson derives it from the O. Norse *manningi*, a brave or valiant man."

About the year 1860 there was an English traveler in this country who passed under the name of Colonel St. George, but who, in private, declared himself to be a younger brother of Cardinal Manning. To several Americans whom he met he gave written accounts of the early English Mannings. Certain statements in these accounts cannot be accepted, but in the main they agree so well with what has been quoted from Hasted that it seems well to give an extract from his manuscript relating to an earlier date than appears in the preceding:

"The family of Manning came into England from Mannheim, Germany, of which Ranulph de Mannheim was Count Palatine, in the year 940. He married Elgida, aunt to King Harold, and had large grants of land in the county of Kent, which included the towns of Downe, Cowdham, St. Mary's Cray, Crayford and Toots Cray." In another of this traveler's accounts there was a variation (unless some one misread his writing) whereby the above name was made "Rudolph de Manning, or Mannheim," and the year of emigration, 970. This second account states that Rudolph was grandfather of Simon de Manning; the same Simon mentioned by Hasted. The present writer has not found reference to Rudolph, otherwise Ranulph, in any old English work; perhaps it has been overlooked. In the lack of such corroboration the statements of this paragraph are given without comment.

It will be noticed that Hasted says that the Mannings went to England from "Manning, a town in Saxony." The present Mannheim, in Germany, however, lies some forty miles southwest of Frankfort, and considerably removed from the bounds of the Saxony of the year 1000. In view of this conflict of facts it may

be useless to say more of the present Mannheim, yet two items will be given. It (Mannheim) is one of the comparatively modern cities of Germany, and it is only since the 17th century that it has been of any importance, while its early history is told in a German Encyclopedia thus: "On the site of Mannheim there lay since the 8th century, in the neighborhood of a former Roman settlement, the Villa Mannheim, belonging to the monastery of Larsch." The German word Mannheim is of two parts, *Mann* being the same as the English "man," and *heim* meaning "home," but, in the opinion of a German scholar, this does not appear to be a likely explanation of the name. He believes, rather, that "Mann" is merely the termination of some old German tribal name ending in — *manni*, as, for instance, the Alemanni.

The last three paragraphs are given for what they are worth.

THE EARLY MANNINGS OF AMERICA.

The first settlements in what is now the United States had not long been made when our family name was introduced here by settlers of the name of Manning. Here their descendants have remained ever since, increasing in numbers until they are now to be found by the thousands. Almost from the first planting of the Colonies they had part in the development and conduct of the country. They have been represented in almost every line of endeavor, manual, business and professional. For one hundred years they took part in the Colonial wars, and they fought in the Revolution, the war of 1812, the Rebellion and the war with Spain. It is believed that they performed their full proportionate part in these wars. They have been numerous in the North, and, it would seem equally so in the South. Maryland and Virginia have been liberally peopled by them, and perhaps the other Southern states had as large a representation. As this compilation has dealt with another section it cannot be here stated from whom the Mannings of the South descended, although settlers bearing the name early went to Virginia. In the North there were two families early founded in Massachusetts which have been continued to the present time, and one in New Jersey; and later came other settlers. In due place in this volume more extended information will be given of these settlers, but a brief chronological table bearing upon the subject may be introduced here.

- 1607. Settlement of Jamestown, Va.
- 1620. Settlement of Plymouth, Mass., by the Mayflower pilgrims.
- 1623. Portsmouth, N. H., settled.
- 1628. Salem, Mass., settled.
- 1629. The charter of Massachusetts was granted, and Charlestown, Lynn and Weymouth were settled.
- 1630. Boston, Dorchester, Roxbury, Watertown and Medford were settled.
- 1634. William Manning, ancestor of the large Cambridge family, located about this time at Cambridge.
- 1634. John Manning was at Ipswich, and, 1636, Thomas Manning appeared in the same town. It cannot be asserted that their families were long continued in the male line.
- 1641. John Manning, probably a different John, was an inhabitant of Boston. His family died out in the male line with his children.
- 1653. George Manning was at Boston. Probably all his sons died unmarried.
- 1662. Nicholas Manning settled at Salem as early as this date, and being followed from England, in 1679, by his mother, brothers and sisters, these brothers became the ancestors of the present Salem-Ipswich family.
- 1676. Jeffrey Manning settled, as early as this year, in Piscataway township, New Jersey, and was the ancestor of the large and important New Jersey family, of which President James Manning, of Brown College, was a representative.

SERVICE OF THE MANNINGS IN THE EARLY WARS.

From the time when there was the first need of their aid to the present day the Manning families have been represented in the wars of the Colonies and the Republic, and, it is believed, generously represented in proportion to their numbers. They have taken part in every war unless that with Mexico was an exception; of that period there is no report. In this volume each member's service is entered in his individual sketch, and furthermore, a list of the names of all soldiers of all our wars appears, grouped, just before the genealogical records of each family. The present section is not in any sense a complete history of the service of any known member; such a history appears only in his individual

sketch. This article is a summary of what has been found on the official rolls of the wars before 1800 (not after), and is merely a list for convenient reference. In the early wars there was service rendered, and entered on the rolls, which cannot now be allotted with certainty to any particular person. These cases appear here, together with service that is understood. When the identity of the soldier is known his individual number will be given in parenthesis immediately after his name, while the unallotted service will be placed in form where others can study the respective instances at their leisure. The scarcity of names of Connecticut soldiers of the Colonial wars is due to the fact that there are, as yet, but few rolls in the possession of the State. These are being augmented by acquisitions from towns and private individuals, and the next ten years will doubtless see large additions of rolls and a corresponding increase of Manning names. Unfortunately, this work must go to press without these names, for no one knows where to find the scattered rolls, which come to light only through the force of circumstances. The abbreviations which follow, other than those in common use, refer to the families dealt with in this volume. "Camb." means, a member of the Cambridge family; "S. I.," the Salem-Ipswich family; "Mis.," the miscellaneous families at the end of the book. Index numbers refer to the original volumes. No effort has been made to include any service but that rendered with the troops of the New England States.

COLONIAL WARS.

ABNER MANNING (Camb. 186). Mass. troops. Under Capt. Wm. Flint and Col. Ichabod Plaisted, 1756; at Fort Edward, July 26; age 21, born at Billerica; *again*, roll of Oct. 11, dated at Ft. William Henry; Abner reported deceased. Index, 94-197, 348, 502.

BENJAMIN MANNING (Camb. 38). Mass. troops. Residence, Billerica; served 1725, May 29 to July 1, under Capt. Eleazer Tyng; *again*, 1725, July 2 to Oct. 28, under Capt. Josiah Willard. Index, 91-190, 194.

BENJAMIN MANNING (Camb. 160). Mass. troops. Muster list, 1756, May 7, Capt. Jonathan Butterfield's Co.; *again*, in same Co. at Ft. Edward, 1756, July 26, age 22, born Billerica; *again*, reported sick in muster roll of Oct. 11; *again*, roll of 1757, Mch. 18, residence Billerica, served 1756, Apr. 22 to Nov. 7, reported deceased. Index, 94-185, 325, 458 and 95-85.

BENJAMIN MANNING (Camb. 183). Mass. troops. Residence, Cambridge, under Capt. Ebenezer Newell and Col. Ruggles, served 1755, Apr. 4 to Oct. 31, expedition against Crown Point; *again*, served 1756, Mch.

19, to 1757, Jan. 9, under Capt. Thos. Lord and Col. Richard Gridley; age 25, born Cambridge, residence do., joined from Charlestown, expedition against Crown Point; *again*, in Col. John Kingsbury's Co. of carpenters at Lake George, 1757, Feb. 7; *again*, sergeant under Capt. Thos. Cheever, expedition against Crown Point; residence "probably Charlestown;" served 1757, Feb. 22 to Oct. 23; *again*, 1758, Mch. 29 to Nov. 10, under Capt. Wm. Angier and Col. Jos. Williams; *again*, 1760, for the reduction of Canada; *again*, 1760, May 17 to Dec. 4; residence, Cambridge; under Capt. John Small. Index, 94-87, 124, 328, 442, and 95-199, 200, 225, and 96-53, 64, 104, 104a, 267, 341, and 98-31, 346.

DANIEL MANNING (Mis. 94). Mass. troops. Born New Hampshire, residence, "Hampshire," enlisted from Ipswich; in Crown Point expedition 1756, Mch. 18 to Dec., under Capt. Israel Davis and Col. Jonathan Bagley. Index, 94-386, 477, 520, and 95-116.

DAVID MANNING (Camb. 121). Conn. troops. Served 1758, June 3 to Oct. 27 under Capt. Samuel Elmer [Elmore?]. Residence not given; probably Litchfield Co. Not indexed.

GEORGE MANNING (Mis. 12). Mass. troops. Residence, Boston; in King Philip's war under Capt. Samuel Mosely, 1675-6, Jan. 25, and in garrison at Westfield, Sept. 23 after.

JAMES MANNING (Camb. 233). Mass. troops. Residence, Charlestown; served under Capt. John Taplin from 1759, Apr. 2 to Sep. 1760(?); *again*, under same captain, Colonel Frye's regt.; in service in Nova Scotia, 1760, Jan. 1 and paid to Sep. 5. Index, 98-342, 443.

JOEL MANNING (Camb. 178). Mass. troops. Under Capt. Jonathan Butterfield, expedition against Canada; enlisted 1758, Apr. 11; paid to May 27. Index, 96-134.

JOHN MANNING (Camb. 12). Mass. troops. Under Sir William Phipps in the expedition against Canada in 1690. No rolls are known to exist. See Mass. Archives 115-684, 685; Cumberland Co., Me., deed 12-512; Boston *Gazette*, 1772, Aug. 8, adv., etc.

JOHN MANNING (Camb. 29 or 34). Mass. troops. Residence, Cambridge; under Capt. Samuel Wheelwright, 1723, Oct. 23, to 1724, June 2; *again*, under the same, 1724 or 1725, June 2 to Nov. 16. Nearly all men were residents of Maine; only John was from Cambridge. Index, 91-112, 209.

JOHN MANNING (Mis. 44). Surgeon in Louisburg expedition from Mass., 1745. Whether he was a resident of Mass. is unknown.

JOHN MANNING (Camb. 152). Mass. troops. Residence, Lancaster. Served 1755, Apr. 7 to Nov. 6, under Capt. Benj. Ballard; *again*, 1755, Dec. 17 to 1756, Mch. 29, under the same, both services Crown Point expedition; *again*, under the same, 1756, Mch. 29 to Oct. 9. Index, 94-123, and 95-17 (two).

JOHN MANNING (Service not allotted. Perhaps the same as previous John). Mass. troops. Residence, Boston; under Capt. David White and Col. Jos. Williams, 1758, Apr. 27 to Nov. 23. Index, 96-489, and 97-24.



WATERS.

ANCESTRY

— OF THE —

WATERS FAMILY,

— OF —

MARIETTA, OHIO.

W. B. WATERS

PRIVATELY PRINTED.
1882.

CS.
71
V33
1882

(LOS has this on film # 143 3986. I threw away handwritten notes after getting this Xerox copy (Jan 1991))

Note:
When this was written in 1882, the author didn't have access to all records. Sarah & Phoebe were born in England & not mentioned in their father's will, so he missed them.
Nij



COAT ARMOURY OF THE WATERS FAMILY IN GREAT BRITAIN.

(From Burke's Heraldry.)

WATERS—(Ireland). Argent three magpies proper.—Crest, an eagle rising reguardant proper.
Motto—Spero.

WATERS—(Ireland). Or three magpies proper.

✓ WATERS—(Lenham, Co. Kent). Sable three bars wavy between as many swans argent.

WATERS—(Ludlow, Co. Salop). Or a pale azure.

WATERS—(Shropshire). Per pale argent and sable; a saltire charged with another wavy, both counter changed.

WATERS—(Scotland). Quarterly, argent and azure; a saltire engrailed counterchanged. Crest—a demi talbot argent in the mouth an arrow gules. Motto—Toujours Fidele.

WATERS—(York Herald temp. Richard II.) Sable on a fesse wavy argent between three swans of the second, two bars wavy azure. Crest—same as last.

WATERS—Quarterly: argent and sable, a saltire wavy counterchanged.

WATERS—Paly of six, argent and azure, a saltire wavy counter changed.

Thomas Waters, Esq., of Sarnau, Carmarthen, a demi griffin, azure.
Honor pietas.

"The arms of Watter of Cundall as shown in Edmondson's Heraldry were: Argent a chevron engrailed between three chess-rooks Sable. The arms of Sir Robert Watter differed from these in having the chevron charged with three crescents Or. Crest:—An arm vested Gules turned up argent, holding in hand proper a chess-rook Sable."

ANCESTRY OF THE WATERS FAMILY OF MARIETTA, OHIO,
DESCENDANTS OF JAMES WATERS OF
LONDON, ENGLAND.

FIRST GENERATION.

JAMES WATERS, of St. Buttolph without Aldgate London, citizen and ironmonger of London; will dated 17 May, 1617, proved 16 Feb'y, 1617; to be buried in St. Buttolph's parish, near children; wife Phebe and son RICHARD WATERS (under twenty-one years of age) legatees; partner Samuel Rowland. [Meade, L. 17.]

Phebe, his widow, married William Plasse, as will be seen from the following record:

1618-19 Feb'y 18, William Plasse of St. Botolph Aldgate, London, gunmaker, and Phebe Waters, of same, widow of James Waters Ironmonger at St. Botolph aforesaid, have license to marry granted them by the Bishop of London.

Richard Waters and William Plasse came to New England.

"William Plasse was a gunsmith to whom the town of Salem (Mass.) granted, in 1637, for him and his wife the house formerly Mr. Conant's — — &c., and in 1643 appointed a committee to provide for him a convenient room to work in — &c. He died in 1646 and his estate was administered by Thomas Wickes or Weeks, whose wife Alice (afterwards wife of Nicholas Potter) and two children, Hannah, wife of John Pickman, and Bethia, wife of John Archer, are afterwards found in occupancy of the real estate. The gunsmith's tools were said to be in the possession of Richard Waters, who calls himself a son-in-law of the deceased."

The following items are from the town records of Salem, as given in the "History of Sutton":

"4th—5 mo—1637 William Plaise requested a tenne acre lott & it is granted 21 d—6 mo—1637—it is ordered yt mr Connants house, ground & half-acre of corn standing on the same joining next unto mr Jno. fisk shall be bought by the Towne for ould mr William Plase & the Towne to mak payment thereof."

(Mem.—This house of Mr. Roger Conant, leader or governor of the "old Planters", as they were called, who had already made a settlement here before the coming of Endicott and Winthrop, stood on the land now occupied by the late residence of the Hon. Jacob S. Rogers, deceased, opposite Derby square and the town hall.)

"25—10—1637.— the marsh and meadow Lands that have formerly layed in comon to this towne shall now be appropriated to the Inhabitants of Salem, proportioned out unto them according to the heads of their families."

In a list probably made out for this appointment, the name of Willm. Plais occurs, with the figure 2 set against it, showing, doubtless, the number of his family (himself and wife).

4—10—1643, certain men are appointed as a "comitee to provide for William Plaise a convenient roome to worke in and to sett up a forge for him & wood & other necessities to the Valew of £4."

"20—2—1646 Ordered that the Towne is to beare 29s of the charges toward William Plaise his keeping in his sickness and his burial & the rest to be paid by Richard Waters. The whole amounting to £2, 19s, 6d."

These may certify that my father-in-law, William Plaise, gunsmith, departed this life in Salem, this fifteenth day of the 2d mo. 1646.

RICHARD WATERS.

SECOND GENERATION.

RICHARD WATERS, born in England, son of James and Phebe Waters, by trade a gunsmith, married in England, Rejoice Plaise (according to "Hist. of Sutton"). Received a grant of land in Salem, Mass., 22 day 3 mo. 1636.

"By the list of 25 day 10 mo. 1637, before mentioned, giving the names of householders and the number of heads in their families, it appears that Richard Waters had five (5) in his family at that time; probably himself, his wife and three children.

In 1638 mention is made of his "howse", which stood, perhaps, not far from the upper end of Broad street."

Freeman in 1639.

"Mr. Waters seems first to have lived near the head of Broad street, but must very early have removed to the neck near Cat Cove, where he conveyed building lots to two or three of his children, forming a hamlet afterwards known as Watertown and which remained among his descendants until the middle of the last century."

"16th July 1676 "being ancient" Richard Waters wrote his will, (a beautiful specimen of his own handwriting,) which was sworn to by the witnesses in court at Salem 28 d., 9 mo. '77. He appoints his wife, Joyce, sole executrix, and bequeaths to her all his property during her life or widowhood, and after that, what remains, "to my sonn, William, to be secured in the hands of my sonne Ezekiel, for to maintain his brother William, during his natural life, in case my sonne Ezekiel be not willing to keep him if my sonn John undertake it then he shall have Williams estate during his natural life and at Williams death to be disposed of as followeth:"

Then follow bequests to sons James, John and Ezekiel, and to daughter Martha, of 10 s. each, provided there be left forty pounds clear estate at William's death, and the bulk of the property to go to daughters, Abigail Punchard, Mary English, Susan Pulsifer and Hannah Striker, "whoe neither of them have had any part or portion of estate already, as my forementioned children have had."

Children:

1. Mary, born in England; married Clement English, Aug. 27, 1667.
2. James, " " " " Mary Stalworthie, Mch. 24, 1669-70.
3. William, " " " " never married.
4. Martha, " " " " named in Will, unmarried 1676.
5. JOHN, baptized 27-9-1640; married Sara Tompkins.
6. Elizabeth, " 26-12-1642; died unmarried 4-12-1662.
7. Abigail, " 18-3-1645; married William Punchard Oct. 26, 1669
—Ancestors of the editor of the "Boston Traveller."
8. Ezekiel, " 9-2-1647; married Mary —.
9. Susanna, " 1-2-1649; " Benedict Pulsifer, Feb., 1673.
Ancestors of the editor of the "Boston Herald", R. M. Pulsifer.
10. Hannah, baptized 30-11-1652; married Joseph Striker, April 10, 1673.

THIRD GENERATION.

JOHN WATERS, son of Richard and Rejoice Waters, baptized in Salem, 27 day 9mo. 1640; married Sara, the daughter of John Tompkins. 1 day 6 mo. 1663. He settled in that part of Salem called North Fields, on Waters river, named for him, near Gov. Endicott's farm, was a wealthy farmer and reared a large family who were the ancestors of all the known descendants of the name of RICHARD WATERS.

His last will and testament, written 14th Feby. 1706-7, was proved 1st March 1707-8.

After providing for his wife, he mentions his three sons, John, Richard and Nathaniel, daughter Elizabeth, then in a "single condition," and daughters Symonds and Jacobs.

Children:

1. Richard }
2. John } twins, born "last of June 1664, died within a fortnight."
3. John, born July 4, 1665; married Mary —.
4. Sara, " 30 day, 6 mo. 1667; " John Symonds Mch. 3, 1689-90.
5. Richard, " Nov. 13, 1669; " Martha Read, Mch. 3, 1697-8.
6. *Nathaniel, " 6 day, 12 mo. 1671; " Elizabeth King, Dec. 12 1699.
7. Samuel, " Mch. 29, 1674; died aged 5 weeks.
8. SAMUEL, " May 6, 1675; married Miss Turrill.
9. Elizabeth, " 10 day, 11 mo. 1677; never married, adm. on her estate was granted to her brother John, Nov. 13, 1734.
10. Abigail, baptized May 6, 1683; married John Jacobs, April 6, 1704.

*From Nathaniel are descended Edwin F. Waters, Treas. "Boston Daily Advertiser"; (Edwin F., son of George, son of Cornelius, son of Jonathan, son of Nathaniel.) and Col. Asa H. Waters of Millbury, Mass. (Asa H., son of Asa, son of Asa, son of Jonathan, son of Nathaniel.)

Louisa M., wife of Judge Alphonso Taft of Cincinnati and Anna D., wife of Prest. Orton of Columbus, are daughters of Susan H. (Torry) daughter of Asa Waters, son of Asa, son of Jonathan, son of Nathaniel Waters.

Note: that

was 12

children —

this misses 2

odest +

Phebe who m.

Thos. West

Star Sarah who

m. Joshua Read

(see proof in

Rec file.)

FOURTH GENERATION.

SAMUEL WATERS, son of John and Sara Waters, born in Salem, May 6, 1675; baptized July 14, 1678; went to Woburn, Mass., which is 10 miles from Boston, from there to Easton in the county of Bristol, and married there a Miss Turrill. He died soon after their marriage, and they had but one child, Samuel. His widow married, 2d, Nathaniel Maudley and had by him ten children; they lived near the Methodist meeting house in Easton.

Only child:

1. SAMUEL, married Bethyah Thayer.

FIFTH GENERATION.

SAMUEL WATERS, son of Samuel and ——— Turrill Waters, married Bethyah Thayer.

His will was proved Aug. 28, 1750 in Stoughton, son Daniel and wife executors. His widow had died before Jan. 1759.

Children:

1. Daniel, married Azenath Bradford.
2. ZEBULON, born Jan. 1735, " Allis Bradford, (sister to Azenath).
3. Samuel, died at the age of 20 years.

SIXTH GENERATION.

ZEBULON WATERS, son of Samuel and Bethyah Waters, was born about January, 1735, and was married September 21, 1757, to Allis Bradford, who was the 10th child by the second wife (Bathshua Le Brocke) of Elisha Bradford, who was the son of Joseph Bradford, the youngest son of Governor William Bradford (by his second wife Alice Southworth).

Elisha Bradford lived near Kingston bridge, which is four miles from Plymouth ("and the first house on the right hand as one goeth from Kingston to Plymouth over the Bridge") and he died June 16, 1747, aged 78 years.

Allis Bradford, wife of Zebulon Waters, was born November 3, 1734.

Zebulon Waters died May 29, 1790, aged 55 years and about 4 months and Allis Bradford his wife, died July 6, 1795, aged 60 years and about 8 months. They lived and died at Stoughton, Mass., and he was among the first settlers of that place. He was one of the soldiers who assisted Col. Winslow in removing the Acadians May 28, 1755, as did also his brother Daniel Waters.

Children:

1. Nehemiah.
2. ASA, born Feb. 11, 1760, married Lydia Smith, Nov. 10, 1785.
3. Daniel. Died Oct. 6, 1780 in the Revolutionary War in New Jersey, aged 16 years and 3 mos.
4. Zebulon.
5. Samuel.
6. Matilda. Married James Nash, had 8 children and was killed by a crazy man in Gibson, N. H.
7. Rebecca. Died young.
8. Hannah. Married Daniel Drake of Sharon, had 6 children.
9. Chloe. " Lemuel Monk, had 10 children.
10. Mary. " George Randall of Easton, had son George.

SEVENTH GENERATION.

ASA WATERS, son of Zebulon and Allis Waters, was born at Stoughton, Mass., February 11, 1760, and married Lydia Smith (who was born Jan. 10, 1763) November 10, 1785.

He served in the Revolutionary War for the American Independence. He enlisted in his seventeenth year for two months, Feb. and March, 1776 and was in Capt. Jedediah Southworth's Company and Col. Robinson's Regiment at Dorchester. When his time was out he went back to his father's, but in September, 1776 he enlisted again for nine months, in Capt. Zebedee Reading's Company and Col. Whitney's Regiment and was at Hull near Boston, and at Cambridge. He again returned to his home, and in July, 1778, enlisted to go to Tiverton, R. I., in Capt. Dix's Company and Col. Mackintosh's Regiment.

The 20th July 1779, he enlisted for nine months in the 1st Massachusetts Regiment, commanded by Joseph Vose of Milton and Capt. Stoddard's Company of Stockbridge. Thirteen went with him from Stoughton. They marched to West Point, New York, and had German guns which were "good, but rather heavy". The troops were inspected at West Point by Baron de Stuben of Prussia.

These items are taken from his own account of his services.

He acquired the title of Captain.

Lydia Smith was a daughter of Joseph Smith. He and Zebulon Waters, father of Asa, were among the first settlers of Stoughton, in the southwest corner of Norfolk Co. They both owned farms in the southwest corner of the township on the road leading from Boston to New Bedford. The farms were separated from each other about one fourth of a mile. Asa and Lydia were married soon after the close of the Revolutionary war. At the time of their marriage he owned a small farm adjoining his father's and lying between that and Joseph Smith's, so that

smith, came to Salem in 1636 with his wife Phebe.¹ She was widow of James Waters of St. Buttolph, with-out Aldgate, London, an iron monger, who had died in the winter of 1617-8; and she had married, secondly, Mr. Plasse (published Feb. 18, 1618-9).

They brought with them her young son Richard Waters,² who was born in London and was under age in 1617. He settled in Salem, and followed the trade of his stepfather.

Richard Waters

¹Mr. Plasse died here April 15, 1646.

²RICHARD WATERS¹ married Rejoice —, probably in England; died in the summer of 1677; she was his widow in 1687; children: 1. Sarah,² born in 1630; married Joshua Rea; 2. Phebe,² born in 163—; married Thomas

12 children

West; 3. William; living in 1700; to be maintained by his brother under his father's will; 4. Martha,² unmarried in 1676; 5. John,² baptized Nov. 27, 1640; 6. Elizabeth,² baptized Feb. 26, 1642-3; died, unmarried, Feb. 4, 1661-2; 7. Mary,² married Clement English; 8. Abigail,² baptized May 18, 1645; married William Punchard; 9. James,² lived in Topsfield; married, first, Mary Stalworthie March 24, 1668-9; second, Rachel Hart of Ipswich May 22, 1695; died Sept. 11, 1704; 10. Ezekiel,² baptized April 4, 1647; 11. Susanna,² baptized April 1, 1649; married Benedict Pulsiver of Ipswich Feb. —, 1673-4; 12. Hannah,² baptized Jan. 30, 1652-3; married Joseph Striker.

JOHN WATERS,² planter and husbandman; married Sarah Tompkins Aug. 1, 1663; she was his wife in 1707; he died in the winter of 1707-8; children: 1. John² (twin), born June 30, 1664; died July —, 1664; 2. Richard² (twin), born June 30, 1664; died July —, 1664; 3. John,² born July 4, 1665; 4. Sarah,² born Aug. 30, 1667; married John Symonds; 5. Richard,² born Nov. 13, 1669; 6. Nathaniel,² born Feb. 6, 1670-1; 7. Samuel,² born March 29, 1674; died about May 1, 1674; 8. Samuel,² born May 6, 1675; married, first, Bethiah Archer Jan. 1, 1694-5; second, Hannah —; she survived him; he died in 1729, without issue; 9. Elizabeth,² born Jan. 10, 1677; died, unmarried, in 1734; 10. Abigail,² baptized May 6, 1683; married John Jacobs. EZEKIEL WATERS,² shoreman; was living in 1721; children: 1. Samuel,² born Sept. 3, 1673; 2. Mary,² born April 19, 1676; 3. Elizabeth,² born Aug. 4, 1678; married — McMarr; 4. Ezekiel,² born Aug. 1, 1680; 5. Sarah,² born Aug. 9, 1682; 6. Rejoice,² born March 9, 1684; married, first, Robert Lee in Boston May 13, 1709; second, Trustrum Bullock of Boston Nov. 7, 1716; 7. Susanna,² born Jan. 1, 1685-6; 8. Elias,² born May 11, 1688; died June 30, 1688; 9. Ebenezer,² baptized Oct. 26, 1690; 10. Martha,² baptized Oct. —, 1692; married — Coats; 11. Priscilla,² baptized Feb. —, 1693-4; of Boston, unmarried, in 1742; 12. Daniel,² baptized Feb. 9, 1695-6.

JOHN WATERS,² husbandman and housewright; married Mary —; died in the winter of 1741-2; children: 1. John,² baptized July 19, 1702; 2. Mary,² baptized July 19, 1702; married John Felton; 3. Sarah,² baptized July 19, 1702; unmarried in 1741; 4. Lydia,² baptized March 12, 1703-4; married John Proctor; 5. Eunice,² baptized Aug. 18, 1706; married Thomas Gardner; 6. Abigail,² baptized June 12, 1709; married Eleazer Porter. RICHARD WATERS,² husbandman and cooper; removed to Sutton in 1721; married Martha Read March 3, 1697; she was his widow, of Sutton, in 1725-6; children: 1. Hannah,² born March 4, 1699; 2. Richard,² born Nov. 22, 1700; married Anne Holman June 12, 1732; died in Sutton May 7, 1787; 3. Abigail,² born Aug. 1, 1702; married Samuel Dudley Feb. 17, 1728-9; 4. Samuel,² born Sept. 1, 1703; captain; mariner; lived in Sutton and Salem; married Rachel Holman of Newbury Nov. 13, 1729; died in 1785; she died in 1807 (?); 5. Mercy,² baptized July 24, 1707; married Solomon Holman Aug. 28, 1729; 6. Ebenezer,² baptized July 10, 1709; 7. Mary,² baptized Sept. 30, 1711; 8. Lois,² baptized May 16, 1714; 9. Amos,² baptized June 9, 1717. NATHANIEL WATERS,² fisherman; married Elizabeth King Dec. 12, 1699; died in the winter of 1717-8; she was his widow in 1744; children: 1. Elizabeth,² married Isaac Cook; 2. Hannah,² died, unmarried, before 1736; 3. Mehitabel,² baptized Oct. 15, 1704; died young; 4. Ruth,² baptized Oct. 15, 1704; married Benjamin Marsh of Sutton; 5. Mehitabel,² baptized July 13, 1707; married Samuel Foster; 6. Nathaniel,² born Oct. 22, 1708; husbandman and mariner; married Mary Gardner Nov. 29, 1737; living in 1740; 7. Sarah,² baptized July 20, 1712; died before 1736; 8. Jonathan,² baptized July 31, 1715; married Mehitabel Gyles Aug. 10, 1738. SAMUEL WATERS,² mariner; married Mary Hawkins Aug. 2, 1698; died Aug. 4, 1715; children: 1. Mary,² born May 29, 1700; married Henry Williams; 2. Barbara,² born Dec. 2, 1703; 3. Samuel,² born Oct. 2, 1707; probably married, first, Silence Rogers Jan. 9, 1726-7; second, Sarah Purchase Sept. 21, 1733; third, Mary Ropes May 1, 1760; 4. Mercy,² born Sept. 20, 1712.

JOHN WATERS,² husbandman; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Danvers in 1752; married, first, Elizabeth Gardner Nov. 30, 1721; she was his wife in 1744; married, second, Abigail (Hutchinson), widow of Benjamin Putman May —, 1760; children: 1. John,² born Nov. 30, 1722; yeoman; lived in what is now Danvers; married Rachel, widow of Nathaniel Tarbell April 6, 1763; died at Carlisle in 1812, aged ninety; 2. Israel,² baptized in 1724-5; died young; 3. Elizabeth,² baptized March 26, 1727; married Henry Jacobs April 23, 1748; 4. Abel,² baptized May 4, 1729; yeoman; lived in Danvers; married Hannah Proctor July 9, 1751; 5. Mary,² baptized June 13, 1731; died young; 6. Sarah,² baptized Oct. 15, 1732; probably married Benjamin Felt; 7. Mary,² baptized May 4, 1735; married William Shillaber; 8. Lydia,² baptized May 29, 1737; married Aaron Putnam; 9. Ruth,² baptized Oct. 28, 1739; died young; 10. Abigail,² baptized April 26, 1741; 11. Eunice,² baptized Oct. 28, 1744.

Condon
is thru
Sarah

Edward Calcord of Hampton v. Jams Wale of Exeter. Debt.
Mr. Sam. Winsley of Salisbury and Mr. Trist. Coffin of Haverell
v. Richard Ayre (also Aree) of Salisbury.

Georg Varnam summoned by Sam. Greenfield, action not entered.
Robt. Lord was Varnam's attorney. Henry Greene of Hampton
was also summoned as a witness for Greenfield.

Inventory* of William Goog brought in, and his widow Ann
Goog (also Gouge) appointed administratrix. Court gave her the
goods for the bringing up of her three small children.

Mr. Ralph Fogg excused from training. Showed Mr. Garford
this order. "Scrip: p. Cp. Hathorne."

John Pride excused from training, paying 5s. yearly.

✓ Richard Dodg of Salem and William Tylton of Lyn sworn
freemen.

John Decon (also Deacon) of Lynn sworn constable. ✓

William Tilton of Lynn freed from training, paying 6s. yearly,
but to keep his arms fixed.

Thomas Couldam of Lynn sworn constable, 1: 5 mo: 1646.

Mr. Richard Stilman acknowledged judgment of 17li. 6d. to John
Horne, attorney for "Nicholas Pacy of Lowestoft in the county of
Suff, m'chant."

*Inventory of estate of William Goog, lately deceased, taken
28: 8: 1645, by Nathaniell Handforth,† Francis Lightfoot† and
Francis Ingols.† His purse and apparrill, 1li. 4s.; 1 house & lott
& 2 ackers of medow and one ten acker lott, 8li.; 4 hoges, 2li. 10s.;
5 bushels of wheate, 1li.; ten bushels of indian Coren, 1li. 10s.; the
beddinge, 1li. 18s. 8d.; Flax in the bun[dle], 14s.; one cheste &
a chaier, 13s. 4d.; 3 wheles, 7s. 6d.; one handsaw & one wharte
saw,† 5s.; one sword & a belte, 5s.; one muskett & bandeleares,
1li.; one warming pan, 3s.; one payer of bellis, 1s.; one Friinge
pan, 4s.; one gridiron & recke hookes, 3s. 6d.; one peice of steele,
8d.; soume ould Ieren, 2s.; too ould howes, 2s.; one reappinge
hooke & a. sith, 4s.; gunpouder, 2s. 6d.; hay, 10s.; a pece of
wolen Cloth, 5s.; a pece of lining Cloth, 14s.; aleven pott hookes,
7s.; one scellitt & posnitt, 3s. 6d.; earthen pott, 1s. 8d.; 6 spoones,
1s.; 3 wood trayes & 3 wood boules & 3 wood dishes, 1s. 9d.; one
runlitt, 1s.; paaies & tube, 3s.; 2 bages, 2s.; one ould chaier &
stoole & trunke, 2s. 6d.; one old axe & other small thinges, 2s.
6d.; one Cow, 4li. 10s. Debts to be paid out of this, 4li. 9s. 7d.;
total, 28li. 11s. 7d.

†Autograph.

†A saw used for cutting an irregularly growing tussock of grass.

Mr. Gervas Garford fined for absence from jury. He came
presently.

12 mo: 1645, the court ordered a foot-bridge to be made at
Makerell cove in the highway, which had not been attended to, and if
not completed before last day: 7: 1646, town of Salem to pay fine.

Evan Morris, accused by his master, Georg Carr, for threatening
to kill his master, etc., as by Mr. Bellingam's letter, dated 24: 4:
1646, for running away from the constable, and for an action of a
high nature done in England, was fined 20s. Daniell Clark, surety.

Edward Calcord fined 20s. for a false oath.

Georg Hadeley, who summoned Mr. Jonathan Wade to Salem
court and did not prosecute his case, to pay 8s. costs.—Waste Book.]

✓ Inventory of estate of William Plasse, deceased, at the house
of Thomas Weekes* (also Wickes and Wikes), 15: 2: 1646 (per-
haps date of death): One fetherbedd, twoe fether bolsters, one great
Bible, one psalme booke, one ould Chest, tooles that Richard Wal-
ters hath that he must give accompt of. "And whereas ffyve
pounds was given to the sd Plasse by the Towne which I gathered
up in Corne for him, I did thus Discharge it, viz.: Imprinis By
so [much] unto my self for dyett & elce yt I had Laid out befor
y^e Towne granted him 5li. y^e some of 2li. & out of the 3li. Left I
pd for 1 pr shoes, 6s.; cloth to make him a Capp, 3s. 6d.; a pair
of stockings, 2s. 4d.; for steele Iron & Cole, 4s.; total, 2li. 15s.
10d.; spent in dyett, 2li. 4s. 2d.; total, 5li." In hands of Richard
Walters: One chere & stoole, one anville, 2 vices, one smale
beakhorne, 2 hamers, one smale and one great; one old pair of
Bellows, 18 files, 1 pr. vice Tongs, 1 pr. snuffers with a bras chayne
& 3 kegs, 2 storne plates, 2 pr. & 1-2 of forging tongs, 2 match
Locks, 2 stock nail tooles, 2 brok Iron bolsters & a drill boxe, 7
forging hott punches, 2 Iron wrenches, 1 brass Lampe, 1 litle hack-
hamer, 2 pan bores & galloes, 25 smale Could punches, 1 burnishyng
steele & a harth staff, 3 hartopps prt. brok, 1 old pr. mittins, 1 turne
vice, 5 fil hafts & a flatt bord, 10 li.; 8 oz. of old bushell Iron, 1li.,
8 oz. of Lead, one wrench for breech pl. Charges of Thomas
Weekes for William Plasse in his sickness: For Veale & Fowle,
5s. 2d.; sugar, 4s. 9d.; Bread, 1s. 2d.; beare, 1s. 7d.; more for egges,
6d.; spices, 6d.; 2 weekes board before he fell sick, 9s.; for a debt
that I am ingaged to Goodman Rumball before he fell sick, 3s. 6d.;
coffin, 6s.; bread and beare att his buryinge, 5s.; for Goodwife
Ager, 1s.; for the Grave makeinge, 1s.; for wood & aleven dayes
tendence as you maye thinke meete, 2li. 10s. 2d.; more the townes
is willing to allowe him for buriall & atendance of him, 9s. 10d.;
total, 3li.

*Autograph.

Will of William Plasse, our brother

Because he left no male descendants to carry on the name in America, this deed
Henry-Crest Goodfellow is after awarded!

Ao. 1636.	
Lands granted to those following :	
To Roger Conant	200 acres
Peter Palfrey	200
John Balch	200
Captane Endicott	200
Mr Reade	300
mr Sharpe	300
Leiftenant Johnson	200
Robt. Coles	300
mr. Blackleech	300
Townsend Bishop	300
Thomas Scruggs	200
mr Phillip Verrin	160
mr Batter	200
John Alderman	50
Thomas Antram	30
mr Alford, pvided in case depte, to leave yt, de- siring no advantage by it.	200
Richard Bishop	20
John Barber	30
Hugh Browne	20
Thomas Browning	40
Thomas Chub	20
Willm Connyus	10
Nichus Cary	20
John Cook	20
Sam Eborne	20
John Elford	25
George Emery	40
Jeffrey Esty	20
Pascha floote	40
Benjamyn felton	20
mr. Garford	30
Edw. Gaskell	20
Edw Grover	20
Roger Haskell	20
Robt Goodall	20
John Gally	20
Willm Goose	50
Thomas Golthwaite	10
George Harris	20
John Hart	10
Richard Hutchinson	60
Richard Hollingsworth	20
Richard Ingersoll*	80

Willm James	25
mr Jackson	50
Willm Jegles	50
Robt Leech	20
John Leech	10
Robt Lemon	10
Willm Lord	20
John Leech jun	30
willm Marston	30
John Marshe	20
widow Mason	20
Robt Morgan	20
Thom Moore	20
John Norman	20
Robt Pease	10
John Pease	20
francis Perry	20
Jonathan Porter	20
John Pickworth	20
Thom Reade	10
Thom Roots	20
Joshua Roots	20
James Standishe	20
James Smyth	20
John Stone	10
John Sheply	20
Michell Shafflyn	20
Elias Stileman	30
John Symonds	20
francis Skerry	20
Mich. Sallowes	20
mr Smyth	150
mr John Thorndike	100
Abram Temple	—
Rich Waters	10
Rich Walker	40
Abram warren	20
Thom Watson	10
Humphrey Woodbery	40
mr Hathorne	200
Thom Tuck	10
John Devorex	10
Willm Woodbery	40
Thom Moores widow	10
Thom Eaborne	30
Richard Roots	20
Anth Dike	40
mr. felton	20

Edm marshall	20
Thom Lathrop	30
Robt Cotta	30
John Talbye	30
widoe Skarlett	30

AT JEFFRYES CREEKE.*

Sam Archer	60
Wm Allen	50
John Sibley	50
Geo: willms	40
John Moore	40
John Blake	30
Serjeant wolfe	50
Serjeant Dixie	50
Wm Walcott	30
Wm Agur	30
Roger Morie	50
John Sanders	40
Wm Bound	40
Henr. Herrick	40
Geo Norton	40
Thom Olney	40
Willm King	40
Jo Grafton	30
John Hardy	60
Sam Moore	40
Hugh Laskyn	70
Edr. Giles	60
Jacob Barnes	50
Willm Dodge	60
mr Gott	75
Rich Brackenbury	75
John Horne	75
Jeffry Massy	75
Rich waterman	80
Leift davenport	80
Raph ffog	80
John Holgrave	60
Rch. Reymont	60
Lawr Leech	100
Rbt Moulton	100
mr Stileman	100
mr Gardner	100
Captane Traske	100
ffr weston	120
mr Higginson	150
daniell Ray	160
mr Peters	300

next mr
Coles.

*The 80 acres granted to Richard Ingersoll were
at Ryall side and were improved him as a farm. His

estate was settled 1664, and this farm was appraised
at £7.

(To be continued.)

*Jeffreyes Creek is now Manchester.

WATERS

WATERS, ANTHONY, Hempstead, L. I. was town clk. 1663, favor. the jurisdic. of Conn. and it may be, that he had gone from Conn. to promote annex. BEVIL, Hartford, found in the list of freem. 1669, had good est. d. 14 Feb. 1730, says the gr.-st. in 97th yr. Wh. was his first w. and mo. of his ch. is not kn. but when 92 yrs. old, he took ano. w. 13 Dec. 1722, Sarah, wid. of Joseph Mygott. His will of 1 Feb. 1721 ment. Thomas, d. bef. his f. and ds. Sarah, wh. m. 10 Feb. 1698, Joseph Benton; Hannah m. 1708, Wilterton Merrills; Mary m. 1711, Thomas Seymour. EDWARD, New Haven, took o. of fidel. 1647; and one of the same name liv. at Westchester 1663. EZEKIEL, Salem, s. of Richard, had Samuel, b. 3 Sept. 1673; Mary, 19 Apr. 1676; Eliz. 4 Aug. 1678; Ezekiel, 1 Aug. 1680; Sarah, 9 Aug. 1682; Joyce, 9 Mar. 1684; Susanna, 1 Jan. 1686; Elias, 11 May 1688, wh. d. next mo.; Ebenezer, 26 Oct. 1690; and Martha, Oct. 1692. JACOB, Charlestown, had w. Sarah, wh. join. the ch. there 12 Nov. 1682, and of wh. I find no more. JOHN, Boston, came with Winth. 1630, I suppose, for he and w. Frances are among the very early mem. of our ch. Nos. 23 and 4, and d. since is add. to the first copy of rec. He was from Neyland, in Co. Suffk. was a serv. of the Gov. wh. in letters to his w. the first autumn after arriv. ment. his loss. See Appx. A. to his Hist. Nos. 47 and 49. JOHN, Milford 1658, if Lambert be correct; but no more is found of him, not even his name among freem. of 1669. JOHN, Salem, perhaps s. of Richard of the same, m. 1 Aug. 1663, Sarah, d. of John Tompkins of the same, had Richard and John, b. last of June foll. and both d. in few days; John, 4 July 1665; Sarah, 30 Aug. 1667; Richard, again, 13 Nov. 1669; Nathaniel, 6 Feb. 1672; Samuel, 29 Mar. 1674, d. in few wks.; Samuel, again, 6 May 1675; and Eliz. 10 Jan. 1678. He was call. Aug. 1692, witness against George Jacobs. His will of 14 Feb. 1707, was pro. 1 Mar. 1708. JOSEPH, New Haven 1649, aft. 1653, prob. rem. to Milford, at least had gr. of ld. in that town 1656 and 9; but no more is heard of him. JOSEPH, Boston, m. 13 Sept. 1655, Martha, d. of Oliver Mellows, and no more is told of him. LAWRENCE, Watertown 1634 or earlier, by w. Ann, d. of Richard Linton, had Lawrence, b. 14 Feb. 1635; Sarah, 7 Dec. 1636; Mary, 27 Jan. 1638; Rebecca, Feb. d. 1 Mar. 1640; Daniel, 6 Feb. 1642; in 1638, he or his w. or both, were warned for hav. danced, and may have been induc. to rem. early to Lancaster, where the high authty. of Willard makes him build the first ho. in that settlem. See Centenn. Celebr. 75. There prob. he had, Bond thinks, Joseph, Ephraim, Jacob, and Rachel; was blind in 1676, but happily rem. bef. the Ind. whirlw. fell on L. and resid. at Charlestown, there d. 9 Dec. 1687, aged near 85. Adam his s. d. 15 Sept. 1670 at Charlestown. LAWRENCE, Boston, s. of the preced. by w. Hannah, had Joseph, b. 14 Oct. 1663; Hannah, 26 Jan. 1666; Jonathan, 2 May 1671, d. young; Jonathan, again, 3 Oct. 1674; and Stephen, 3 Apr. 1677; was freem. 1663; and d. 1693.

✓ RICHARD, Salem 1637, a gunsmith, had a ch. bapt. prob. John, 29 Nov. 1640; Eliz. 26 Feb. 1643, d. unm. at 20 yrs.; Abigail, 18 May 1645; Ezekiel, 4 Apr. 1647; Susanna, 1 Apr. 1649; and Hannah, 30 Jan. 1653; tho. in whose right the act was admin. does not so well appear, as the adm. of Joyce, wh. may have been his w. is by Felt insert. under 1641. That w. I presume to be the person made by Farmer a man (GEORGE), and by him enrol. of the ch. 23 May 1641. Such error is not so ludicrous as that he commits in mak. our Walter Merry, the shipwright of Merry's point, now the North battery, Merry Waters, as if any Boston puritan two hundred and twenty yrs. since, could have been call. Merry, instead of Sad, Stern, or Severe. Dearborn, in Boston Notions, 63, foll. the blunder of so high authority. He is mark. by Felt as freem. tho. he omits his name among mem. of the ch. and in my opin. the person so entit. was the Ipswich man. He was one of the petitnrs. in 1665 for conciliat. betw. the Col. governm. and the crown, and was licensed to sell ale in 1668, and by his will of 16 July 1676, pro. 25 Nov. 1677, mak. w. Joyce extrix. we find other ch. beside the forenam. viz. James, William, Martha, and Mary. Then Abigail was w. of William Punchard; Mary of Clement English; Susanna of Benedict Pulsifer; and Hannah of Joseph Striker. Martha was perhaps unm. and in that instrum. ment. as well as her mo. and infirm br. William. Perhaps Sarah, wh. m. 26 Feb. 1652, Joshua Ray, and Phebe, wh. m. 11 Oct. 1658, Thomas West, may have been his ds. RICHARD, Ipswich 1638, was prob. the freem. of 22 May 1639. SAMPSON, Boston 1666, mariner, by w. Rebecca, had Mary, b. 28 Aug. 1667; William, 3 Mar. 1669; John, 2 Jan. 1673; Rebecca, 28 May 1677; Eliz. 1 Feb. 1683; Sampson, 20 June 1685; and Robert, 5 May 1688; was in 1685, sent out with 40 men, in pursuit of Veale and Graham, pirates on the coast, off New London, says Farmer, in MS. SAMUEL, Woburn, freem. 1684, by w. Mary, had Mary, b. 19 Oct. 1675; Sarah, 15 Jan. 1678; Daniel, 30 Nov. 1679; Samuel, 6 Nov. 1681; Abigail, 29 Nov. 1683; John, 22 Sept. 1685, d. in 4 yrs.; Ephraim, 12 Oct. 1687; John, again, 11 Dec. 1689; Nathaniel, and Daniel, tw. 10 Oct. 1691, both d. soon; Josiah, 19 Sept. 1694; and Joanna, 28 Nov. 1696. STEPHEN, Charlestown 1678, perhaps br. of Jacob, had w. Sarah, wh. join. the ch. 26 June 1681; but of him I learn no more. THOMAS, Hartford, only s. of Bevil of the same, m. 19 May 1696, Sarah, d. of the sec. Benjamin Fenn, of Milford, had Mehitable, b. 1697, d. young; Joseph, 1698; Sarah, 1699; Mehitable, again, 1701; Dorothy, 1704; Samuel, 1707; Benjamin, 1709, perhaps d. young; and Abraham, 1712; neither of the last two are nam. in the will of gr.f. while the others liv. all are. WILLIAM, Pemaquid, sw. alleg. to Mass. 1674, and was appoint. constable. WILLIAM, Marblehead 1674, was prob. s. of Richard of Salem, and d. 1684, leav. ch. William, Thomas, Hannah, and Mary. WILLIAM, Boston 1653, of wh. I find no more but that when he made a deed June 1668, he is call. senr. so that it seems prob. there was a junr. WILLIAM, Marblehead, perhaps s. of William of the same, m. 1 Aug. 1686,

✓ RICHARD, ← ours
As this early book shows, many Waters families came early to New England. As far as known, none of the others ever related to our or Richard, whose daughter Sarah is our ancestor. Because she was born in England, some Waters families, like the "Maine the Ohio" one, accidentally omit her.
Dennis Deane - Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England Vol. II, pp 483-5

Family Record

(Dodge Ancestors)

Family No.

Rea

①

Father -

Daniel REA

(Wrong, Ray) Plymouth 1638

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1600			England	Cambridge or Suffolk? - Scottish name?	
Death		Spring	1662	Salem (Danvers)		Mass. Bay Colony		
Buried								
Married		ca	1620?			England		
Occupation	Town Officer, Freeman 11 Aug 1634			Military		Church	Puritan	
Places Lived	Bought home Plymouth in 1630 - to Salem Mass Bay Colony before Feb 1631							
Other Wives								
				His Father's Name		Rea		
				His Mother's Maiden Name				

Mother -

Bethia

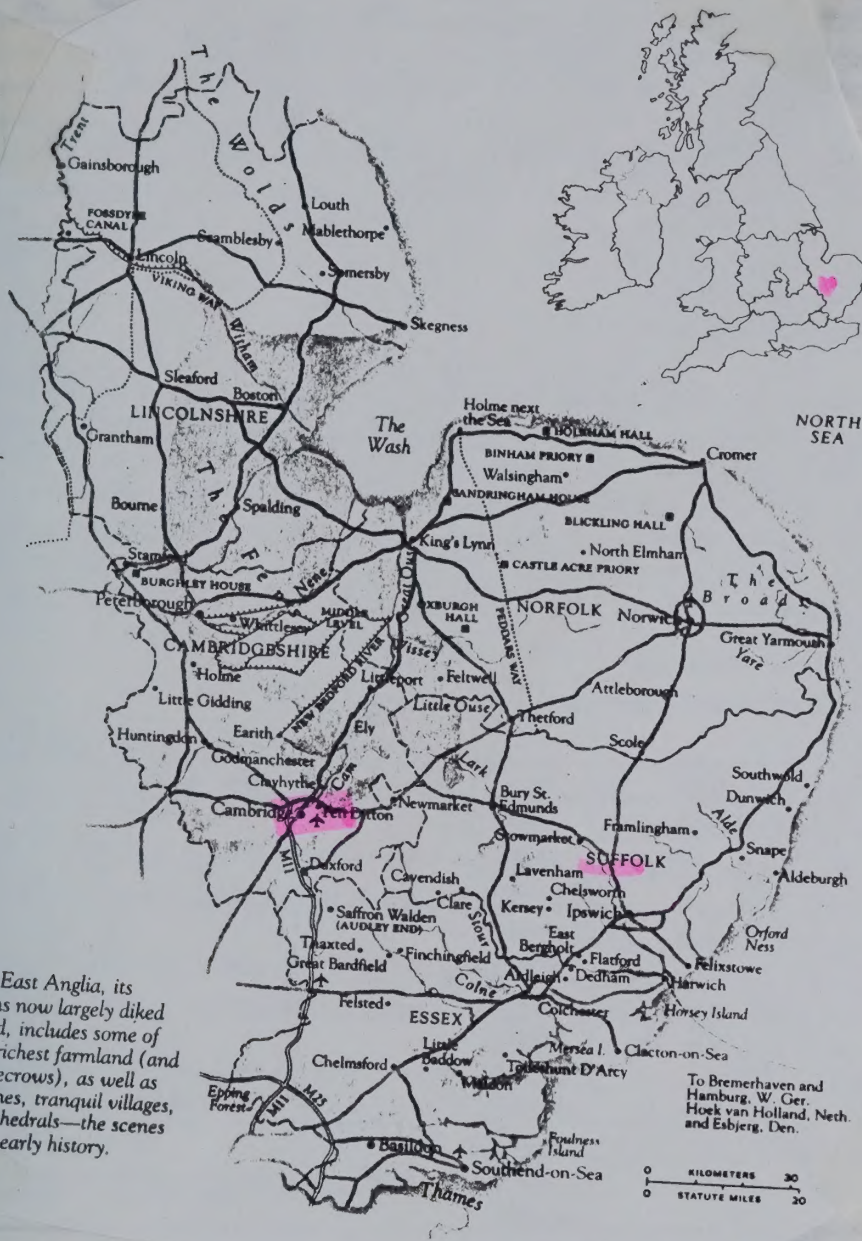
(Palmer or Gott?) See note

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1600?			England	→ Near Cambridge, England?	
Death			1663	Salem (Danvers)		Mass. Bay Colony		
Buried								
Occupation				Military		Church	Puritan	
Places Lived								
Other Husbands								
				Her Father's Name		? Gott or Palmer?		
				Her Mother's Maiden Name				

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Bethia Rea	Birth		ca	1621?			England	
	* Spouse - (Capt) Thomas Lathrop (1600 - killed 1st War, Bloody Brook Indian Massacre)	Death	6	Dec	1688				
	Spouse - (2) Joseph Grafton (1618-5-1678 - 1683)	Married	①	ca	1640?	Salem?	Mass Bay Colony		
	Spouse - (3) William Goodhue (1615-1688)	Married	②	ca	1679?	"			
	Spouse - (4) (last his 3rd wife)	Married	③	26	July	1683			
2.	Joshua Rea	Birth		ca	1628			England	
	Spouse - Sarah Waters (1630-1700)	Death			1701?				
		Married	26	Feb	1651/2	Salem	Mass. Bay Colony		
	Spouse -	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
		Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
		Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
		Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							

* Note: Pope's Pioneers (page 282) says Capt Thos. Lathrop "left no children, but adopted a cousin of his wife, Sarah Gott." Is this a clue to Mrs Rea's identity? (page 192) also suggests Sarah was dau of Charles Gott, whose wife & he died by 1668. The Gotts moved from Salem to Wrentham ca 1651. Torrey (p. 314) says Chas Gott was cousin to Andrew Mansfield who, with wife, Bethia deeded Gott land in 1663. Gott m. Gift PALMER 30 Oct 1625 at St. Andrew the Great Church, Cambridge, England.



Low-lying East Anglia, its watery Fens now largely diked and drained, includes some of England's richest farmland (and jolliest scarecrows), as well as sandy beaches, tranquil villages, and fine cathedrals—the scenes of Britain's early history.

Daniel and Bethia Rea
may have come from the
Cambridge area or Suffolk
not far away.

The name, possibly of Scottish
derivation was pronounced "Ray" &
spelled Rea, Rae, Ray, Wray,
Wraye, etc, etc in old records.

Family Record

(Dodge Ancestors)

Family No.

Rea

(2)

Surname

Father -

Joshua REA

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1628		(Suffolk?)	England?	(Possibly Plymouth Colony)	
Death		after	1701	Salem	Essex	Massachusetts	(or Cambridge Eng)	
Buried								
Married	21	Feb	1651/2	Salem	Mass Bay Colony		"by Mr John Endicott"	
Occupation				Military		Church	Puritan	
Places Lived								
Other Wives								

His Father's Name Daniel Rea

His Mother's Maiden Name Bethia

Mother -

Sarah WATERS

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1630	London		England		
Death	19	May	1700	Salem	Essex	Massachusetts		
Buried								
Occupation				Military		Church	Puritan	
Places Lived								
Other Husbands								

Her Father's Name Richard Waters

Her Mother's Maiden Name Raisier Plessey

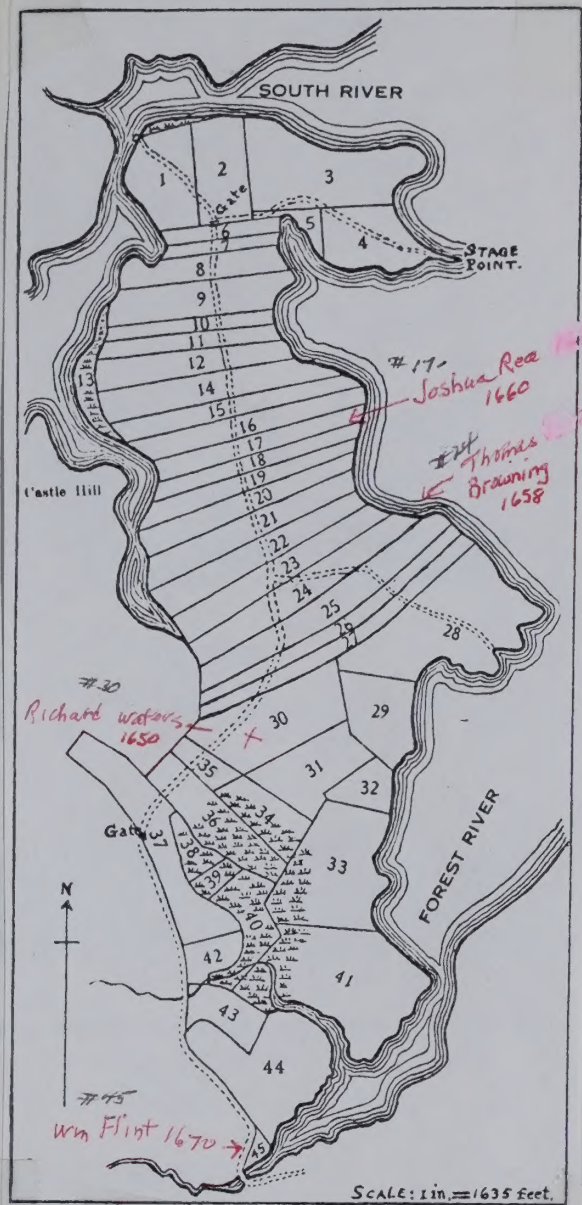
Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Daniel Rea <i>Sabbath K-P Water</i> Spouse - ① Hannah Peabody ② Mary (Read) Tompkins, widow of John	Birth	30	Mar	1654	Salem		MA	
		Death	5	Mar	1714/5	"			
		Married	① 10 Apr 1678 ② 10 Feb 1708/9			"			
2.	Rebecca Rea Spouse - ① Samuel Stephens (killed by Indians 1675) ② Simon Orne (-1687) Joseph Gallen (-1722)	Birth	4	Jan	1656	"			
		Death			1722	Andover		MA	
		Married	① 17 Dec 1672 ② 28 Feb 1676 ③ 15 Nov 1678			Salem			
3.	Sarah Rea* Spouse - ① Dick Young Thomas Haines	Birth		10	Nov	1658	"		
		Death		ca	1760	Salem		New Jersey	
		Married	15	Dec	1676	Salem		MA	
4.	Elizabeth Rea Spouse - no further record	Birth	3	Jan	1659/60	"			
		Death							
		Married							
5.	Bethia Rea Spouse - ① Joseph Gould (-1710) ② Joseph Hutchinson	Birth	31	Jan	1662/3	"			
		Death		after	1710	Salem		New Jersey	
		Married	① 12 May 1685 ② 1710			"			
6.	Joshua Rea, Jr. Spouse - Elizabeth Leach (1668-1710)	Birth	6	Aug	1664	"			
		Death		Fall	1710				
		Married		Oct	1685				
7.	John Rea (large family) Spouse - ① Ruth (-1710) ② Mary Houlton	Birth	23	May	1666				
		Death		1731/2					
		Married	① ca 1690 ② 3 Oct 1723						
8.	Hannah Rea Spouse - no further record	Birth		1	Aug	1668			
		Death							
		Married							
9.		Birth							
		Death							
		Married							
	(* Christy's flawed date says this Sarah died young & Sarah b. 1668 m. Haines in 1676 - very unlikely)								

Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information -- then list each on the reverse side.

Ancient Salem was composed of what later became many towns and villages (and now even cities). As in England at that time, people's homes were around a village green which included a church. Sometimes cottage industries were conducted from one's home, but farms were in strips some distance away and not always in the same direction - drawn often by lots wherever the city fathers (Selectmen) decided to divide unused land. It was cumbersome to go back and forth everyday but there was safety (from Indians, etc) in numbers - for protecting dwellings - or commerce. The Rees were inter-related through marriage with the families indicated. This is not necessarily all their holdings. The north & south fields were not in the same direction, obviously. It was not democratic - a very large family might receive more land through need - but usually rich people who were "gentry" back in England got preferred treatment. Richard Waters' mother was of a noble (though numerous) family in England.



DIVISION OF SOUTH FIELD.



year granted

#12 - Daniel Rea, 1655

#86 William Towne, 1652

#81 Richard Waters "

#100 Lawrence Leach "

ESSEX COUNTY PROBATE RECORDS – a Genealogist's Nightmare, and a \$462 Solution

Reported by Marcia Lindberg

Essex County has the oldest and best-preserved county records in the country, and they have been preserved in their original form for 360 years. Until now, at the Salem County Court House, researchers could consult both the original papers and also the large copy books on oversized shelving.

Blow Number One: About five years ago, the first blow fell. All the original probate papers disappeared! I asked the clerk, "Where are they?" "They've been sent to the State Archives in Boston," he said. I asked to see the Register, but was told that he had died! "Who's taking his place?" I inquired. "We're waiting for Gov. Weld to appoint someone." Well at least, I thought, the copy books are here and available. We'll be able to continue with our research.

Blow Number Two: About a year ago the second blow fell. The early copy books (at least 100 volumes) suddenly disappeared from the shelves. "Where are they?" I asked the clerk. "They've been sent to Newburyport," he said -- and gave me a telephone number to call. A clerk there said the books were being put in a locked basement room, unarranged, and that two volunteers were sometimes there on Wednesdays and maybe could help find what a person wanted! "Great!" **The Registry of Probates for Essex County no longer has any early probate records!** Actually, they do have microfilm copies, but no microfilm reader, at least for the public! All right -- I know these records can be accessed through the LDS Church, but the films have to be ordered from Salt Lake City -- a cumbersome arrangement.

Initial Action taken: By now there was a new "acting" Register of Probate, Julie Matuschak. I wrote to her, saying "We were disappointed when the original probate documents disappeared (after 360 years!). Now we are appalled to see that the early probate copy books are being sent to Newburyport, which offers poor or no access to these books." Mrs. Matuschak called me to meet with her. She was sympathetic. She was sorry. She was new and didn't know all the answers. She thought it wrong to have the two sets of early probates in different locations. (Incidentally, the indexes to these records are still at Salem!). But space was running out and priority had to go to lawyers, etc. who need the current records.

Result: I decided we must order the entire "Old Series" (1638-1840) of Probate Records on microfilm from Salt Lake City. This was not as easy as you might think. First, I had to obtain the proper "permission" forms and signatures from Julie Matuschak, who kindly obliged. Then I had to get the reel numbers for each of 33 reels + 4 reels of index volumes. The LDS Family Center at Lynnfield was very cooperative, and provided me with a printout of all the numbers. At \$12.50 per reel, the total came to \$462.50 (paid in advance, thank you). ESOG contributed \$200, the Lynnfield Library contributed \$100 and private donations did the rest. Earle Hazelwood arranged for shelving, and now local researchers can rejoice. It's not easy using microfilm compared to the copy books themselves, but at least the material is available -- and Lynnfield Library's microfilm reader in the genealogy room is excellent. Watch for further news on a proposed ESOG project to abstract these early probate records.

Society News

FORTHCOMING MEETINGS of ESOG

- February 17. Ann Smith Lainhart: "Massachusetts Church Records."
- March 17. Roger D. Joslyn, F.A.S.G., "19th Century Passenger Arrival Lists and Naturalization Records."
- April (to be announced). Work day at Haverhill Public Library.
- April 16. Marcia Melnyk, "Starting your Italian Research."
- May 18. Stephen Kyner, "Computer Genealogy."

(NOTE: In case of severe stormy weather in February or March, the meetings will be cancelled. If in doubt, call a Board Member. Phone numbers are listed at the top of your Newsletter.)

This page was copied at random because it illustrates migration from Essex Co MA to Preston & Stonington CT

Ahnentafels

Ahnentafel of Jabesh Ray

GGGGrandfather of Dorothea R. Griebel, 11 Keniston Rd., Lynnfield, MA 01940

I	1	Jabesh Ray	1784-1819	Preston CT; Lenox NY
II	2	Stephen Ray	1757-	Preston CT
	3	Naomi Palmer	c1763-	Stonington, Preston CT
III	4	Gideon Ray	1731-	Preston, Voluntown CT
	5	Asenath Palmer	1734-	Stonington, Preston CT
	6	Rev Gershom Palmer	1725-1810	Stonington, Preston CT
	7	Dorothy Brown	1724-1808	Preston CT
IV	8	John Ray	1696-	Salem MA; Preston CT
	9	Abigail Herrick	1701-1746/7	Beverly MA; Preston CT
	10	Joseph Palmer	1690-1789	Stonington, Voluntown CT
	11	Mary Palmer	1690-1777	Stonington, Voluntown CT
	12	George Palmer	1680-1728	Stonington CT
	13	Hannah Palmer	1695-1727	Stonington CT
	14	Thomas Brown	1692-	Stonington CT
	15	Deborah Holdredge	1698-	Stonington CT
V	16	Joshua Rea	1664-1710	Salem MA
	17	Elizabeth Leach	1668-	Salem MA
	18	Stephen Herrick	1670-	Beverly MA
	19	Elizabeth Trask	1675/6-	Salem MA
	20	Joseph Palmer	1663-1710	Stonington CT
	21	Frances Prentice	c1665/7	Newton MA; Stonington CT
	22	Gershom Palmer	c1645-1718	Rehoboth MA; Stonington CT
	23	Ann Denison	1649-1694	Roxbury MA; Stonington CT
	24, 25	Same as 22, 23		
	26, 27	Same as 20, 21		
	28	Thomas Brown Jr.	1654-1723	Lynn MA; Stonington CT
	29	Hannah Collins	1659-	Lynn MA; Stonington CT
	30	William Holdredge	c1674/5-	Exeter NH; Stonington CT
	31	Deborah Elliott	1680-	Stonington CT
VI	32	Joshua Rea	c1629-	Plymouth, Salem MA
	33	Sarah Waters	c1630-1700	Salem MA
	34	Sgt John Leach	c1645-1717/18	Salem MA
	35	Elizabeth Flint	1650-1719/20	Salem MA
	36	Ephraim Herrick	1637/8-1693	Salem, Beverly MA
	37	Mary Cross	1640-	Ipswich, Beverly MA
	38	Osmund Trask	1625-1676	Salem MA
	39	Elizabeth Gally		Salem MA
	40	Nehemiah Palmer	1637-1717	Charlestown MA; Stonington CT
	41	Hannah Stanton	1644-1727	Hartford, Stonington CT
	42	Thomas Prentice 2d	c1629-1724?	Newton MA
	43	Rebecca Jackson	1636-	London Eng; Newton MA?
	44	Walter Palmer	c1585-1661	Eng; Stonington CT
	45	Rebecca Short	-1671	Eng; Stonington CT
	46	Capt. George Denison	1620-1694	Storford Eng; Hartford CT
	47	Ann Borodell	-1712	Eng; Mystic CT
	48-51	Same as 44-47		

Family Record

(Dodge Ancestors)

Family No.

Rea

3

Surname

Father -

Joshua REA, Jr.

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	6	Aug	1664	Salem Village	Mass	Bay Colony		
Death		Feb	1710	Danvers	Essex	MA		
Buried								
Married		Oct	1685	Salem	"	"		
Occupation				Military	Church			
Places Lived								
Other Wives								

His Father's Name Joshua Rea, Jr.

His Mother's Maiden Name Sarah Winters

Mother -

Elizabeth LEACH

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	1	Dec	1668	Salem (Royal Side)	Essex	Mass		
Death	2	Mar	1716	Danvers		MA		
Buried	2	M						
Occupation					Military	Church		
Places Lived								
Other Husbands								

The children of John and Elizabeth (Rea) Towne,
See Towne Family

Her Father's Name (5th) John Leach (King Philip's War)

Her Mother's Maiden Name Elizabeth Flint

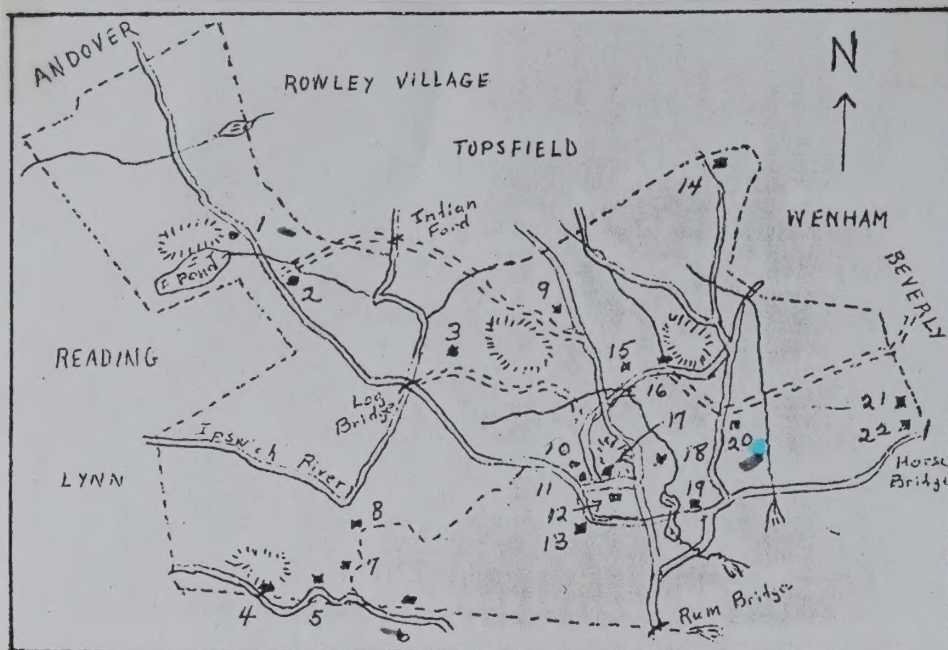
Children *

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Sarah Rea	Birth	28	Apr	1686	Salem			
	Spouse - John Batchelder	Death			17				
		Married			17				
2.	Elizabeth Rea	Birth	13	Aug	1687				
	Spouse - John Towne (1678-1714)	Death			17				
		Married			Jan 1708	Danvers			
3.	Rebecca Rea	Birth	1	Jan	1689				
	Spouse - Timothy Moulton	Death			1710				
		Married			7 Mar 1715				
4.	Joshua Rea III	Birth	16	Oct	1691				
	Spouse -	Death			? 1746				
		Married			17				
5.	Lydia Rea	Birth	28	Mar	1694				
	Spouse - Richard Foster	Death			17				
		Married			19 Mar 1714				
6.	John Rea (weaver)	Birth	14	Aug	1696				
	Spouse - Abigail Herrick	Death			17				
	Spouse - Mary Moulton	Married	22	Apr	1718				
			3	Oct	1723	Beverly			
7.	(Child) Rea	Birth			Apr 1700				
	Spouse - Baby - d.y.	Death			May 1700				
		Married							
8.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
9.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
10.	* Some of these details are from	Birth				"Lawrence Leach of Salem Mass. and Some of His Descendants"			
	Spouse -	Death				by F. Phelps Leach (1924) page 21			
		Married							

Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information - then list each on the reverse side.





SALEM VILLAGE

Residences of:

- | | |
|-------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1 - Bray Wilkins ✓ | ✓ 12 - Joseph Hutchinson |
| 2 - Thomas Fuller | 13 - Job Swinerton |
| 3 - Thomas Putnam | 14 - Joseph Porter |
| 4 - John Upton | 15 - Robert Prince |
| 5 - Joseph Pope | 16 - John Putnam |
| 6 - Thomas Flint ✓ | 17 - James Bayley |
| 7 - Robert Goodale | 18 - Richard Hutchinson |
| 8 - Isaac Goodale | 19 - Nathaniel Putnam |
| 9 - Henry Kenney | ✓ 20 - Joshua Rea |
| 10 - Jonathan Walcott | ✓ 21 - Joseph Herrick |
| 11 - Nathaniel Ingersol | 22 - Edward Bishop |

The time frame of this map is 35 or 40 years later. Salem Village, not to be confused with the city of Salem, would now be in Danvers. These are residences, not just fields as in the earlier diagrams. Some related families are checked ✓. Many of the ones listed were involved in the widespread "witchcraft hysteria" of 1692. A few years later Elizabeth Rea married John Towne. The Towne family was one of the worst hurt families of all - with three convicted sisters - two hanged.

Note from Danvers Historical Society Collections Vol III (1915) describing earlier, happier days:

"Records of the Town of Danvers - Legal meeting of inhabitants - 4 Mar 1752, first parish, Daniel Epos, Esq., Moderator" - among items discussed - Mr Epos, Jr., was voted Town Clerk, and

"Voted, Mr Daniel Rea to take care that ye Laws Relating to ye Preservation of Deer be preserved."

(Redundant, perhaps, but shows Daniel Rea - called "Mr" was considered local "gentry" law enforcer.)

Residents of Salem Village during the witchcraft hysteria



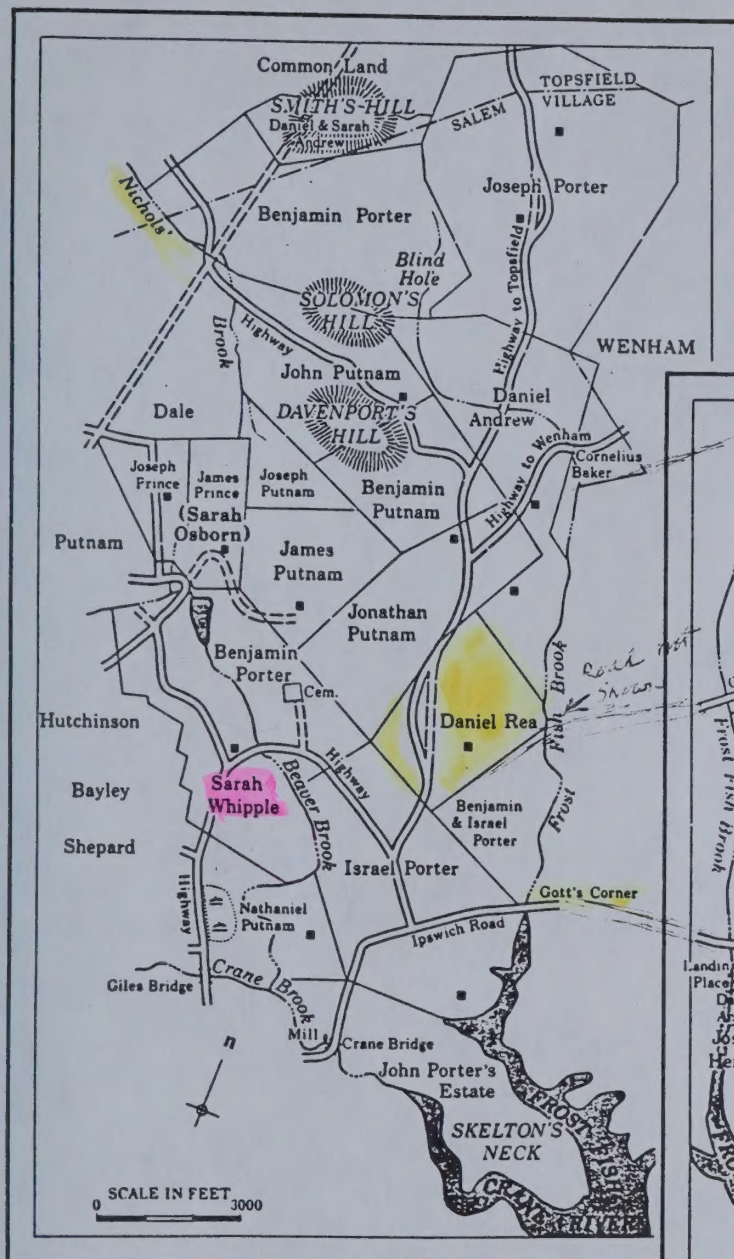
*Adapted from Charles W. Upham, Salem Witchcraft, 2 vols., Boston, 1867.

From: Salem Witchcraft & Hawthorne's House of Seven Gables
 Eugene A. Stratton (1992) Pages 34-5

Part of Key - See: XX Center right - 94. Samuel Rea 95. Francis Nurse 96. Samuel Nurse
 See XIV Center far right - on road to Ipswich - 64. John Flint 65. John Rea 66. Joshua Rea

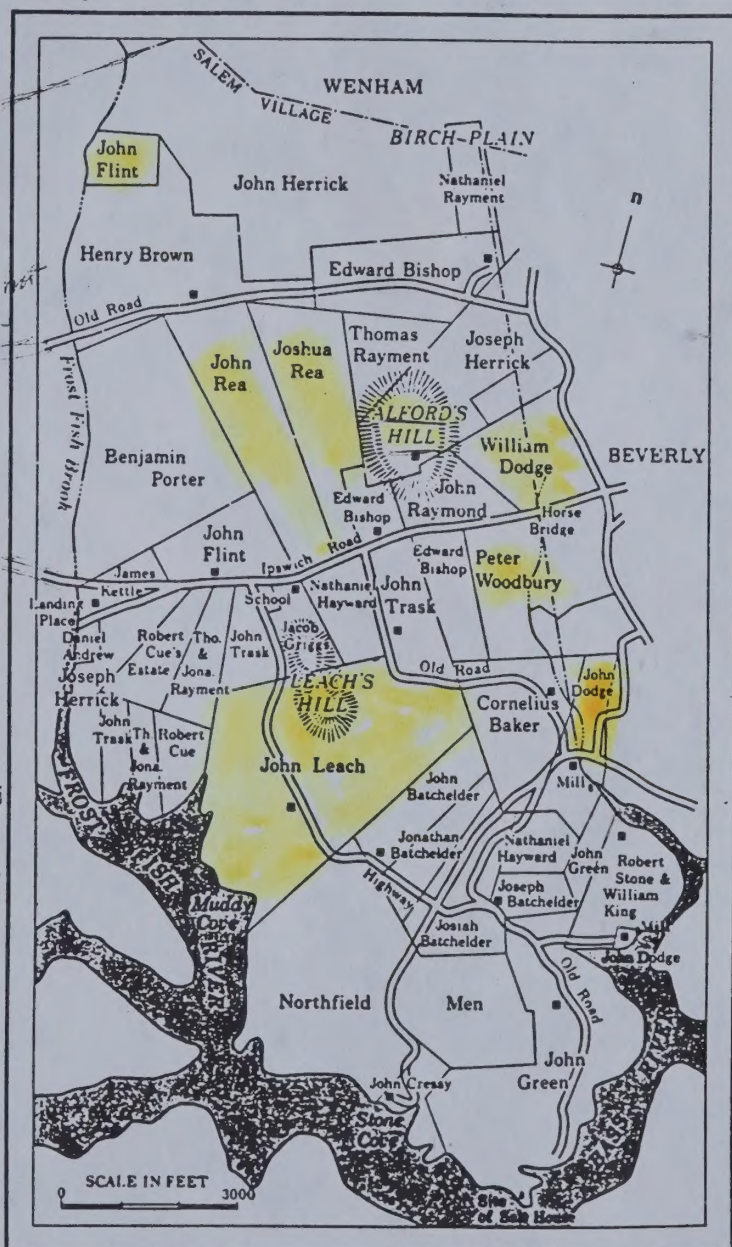
Though the Dodges, Reas, Leaches and Flints did not get personally involved, their offspring married into families of the victims. Nichols and Wags (involved) were related to Margaret (Wilkins) Willard (1) whose husband, constable John Willard, was hanged. Soon afterward she married William Towne whose three aunts were convicted - Rebecca Nurse (95) and Mary Easty (2) were hanged, and their sister Sarah Cloyse (41) barely escaped. A few years later Elizabeth Rea (38-46) married John Towne, a close cousin (also related to the Goolds (147) who were involved. Lois Towne, grand daughter of both these couples, married Richard Lodge V.

Rea



Salem Village sections in the 1690's.
The reason they do not fit together at Frost Fish Brook is that the scale is different. The section on the right is enlarged more.

Second and third generation inter-related families highlighted. The Reas here were Daniel's grandchildren. His relative Charles Gott (for whom the corner was named) had moved to Wenham & sold his property



adjoining the first Daniel Rea to John Porter - the Porters above were descendants. See Dodge family for others related to them on this map - including Alford's (later called Alford) for whom the hill was named - though that connection occurred nearly 200 years later.

*Adapted from maps by Sidney Perley.

Rea
No Rea (or Ray) Genealogy has been found, but this summarizes the first generation.

(1560)

DANIEL RAY

(Suffolk 3)

ORIGIN: Unknown

MIGRATION: 1630

FIRST RESIDENCE: Plymouth

REMOVES: Salem 1631

OCCUPATION: Seaman [ELR 8:121-22].

EDUCATION: He made his mark to an inventory in 1658 [EPR 1:288].

OFFICES: Grand jury, 30 December 1645 [EQC 1:89, STR 139]. Jury, 27 June 1636, 27 December 1636, 28 March 1637 [EQC 1:3-5]. Petit jury, 27 December 1642, 26 June 1649, 24 June 1651 [EQC 1:44, 169, 229].

Salem selectman, 1636-37 [STR 34, 44]. Rater, February 1639/[40] [STR 97]. Tythingman, 7 June 1644 [STR 131]. Constable, 1639 [STR 154].

ESTATE: On 9 June 1630 Daniel Ray purchased a dwelling house and "garden plot & fence" at Plymouth from Anthony Annable [PCR 12:17].

In the 1636 Salem land division he had one hundred and sixty acres in the freeman's land [STR 20]. At Salem in the 1637 land grant he received one acre with seven people in his family [STR 1:102].

On 15 July 1647 William Hathorne and Richard Davenport sold to John Putnam Sr., "Richard Huchesson" and "Danyell Ray" of Salem and John Hathorne of Lynn their two farms of about 280 acres apiece, each containing 260 acres of upland and 20 acres of meadow [ELR 2:55; see also ELR 2:28].

"The following paper was proved as the will of Daniel Rea of Salem 24 June 1662 'Whereas there hath been a will begun to be made by Daniell Rea of Salem, lately deceased, but he not being able to finish it, whereby great inconvenience is like to arise to his children, if it be left as it is' the children came to the following agreement, 'that his son Joshua Rea shall have the improvement of the whole farm, where he lives, & when his son

The Great Migration Begins (vol. 3)
by Robert Charles Anderson

Daniel is grown up to the age of twenty-one years, he shall have half the farm, & his father to have the other half, during the term of his own life, & also of his wife's widowhood, in case she should outlive him, and then that half also to be his son Daniel's, & so the said Daniel then to have the whole farm"; "Joshua Rea shall have the use & improvement of the seventeen acres of land lying on Salem North River, until his two daughters, Rebecca & Sarah, expressed in the will, shall attain to the age of sixteen years, & then they to have the land with the improvement of the same equally divided between them"; "Joshua Rea shall have also the one acre and half on the South River's side in Salem as his proper right"; "his son Thomas Lothrop & his wife shall have the farm commonly called Captain Dampport's farm"; "our mother shall have the thirds of all of this estate during her life"; residue to be dispose of by the honored court [EQC 2:413-14].

Thomas Lothrop, son-in-law, was to keep and maintain his mother, widow of Daniel Ray during her life, and to receive all the rest of Ray's estate after £25 paid to Joshua Ray, Daniel's son [EQC 2:413].

The inventory of the estate of Daniell Ray, was made 26 June 1662 and totalled £239 19s. 4d. and included real estate valued at £180: "seventeen acres of land in the north field £25"; "an acre & a half of salt marsh upon the South River £5"; "a farm of one hundred sixty acres of upland and ten acres of meadow £150" [EQC 2:415].

On 20 December 1688 Joshua Rea of Salem, proper heir and only son of Daniel Rea, "my father, being deceased in the year 1662," deeded to his son Daniel Rea land which "my father Daniel Rea, seaman, late of Salem, now deceased," purchased of Captain Richard Davenport in 1647 in partnership with John Putnam Sr., Richard Hutcheson and John Hathorne, and which "the said partners a short time after divided ... amongst themselves," which "I did allow my brother-in-law Thomas Lawthrop and his wife a personal right to use & dispose of that part which did belong to me ... my said brother-in-law & sister Lawthrop now being deceased, both their right to use and dispose" being past [ELR 8:121-22].

BIRTH: By about 1597, based on date of marriage.

DEATH: Salem by 24 June 1662 [EQC 2:413].

MARRIAGE: By 1637 (and by about 1627 if she was the mother of both children) Bethiah _____. "Bethiah Raye" was admitted to Salem church on 1 October 1637 [SChR 7]. She was living in 1662 when THOMAS LOTHROP, son-in-law, was to keep and maintain his mother, widow of Daniel Ray, during her life [EQC 2:413]. She probably died before Lothrop, since no provision was made for her in his estate. (The suggestion was made in another sketch that BETHIA JONES, initially of Boston, may have become wife of Daniel Ray when she moved to Salem. Since this move did not take place until 1631 (or later), this suggestion

would require either that the two children of Daniel Ray be a few years younger, or that Daniel Ray had an earlier wife.)

CHILDREN:

- ✓ i JOSHUA, b. by about 1627; m. Salem 26 February 1651[2]
Sarah Walters.
- ii BETHIA, b. say 1630; m. (1) before 1652 (when he returned to England and told his mother that he had no children and was not likely to have any [EQC 6:170]) THOMAS LOTHROP; m. (2) by June 1676 Joseph Grafton [EQC 6:170]; m. (3) by 1685 William Goodhue. Bethia Goodhue, wife of Deacon [William] Goodhue, d. Ipswich 6 December 1688.

ASSOCIATIONS: Sarah (Dennis) Gott died following the birth of her daughter, Sarah, and Thomas Lothrop's wife, Bethiah (Ray) Lothrop, called the dead woman "my cousin" [EQC 6:95]. Sarah Dennis was the daughter of Edward Dennis and his wife, Sarah _____. The elder Sarah married second Abner Ordway.

COMMENTS: The leading men of Plymouth wrote to the leading men of the Bay 6 February 1631/2 concerning the matter of persons moving back and forth between the two jurisdictions. "Now there are diverse gone from hence, to dwell and inhabit with you, as Clement Briggess, John Hill, John Eedy, Daniell Ray, etc., the which if either you, or they, desire their dismissions, we shall be ready to give them, hoping you will do the like in the like cases, though we have heard something otherwise" [WP 3:65].

On 27 December 1642 Daniell Ray and other men were fined for keeping their cattle in the common corn fields [EQC 1:49]. Several times subsequently his livestock got loose and he was fined [EQC 1:56, 70, 72, 83].

In 1640 Daniel Ray's servant John Luvet desired accommodation in Salem [STR 98]. On 11 July 1644 James Thomas "servant to Daniell Ray" was ordered severely whipped for "stubbornness and disobedience to his master" [EQC 1:68].

On 21 February 1648[9] Danyell Rumball was fined for defaming Danyell Raye [EQC 1:157]. On 22 February 1648[9] Ruben Guppie was ordered fined or to sit in the stocks for "defaming Danyell Ray" [EQC 1:158].

Both Savage and Pope have misread the will of Daniel Ray and have turned his granddaughters Rebecca and Sarah into daughters.

In the 1637 grant of meadow Daniel Ray was credited with a household of seven, but we have identified only four above. No clues have been found which would help in identifying the remaining three persons.

exhibited upon the walls of the room where the court sat until the Revolution.

At the same court, Mr. John Humphrey, Mr. John Endecott, Capt. Nathaniel Turner, Mr. Thomas Scruggs and Mr. Townsend Bishop were appointed to keep the quarterly court for Salem and Saugus. Captain Turner was a resident of Lynn, a deputy to the general court several sessions, and had commanded the militia from 1633. In 1636 and 1637, he was in command of several expeditions against the Pequot Indians. His house was burned in 1637, and the next year he removed to the new settlement at Quinnipiack (Quilipeake), now New Haven, Conn.

The first session of the quarterly court in Salem was held June 27, 1636. The judges present were Capt. John Endecott, Capt. Nathaniel Turner, Townshend Bishop and Thomas Scruggs. The same magistrates sat at the September and December sessions; and March 28, 1637, the court was presided over by Messrs. Endecott, Humphrey, Bishop and Scruggs. May 15, 1637, the freemen of Salem chose Townshend Bishop, William Hathorne, Robert Moulton and John Holgrave to be assistants to the magistrates; and two days later the general court added Roger Conant to the list of assistants and confirmed William Hathorne. The judges of the court for June, 1637, were Messrs. Endecott, Conant and Hathorne, and for October, Messrs. Endecott, Humphrey, Howe, Conant and Hathorne. At the December session they were Messrs. Endecott, Humphrey, Conant and Hathorne. The judges from Salem were the same as at the sitting for March, 1638. June 8, 1638, the general court chose William Ballard, a farmer, of Lynn, in place of Captain Turner. At the first session of the court, Townshend Bishop and Thomas Scruggs were sworn as commissioners to end small causes.

At the first session of the quarterly court, there were three civil cases to be adjudicated, but no criminal proceedings. The clerk of the court was Ralph Fogg. The trial jury¹ consisted of

¹The trial jury for the September session of the court were John Black-leach, foreman, Charles Gott, Philip Verrin, Thomas Gardner, Lawrence Leech, Jeffrey Massie and Thomas Smith, all of Salem, and five of Lynn. At the December session, they were Robert Moulton, foreman, Philip Virrin, Daniel Ray, Richard Waterman, Jeffery Massey, Richard Rayment, John Hardy, Peter Palfrey, Roger Conant, Lawrence Leech, John Black and George Williams, all of Salem. The trial jury for March, 1637, court consisted of Roger Conant, foreman, Lawrence Leach, Peter Palfrey, John Woodbury, Daniel Ray and Thomas Reed, all of Salem, Moses Maverick of Marblehead and five others of Saugus. The jury for the June court were Thomas Gardner, foreman, John Woodbury, Peter Palfrey, Thomas Olney, Samuel More and Richard Rayment, all of Salem, and six of Lynn. At the September session, the jury consisted of Robert Moulton, foreman, John Woodbury, Richard Davenport, Peter Palfrey, Edmond Batter, Thomas Olney, Francis Weston, John Balch and Richard Walker, all of Salem, and

Timothy Tomlins, foreman, Jeffrey Massey, Lawrence Leach,
Daniel Ray.¹ Richard Waterman, Richard Raymond, Henry

three others of Lynn. At the December session, it consisted of Lawrence Leach, foreman, Richard Davenport, John Balch, William Allen, Richard Brackenbury, Peter Palfrey and John Woodbury, all of Salem, and five of Lynn. When the court came in, Jeffery Massie, Edmund Batter and Anthony Dike were on the jury at this session, but they had been challenged by Mrs. Weston, in the case of William Pester against Francis Weston and his wife Margaret, for defamation.

"DANIEL REA," living in Plymouth in 1630, removed to Salem Village; married Bethiah —; died in the spring of 1662; she died in 1663; children: 1. *Joshua*,² born about 1629; 2. Bethiah;² married, first, Capt. Thomas Lathrop who was killed in the battle of Bloody Brook Sept. 18, 1675; married, second, Joseph Grafton, who died in 1683; married, third, Dea. William Goodhue in 1683; she died in Ipswich Dec. 6, 1688.

JOSHUA REA; husbandman; married Sarah Waters Feb. 26, 1651; she died May 10, 1700; he was living in 1701; children: 1. *Daniel*,^a born March 30, 1654; 2. *Rebecca*,^a born Sept. 4, 1656; married, first, Samuel Stevens; he was killed in the battle of Bloody Brook Sept. 18, 1675; married, second, Simon Orne; 3. *Sarah*,^a born Nov. 10, 1658; died young; 4. *Elizabeth*,^a born Jan. 3, 1659-60; 5. *Sarah*,^a born June 4, 1661; married Thomas Haines; 6. *Bethiah*,^a born Jan. 3, 1662-3; married Joseph Gould; 7. *Joshua*,^a born Aug. 6, 1664; 8. *John*,^a born May 23, 1666; 9. *Hannah*,^a born Aug. 1, 1668.

DANIEL REA; yeoman; soldier in King Philip's war; married, first, Hephzibah Peabody April 10, 1678; second, Mary (Read), widow of John Tompkins Feb. —, 1708-9; died March 5, 1714-5; his wife Mary married, secondly, Lt. James Putnam March 16, 1719-20; children: 1. Jemima,⁴ born Dec. 29, 1680; married Nicholas Howard; 2. *Daniel*,⁴ born Nov. 23, 1682; 3. *Zerubbabel*,⁴ born May 12, 1684 (5?); 4. Hephzibah,⁴ born Aug. 14, 1687; married Samuel Leach; 5. —⁴ (daughter), born in 1690 (?); 6. *Uzziel*,⁴ born March —, 1693; 7. Pilgrim,⁴ born Nov. 30, 1695; died young; 8. Lemuel,⁴ husbandman; died, unmarried, in the spring of 1749; 9. Keturah,⁴ married William Douglas March 2, 1723-4; 10. —⁴; died —, 1702-3.

JOSHUA REA,^a married Elizabeth Leach Oct. —, 168—; died in the autumn of 1710; she survived him; children: 1. Sarah,^a born April 28, 1686; married John Batchelder; 2. Elizabeth,^a born Aug. 13, 1687; married John Town Jan. —, 1708; 3. Zerviah,^a born Sept. 1, 1689; living in 1710; 4. Joshua,^a born Oct. 16, 1691; 5. Lydia,^a born March 28, 1694; published to Richard Foster March 19, 1714-5; 6. John,^a born Aug. 14, 1696; weaver; married Abigail Herrick of Beverly April 22, 1718; 7. —, born April —, 1700; died May —, 1700. JOHN REA,^b husbandman; married, first, Ruth —; she died Sept. 11, 1722; married, second, Mary Houlton Oct. 3, 1723; died in 1731-2; his wife Mary survived him; children: 1. — (son), born —, 1691 (?); 2. — (daughter), born Aug. 18, 1692; 3. — (daughter), born —, 1694 (?); 4. Gideon,^a baptized May 26, 1700; 5. Hannah,^a baptized May 26, 1700; died before 1731; 6. Kezia, baptized May 26, 1700; married Timothy Houlton; 7. Emma,^a baptized May 26, 1700; married Simon Lovett; 8. John, baptized June 21, 1702; removed to Beverly in 1733; yeoman; married, first, Hannah Brown May 25, 1725; she died in 1732; married, second, Anna (Dodge), widow of Timothy Clements; died March 19, 1750-1; she died Sept. 7, 1751; had children; 9. Bartholomew,^a baptized Nov. 5, 1704; ro. Ruth,^a baptized April 6, 1707; married Ezekiel Hayward of Beverly Oct. 19, 1725.

DANIEL REA,⁴ yeoman; married Rebecca Griggs of Beverly March 7, 1710-1; she was his wife in 1726; he died before 1746; children: 1. Daniel,⁵ born March 4, 1711-2; 2. Pelatiah,⁶ born May 11, 1715; 3. Uzziel,⁶ born

from Hickory Lodge by Sidney Parker
11 - Reg 974.4 14574 (MPL).

Freake, Boniface Burton, John Woodbury, Thomas Talmadge,

Sept. 13, 1718; 4. Nathan,⁵ born April 20, 1720; 5. Eunice,⁵ born Aug. 15, 1723; probably married Stephen Colass of Boston (published Dec. 2, 1748); 6. Elizabeth,⁵ born June 7, 1725; probably married John Roundy of Beverly (published Nov. 14, 1747); 7. Emma,⁵ born July 11, 1727; unmarried in 1746; 8. Isaiah,⁵ born Sept. 22, 1729; living in 1746; 9. Euphemia,⁵ born March 22, 1733-4; died March 24, 1733-4; 10. Jeremiah,⁵ baptized April 18, 1736; living in 1746. ZERUBBABEL REA,⁵ lived in that part of Salem which is now Danvers; yeoman; married Margaret Rogers April 20, 1724; died in the winter of 1739-40; she survived him; children: 1. Caleb⁵ (twin), born July 17, 1727; lived in Gloucester and Danvers; physician; married, first, Abigail Sargent of Gloucester Nov. 14, 1748; she died Sept. 2, 1749; married, second, Ruth Porter of Wenham; died, of smallpox, at Danvers, Jan. 10, 1760; she married, second, John Proctor; 2. Sarah⁵ (twin), born July 17, 1727; married, first, Bartholomew Brown; second, Benjamin Porter; 3. Moses,⁵ born Oct. 2, 1728; died Oct. 24, 1728; 4. Hephzibah,⁵ born June 9, 1730; married Joseph Elson; 5. Hannah,⁵ born Dec. 1, 1732; married Ebenezer Nurse; 6. Mehitable,⁵ born June 14, 1735; married Jonathan Porter; 7. Aaron,⁵ born June 24, 1739; died at Gloucester Aug. 24, 1756. UZZIEL REA,⁵ husbandman and house carpenter; married Mary Porter Dec. 27, 1720; died Nov. —, 1754; children: 1. Judith,⁵ born Dec. 6, 1721; married (when she was of Killingly) Joseph Batchelder of Beverly Oct. 30, 1742; 2. Mary,⁵ born July 2, 1727; 3. Archelaus,⁵ born May 5, 1731, in Danvers. JOSHUA REA,⁵ husbandman; married Mercy Taylor of Beverly March 7, 1715-6; died March —, 1745-6; she survived him; children, baptized in the Second church in Beverly: 1. Lydia,⁵ baptized March 16, 1717-8; died in 1733; 2. Mercy,⁵ baptized May 17, 1719; married John Blashfield Feb. 14, 1741-2; 3. Sarah,⁵ baptized July 30, 1721; died Aug. 11, 1721; 4. Joshua,⁵ baptized March 2, 1722-3; lived in Beverly and Boxford; married, first, Sarah Prince of Beverly Feb. 10, 1743-4; second, Hannah Peabody Oct. 5, 1777; died in 1784; 5. —,⁵ died May 12, 1725; 6. Mary,⁵ baptized Aug. 21, 1726; died before 1746; 7. —,⁵ died Jan. 15, 1730-1; 8. James,⁵ baptized June 10, 1733; lived in Beverly; married Elizabeth Dodge Sept. 9, 1755; died in 1760; she married, second, Peter Woodbury June 23, 1761, and removed to Amherst, N. H.; 9. Ebenezer,⁵ baptized Oct. 7, 1733; died before 1746; 10. Lydia,⁵ baptized Oct. 7, 1733; died in 1733; 11. Sarah,⁵ baptized Nov. 16, 1735; died before 1746. GIDEON REA,⁵ weaver and husbandman; married, first, Mary Herrick Jan. 21, 1722-3; she died in 1739; married, second, Jane, widow of Benjamin Raymond Nov. 11, 1740; died in the winter of 1749-50; she died in 1787; children: 1. Elizabeth,⁵ born April 14, 1728; married John Roundy; 2. Gideon,⁵ born July 10, 1731; died young; 3. Mary,⁵ born May 19, 1734; 4. Joseph,⁵ born July 29, 1736; living in 1757; 5. Gideon,⁵ living in 1751. BARTHOLOMEW REA,⁵ tailor; married, first, Mary Andrews, Feb. 8, 1727-8; second, Mary Clark March 19, 1761; died in 1784; his wife died Feb. 25, 1792; children: 1. Anna,⁵ born Nov. 30, 1728; married Daniel Marble; 2. Ruth,⁵ born Aug. 7, 1732; died in infancy; 3. Ruth,⁵ born Sept. 24, 1735; died March 11, 1751; 4. John,⁵ born March 18, 1737-8; lived in Danvers; was a carrier of bundles and letters between Salem and Boston in 1781; and died April 20, 1797; 5. Elizabeth,⁵ born May 8, 1745; married Daniel Prince.

ARCHELAUS REA,⁵ lived in Topsfield and Danvers; yeoman; married Mary Batchelder of Beverly Nov. 6, 1750; died Nov. 5, 1810; children, born in Topsfield: 1. John,⁵ born Feb. 20, 1752; 2. Archelaus,⁵ born Nov. 26, 1752; 3. Caleb,⁵ born May 13, 1756; 4. Mary,⁵ born Aug. 12, 1758; 5. Uzziel,⁵ born Oct. 31, 1763; lived in Salem; tailor; married Elizabeth Nurse of Salem Oct. 18, 1790; she died March 18, 1791; eccentric; he died in Danvers Feb. 6, 1839; 6. Sarah,⁵ born Nov. 22, 1766; 7. Anna,⁵ born Aug. 18, 1770.

John Smith and John Sibley. Messrs. Massey, Leach, Ray, Waterman, Raymond, Woodbury and Sibley belonged in Salem, and the others in Lynn.

Daniel Rea¹ was a young man who had come from Plymouth.

Richard Raymond

He had a wife and one or two children. Richard Raymond¹ was of middle age.

After the establishment of the quarterly courts, only two general courts were held each year,—one for elections, in May, and the other for legislation and trials, in October.

ARCHELAUS REA,⁶ lived in Danvers until about 1782, when he removed to Salem; blacksmith and subsequently a watch maker and clock repairer; married Mary Cook March 6, 1777; died Dec. 13, 1792; she died March 6, 1808; children: 1. Archelaus,⁶ born Feb. 12, 1778; 2. Mary,⁶ born Feb. 20, 1780; died June 2, 1800; 3. Samuel,⁶ born Feb. 3, 1782; 4. Frances,⁶ born July 21, 1784; died April 29, 1804; 5. Sarah,⁶ born Aug. 26, 1786; died Oct. 10, 1811; 6. Rosamond,⁶ born Sept. 27, 1788; married George Dutch; 7. Elizabeth,⁶ born Oct. 14, 1792; married Stephen W. Shepard.

CAPT. ARCHELAUS REA,⁶ lived in Salem, mariner and then agent of the Salem Iron Company; then in Amesbury, as agent of the iron factory there; then in Danvers, at the iron factory; then removed to Roxbury about 1840; married, first, Elizabeth Mason Nov. 10, 1805; she died March 31, 1809; married, second, Maria March Woodbridge April 7, 1814; died in Roxbury Aug. 18, 1864; children, born in Salem: 1. William Archelaus,⁶ born Dec. 26, 1807; published to Mary F. Wheeler of Boston Oct. 11, 1834; 2. Mason,⁶ born March 21, 1809. CAPT. SAMUEL REA,⁶ mariner and merchant; married Sarah Barr Aug. 30, 1807; died Sept. 30, 1842; she died, his widow, Nov. 17, 1862; children: 1. Samuel,⁶ born July 1, 1808; died Dec. 22, 1809; 2. Mary,⁶ born Dec. 2, 1809; died Oct. 20, 1810; 3. Samuel George,⁶ born Feb. 17, 1811; 4. Mary,⁶ born March 17, 1813; died Nov. 20, 1838; 5. George Campbell Smith,⁶ born Oct. 16, 1815; died March 29, 1820; 6. Caroline,⁶ born April 10, 1819; died, unmarried, March 9, 1899; 7. Charles,⁶ born Aug. 22, 1824; died July 21, 1830; 8. George,⁶ born Nov. 19, 1825; died at sea, on board the barque Borneo, Feb. 13, 1848.

SAMUEL GEORGE REA,⁶ merchant; married Sarah R. Peirce Nov. 1, 1842; she died Jan. 21, 1887; he died Dec. 17, 1890; child: 1. Charles Samuel,⁶ born Feb. 22, 1844; unmarried; president of the Salem Savings Bank.

Richard Raymond removed to Norwalk, Conn., in 1662, and to Saybrook in 1664; was engaged in coastwise trade with the Dutch and English settlers on Manhattan Island; married Judith —; died at Saybrook in 1692, aged ninety; children: 1. John; lived in Norwalk; married Mary Betts of Norwalk; 2. Bathsheba, baptized July 11, 1637; married Humphrey Coombs; 3. Joshua, baptized March 3, 1639-40; lived in New London, Conn.; married Elizabeth Smith Dec. 10, 1659; died April 24, 1676; she married, second, George Dennis Jan. 26, 1681; 4. Lemuel, baptized Jan. 3, 1640-1; living in 1660; 5. Hannah, baptized Feb. 12, 1642-3; married Oliver Mannering of New London; 6. Samuel, baptized July 13, 1645; married Mary Smith of New London; 7. Richard, baptized Jan. 2, 1647-8; died in or before 1680; 8. Elizabeth, baptized April 28, 1650; 9. Daniel, baptized April 11, 1653; lived in Lyme, Conn.; married, first, Elizabeth Harris; she died Aug. 10, 1683; married, second, Rebecca (Long) Sage; died in 1696; his wife Rebecca married, thirdly, Samuel Gager of Norwich, Conn.

Another list in the Mass. Archives, vol. 67, p. 254, adds several names and varies the spelling of several, thus:

List of Capt. Beeres and those slain soldiers, 1675.

Capt. Beers.	John Genery.	
John Getchell.	Jeremiah Morrell.	
Benjamin Crackbon.	Elisha Woodward.	
Ephra' Child.	William Marcum.	} Hadley men.
George Lickens.	Joseph Dickerson.	
John Willson.	James Mullard.	
Thomas Cornish.	James Egleston.	
Robert Pepper. - ?	killed with Capt. Beeres.	

8 killed at Squakeage with Capt. Beeres of whom there is no accot.

It will be noticed that James Egleston, who was killed at Deerfield, is set down here. Robert Pepper of Roxbury was not killed, but taken captive and returned home afterwards. Besides the thirteen that escaped to Hadley that same night, three more came in next day. It is said that several others counted as killed were taken prisoners and afterwards tortured to death. One, whose name is unknown, was reserved for torture, but was freed by a friendly Natick Indian and made his escape. John Parke, son of Thomas of Cambridge Village, was wounded in the fight "in the elbow joint and the bone broken," etc. His petition says it was "in the fight in which Capt. Beers was killed." He remained at Hadley till Major Appleton's march home, Nov. 24. (See Mass. Archives, vol. 69, p. 198.) Probably the Indians engaged in the assault were less than one hundred and fifty in number, composed of the Squakeags, and parties of Nashaways, and Quaboags, led by Monoco, alias "One-eyed John," and Sagamore Sam. The number of Indians slain was said to be twenty-five, which is probably too large an estimate.

On the next day, Sept. 5th, Major Treat, who had come from Hartford to Hadley on the 3d with a company of Connecticut men, one hundred strong, marched up to Northfield. At night (Sunday, 5th) he camped, probably near the camp of Beers, and on the 6th went forward to the scene of the battle, finding a ghastly sight, for many of the heads of the slain had been cut off and set upon poles by the wayside. Pausing only long enough to perform hasty funeral rites, he passed on to the garrison and found all safe. Hurriedly collecting the people and all their effects possible, but obliged to leave the cattle, he marched for Hadley the same evening. Mr. Stoddard, in his letter, says "they left the bodies unburied," which probably has reference to the eight killed at Northfield in the attack on the 2d. Small bodies of the enemy were still lurking in the vicinity of the village, and a party of the English that ventured into the fields were attacked; they were probably engaged in burying the dead, and Major Treat

was slightly wounded in the thigh. It is said that many of the cattle followed in the retreat of the English, and afterwards came into Hadley. The following are the names in Hull's Journal:

Credited with Military Service under Capt. Richard Beeres.

October, 5 1675.		William Russell.	04 16 00
John Shattuck, <i>Sergt.</i>	02 07 06	George Licas.	01 05 08
Edward Jackson.	00 18 00	December 20 th 1675.	
Ephraim Beeres.	00 12 10	Richard Wood.	04 16 00
November 9 th 1675.		John Cooke.	02 14 00
Joseph Sill, <i>Leut.</i>	08 11 06	John Harrington.	04 16 00
Nathaniel Bright.	03 08 06	Nathaniel Peirce.	03 05 02
Elnathan Beeres, <i>Sergt.</i>	05 02 09	Gustin John.	05 04 06
Nathaniel Sanger.	04 02 06	January 25 th 1675-6.	
Samuel Prentis.	01 04 00	John Wilson.	01 05 08
November 20 th 1675.		John Bowditch.	01 16 00
Jacob Hurd. ?	03 14 06	Ephraim Child.	01 05 08
Richard Beeres, <i>Capt.</i>	06 08 06	Benjamin Taynter.	04 16 00
Joseph Fuller.	03 07 08	February 29 th 1675-6.	
John Parkes.	03 07 08	Thomas Hastings.	02 05 00
Benjamin Crackbone.	02 18 00	Nathaniel King.	00 12 00

The probable reason that so few are credited under Capt. Beers is the fact of his brief command, and also that the twenty-six men delivered to him at Brookfield by Capt. Mosely would probably be returned to Mosely and be credited under him; and I am inclined to think that those who survived and continued in the service would look to Capt. Joseph Sill, Beers's lieutenant, to sign their vouchers, and would receive credit under him or the officer that appeared afterwards in command. Shattuck escaped only to be drowned shortly after, crossing Charlestown Ferry.

John Harrington of Watertown was badly wounded, but escaped and lived to old age.

*Capt Lathrop m. Bathia Rea
or Joshua's sister*

✓ CAPT. THOMAS LATHROP AND HIS MEN.

Thomas Lathrop, or Lothrop, emigrated from England to Salem. He was admitted freeman in 1634, and settled on the "Bass River" side of the town, where he received a grant of land near Mackerel Cove in 1636. He was lieutenant of the Salem Train-Band in 1644 under Capt. Hathorn, and succeeded him as captain of the Artillery Company in 1645. Mr. Felt relates that he was a captain under Major Sedgwick in the expedition of 1654-5 against Acadia, when St. Johns and Port Royal were reduced. He was an active and influential citizen, represented Salem in the General Court in 1647, '53 and '64, and when Beverly was set off in 1668 was chosen first selectman of the new town, and thereafter, till his death, remained a leading actor in all its affairs, civil, ecclesiastical and military. He married

Soldiers of King Philip's War -
 Ep 973.24 Dec - M PL
 George M. Lathrop (1855)
 others:

See
 Peares
 Family
 (of VA)

It is not known that we had any direct ancestors among these soldiers, most of whom were quite young, but many of them were sons & brothers of our ancestors. (Plum, Chubb, Dodge, Haskins, Leach +

Bethia, daughter of Daniel Rea and sister of Joshua, who after his death and before June, 1680, married Joseph Grafton, of Salem, and again for her third husband, June 26, 1683, Dea. William Goodhue, of Ipswich. She died Dec. 6, 1686. Capt. Lathrop left no children, and his sister Ellen, who came with him from England, and became the second wife of Ezekiel Cheever, with her children, inherited his estate. The age of Capt. Lathrop is put at 65 years by Mr. Stone in his history of Beverly.

In the Mass. Archives, vol. xlv, p. 111, there is a petition of Capt. Lathrop, showing that he was in the expeditions against the Pequods in 1636-7. This petition has the signature "Thomas Lawthrop," and is dated 8: 3mo. 62; and while I have some doubt whether here the writing is his own, there can be no doubt of his signature in vol. lxvii, p. 50, where it appears in a faltering hand as "Tho: Lawthrop."

In August, 1675, when the news of the disaster at Brookfield came to the Council, Capt. Lathrop was placed in command of the company raised in Essex County, with some men from Boston and vicinity, and marched up to Brookfield, where he joined the forces of Capt. Beers. Their companies acted mostly together thereafter up to the time of the latter's march from Hadley on September 3d.

Elated by recent successes, the Indians pressed more closely about those western towns, watching warily that no opportunity might pass to strike a safe and telling blow. Their leaders constantly outgeneralled our officers, and in every engagement took care to have the odds, in numbers, position, and method of attack, on their side; and while we are horrified at their atrocities, we can but admire their adroitness and persistence. In the meantime additional forces of the English were gathering at Hadley and vicinity, and all were under the general direction of Major John Pynchon, of Springfield, commander-in-chief in the county of Hampshire. On the return of Major Treat from Northfield with the garrison and people of that place, a council of war was held, at which it was decided to strengthen the various garrisons and hold the army for the present on the defensive. The Commissioners of the United Colonies had agreed to raise an army of five hundred men for this campaign on the Connecticut River. Besides the forces of Lathrop and Beers, Capt. Appleton had arrived from the East early in September, and Capt. Mosely with a company of sixty on Tuesday, Sept. 14th, at evening, and probably on the 15th crossed the river and marched up to Deerfield. There, on the Sunday before, the Indians had made an assault on twenty-two men passing from one garrison to another to meeting; none of ours were killed, but one was taken alive and probably afterwards killed, and Mr. Judd suggests that this was Nathaniel Cornberry, noted by Mr. Russell as among

the slain. The Indians then burned two houses, secured several horse-loads of beef and pork, killed many horses, and with their plunder betook themselves to a hill in Deerfield meadow. On the reception of this news at Northampton, the officers there raised a body of volunteers, who with others from Hadley and a part of Capt. Lathrop's company, marched up on Monday, 13th, to Deerfield garrison, and on the next day went out with the soldiers of the garrison to attack the Indians at the hill, but they were all fled. Major Treat, on Sept. 9th, had returned to Hartford, leaving a part of his force distributed in the various towns in garrison. On the 15th or 16th he came to Northampton with additional Connecticut troops, and Capt. John Mason, of Norwich, came there soon after with a body of Mohegan and Pequot Indians. I think it probable that the remainder of Capt. Lathrop's company, except the sick and wounded, passed over with Capt. Mosely.

Such was the position of affairs on Sept. 18th. At Deerfield a large quantity of corn had been gathered from the fields and loaded upon carts, teams and drivers provided, and Capt. Lathrop with his company were appointed as a guard to Hadley, where it was to be stored. The English evidently had no thought that any considerable force of the enemy were in the vicinity, and Capt. Mosely and his company remained behind and were scouting in search of them through the woods about. But a large body had crossed the river secretly, and, undiscovered, were watching every motion of the English; and now with their usual tactics they placed a large ambuscade in a place which offered unusual advantage, across the line of march. This place was some five miles from the place of starting, at what is now South Deerfield village, where a small stream, then known as "Muddy Brook" (but ever since as "Bloody Brook"), crossed the road. The English seem to have taken no precaution whatever against surprise, and many of the soldiers, it is said, had placed their arms upon the carts to be carried, and were gathering wild grapes by the roadside.

We can never know with certainty much of the details of the battle, or rather massacre, that ensued. The survivors on this occasion were few, and doubtless if questioned could give but incoherent and exaggerated accounts. Moreover, contemporary historians seem to have been indifferent to particulars, and to have inclined rather to moralizing upon general events, and succeeding historians have mainly repeated the stories of the first, and it is only within the last few decades that our devoted historical societies, with their increasing facilities, have made the methods of intelligent criticism possible. Gen. Epaphras Hoyt, of Deerfield, wrote a history of the Indian wars more than fifty years ago, which seems to be the first effort at analysis. In that work many important questions raised and valuable suggestions

presented. In regard to this affair he suggests that the main part of the troops had passed over the brook and were waiting the slow movements of the lumbering teams over the rough roads. The Indians crept stealthily about and encompassed the whole company and fell upon them with sudden and terrible fury, so that many were shot down or disabled at the first volley, including probably Capt. Lathrop. Doubtless a brave resistance was made, but with little avail. The coming of Capt. Mosely upon the scene after the disaster, his subsequent fight and opportune reinforcement by Major Treat, have been previously related.

It may be noted that here again Major Treat and the Connecticut soldiers opportunely, and as at Northfield, brought rescue, it is likely, from destruction. Connecticut was wise in trusting and employing the friendly Indians, who never allowed their troops to be ambushed; while the prejudice of Massachusetts brought upon their companies the dreadful massacres and unavailing pursuits which excite our wonder and shame even to-day.

As to the number of the English killed in this encounter, early accounts vary. In the postscript to a letter from the Massachusetts Council to Richard Smith, of Narraganset, dated Sept. 22, 1675, and still preserved in the Archives, vol. 67, p. 262, the statement is made that "above forty of Capt. Lathrop's men with himself were slain;" and then it is further stated that Capt. Mosely lost eleven men in the subsequent fight, which together with many lost that were with the teams made up sixty-four in all, who were buried the next day. Mr. Mather relates that above threescore were slain. Mr. Hubbard reckons eighty as the number in the company of the English, including, doubtless, the teamsters, and says that not above seven or eight escaped. In Rev. Mr. Russell's list, noticed above, the number of slain is put at seventy-one. This last is probably nearly correct, as Mr. Hull's credits, now for the first time published, after a lapse of more than two hundred years, go far to prove. The list pertaining to "Bloody Brook" is given below entire. It has been copied from the original with the utmost care, and proved and tested letter by letter till I feel sure of its accuracy. This list was first copied by Mr. Coffin some fifteen years before he published his "Newbury," and is the most nearly correct of any list that has been published hitherto that I know of; but a comparison of his text with the original will show many mistakes. The following is the list:

At Muddy-Brook bridge y^e 18 Sept. 71 men slain.

✓ Capt. Thomas Laythrop	Caleb Kemball	George Ropes
Sergt. Thomas Smith	Thomas Hobs	Joseph Kinge
✓ Samuel Stevens	Robert Homes	Thomas Alexander
John Hobs	Edward Traske	Francis friende
Daniel Button	Richard Lambert	Abel Osyer
John Harriman	✓ Josiah Dodge	John Littleale
✗ m. Rebecca Rea	(son of William)	
	(bro. of son Richard)	

Thomas Bayley	Peter Woodberry	Samuel Hudson
Ezekiel Sawier	Joseph Boleh	Adam Clarke
Jacob Kilborne	Samuel Whitteridge	Ephraim ffarah
Thomas Manninge	William Duy	Robert Wilson
Jacob Waynwritt	Serg ^t Samuel Stevens	Steven Welman
Benjamin Roper	Samuel Crumpton	Benjamin ffarrell
John Bennett	✓ John Plum	Solomon Alley
Thomas Mentor	Thomas Buckley	John Merrit

The forty-two above were evidently soldiers of Capt. Lathrop, and the following were set down by Mr. Russell as including the teamsters:

Robert Hinsdall	Joshua Carter	William Smeade
Samuel Hinsdall	John Barnard	Zebadiah Williams
Barnabas Hinsdall	James Tufts	Eliakim Marshall
John Hinsdall	Jonathan Plimpton	James Mudge
Joseph Gillett	Philip Barsham	George Cole
John Allin	Thomas Weller	

The Hinsdalls were the father and three sons. Most of the others were Deerfield men. George Cole is credited under Capt. L., and was probably of his company, perhaps of Lynn. The following men are set down as of Deerfield, and credited by Hull in the "Beefe" account: Richard Weller, William Pixly, Daniel Weld, James Tufts, William Smeade, Joseph Gillett, Experience Hinsdall, John Stebbin, John Hawkes. ✓ Nathaniel Sutlive is credited for cattle. Others credited for cattle, billeting, etc., at the same time, June 24, 1676, but of course for the year before: Sarah Field, Ephraim Hinsdall, Solomon Stoddard, Thomas Mekins, Barnabas Hinsdall, Joshua Carter, John Plimpton, Thomas Hastings, Samson Frary, Quentin Stockwell, John Allen, Moses Crafts, Samuel Hinsdall, Peter and Jonathan Plimpton. Thomas Weller was probably son of Richard, and Barnard was of Hadley, son of Francis. Barsham and Williams were of Deerfield, Marshall and Mudge were probably of Lathrop's company. Marshall, sometime of Stratford, Conn., now perhaps of Boston, and Mudge, of Malden, son of Thomas and Sarah.

From sundry petitions preserved in the Archives, and from casual references here and there, we find a few additional names. Joseph Prince, of Salem, was pressed under Capt. Lathrop and went as far as Quaboag, but was there given leave to go home to his dying father, and did not return to the army. Mrs. Ruth Bates had two sons, Clement and Solomon, who went out with Lathrop and survived the fight, if they were in it, and spent the winter in the garrison at Westfield; Clement was killed there in the spring, and the mother petitions in April, 1676, for the release of Solomon. John Smith's petition, Archives, vol. 69, p. 23, shows that two servants of his had been pressed, and one of

them having been out some three months, was killed with Capt. Lathrop; his name is not given, but the other, Mungo Craford, having been out near ten months, was left through the winter as a garrison soldier at Hadley or near, and is still there. Smith petitions for his release or pay for his service. Smith was of Boston, and Craford returned and settled there; Mrs. Bates was the widow of Clement of Hingham.

In a note in the Appendix to Edward Everett's Bloody Brook oration, Rev. Joseph B. Felt gives the above list, and adds the place of residence of many. The following in Hull's Journal are

Credited under Capt. Thomas Lathrop.

October 19, 1675		Andrew Stickney.	01 16 00
John Palmer, <i>Corpl.</i>	04 11 00	George Ropps.	01 17 08
Nov ^r 9, 1675		Benjamin Roper.	01 17 08
John Langbury.	02 08 00	Ephraim Farrar.	01 16 00
Edmond Bridges.	01 00 00	Solomon Ally.	01 16 00
Joseph Emons.	01 17 00	Benjamin Furnell.	01 16 00
Samuel Rust.	02 08 00	John Merrett.	01 17 08
✓ John Plum.	01 17 08	February 29 th 1675-6	
November 30 th 1675		Edmond Moore.	03 12 00
Richard Lambard.	01 18 06	Eleazer Keyser.	00 12 00
✓ Samuel Stevens.	02 13 10	Thomas Manning.	02 10 06
Robert Holmes.	02 08 00	Thomas Rose.	03 00 00
Joseph Balch.	01 18 06	Stephen Warman.	01 17 08
✓ Thomas Lathrop, <i>Capt.</i>	09 13 00	John Littlehall.	01 17 08
Peter Woodbury.	01 18 06	John Andrews.	01 01 09
Paul Thorndike.	03 04 04	Samuel Crumpton.	01 18 06
John Plummer.	00 18 00	Jacob Wainwright.	02 14 06
Edward Trask.	02 03 00	June 24 th 1676	
Thomas Buckly.	01 17 08	Thomas Mentor.	01 18 06
Dec. 20 th 1675		Zekariah Davis.	07 04 00
Samuel Steevens.	01 17 08	Thomas Rose.	04 04 00
Samuel Chapman.	00 18 10	Thomas Smith.	01 18 06
Thomas Kemball.	00 12 00	George Cole.	03 11 06
Caleb Kemball.	01 16 00	Timothy Bray.	01 05 08
Thomas Hobbs.	01 16 00	John Denison.	00 16 02
Jan'y 25, 1675-6.		July 24 th 1676	
William Dew. (Due)	01 18 06	John Bullock.	15 08 00
✓ Josiah Dodge.	01 18 06	Joseph King.	01 16 00
John Harriman.	01 18 06	August 24 th 1676	
Matthew Scales.	00 18 00	Mark Pitman.	01 16 10
Joseph Pearson.	00 18 00	Thomas Bayly.	01 16 10
Jacob Kilborn.	01 18 06	Abel Ozzier.	01 16 00
Thomas Baily.	01 18 06	John Bennett.	01 17 08
Ezekiel Sawyer.	01 18 06	Moses Pengry.	01 19 04
Blaze Vinton.	01 05 08		

John Bullock was "crippled" in the war, and his large credit may be due to that. He was of Salem, and was afterwards favored

by the Court and granted a license to keep a "victualling shop," January 9, 1680.

In addition to the above names and facts, we glean the following from various sources. From Coffin's History of Newbury we learn that on August 5th, 1675, were impressed at Newbury,

Steven Greenleaf	Caleb Richardson	Daniel Button
Thomas Smith	Daniel Rolf	John Wheeler
John Toppan	John Hobbs	Henry Bodwell

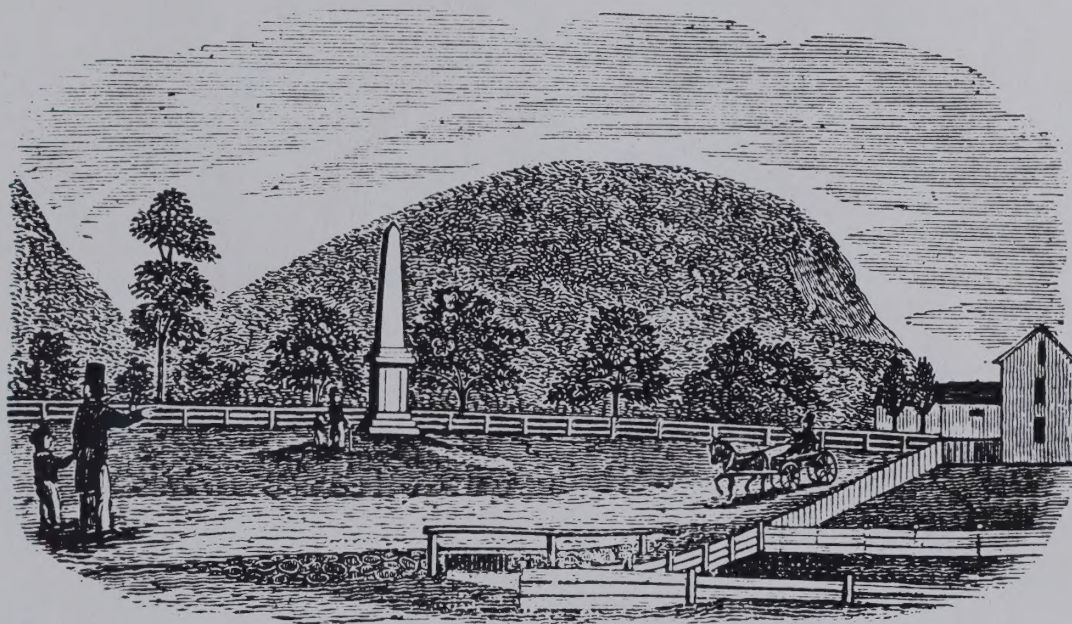
and fourteen days' provision supplied them by the town. John Toppan at Bloody Brook was wounded in the shoulder, but concealed himself in the bed of a brook nearly dry by pulling grass and weeds over his body, and thus escaped, though several times the Indians stepped over him. A similar story is told of a soldier who escaped at Beers's fight. Henry Bodwell had his left arm broken, but being of great strength and courage seized his gun in his right hand and swinging it about his head charged furiously through the Indians and got away. Greenleaf, Toppan, Richardson, Wheeler and Bodwell were credited Dec. 10th, under Major Appleton, with such large amounts that I think the service must have included time under Capt. Lathrop. Rolf was credited at Marlborough garrison. Thos. Vary (Very), under Capt. L., was wounded. See his petition, Mass. Archives, vol. 69, p. 260. In Felt's Ipswich it is stated that Thomas Scott (killed at Northfield) had been of Ipswich, as also Thomas Manning, Jacob Wainwright, Caleb Kimball, Samuel Whittridge. Robert Dutch, of whom Mr. Hubbard relates the wonderful recovery from apparent death, was also of Ipswich. Mention is made also of James Bennet slain, and John Fisher wounded.

The following bill of Jacob Gardiner, from Mass. Archives, vol. 69, p. 44, contains further names and suggestions.

An Amount of worke Done for Souldiers under y^e Commands of Capt: Latherup by Jacob Gardner & by y^e order John Coalman Comesary & Daniel White Counstable of Hattfield 12th of August '75

Tho: Hobbes. a paire of shewes	0.	6.	0
Sam: Hudson; A paire of Shewes & Leather	0.	9.	2
Tho: Bayleff ffor mending shewes	0.	1.	2
Josiah Bridges Scabert	0.	1.	3
Robert Leach a Scabert and mending His Shewes	0.	2.	9
Tho: Tenne a pouch & Belt and Mending His Shewes	0.	1.	3
Thomas Peckes a pouch	0.	1.	0
Capt. Latherup 3 belts	0.	3.	0
Daniel Ring a pouch & belt	0.	1.	6
Abiell Sadler a pouch & belt	0.	2.	0
Trances Young a pouch & belt	0.	1.	9
Gershom Browne a pouch & belt	0.	1.	9

The engraving on the opposite page, is a view (looking to the northward) in the central part of the village, showing the Unitarian Congregational church, and some other public buildings. The ancient house, which escaped destruction at the time the Indians burnt the town in 1704, is seen in the distance, standing a few feet westward of the church. Deerfield is principally an agricultural town. In 1837, there was one manufactory of cutlery, which employed seventy hands; the value of cutlery manufactured was \$100,000. The value of palm-leaf hats manufactured was \$7,800; the value of corn brooms made was \$10,990; the value of pocket-books, &c., \$11,000. Population, 1,952. Distance, 3 miles south from Greenfield, 18 miles north of Northampton, 60 to Hartford, Conn., and 95 from Boston.



Monument and Sugar-loaf Mountain, Deerfield.

The above is a north-western view of the monument at Bloody Brook, erected in memory of Capt. Lathrop and his men, who fell on this spot, in an ambuscade of the Indians. This monument stands perhaps 30 or 40 rods southerly from the Congregational church. South-easterly from the monument is seen *Sugar-loaf Mountain*, a conical peak of red sand-stone, about 650 feet in height. In 1835, the 160th anniversary of the destruction of Capt. Lathrop and his men was commemorated in this place. The Hon. Edward Everett, now governor of Massachusetts, was appointed orator for the occasion, and General Epaphas Hoyt, of Deerfield, was appointed to make the address at the laying of the corner stone for the monument. About six thousand persons were present on this occasion. Governor Everett delivered his address under a walnut tree, a few rods eastward of the monument, the top of which is seen rising between the two mountainous elevations in the back ground. About forty years after Capt. Lathrop and his men were killed, a rude monument was erected to their memory, but the different occupants of the soil removed it so many times, that it was a matter of uncertainty where he or his men were

King Philip's War
Re: Capt. Lathrop, nearly 25
This article also applies to the Plum / Chubb families - also Dodge ancestors.
Lathrop from MA - by Barber

buried. In 1835, the committee of investigation, guided by the tradition of some aged people, found the spot where he and about thirty of his men were interred; the grave was just in front of the door-yard of Stephen Whitney, Esq., and about twenty feet north-west of his front door. Their bones were in a state of tolerable preservation, but fell to pieces on exposure to the air. "A grave, probably containing the bones of the ninety-six Indians who were slain on that day, was likewise found by accident about the same time, nearly one hundred rods west of the road leading from Bloody Brook to Conway, by Mr. Artemas Williams, and a little more than half a mile south-west of the grave of Lathrop."

The monument is six feet square and about twenty feet in height; it is constructed of marble, by Mr. Woods, of Sunderland. On its completion an address was delivered at its foot by Mr. Luther B. Lincoln, of Deerfield. The following is the inscription on the monument:—

On this ground Capt. Thomas Lothrop and eighty-four men under his command, including eighteen teamsters from Deerfield, conveying stores from that town to Hadley, were ambuscaded by about 700 Indians, and the Captain and seventy-six men slain, Sept. 18th, 1675, (old style.)—The soldiers who fell were described by a contemporary Historian, as "a choice company of young men, the very flower of the County of Essex, none of whom were ashamed to speak with the enemy in the gate."

"And *Sanguinetto* tells you where the dead
Made the earth wet, and turn'd the unwilling waters red."

This monument erected August, 1838.

The bearing and distance of the grave of the slain (south 21 rods) is inscribed on the monument, and a stone slab placed on the spot. In order to defend the frontier settlements from the Indians in Philip's war, a considerable number of soldiers were posted at Hadley, and it became necessary to procure provisions and forage for their subsistence. The Indians having burnt the principal part of Deerfield, it was abandoned by the inhabitants; their grain, consisting of about 3,000 bushels of wheat, remained stacked in the fields, having escaped the conflagration. Determining to avail himself of this supply, the commanding officer at Hadley detached Capt. Lathrop and his company, with a number of teams and drivers, to thrash it and transport it to head-quarters. Having thrashed the grain and loaded his teams, Capt. Lathrop, on the 18th of September, commenced his march for Hadley. As no Indians had been seen in the vicinity, he did not probably apprehend any danger. The following account of the fatal attack of the savages at Bloody Brook is taken from *Hoyt's Indian Wars*, published at Greenfield in 1824.

"For the distance of about three miles, after leaving Deerfield meadow, Lathrop's march lay through a very level country, closely wooded, where he was every moment exposed to an attack on either flank; at the termination of this distance, near the south point of *Sugar-loaf Hill*, the road approximated Connecticut river, and the left was in some measure protected. At the village now called *Muddy Brook*, in the southerly part of Deerfield, the road crossed a small stream, bordered by a narrow morass, from which

the village has its name; though more appropriately it should be denominated *Bloody Brook*, by which it was sometimes known. Before arriving at the point of intersection with the brook, the road for about half a mile ran parallel with the morass, then, crossing, it continued directly to the south point of Sugar-loaf Hill, traversing what is now the home lots, on the east side of the village. As the morass was thickly covered with brush, the place of crossing afforded a favorable point of surprise. On discovering Lathrop's march, a body of upwards of seven hundred Indians planted themselves in ambuscade at this point, and lay eagerly waiting to pounce upon him while passing the morass. Without scouring the woods in his front and flanks, or suspecting the snare laid for him, Lathrop arrived at the fatal spot; crossed the morass with the principal part of his force, and probably halted, to allow time for his teams to drag through their loads. The critical moment had arrived—the Indians instantly poured a heavy and destructive fire upon the column, and rushed furiously to close attack. Confusion and dismay succeeded. The troops broke and scattered, fiercely pursued by the Indians, whose great superiority enabled them to attack at all points. Hopeless was the situation of the scattered troops, and they resolved to sell their lives in a vigorous struggle. Covering themselves with trees, the bloody conflict now became a severe trial of skill in sharp shooting, in which life was the *stake*. Difficult would it be to describe the havoc, barbarity, and misery that ensued; 'fury raged, and shuddering pity quit the sanguine field,' while desperation stood pitted, at 'fearful odds,' to unrelenting ferocity. The dead, the dying, the wounded, strewed the ground in all directions; and Lathrop's devoted force was soon reduced to a small number, and resistance became faint. At length the unequal struggle terminated in the annihilation of nearly the whole of the English; only seven or eight escaped from the bloody scene, to relate the dismal tale; and the wounded were indiscriminately butchered. Capt. Lathrop fell in the early part of the action. The whole loss, including teamsters, amounted to ninety."

Capt. Mosely, who was at Deerfield with his company, between four and five miles distant, hearing the musketry, hurried on to the relief of Lathrop, but it was too late; he found the Indians had done their bloody work, and were stripping the dead. Rushing on in close order, he broke through the enemy, and, charging back and forth, cut down all within the range of his shot. After several hours of gallant fighting, the savages were compelled to seek for safety in the surrounding swamps and forests. Lieutenants Savage and Pickering greatly distinguished themselves by their skill and bravery. Just at the close of the action, Major Treat, of Connecticut, who on the morning of this day had marched towards Northfield, arrived on the ground with one hundred men, consisting of English, Pequot and Mohegan Indians, and shared in the final pursuit of the enemy. Captain Mosely lost but two men in the various attacks, and seven or eight only were

at the same evening hour. The two clergymen, whoever they were, were promptly on the ground, and so were their respective friends. Neither sect knew of the arrangements of the other. What was to be done? It was agreed that both services should be held in quick succession, and all present were requested to remain until the end. The Orthodox preacher produced his manuscript and discoursed from the text, "How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation?" The Universalist, in due order, began to read also his written sermon and it so happened that his text was the very same verse. It was quite a remarkable coincidence certainly, for there could not possibly have been the slightest collusion. Which party had the best of it I never heard.

Long years after Esther Forsaith came to "Blindhole" from Chester, there came from Derry, of the same state another more gifted teacher to instruct the larger boys and girls at the Plains. This was William A. Burnham. For a considerable succession of years he kept private and public schools in Danvers and many are the men and women of the town, now in middle life and past it, who were stimulated and blest by his faithful labors. He, too, was the strictest of disciplinarians, but he made his pupils think and work to some purpose, and many a one of them will still say that he learned more under Mr. Burnham than under any other instructor he ever had. Especially was this the case in the various branches of the mathematics. From Danvers, this able, energetic and indefatigable teacher removed to Manchester, Vt., where for about twenty years and until his death, he was at the head of the Academy in that town, except as he was for a portion of the time an assistant of Dr. Wickham. He married Mary Putnam, who was a daughter of Col. Jesse Putnam, and who, as his widow, now lives with her aged mother in Danvers. One of their children is a teacher in Northampton, and has, it is said, a full share of her father's genius for that calling. Another married Rev. A. M. Merwin, a son of a highly respected citizen of Brooklyn. Mr. Merwin, a native of Norwalk, Conn, was formerly a student at Manchester, Vt., then at Williams College, Mass., and afterward at the theological school at Princeton, N. J. Twelve years ago he went as a missionary to Valparaiso. About twelve months since, however, he returned with his wife to his own country to visit old friends, and they both have spent some of these recent weeks in Danvers, as well as in Brooklyn. This very day they have re-embarked for their distant post of duty, and

now already, while I write these lines, they are sailing the seas. Here, again, we see the old town, at home and abroad. Nor should I forget to add, in this connection, what indeed your readers already know, that the newly chosen principal of the Manchester Academy is Rev. James Fletcher, whose long and useful career, as the pastor of the Maple Street church and head of the Holten High School, will ever be a pleasant and cherished memory with the people whom he served. —*Danvers Mirror*, May 11, 1878.

In certain explorations which I made not long ago, I dug up a little, old, worn, dilapidated journal and account book, which is quite a treasure in its way and which I am sure any historian of Danvers would be very glad to see. It is only about six or seven inches long and three or four wide and one thick, while one-half of the shrunken leather cover is gone, the other half still retaining its part of the iron clasp. It is about two hundred years old, the earliest entries in it having been made in 1680, or during the witchcraft times, by Daniel Rea who lived in the house I have more than once referred to as now occupied by Mr. Augustus Fowler and son, and who was a grandson of Daniel Rea, one of the earliest settlers in Danvers. The records which it contain were continued by various persons for nearly a century and abound in names and dates, and include various lists of births, marriages and deaths, and numerous debit and credit accounts with the old First Parish and with private individuals. It is a small book, but there is much in it. It is possible that some of its contents transferred to your columns, may interest not a few of the readers of the *Mirror*, and help such of them as are engaged in certain genealogical and other kindred investigations to a more accurate knowledge of the facts they would learn. The dates which have been duly recorded in a book kept and handed down as this has been, are more to be relied upon than those which are found in town or city archives. I will transcribe here such as are furnished me by Daniel Rea or his successors, giving in connection, enclosed in parenthesis marks, the variations that come to me from what I must regard as less trustworthy sources, whether they are printed books or public registries.

The entries were evidently made by Daniel Rea for thirty years and more, until about the time of his death, March 5,

1715. He seems to have had various business transactions with "Godfry Shildon," "Giles Gory," "Joseph Peabody," "James Watters," "Richard Williams," and "Goodman Donnell." Also with George Jacobs, James Symond, Richard Peters, John Flint, Abraham How, Capt. Goding, Mr. Lindall, William Andrews, Jonathan Putnam, "Sargent Briant of Reding," and many others. Mr. Parris, (probably the minister), is charged several times with hay, oatmeal, pork, &c. A "doctor Parker," and also a "doctor Barton" is paid with money or produce. Shoes are bought of or made by one "Dancell Elitt" at 6 shillings a pair, and money is lent him "to go to Boston to buy a Sieth." Loads of wood are carted from Israel Porter's Landing by John Smith and also by John Langley. Bark is frequently sold to "Elyesar Koesar," and "injan corn," "barells of Syder," molasses, cotton wool, and I know not what else, are things which appear in accounts with numerous parties beside. "Benjamin Bredges" is credited with pitchforks, tongs, plow-irons, and other instruments, which he has manufactured or mended. Perhaps the same person is referred to in this quite interesting item: "Received of Benjamin Briggs one days work at cutting wood, £0-2s-0d. Ye 14th April, '85 by one da work at the meeting house to build seats in ye gallery, £0-3s-0d." One Hannah Standly seems to have come to Mr. Rea's and rendered him a year's service, and among his many payments to her are abundant articles of personal attire from which it would appear that domestics were quite as fond of dress then as now. There are several entries that run like this: "Reckoned with James Beall the 2d day of Jan. '85, and all accounts clear between us from ye beginning of ye world to this day." Then there is one page where Mr. Rea charges the town, in 1685, "for mending byways," he himself and several "hands" doing the work: for "one day at Nathaniell Putnam's brook to make a bredg:" for "myself and a man to make a bredg att a brook by Joseph Porter's house:" for "self and man one day to make a bridg att miell brook:" for "myself one day to make a bridg at ye first brook," &c. I doubt whether we have any earlier record than this, of the construction of bridges in Salem Village. Others may fix more definitely than I can the points at which several of them must have been built, but I think I cannot be mistaken in referring the second one mentioned to the place where the old Topsfield road crosses a brook midway between John Sears' present home and the Bradstreet farm, while the third must have been a little dis-

tance east of the same road, a mile further south, where, as some of us remember, it once swept round in that direction and crossed a brook at the foot of the hill just north of the old Brick School House. The "Mile brook" it was still called more than a century and a half after Daniel Rea made his bridge there, and if there is any stream there yet, I dare say it bears the same familiar name.

Daniel Rea having died in 1715, his son, Zorobabel Rea, continues the record, although I should say the items, of whatever description, are inserted throughout the book in such a promiscuous way as to make it quite a labor to pick out what I want to make use of and put them in consecutive order. Births, marriages and deaths, are given in some such form as this: "April 29, 1716, then my sister Hepzibah Leach died." And again, "Mar. 16, 1720, then my mother-in-law was married again to Lieut. James Putnam." This mother-in-law died Feb. 14, 1726-27, and her husband, Lieut. James Putnam, in the following spring, April 7, 1727. "April 20 (April 22) 1724, then Zorobabel Rea and Margaret Rogers was married together by ye Reverance, Mr. Peter Clark." "July ye 17th, 1727 then my two children was born, Caleb and Sarah, at one birth." His son Moses was born Oct. 2, 1728, and died Oct. 24, when only three weeks old. His daughter Hepzibah was born June 9, 1730; Hannah Dec. 1, 1732; Mehitable June 14, 1735, and a son, Aaron June 24, 1739. Thus Zorobabel and Margaret (Rogers) Rea appear to have had seven children, viz: Caleb, Sarah, Moses, Hepzibah, Hannah, Mehitable and Aaron.

Jean Adams came to live with the family June 9, 1723, when 18 years old, and Nov. 1, 1736 went to Boston; Aaron Reed came Jan. 27, 1727, and went to Boston to learn a house carpenter's trade, Nov. 28, 1733; Bartholomew Reed was brought to them by his mother, Sept. 20, 1727, and left on the 16th of April, 1739 for Boston to live with Uriah Rea. "Aug. 26, 1727, Hepzibah Leach went from my house to her brother, John Leach, to live with him." "Lydia Smith came from Boxford to live, Sept. 26, 1728." "Jan. 14, 1729, then Jonathan Raymant and Hepzibah Leach were married together." "Jan. 17, 1732, then Jonathan Putnam died." "June 28, 1735, then my sister Dought (?) came from Salem to live with me." This sister died Dec. 16, 1735. "April ye 26th, 1737, then father Johosaphat Rogers came to live with me, Zorobabel Rea." And here is a record of the marriage of "Old Put."—July ye 19th, 1739, Israel Putnam and Hannah

4 Zorobabel Rea Daniel 3 Joshua 2 Daniel

x Son Joshua n Watters
Grandson Watters n. Leach. etc

2 July 1696; Grindall, 24 Aug. 1697; and Mary, 1698; but the last two d. soon. The names of these twenty ch. of wh. only five liv. to grow up, it is said are record. in the anc. fam. bible, and so, we presume, are the dates; one of wh. is impossible to be true.

RAY, or REA, CALEB, Boston, by w. Eliz. had Caleb, b. 19 Feb. 1683; and by w. Mary had Mary, 28 Aug. 1691. DANIEL, Plymouth 1631, rem. to Salem, and prob. was that freem. of 14 May 1634, spell. Wray in Col. Rec. and perhaps h. of Bethia, adm. of the ch. 1637, and Sept. of that yr. was on the gr. jury, liv. there 1644. He had d. Bethia wh. m. first the brave Capt. Thomas Lothrop, next Joseph Grafton, and last deac. William Goodhue. But other ch. were Joshua, Rebecca, and

Erra - Rebecca
+ Sarah were
grand daughters

Sarah. JAMES, Hingham, m. in Jan. 1682, wid. Hewett, perhaps relict of Thomas. JOSHUA, Salem, s. of Daniel, may have been brot. from Eng. freem. 1665, was a taverner, 1693. He m. 26 Feb. 1652, Sarah Waters, possib. d. of Richard, wh. d. 19 May 1700, aged 70, had Daniel, b. 30 Mar. 1654, wh. serv. in Philip's war 1676; Rebecca, 4 Sept. 1656; Sarah, 10 Nov. 1658, d. soon; ano. Sarah, and Eliz. dates of whose b. are so confus. in Essex Inst. III. 16, that tho. it is clear, that one is false, we kn. not wh. besides Bethia, 3 Jan. 1663; Joshua, 6 Aug. 1664; John, 23 May 1666; and Hannah, 1 Aug. 1668. Rebecca m. that Samuel Stephens, k. Sept. 1675 at the fight of Bloody Brook, and her f. report. to the governm. that his br.-in-law, Capt. Thomas Lothrop, and his s.-in-law, Samuel Stephens, both k. by the Ind. in that serv. left fams. depend. on him. RICHARD, Warwick 1656. SIMON,

See
Peace
Family
(Rhode Island)

Braintree, came, it is said, from Braintree, Co. Essex, and d. 30 Sept. 1641. His will was copied on one of the lost pages of our Vol. I. in Prob. Court, if we may believe the Index; and his inv. of 20 Feb. foll. shows good est. Perhaps Mary, wh. m. 15 Nov. 1651, Samuel Deering, was his d. SIMON, Block isl. s. of the preced. an orig. propr. of the isl. in 1661, m. Mary d. of the first Nathaniel Thomas of Marshfield, had Mary, b. 19 May 1667; Dorothy, 16 Oct. 1669; Simon, 9 Apr. 1672; and Sibel, 19 Mar. 1675. He liv. to see num. progeny thro. male and fem. lines, and d. 17 Mar. 1737, in 102d yr. says the gr.-stone; and from him came into the fam. by subseq. interm. the Hon. Nathaniel Ray Thomas, one of his Majesty's Counsellors of Mass. Bay 1774.

RAYMOND, perhaps oft. RAYMENT, DANIEL, Lyme, youngest s. of Richard, m. Eliz. d. of Gabriel Harris, wh. d. 10 Aug. 1683, had Eliz. and Sarah; and m. next Rebecca, d. of John Lay, had Richard, Samuel, and perhaps others, and d. 1696. His wid. m. Samuel Gager of Norwich. JOHN, Beverly 1670, perhaps the freem. of 1683, d. in 87th yr. 18 Jan. 1703. JOHN, Beverly, possib. may be thot. s. of the preced.

R 906 E 75 Essex Hist Coll V3 1861 p16

Extracts from the First Book of Births, Marriages and Deaths of the City of Salem MA copied by Ira J. Patch - starts p11

p11 -

Rea Sashue married to Sara Waters by Mr Joⁿ Endicott the 26th February '51; there son Danyell bo 30 1 mo, '54;

Rebecca bo 4 7 mo '56; daughter Sara bo 10 9 mo '58 & died —;

2^d da^r Sara bo 4th '61; da^r Eliza bo 3^d 11 mo '60; da^r

Bethia borne 3 1st mo, '62; son Josue borne 6th 6th mo, '64;

(son Dan^ll dec^d March 5, 1714-15;) son John borne 23^d 3^d mo, 1666;

their da^r Hanna borne 1st 6 mo, 1668.

Note: This (except Daniel's death) old Julian Calendar exc Feb marriage)

Thus, Daniel was born ~~November~~ ^{March} 30 1654. NZ

✓ as Savage says (Reverse) one of the dates on this line is wrong.

As far as I know, the English ancestry of neither Daniel Rea nor Bethia have been found, but clues might be found in the following:

Pioneers of Massachusetts by Charles H. Pope (page 379)

RAY, RAYES, REA, REY, WRAY,

Daniel, bought house in Plymouth in 1630. Rem. to Salem before Feb. 6, 1631; so Bradford says in letter to Winthrop; [Reg. II, 240.] Frm. May 14, 1634; propr. 1636; town officer. [Dau.] Bethia memb. chh. 1637.

Agreement made between his heirs 26 (4) 1662, in accordance with a will he began but did not finish. Son Joshua and his son Daniel; daus. Rebecca and Sarah, under age; son Thomas Lothrop and his wife.

Simon, Braintree.

He d. 30 (7) 1641. Inv. taken Feb. 20, 1641.

LOTHROP,

Page 292

Mark, Salem, propr. 1642; a kinsman of Thomas L.

Capt. Thomas, Salem, Beverly, propr. fr. May 14, 1634; town officer, deputy. Suit in court, 1659. Served in Acadia in 1654-5. He m. Bethia, dau. of Daniel Rea; left no child, but adopted a dau. of a cousin of his wife, Sarah Gott.

He d. in the war in 1675; nunc. will prob. 22 (10) 1675; beq. a farm to his sister, the wife of Ezekiel Cheever; another to his dau. Sarah Gott Lothrop; land to the town for the use of the ministry; to his bro. Joshua Rea and his 4 youngest ch.; to Noah Flisk; to his wife. [Es. Inst. Coll. II, 177; Reg. XXXVIII, 332.] The widow m. 2, Joseph Grafton, and 3, Wm. Goodhue.

GOTT,

Page 194

Mr. Charles, Salem, deacon; deputy, 1634-5; propr. 1636. He wrote to Gov. Bradford July 30, 1629, an account of the ordination of Messrs. Skelton and Higginson. [B.] Rem. to Wenham about 1651. Com. to end small causes in 1654. He and his wife and son Charles were dism. from Salem chh. to that of Wen. Dec. 10, 1663. Sarah, [dau. of Charles?] was adopted by Capt. Thomas Lothrop after the death of her mother, his wife's "cousin." Ch. Deborah bapt. 12 (12) 1636, Charles bapt. 2 (4) 1639, Daniel bapt. 28 (4) 1646.

He d. 15 (11) 1667. The widow deposed in 1667, ae. about 66 years.

MANSFIELD,

page 297

Andrew, Lynn, town clerk, attested to records of land grants made in 1638, in Essex Court files, vol. VI, fol. 77. Deposed 30 (4) 1669, that he was about 49 years old. Wife Bethia joined him in deed to Charles Gott in 1663. Second wife Mary, widow of John Neale, q. v. Deposed in 1663, ae. about 48 years.

New England Marriages Prior to 1700

by Clarence Almon Torrey
(page 614) (selected items)

Rea, Daniel (- 1662) + Bethia _____ (1662) in England? before birth 1645?; Plymouth / Salem

Ray/Rea, Joshua + Sarah Walters? (1620-179) 26 Feb. 1651; Salem

Rae, Joshua (1664-1710) + Elizabeth Keach (1668-); Oct 1685? Salem

(page 475)

Lothrop, Capt. Thomas (-1675) + Bethia Rea, dau. Daniel (Shd. m. 1640)

Grafton, m. William Goodhue - ? Dec 1690; Salem

(page 314)

Gott, Charles? (- 1668) (called cousin of Andrew² Mansfield) +

Gift Palmer (- 1668) - St Andrew the Great, Cambridge, 30 Oct 1625; (of) Salem

Gott, Daniel (1644 - 1715+) + Elizabeth Morris (1648-) dau. of Thos Morris (relation of John Mansfield's wife); 2 Jan 1665? Lynn / Wenham

(page 496)

Mansfield, Andrew² (ca 161-165) age 35 in 1644 (cousin of Charles Gott, Jr.) + 1st wife Bethia (? Townsend?) (ca 1632-1672) before 1652 (birth?); Lynn

Mansfield, John (1679-1671) + Mary [Morrice] (sister of Thomas, Kinsman of Edward Holgate) 25 Dec 1688; ca 1690?; Lynn

(There were several other John Mansfields but not in Essex Co. John born in 1601 not listed.)

Mansfield, Cont'd.

John, ae. 34, came in the Susan and Ellen in April, 1635. Served with his bro.-in-law, Robert Keayne, tailor; had lands assigned him in Boston in 1637. Rem. to Charlestown. He was a son of Sir John Mansfield. Frm. May 10, 1643. [Reg. VI, 156.] He applied to Gen. Court in 1654, to be employed in the mint with Hull and Sanders. [Arch. 105.] He deposed June 21, 1659; had served at the goldsmith's trade 24 years. His father was a rich man, a justice of the peace, a knight. [Mdx. Files.]

He m. Mary, widow of John Gove, and joined with her 5 Dec. 1655, in paying to her sons John and Edward Gove their portions. [Char. Rec.] [Col. Rec. 1650.]

His son John and dau. Elizabeth, twins, ae. 8 years, were placed Dec. 30, 1656, with his sister Mrs. Keaine and Mr. Samuel Whit- ing, Jr., to be brought up. [Mdx. Court Rec.]

They made a joint will 21 Aug. 1665, securing to her one third of £600 a year in lands left him in York, Eng., and debts due to him there; the rest to his lawful heirs, after life use by themselves; estate in Char., Boston, Braintree. Refers to his mother, sister Coale and bro.-in-law Robert Keayne. (Not perfect, wanting executors and witnesses not sworn.)

It is hard to figure out how the blueblood John Mansfield, if his knight father was of Yorkshire, they would have had ties to John Charles Gott of Cambridge (unless thru the university).

But Bethia Mansfield, was connected to Charles Gott + so were Bethia Rea (x 2nd Mother and daughter?) since Bethia (Rea) Lothrop adopted Sarah Gott - (why Charles and Gift died?) -

Question - were all these Bethias related to Charles - or to his wife Gift Palmer? (see over)

Clarence & Helen Torrey - New England Marriages Prior to 1700

GOTT, Charles¹ (-1668) (called cousin of Andrew² MANSFIELD) & Gift PALMER (-1668+)
(?m/2 Mary ? (no)); St. Andrew the Great, Cambridge, 30 Oct 1625; Salem
GOTT, Charles² (1639-1708) & 1/wf Sarah DENNIS (-1665); 12 Nov 1659; Wenham
GOTT, Charles² (1639-1708) & 2/wf Lydia CLEARKE/CLARK (-1717/18); 25 Dec 1665;
Lynn/Wenham
GOTT, Charles³ (1662-1708) & Elizabeth [WARNER] (1666-); b 1696, b 1686; Wenham
GOTT, Daniel² (1646-1715+) & Elizabeth MORRIS (1643-), dau of Thos. MORRIS (relation of
John MANSFIELD's wf); 2 Jan 1665/6; Lynn/Wenham
GOTT, John³ (1668-1723) & Rebecca TARBOX (1672-), m/2 William FAIRFIELD; 19 Jul 1693;
Salem
GOTT, Samuel³ & Margaret ANDROSS/ANDREWS (-1716); m int 26 Jun 1697; Wenham

REA, Daniel (-1662) & Bethiah ? (-1663); in Eng, b 1629, b 1628?; Plymouth/Salem
REA, Daniel & Hepzibah PEBODY/PEABODY (1652-); 10 Apr 1678; Salem/Danvers
RAY, David & Hannah BERRY; m int 8 Jan 1695/6; Boston/Charlestown
RAY, James & Elizabeth (FOSTER) HUET, w Ephraim HUETT; 17 Jan 1681/2; Hingham
RAE, John & Ruth ?; b 1691, b 1690?; Salem
RAY/REA, Joshua & Sarah WALTERS (?) (1630-1700); 26 Feb 1651; Salem
RAE, Joshua (1664-1710) & Elizabeth LEACH (1668-); Oct 168[?], 1685?, 1686; Salem
RAY, Samuel (-1717/18) & Mary ?; b 1685/8; Salem

Were these related to
Bethie () Rea?
Daniel's wife?

1444

Catter, an early writer was
given to speculation

NEW ENGLAND.

R929.3 C991

in 1730. He married in Sherborn, July 31, 1706, Lydia, daughter of Moses Adams. Children, born at Sherborn: John, 1709; Lydia, 1712, died 1715; Isaac, mentioned below; Daniel, 1716; Lydia, 1720; Peter, 1723; Abigail, born and died 1727; Nathaniel, 1730.

(XII) Isaac, son of John Fiske, was born August 24, 1714, at Sherborn, Massachusetts. He was a weaver by trade. He settled first in Worcester, Massachusetts, and moved as early as 1745 to Framingham, Massachusetts, where he lived near Addison Dadmun's lot at first, and later near the Haven land. On June 11, 1765, he bought the John Drury place of sixty-three acres of John Haven, of Athol. This was situated north of Abraham Rice's lot, and the cellar hole can still be found. He died December 22, 1799. He married, November 11, 1736, Hannah, daughter of Richard and Lydia Haven. She was a school teacher before and after marriage, and she died February 21, 1800. Children: Isaac, born 1737; Hannah, 1739; John, mentioned below; Moses, died young; Richard, born February 25, 1750; Daniel, a physician; Lydia, born October 25, 1753; Moses, July 12, 1755.

(XIII) John (2), son of Isaac Fiske, was born in 1741. He learned the tanner's trade in Roxbury, Massachusetts. There are several records of land bought and sold by him at various times. He served as justice of the peace, as selectman and as representative. He died December 17, 1819. He served in the revolution, enlisting as private in Captain Simon Edgell's company, on the Lexington Alarm, April 19, 1775. He was present at the Lexington and Concord fights. He married Abigail Howe, who died April 14, 1829, aged seventy-seven years. Children: Nat, born August 12, 1772; Thomas, March 22, 1774; Sally, July 17, 1776, died young; John Boyle, at Sherborn, December 2, 1778; Susannah, 1781; Sally, 1783, married William Larrabee (see Larrabee V); Edward, May 25, 1786; Nancy, January 26, 1789; William, 1791, died November 19, 1805; George, September 23, 1793.

The Ray family in England is prominent in Berwick, Lincoln, Suffolk, Derby and Gloucester. The oldest Ray coat-of-arms seems to be: Quarterly or and azure on a bend gules, three fleurs-de-lis or. The Rea or Ree family, prominent in London and Worcestershire, have the following arms: Azure a bezant four crescents argent. Crest: Out of a mural coronet argent a dragon's head azure. The Rae family has seats at Esk Grove, Mid-Lothian, Scotland. The only Scotch coat-of-arms of the Rae family is given by Burke: Vert three stags cou-

rant argent. Crest: A stag at gaze proper. Supporters: Dexter a stag; sinister, a lion; both proper. Motto: *In omnia promptus*. A branch of the Rae family in England has: Per cross argent and azure on a bend gules three fleurs-de-lis of the first. Crest: A mountain cat courant guard proper. Several pioneers came to New England before 1650. Simon Ray settled at Braintree, where he died September 30, 1641; his son Simon settled at New Shoreham, Rhode Island, and is the progenitor of a numerous family at Block Island and vicinity. Caleb Ray settled in Boston and died there, leaving a son Caleb; was a member of the Second Church of Boston. A David Ray, baptized at Forfarshire, Scotland, owned the covenant at Charlestown, September 26, 1696; his son Samuel, born August 29, 1697, married, October 24, 1723, in Boston, Mary Fullerton.

(I) Daniel Ray, the immigrant ancestor of this family, was doubtless brother of Caleb Ray, of Boston, and probably also of Simon Ray, of Braintree. Tradition has it that he was Scotch, but few came to the colonies at the time he came, except from England. The family was prominent, however, in Galloway, Caithness and Ayrshire, Scotland, for many centuries, and since 1612 in the Scotch counties of Ireland. There are reasons for believing, however, that Daniel Ray came from Suffolk-shire, England, though he may have been of Scotch ancestry. He settled in Plymouth colony in 1630, or earlier, and bought land of Anthony Annable, but soon afterward removed to Massachusetts Bay Colony, settling at Salem before February 6, 1631-32, according to a letter from Governor Bradford to Governor Winthrop of that date. The descendants of Daniel in Essex county have followed the spelling Rea, but those who left that section in most cases have adopted the spelling Ray, which is nearly universal in the families descended from Caleb and Simon, the other immigrants. Daniel Ray became a prominent citizen of Salem. He was admitted a freeman May 14, 1634, and was a proprietor of the town in 1636, and held various town offices. He removed to Salem Village, now Danvers, in 1662. He married Bethia —, who survived him. He died before completing his will, but an agreement of his heirs, dated June 26, 1662, divided the estate among them. Children: Joshua, mentioned below; Rebecca Sarah; Bethia, died December 6, 1686, married Captain Thomas Lothrop, (second) Joseph Grafton, (third) William Goodhue.

(II) Joshua, son of Daniel Ray, or Rea, was born about 1628, in England probably, and died at Salem Village, now Danvers, in

Pearce line

IGNORE
to
here

- don't feel!

2 grandchildren

ours

ARMS

Note - Pearce Ancestor - Mary Rowing was widow of Simon Ray (see above - suggests Simon was brother of Daniel) She then m/2 our ancestor Peter George of Braintree.
p120

NEW ENGLAND.

1710. According to various depositions he stated his age incorrectly, making his birth in one case 1628, in another 1631, and another 1637. He was admitted to the First Church of Salem in 1668, and was made freeman May 3, 1665. He married, February 26, 1651, Sarah Waters, who died May 19, 1700, aged seventy years. He and his wife were among the original members of the church at Salem Village. In 1693 he was keeping a tavern. Children, born at Salem and Salem Village: Samuel, mentioned below; Daniel, born March 30, 1654, died March 5, 1714-15; Rebecca, born September 4, 1656; Sarah, November 10, 1659-60; Sarah, June 4, 1661; Bethia, January 3, 1662; (Joshua, August 6, 1664.) John, May 23, 1666; Hannah, August, 1667.

to
← here (III) Samuel, son of Joshua Ray, first appears on the public records at Salem Village, now the north parish of Danvers. His wife Mary was baptized in that church with her six children, June 14, 1702. His brother John was a member of the same church. The name is spelled Rae and Ray in both these families. There is no reasonable doubt that Samuel was son of Joshua. Children: Samuel, born about 1685-89, at Salem; Robert; Jonathan; William, born 1691, died August 21, 1693, at Danvers; Benjamin; Abel, mentioned below. The foregoing were baptized June 14, 1702; also Elizabeth, baptized at Salem Village, September 19, 1703.

(IV) Abel, son of Samuel Ray, was baptized at Salem Village, now Danvers, June 14, 1702, with other children, and he was probably a year or two old at the time. He settled in Marlborough, Massachusetts, and served in the French and Indian war in 1754. The Marlborough history says that he was also in the revolution, when an old man, but he was seventy-five years old at the beginning of the war. The Massachusetts records do not credit him with service, but he may have been engaged as a volunteer. This service was more likely that of his son Abel. He married Hannah ——. Children: Abel, joined the church at Marlborough, and had Abel, baptized September 5, 1756; Francis, on the same day; Reuben, March 13, 1756; Mary, born at Marlborough, August 26, 1722; Amos, mentioned below; Eunice, January 23, 1728.

(V) Amos, son of Abel Ray, was born at Marlborough, October 17, 1725. He married (intentions dated at Stow, August 27, 1748) Priscilla Gates. He removed to Henniker, New Hampshire, and died there January 30, 1803. He was a soldier in the revolution, in Captain Jacob Haskin's company, Colonel John Jacob's regiment, in 1778. At the age of fifty-five he enlisted in the Continental army

for three years, August 17, 1781 (Massachusetts records). Children: Reuben, born April 17, 1751; Jonathan, mentioned below; Joseph, August 26, 1755; Hannah, October 30, 1757; Benjamin, September 3, 1761; Charles, November 13, 1768.

(VI) Jonathan, son of Amos Ray, was born at Stow, Massachusetts, March 20, 1752, and died at Henniker, New Hampshire, March 22, 1816. He went to Henniker in 1777 and bought a farm there, making a clearing and building a cabin before he settled. He married (first) April 3, 1777, Betty Barnes, who died July 26, 1794, daughter of Silas and Mary C. Barnes. He married (second) December 24, 1794, Peggy Emerson, a widow. Children by first wife: Silas, 1778; William, 1780; Jonathan, November 16, 1782; Lucy, 1784; Betsey, February 5, 1785, married Thomas Sargent; Hannah, 1787, died January 30, 1797; Polly, 1790, died December 2, 1806; Paul, mentioned below; Joel, March 9, 1794. Children by second wife: Amos, May 5, 1798; Calvin, 1799; Joseph, 1801; Olive, 1803, married Levi Kemp; David, June 11, 1806.

(VII) Paul, son of Jonathan Ray, was born in Henniker, New Hampshire, in 1792, and died April 18, 1835. He married, November 9, 1820, Sophronia Connor, who was born January 4, 1800, and died September 16, 1867, daughter of John and Mary (Whitney) Connor. They had one child, John C., mentioned below.

(VIII) John C., son of Paul Ray, was born in Henniker, New Hampshire, January 25, 1825, and died January 28, 1889, in his native town. He was educated there in the district schools, and always lived on the old homestead which his grandfather settled, and followed farming. He married, January 28, 1851, Mary P. Dodge, of Henniker, born September 30, 1830, died April 20, 1901, daughter of Carlton S. and Delilah (Stevens) Dodge. Children, born at Henniker: Myron Hoyt, mentioned below; Charles Sumner, born October 27, 1858; James B., March 10, 1862, died January 20, 1863; Alfred Winship, September 8, 1866.

(IX) Myron Hoyt, son of John C. Ray, was born at Henniker, New Hampshire, August 30, 1855. He attended the public schools there and assisted his father on the farm until he was twenty-five. For four years he was an officer in the New Hampshire state prison at Concord, and for four years at the Merrimac county farm in New Hampshire. In 1887 he came to Bellows Falls, Vermont, where he has resided since then, and has followed farming and lumbering. He is president of the Bay State Saddletree Company. In politics he is

Excerpts from Essex Co Quarterly Courts

(Salem Q C - re: Ray family)

27: 4 (June): 1636. Daniel Ray, Lawrence Leech & others served on jury.

27: 10 (Dec.): 1636. These men & others served on another jury

28: 1 (March): 1637. Ditta (Ray's court foreman)

27: 10 (Dec): 1642. "

Same date Twelve men including these two "presented for breach of order of court, keeping their cattle in the common corn fields, and all but Roger Hascall fined (Hascall's cattle being "disordered," he was quit. Complained of by neighbors

11: 5 (July) 1644. James Thomas, servant to Daniell Ray, to be severely whipped for stubbornness and disobedience to his master.

(Aug) 1644. Daniell Ray, for trespass of his horses, cows and hogs in north field to his neighbors' damage. Wit: Deafery Mogg, Mr. Hethorne & Mr. Downing to fix (assess) the damages.

21: 12 (Feb) 1648-9

Danyell Rumball fined for defaming Danyell Raye.†
John Rowden, for defaming Danyell Ray, to sit in the stocks one hour on lecture day, or pay fine, and to pay John Porter, jr., witness for three days.‡

Joane Tippitt (also Typit) fined for second drunk.§

Fransis Nurce and Thomas Odingsells, for defaming Danyell Ray, to pay fine or sit in the stocks.

same court

Ruben Suppie, for defaming Dan Ray, fined or to sit in stocks

2196

Sept 1650

Joshua Ray admonished for abusing the body of Raleigh Reade in an uncomely manner with a stick (handwritten note says she married Jos. Parkhurst. (Tenny says she (b 1627) m Jos. Park's 1629-1709). (This may have been more innocent than it appears))

255

June 1652

Micaell Cresse acknowledged assignment of Lt. Thomas Lothrop of the time he was to serve Lothrop, to Josuah Raye of Salem for four years, wanting one month.

(Joshua's sister Beth's was married to Lothrop then.)

173

Nov 1652

Abigail, wife of Arthur Kippin fined for excess in clothing, wearing broad bow lace Wit: Lieut Lothrop, Rich. Prince

(Other records in Salem Q.C. on Cap & Lothrop not collected. After he was killed by the Indians in King Phillips war, the ^{Mr} Glegg General Court records on that record was noted — see over —

Records of the Massachusetts Bay Colony in New England

(Vol 5)

Rec.

275-6 11 June 1680 For a final settlement of the estate of the late Captaine
~~Leathrop~~ Leathrop, this Court, having heard the pleas of the parties
concerned, doe determine, that the widow, now wife to Joseph Grafton,
enjoy the whole moveable estate to his same use & dispose
paying thereout the said Leathrops debts, and family pounds
to the children of Joshua Roy, and that she have the whole
use and benefit of the houses & lands for her life, making no
strip nor wast, and at her death the whole real estate to revert
to the wife of Mr Ezekiel Cheevers & her issue, heirs of the said
Captaine Leathrop. The costs for hearing of this case was determined
to be five pounds, wch Mr Ezekiel Cheevers paid.

Note: The captain, probably ^{born ca 1610, thus} somewhat older than Bethia, had no children.
Her brother Joshua had to support her about 4 years, after
her husband's death (which may account for some of the above order).

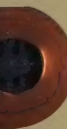
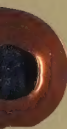
Torrey says: CHEEVER, Ezekiel (?1614-1702) + 2/wf Ellen Lathrop (-1706)
(his sister?) m. 18 Nov 1652 (Charleston/ Ipswich). Bethia died 06 Dec 1688

From Farmers

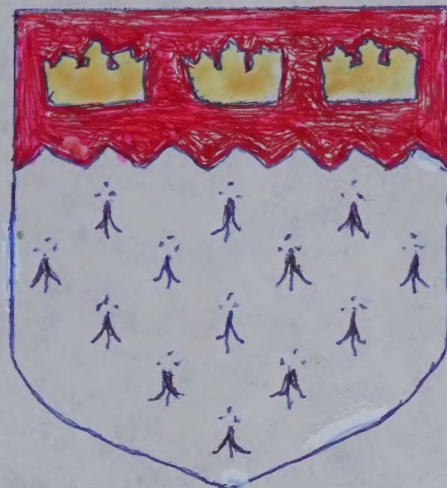
LOTHROP

||*THOMAS, Salem,
freeman 1634, member of the ar. co. 1645, representative 1647,
1653, and 1664, was one of the founders of the church in Beverly
1667, representative of Beverly 1672 to 1675, 4 years; was many
years captain, and sustained that office in Philip's war, when with
more than 60 of his men he was killed in battle, near Deerfield,
18 Sept. 1675. Increase Mather calls him "a godly and coura-
geous commander." He left a widow, Bethiah, but no children.

Joshua was also supporting the ^{+ widow of} Samuel STURGEON,
died killed at Bloody Brook (who had married his daughter Rebecca)

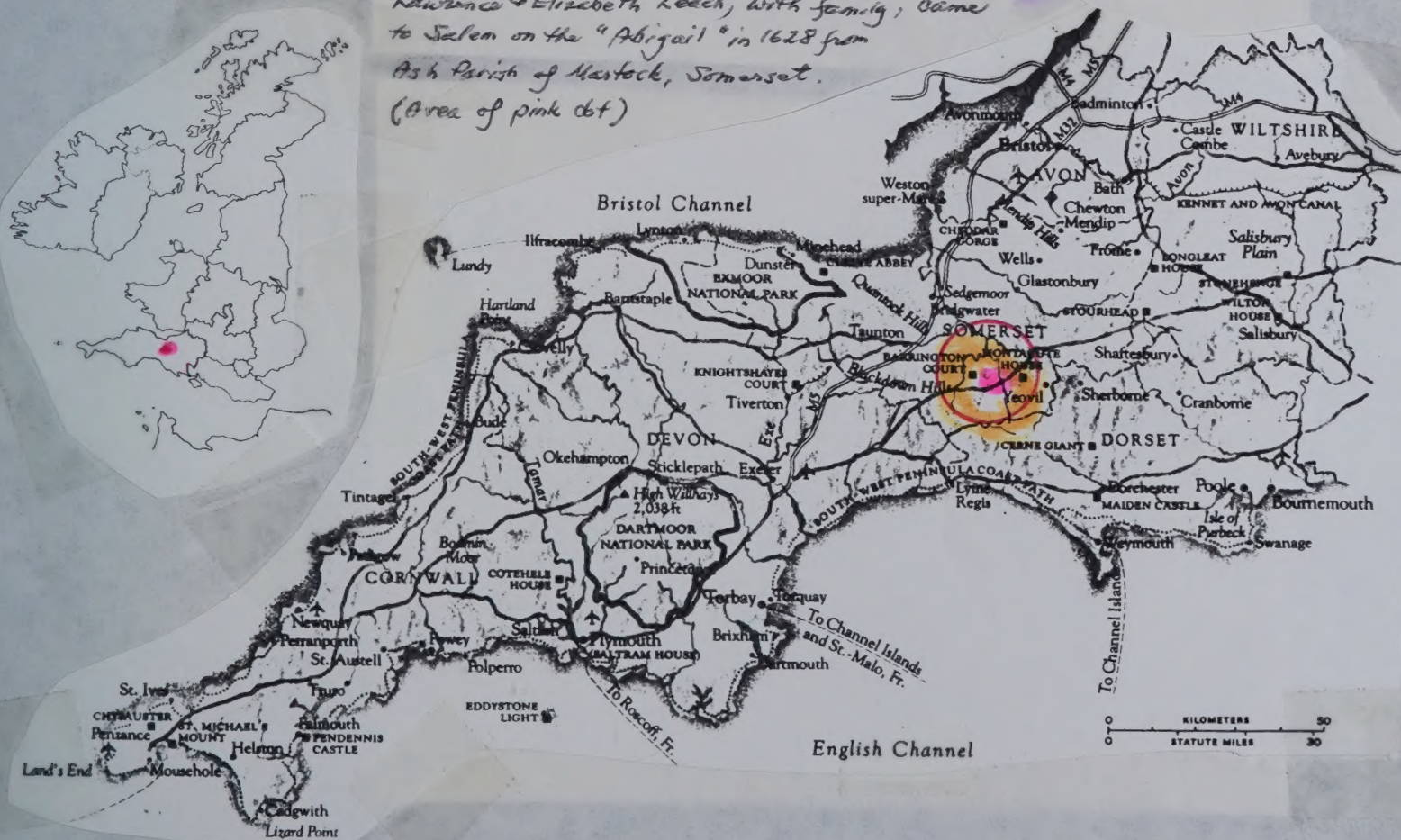


LEACH



This coat of arms belonged to John de Leche, surgeon and friend of King Edward III of England (reigned 1327-1377). One source claims the Leach family was descended from him.

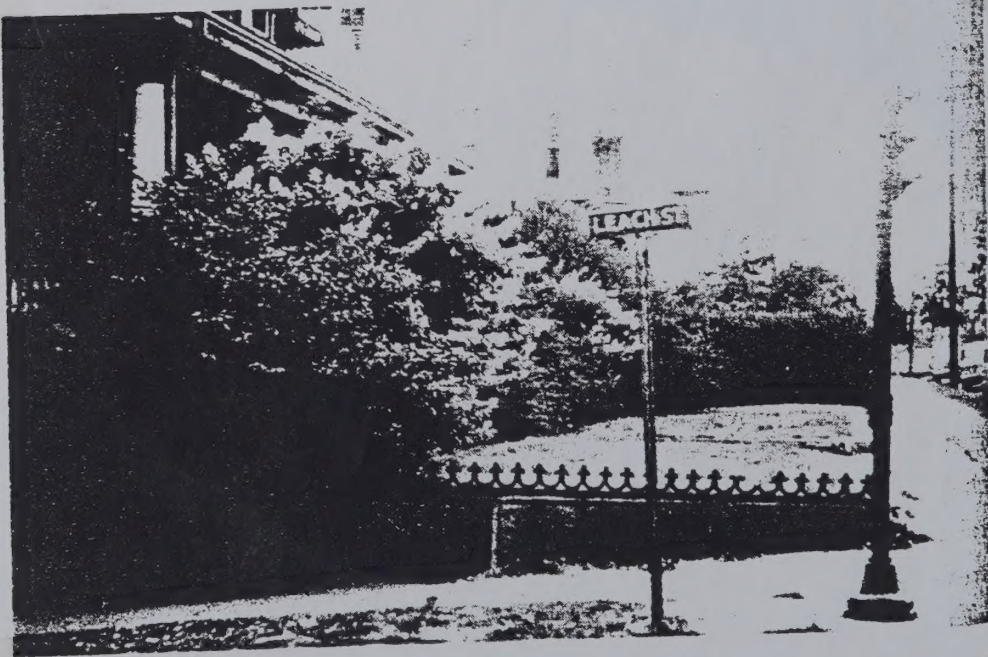
According to Charles Banks' book "Planters of the Commonwealth," Richard Lawrence & Elizabeth Leach, with family, came to Salem on the "Abigail" in 1628 from Ash Parish of Martock, Somerset. (Area of pink dot)



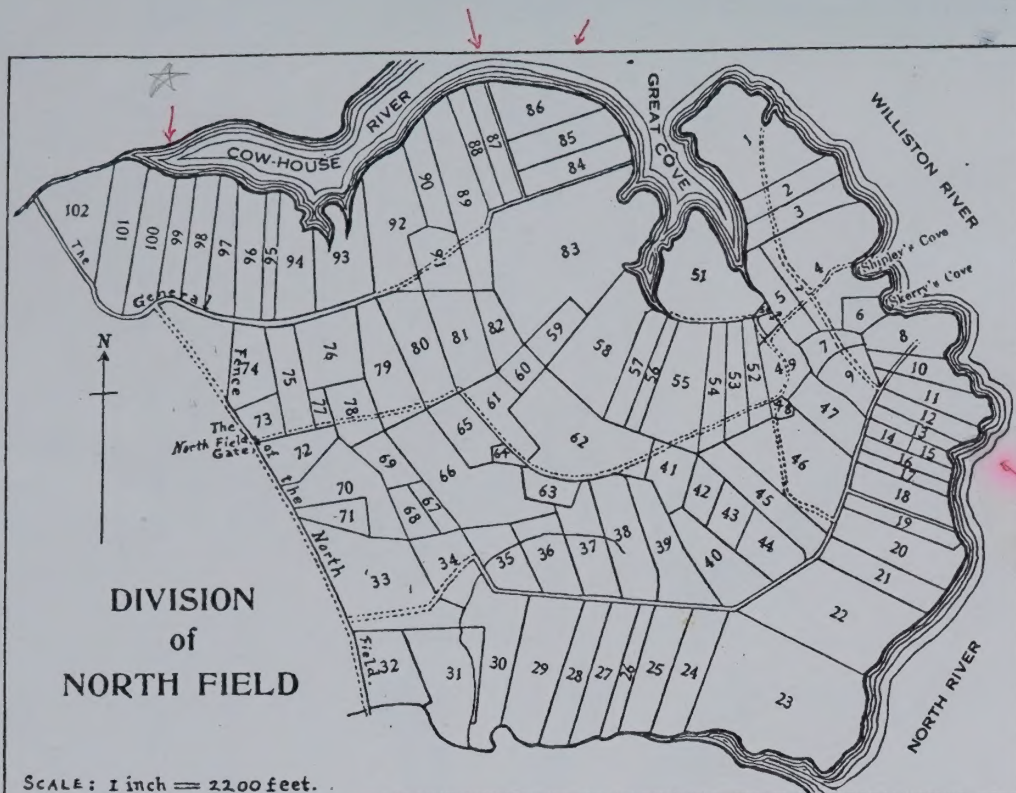
H06.24

Roger Conant To: Balch
Lawrence Leach

Autographs of Roger Conant, John Balch, Lawrence Leach¹

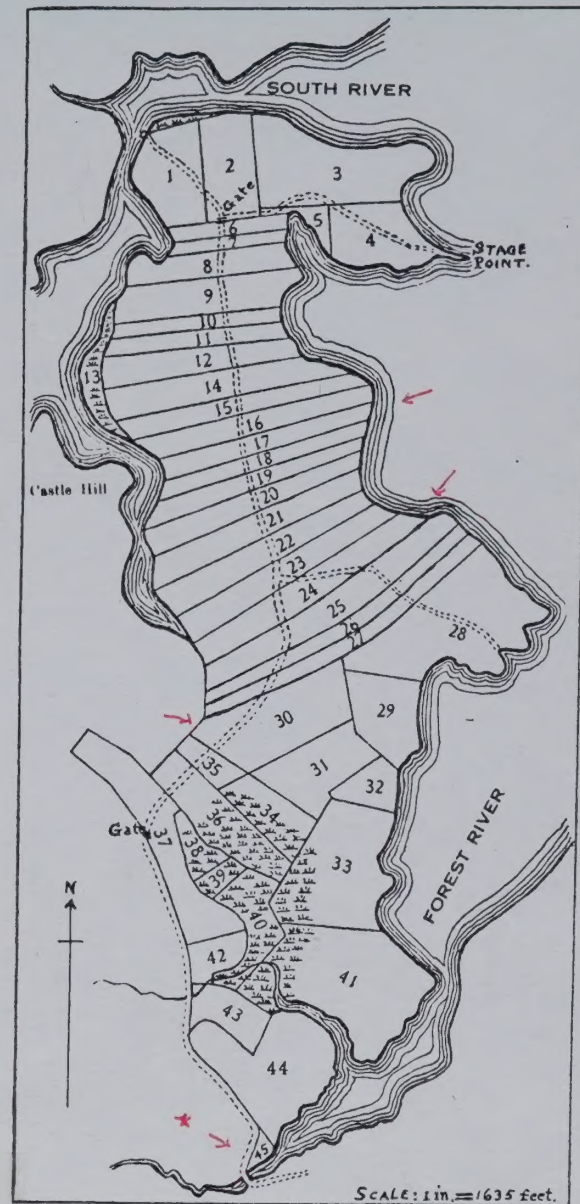


Sign designating Leach Street, Salem,
Massachusetts, 1964



#86-William Towne, 1652 87-Richard Waters 100-Laurence Leach ✓
 #6-Francis Sheery 1682 12-Daniel Roe 1655

These are only some of the divisions - Notice that the early colonists had not yet outgrown the ancient system of strip-farming in fields not always close to their homes. Their homes, in the 1650's, would have all been on small lots in a central village, clustered around a church and a village green for safety from Indians. Horses, etc if they had any, would be kept overnight on the village green. A lot of time was wasted everyday getting to their fields. A man's strips might be in every which direction. The town fathers were displeased when people traded lots to centralize holdings.



#17-Joshua Roe 1650

24-Thames Brooming 1658

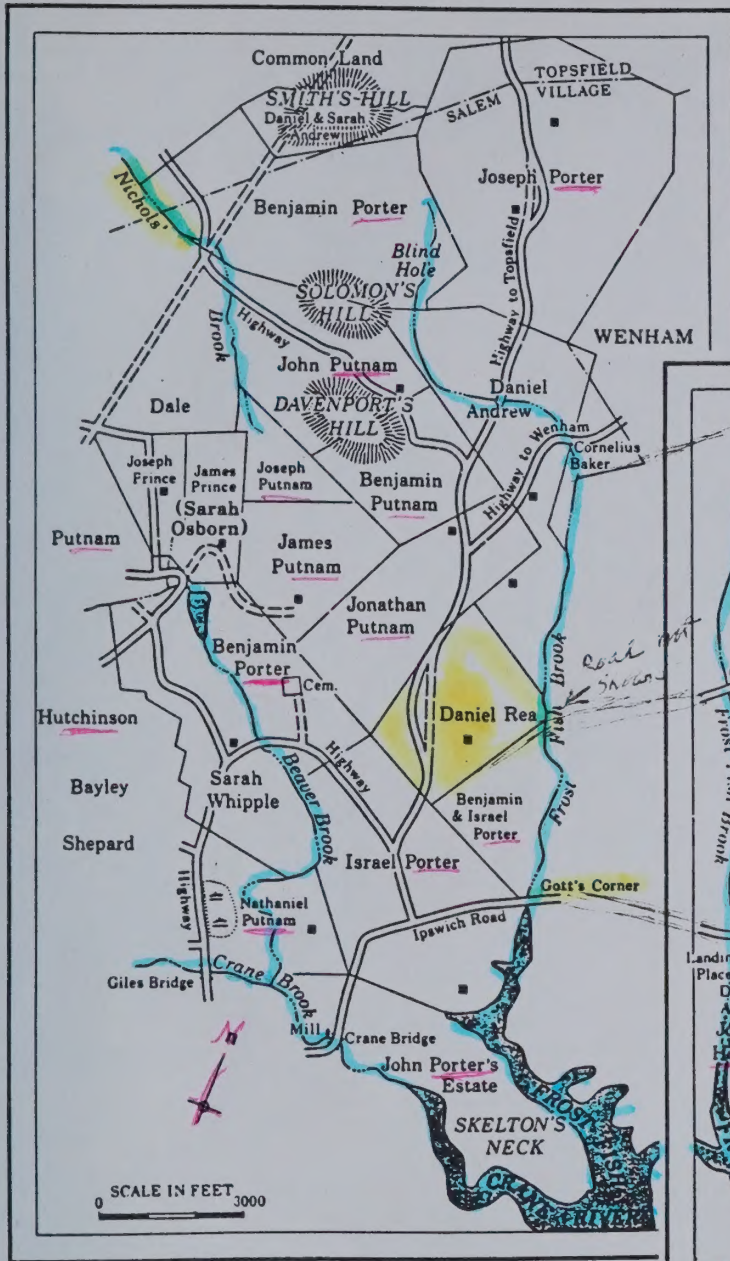
30-Richard Waters 1650

45-William Flint 1670

Leach & other Dodge-related families

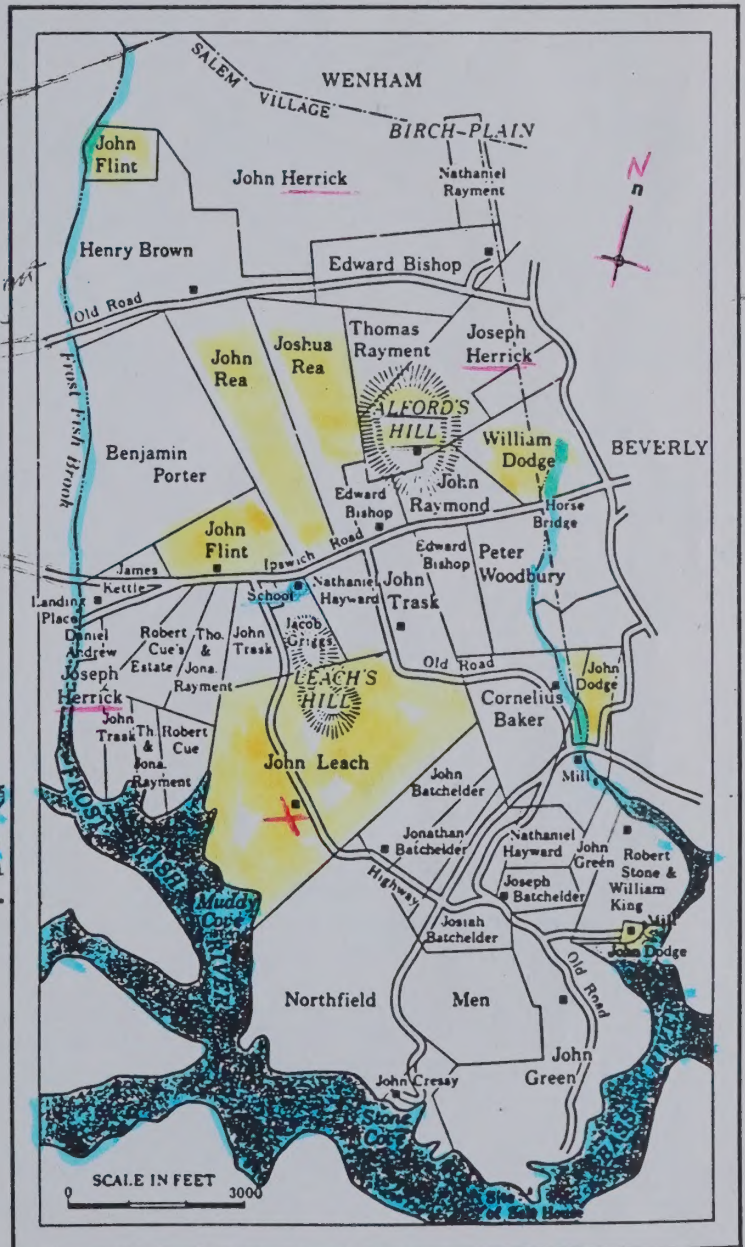
Comment on the ancient system of strip farming

April 1902



Salem Village sections in the 1690's. The reason they do not fit together at Frost Fish Brook is that the scale is different. The section on the right is enlarged map. (Note orientation of North)

Second and third generation inter-related families highlighted. The Reas here were Daniel's grandchildren. His relative Charles Gott (for whom the corner was named) had moved to Wenham & sold his property



adjoining the first Daniel Rea to John Porter - the Porters above were descendants. See Dodge family for others related to them on this map - including Alford's (later called Alford) for whom the hill was named - though that connection occurred nearly 200 years later.

X = location of home on "Rial Side" (Royal side) of Salem, now Beverly owned by Lawrence Leach & inhabited by son Richard and grandson John. The road is now called Elliot Street.

*Adapted from maps by Sidney Perley.

Some of John Leach's children married into families underlined in red.

The map is a plan of the
 town of ... showing the
 streets and buildings. The
 map is drawn to a scale of
 1 inch = 100 feet. The
 map is drawn by ...

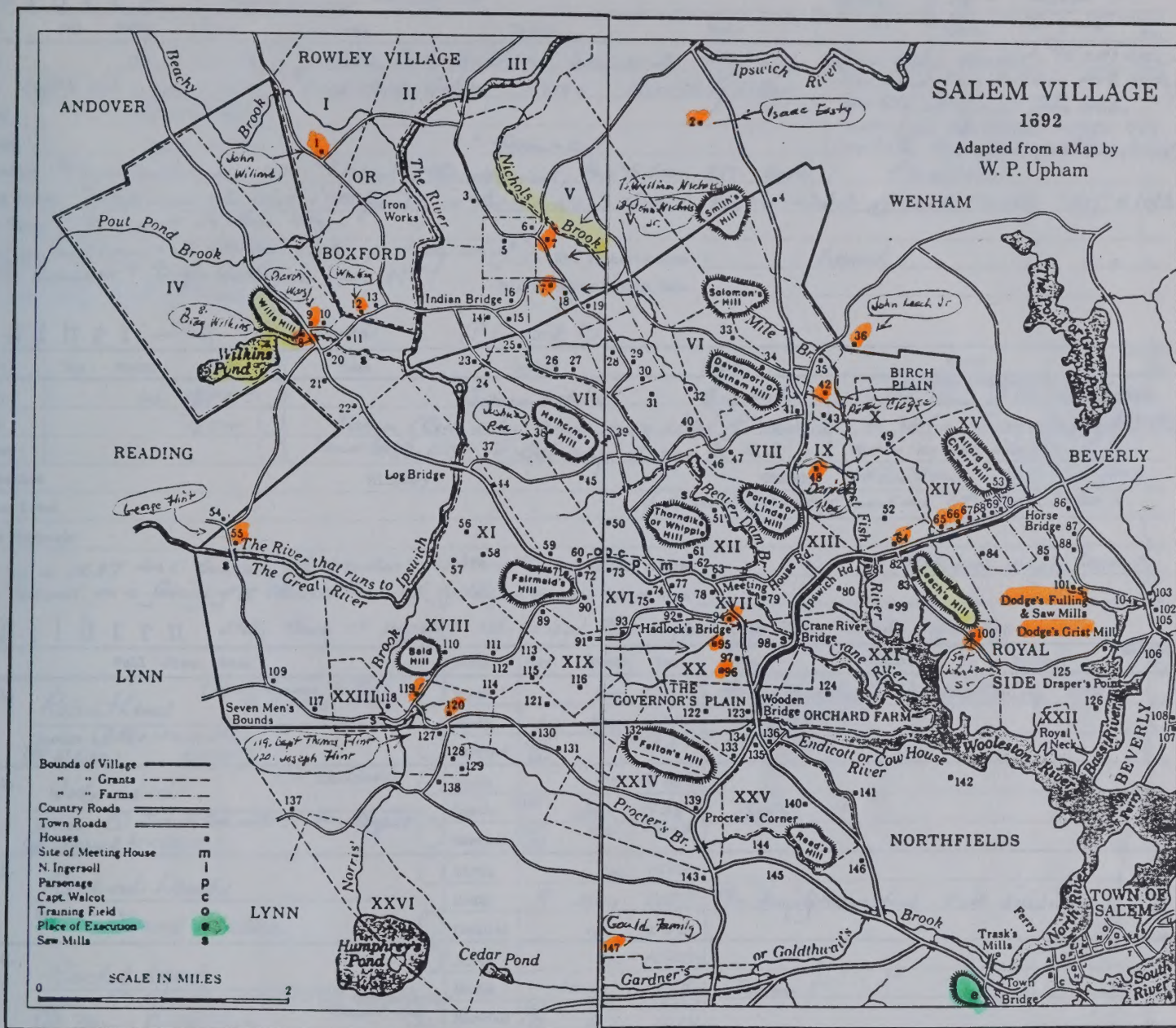


This map is a plan of the
 town of ... showing the
 streets and buildings. The
 map is drawn to a scale of
 1 inch = 100 feet. The
 map is drawn by ...

This map is a plan of the
 town of ... showing the
 streets and buildings. The
 map is drawn to a scale of
 1 inch = 100 feet. The
 map is drawn by ...

This map is a plan of the
 town of ... showing the
 streets and buildings. The
 map is drawn to a scale of
 1 inch = 100 feet. The
 map is drawn by ...

Residents of Salem Village during the witchcraft hysteria



*Adapted from Charles W. Upham, Salem Witchcraft, 2 vols., Boston, 1867.

From: Salem Witchcraft & Hawthorne's House of Seven Gables
Eugene A. Stratton (1992) Pages 384-5

Part of Key - See: XX Center right - 94. Samuel Rea 95. Francis Nurse 96. Samuel Nurse
See XIV Center far right - on road to Ipswich - 64. John Flint 65. John Rea 66. Joshua Rea

Though the Dodges, Reas, Leaches and Flints did not get personally involved, their offspring married into families of the victims. Nichols and Wags (involved) were related to Margaret (Wilkins) Willard (1) whose husband, constable John Willard, was hanged. Soon afterward she married William Towne whose three aunts were convicted - Rebecca Nurse (95) and Mary Easty (2) were hanged, and their sister Sarah Cloyse (73) barely escaped. A few years later Elizabeth Rea (38-66) married John Towne, a close cousin (also related to the Goolds (147) who were involved. Lois Towne, grand daughter of both these couples, married Richard Dodge V.



Map of the region showing the distribution of settlements and geographical features. The map is oriented with North at the top. The legend indicates that red dots represent settlements, and the size of the dot corresponds to the size of the settlement. The map shows a network of roads and rivers, with settlements of varying sizes indicated by the size of the red dots.

The map shows the distribution of settlements in the region. The settlements are marked with red dots of varying sizes, indicating their relative importance or size. The map also shows the network of roads and rivers, which are important for understanding the geography and infrastructure of the region. The legend provides a key to the symbols used on the map, and the title at the top identifies the region being studied.

Family Record

Dodge Ancestors

Family No.

Leach

Surname

Father - Lawrence LEACH

Salem 1629 - "Talbot"??

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1580	probably Ash-Mantock	Somerset	England	Bro. John Leach (-1658) was	
Death	before 24	Jan	1662	Rial-side	Salem	Essex Mass Bay Colony	conserved for not living with wife,	
Buried			(probate)				worked at family iron works -	
Married		ca	1604		? Somerset		evide. no children - left his	
Occupation	Farmer, miller, one of the "7 men" of the settlement, Rep to Gen. Ct.						Church	Paritan
Places Lived	Established the first iron foundry in the colonies. Owned quite a bit of land - called "Mr." a feth							
Other Wives	of respect in those days.							

(Unproven, undocumented source states possibly son of) Richard Leach Jr + (Daughter Katherine Dean ??)

His Father's Name

Leach

His Mother's Maiden Name

Mother - (Mrs) Elizabeth (? Leach ?)

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1585?		Somersetshire?	England	She's executrix she	
Death			1674	Salem (Rial side)			held some of the real estate	
Buried				New Ballist St. in Beverly	Essex Co MA		to John Dodge to pay debt still	
Occupation	Military						Church	Paritan
Places Lived	(An earliest list of members 1st Church Salem)							
Other Husbands								

(During a 1637 land division, the Leaches' allotment was based on a family of 5. Robert married by then)

Her Father's Name

(Unknown, maybe Leach?)

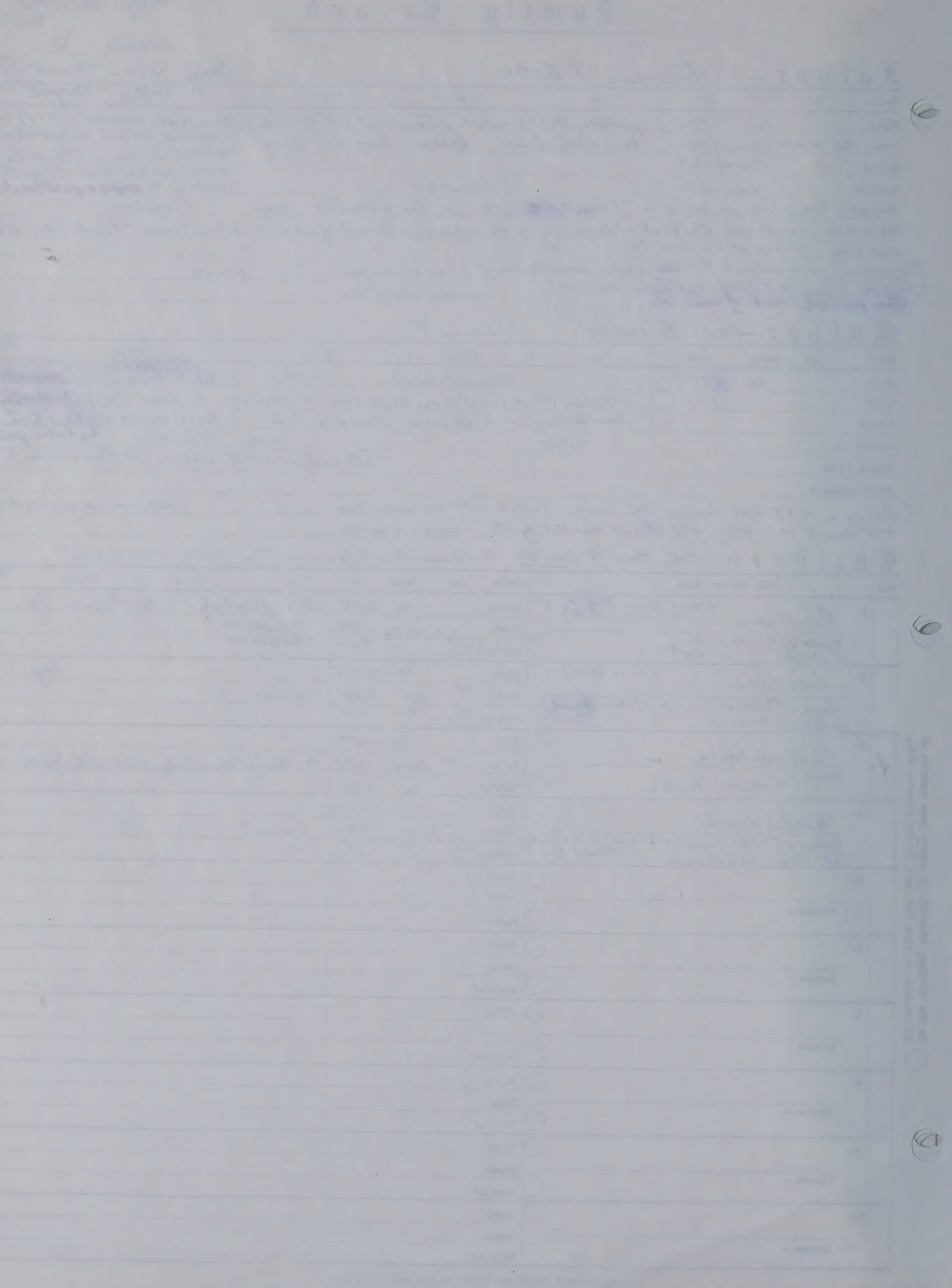
Her Mother's Maiden Name

Children only these 4 proven children. This differs from the early genealogies!

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Robert Leach (4 or 5 sons #1 & 2)	Birth		ca	1605	Ash-Mantock?	Somersetshire	Eng.	
	Spouse - (1) Miriam or Mary (2) Alice (-1697)	Death	22	May	1658	Manchester?			
		Married			163-	Charleston?			
2.	John Leach (11 children)	Birth		ca	1610?			Eng.	
	Spouse - (1) Sarah Conant ?? dau Roger? (2) Sarah Waldron	Death	inv.	Dec	1658	Salem?			
		Married		ca	1648				
3.	Richard Leach	Birth		ca	1618				
	Spouse - Sarah Fuller	Death	9	May	1687	The family homestead, Rial-side	Salem	MA	
		Married		ca	1646				
4.	Rachel Leach	Birth		ca	1620?				
	Spouse - (1) John St. May (1616-1661) 6 children (2) Thomas Goldthwaite	Death		living	1683	Salem?			
		Married		by	1641				
5.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
6.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
7.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
8.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
9.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
10.		Birth							
		Death							

Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information - then list each on the reverse side.



Father - (Captain) Richard LEACH

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1678	? Ash-Mantock, Somersetshire,		England	App't Lt of militia 1675 (R-P War) +	
Death	9	May	1687	Leach Farm in Rial (Royal) Side		Mass.	Captain in 1677.	
Buried				Salem (near Beverly)				
Married		ca	1646?	Salem		Mass Bay Colony		
Occupation	Yeoman - grant of land 1639; Yeoman 1645 Military King Philip's War 1675/6 Church Puritan - mem 1st Church Salem by							
Places Lived	Through they had various lots & grants, inherited and lived his parents' homestead farm (see map)							
Other Wives	no							

His Father's Name Lawrence Leach

His Mother's Maiden Name Elizabeth

Mother - Sarah FULLER

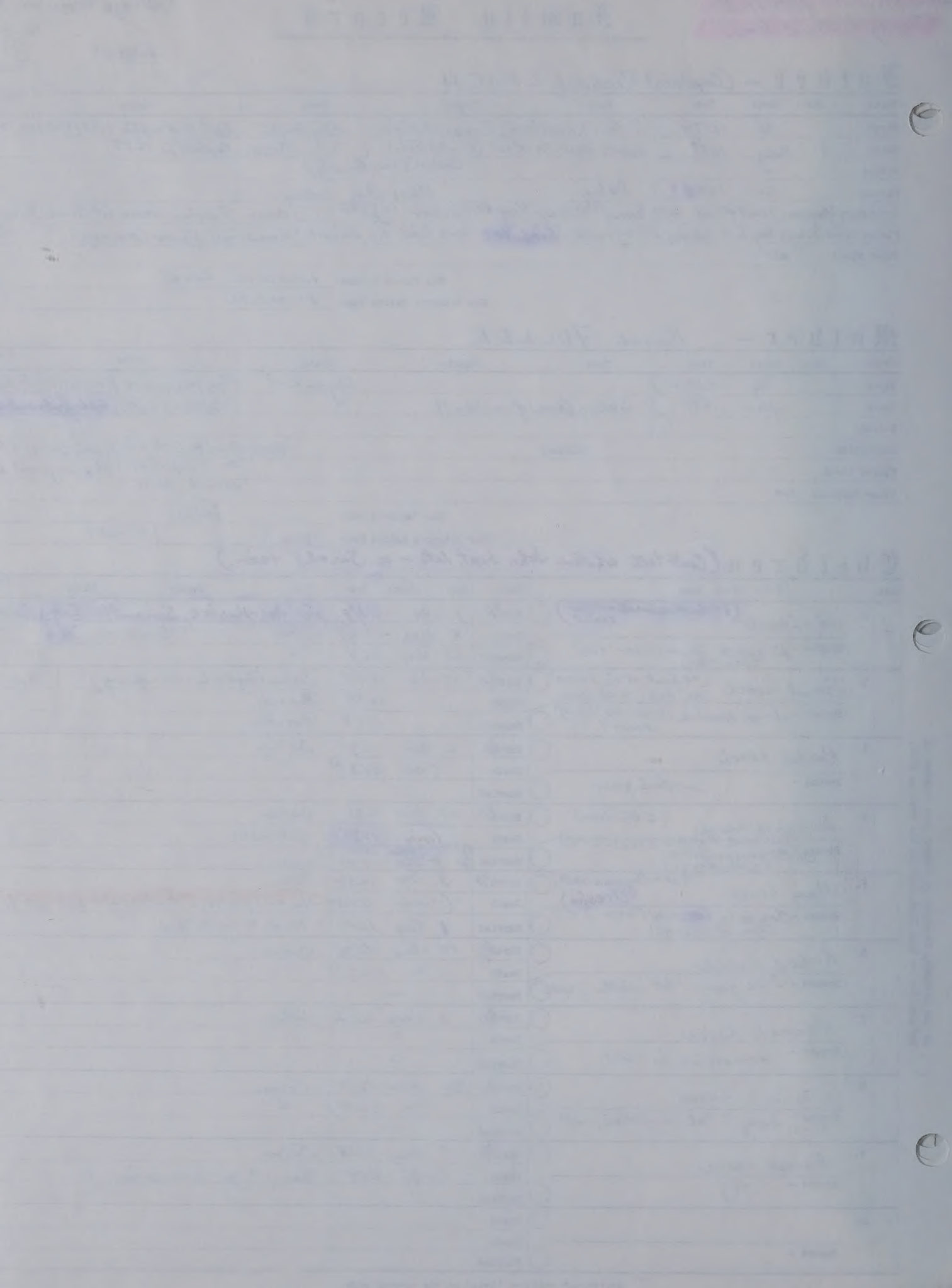
Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1627/8?			England?	They received a 5-acre lot in 1648	
Death		after	1681	Salem (home of son John?)			Mother's will, acted as executor	
Buried								
Occupation	Military Church Admitted to 1st Church Salem (Puritan)							
Places Lived	on 1 Sep 1648 - then pregnant with second child?							
Other Husbands	no							

Her Father's Name Fuller

Her Mother's Maiden Name Anne () d 1687

Children (Can't tell whether John bapt. late - or Sarah's twin)

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
+	1. John Leach (3 (born ca 1646 + 1648 twin?))	Birth	3	Sep	1648	Salem-Mantock, Salem	Mass Bay Colony		
	Spouse - Elizabeth Flint (1650-1720) (John's twin)	Death	5	Mar	1717/8	Salem	Essex	MA	
		Married	22	May	1667	"			
	2. Sarah Leach (as first of his wives she had 4 children)	Birth	19	Nov	1648	Salem (Royal side - later Beverly)		MA	
	Spouse - Joseph Herrick (1645-1718) son of Henry	Death			1674	Beverly			
		Married			1665	Beverly			
	3. Rachel Leach	Birth	6	Apr	1651	Salem			
	Spouse -	Death			(ca 1665?)	"			
		Married							
	4. Elizabeth Leach (6 children)	Birth	27	Nov	1653	Salem			
	Spouse - Benjamin Putnam (1653-1676) (son of Henry)	Death			1730	Colchester		CT	
		Married	5	Sep	1677	Lyons			
	5. Mary Leach (son Benjamin 1681)	Birth	3	Sep	1654	Salem			
	Spouse - Benjamin Weston (1645-) (son of Edward)	Death			(living 1692)	She was accused of witchcraft but not tried.			
		Married	1	Aug	1680	- lived on Lyons MA			
	6. Richard Leach	Birth	15	Jan	1656	Salem			
	Spouse - Died young? not in father's will	Death			(ca 1665?)	"			
		Married							
	7. Hannah Leach	Birth	2	June	1662	Salem			
	Spouse - Unmarried in 1685	Death			?	"			
		Married			?				
	8. (Child) Leach	Birth	29	Mar	1665	Salem			
	Spouse - Baby? not in father's will	Death			(ca 1665?)	"			
		Married							
	9. Rachel Leach	Birth	7	May	1668	Salem			
	Spouse - (?)	Death			(living 1685 - then 17 yo - unmarried)				
		Married							
	10.	Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							



Father (Sgt) John LEACH

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1648	Salem Riel Side		Mass. Bay Colony	(Op after his mother joined the 1st church of Salem)	
Death	3	Sep	1648	Salem Beverly	Essex	Massachusetts		
Buried	5	Mar	1712/8					
Married	22	May	1667	First Church - Salem	Essex	Mass Bay Col		
Occupation	Yeoman			Military Soldier R-P War *		Church	Pavitan	
Places Lived	His grand-uncle John Leach left his estate to him in 1659, inventoried at f 33.12.10. He was exec. of his father.							
Other Wives	est. & inherited the estate at Riel Side in Beverly - see							
+ Daniel Henshman's Co. at Philip Cart's 11/1/1675 + see text				His Father's Name		(Capt) Richard Leach		
+ Samuel Masley's Co. 12/10/1675 + 12/28/1675-6 "see this form"				His Mother's Maiden Name		Sarah Tallen		

Mother - Elizebeth FLINT

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	30	Jan	1650	Salem		Mass. Bay Colony		
Death	8	Feb	1719/20	Salem/Beverly	Essex	Massachusetts		
Buried								
Occupation				Military		Church		
Places Lived								
Other Husbands								

For Children of Joshua and Elizebeth (Leach) Rea;
see Rea Family

Her Father's Name Thomas Flint
Her Mother's Maiden Name Ann

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
+	1. Elizabeth Leach (6 children)	Birth	1	Dec	1668	Salem Riel Side			
	Spouse - Joshua Rea (1664-1710)	Death	2	Mar	1716	Salem			
		Married		Oct	1683	"			
	2. Sarah Leach (10 ch)	Birth	31	Aug	1673				
	Spouse - Samuel Herrick (1670-1743)	Death		after 1718		Beverly			
		Married	25	Mar	1690/1				
	3. Samuel Leach	Birth	28	Apr	1677				
	Spouse - Ginger Porter (1679-1706) (3 ch) (see)	Death			1731-2				
	Hersbach Rea (Josh's cousin) (d 1716)	Married	①	25	Sep	1688			
	② Abigail Baker (d 1726)	"	②		1710				
	③ Abigail Raymond (d after 1732)	"	③		1719				
		Married	④		1729				
	4. Hannah Leach (4 ch)	Birth	31	Aug	1679				
	Spouse - Roger Preston (1709-1742)	Death			1753				
		Married			1708				
	5. Abigail Leach (4 ch)	Birth	19	Jan	1682/3				
	Spouse - ① John Ganson	Death			17				
	② Thomas Flint, a cousin (1678-1741)	Married	①		1705				
	6. Mary Leach (7 ch)	Birth	3	Mar	1684/5				
	Spouse - John Putnam (1684-1753)	Death		after	1729				
		Married			1709				
	7. Lydia Leach (9 ch)	Birth	12	Jan	1690/1				
	Spouse - Benjamin Houlton (1690-1717)	Death		before	1736				
		Married			1708				
	8. Ruth Leach	Birth	31	Mar	1692				
	Spouse - Ambrose Hutchinson (1684-1757)	Death		after	1757	Danvers			
		Married	(1st)	7	Jan	1708/9			
		Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information -- then list each on the reverse side.

Family Record

(Dodge Ancestors)
Family No.

Father - () FULLER

Fuller ()
(with Leach) Surname

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1575/80?			England?		
Death								
Buried								
Married								
Occupation				Military			Church	Puritan?
Places Lived								
Other Wives								

His Father's Name Fuller

His Mother's Maiden Name

Mother - Anne ()

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1583			England	Son-in-law Richard Leach	
Death	Aug. 25	June	1662	Salem		Mass. Bay Colony	bequeathed 5 acres of land for	
Buried		prova					burial expense & admin of est.	
Occupation				Military			Church	Puritan?
Places Lived				Old New England.			She left bequests to John & Sarah Leach; and to Bethia Farrow - nothing else	
Other Husbands							discovered about this lady - our many great-grandmother.	

Her Father's Name

Her Mother's Maiden Name

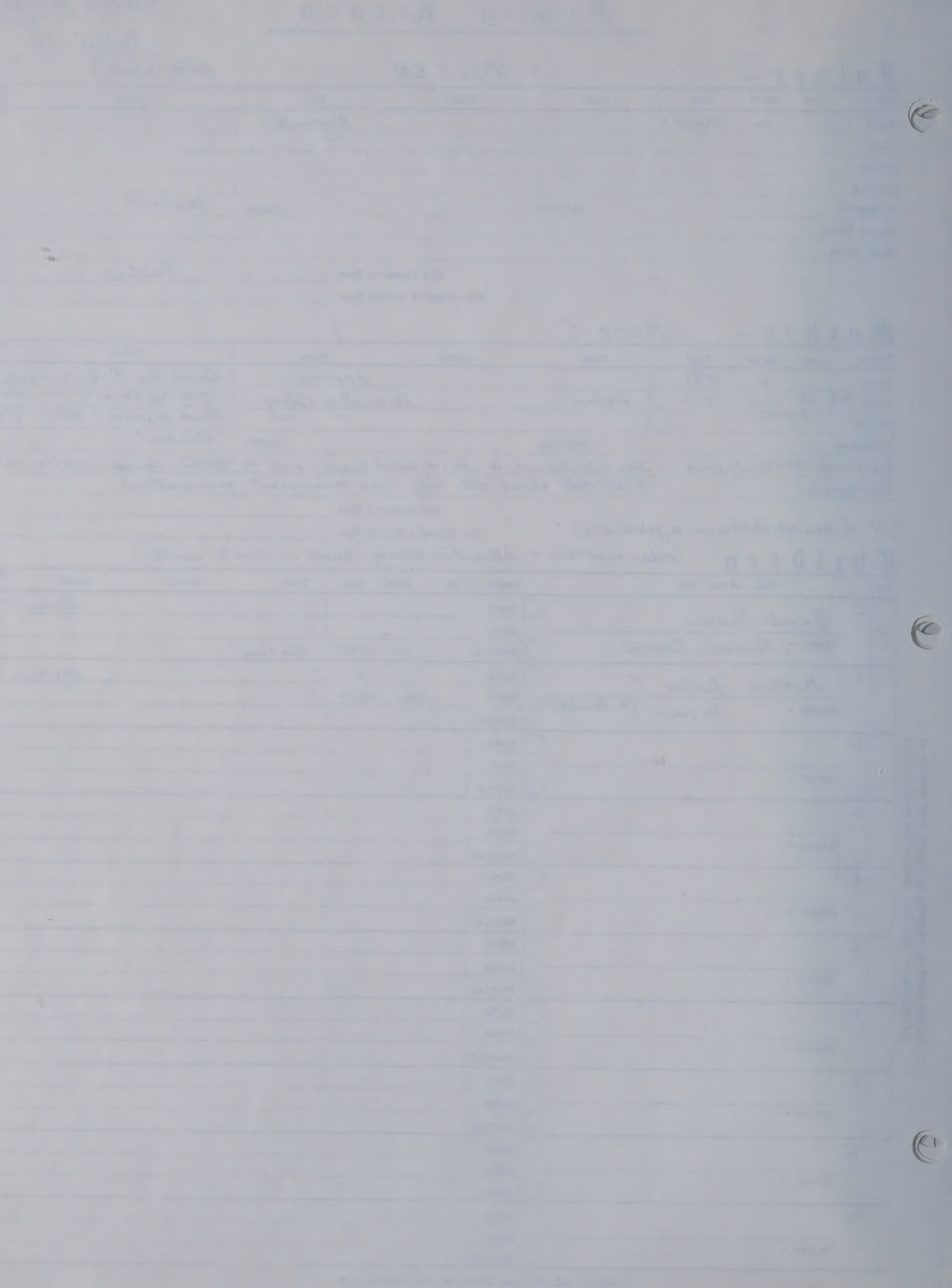
(It is possible Bethia was a grandchild)

Children (order uncertain - information scanty - based on Anne's will)

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Sarah Fuller	Birth						England?	
	Spouse - Richard Leach	Married			ca 1646?	Salem?			
2.	Bethia Fuller?	Birth			16			England?	
	Spouse - Farrow (a female?)	Married			after 1662				
3.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Married							
4.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Married							
5.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Married							
6.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Married							
7.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Married							
8.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Married							
9.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Married							
10.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Married							

Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information -- then list each on the reverse side.



BIBLIOGRAPHIC NOTE: In 1924 F. Phelps Leach published a genealogy of this family which claimed ten children for the immigrant [Lawrence Leach of Salem, Massachusetts and some of his Descendants (East Highgate, Vermont, 1924)]. This author inserted into the family of Lawrence Leach many persons of the same surname from all parts of New England (and even from old England) who could not have been his children. The Robert Leach presented in this volume as son of Lawrence is a chimaera, created by mixing records for Robert Leach of Charlestown and Robert Leach of Manchester, the latter of whom was the son of the immigrant.

LAWRENCE LEACH

ORIGIN: Unknown

MIGRATION: 1629

FIRST RESIDENCE: Salem

CHURCH MEMBERSHIP: In the list of Salem Church members compiled late in 1636 [SchR 5].

FREEMAN: Requested 19 October 1630 and admitted 18 May 1631 [MBCR 1:80, 366].

EDUCATION: His inventory included "a Bible with another book" valued at 5s.

OFFICES: Jury, trial of Walter Palmer in the death of Austin Bratcher, 9 November 1630 [MBCR 1:81].

Essex grand jury, 25 January 1641 [EQC 1:33]. Petit jury, 27 December 1642 [EQC 1:44]. Jury foreman, January 1637/8, March 1638, 30 December 1645 [EQC 1:7, 89]. Jury, 27 September 1636, 27 December 1636, 28 March 1637, 27 March 1638, 26 June 1638, 25 December 1638, 31 December 1639, 29 December 1640 [EQC 1:3-5, 7, 8, 10, 14, 24].

Salem selectman 1636-40, 1642 [STR 1:34, 44, 77, 79, 80, 82-95, 105, 113].

ESTATE: He received one hundred acres in the freeman's land at Salem in 1636 [STR 1:19, 27]. He was granted three-quarters of an acre of marsh on 25 December 1637, with a household of five [STR 1:103].

One hundred acres of upland (presumably the same as that noted in the paragraph above) and six acres of marsh were laid out to Lawrence Leach on 17 February 1636[7] [STR 1:37]. He was granted ten acres of meadow on 9 December 1639 and fifteen more acres of meadow on 7 May 1638 [STR 1:93, 96].

On 18 March 1657[78] Lawrence Leach entered a caution for Richard Leach "who hath given him by his father Larrance Leach his farm on Riall side that joineth to Jacob Barney, both upland and salt marsh, only reserving for his particular use so much as is needful during his & his wife's lifetime" [ELR 1:37].

1162

The Great Migration Begins

Vol II (1975)

On about 7 September 1665, but not brought for acknowledgment until 28 March 1680, Samuel Friend of Manchester sold a mill and mill house at Bass River, with two acres of land and twenty acres a little distance off on Royal's Neck side "there being no bill of sale made till now," the original purchaser being Laurance Leach of Salem "now deceased," and the sale was confirmed to "John Leach, son unto Lawrance Leach aforesaid" [ELR 5:109-10].

The "nuncupative will of Lawrence Leach of Salem" was proved 25 June 1662: "Larance Leach aged 85 years or thereabouts being perfect in memory near a year before his death expressed himself unto us whose names are hereunder written in the disposing of that which he had, we being urgent with him to make his will his expressions to us was this: First he said that he did owe thirty pounds for the mill and his will was that his wife should pay his debts and when his debts were paid then she should take all he had. John Porter, John Bacheller" [EQC 2:428; ELR 2:46; EPR 1:388-89].

The inventory of "Lawrence Leach of Salem" [undated] totalled £138 14s. 8d., including real estate valued at £100: "the house, with two acres of land with the orchard, being part of the said two acres," £30; "a mill," £40; "20 acres of land not improved on Ryall side," £10; and "fifteen acres of meadow bought of Mr. Downing," £20 [EQC 2:429; EPR 1:389].

On 12 April 1671 Elizabeth Leach Sr. of Salem, widow, deeded the mill or mills with the housing, land & orchard "sold by my son John Leach" to John Dodge of Beverly [ELR 3:111].

On 22 January 1670[1] Elizabeth Leach of Salem, widow, executrix to the estate of Laurence Leach, deceased, sold for "£14 to be paid unto my daughter Rachel Golthwright" a share of fifteen acres of meadow in the great fresh meadow, five acres excepted, to Richard Leach of Salem [ELR 6:44].

BIRTH: About 1583 (estimated by splitting the difference between his age as stated in his nuncupative will and the year of birth that would result from assuming he was twenty-five when he married).

DEATH: By 25 June 1662 (probate of will).

MARRIAGE: By 1636 (and by about 1615 if she was the mother of all his children) Elizabeth _____, who survived him. "Elizabeth Leech" was in the list of Salem church members compiled in late 1636 [SchR 6].

CHILDREN:

- i ROBERT, b. about 1615 (deposed aged about 58 years, 1 September 1673 [EQC 5:215]): one of the two sons of Lawrence Leach granted land in 1639; evidently he who died Manchester, intestate, leaving a relict [perhaps Alice] and two sons before June, 1674 [EQC 5:364-5].

- ii JOHN, b. say 1617, one of the two sons of Lawrence Leach granted land in 1639. There being several men named John Leach, this man's career is presently unclear.
- ✓ iii RICHARD, b. about 1619 (deposed aged about fifty years, March 1669 [EQC 4:111]; deposed aged "about sixty-seven years" 4 February 1684/5 [ELR 9:255]); m. by about 1645 Sarah Fuller, daughter of widow Anne Fuller (in her nuncupative will, probably made early in 1662, "Anne Fuller, widow," bequeathed most of her estate to "her son Richard Leach" and a cow to "John Leach & Sara Leach" [EPR 1:389]).
- iv RACHEL, b. say 1622; m. (1) by about 1642 John Sibley of Manchester, who d. 1661 leaving "9 fatherless children ... the eldest daughter 19 years old" [EPR 1:348]; m. (2) after 1661 and by 1670 THOMAS GOLDTHWAIT [ELR 6:44].

ASSOCIATIONS: "John Leech, the brother of Lawrence Leech," was received for an inhabitant by Salem on 23 January 1636/7 [STR 1:33].

On 27 August 1644 "Richard Leech" was charged with having "received a pig of John Burrage, servant to Jno. Porter and himself, and his uncle Jno. Leech concealed it, not having it cried, until three months later," as a result of which Richard Leach and John Leach were fined twenty shillings apiece [EQC 1:69].

In his nuncupative will, taken by Elizabeth Buxton and Mary Felton sometime in 1658, John Leach Sr. of Salem gave everything he had to John Leach. "At another time having further conference about the disposing of his estate unto the said John Leach, we told him there were several John Leaches [and] he should do well to express which of them, he said John Leach the son of Richard Leach" [EPR 1:288].

COMMENTS: In the first letter of instruction to John Endicott, dated 17 April 1629, Governor Craddock had this to say of Leach: "We desire you to take notice of one Lawrence Leach, whom we have found a careful and painful man, and we doubt not but he will continue his diligence let him have deserving respect" [MBCR 1:394].

A mature adult when he arrived, Lawrence Leach was, true to Craddock's description, painstakingly diligent. His leadership in Salem was quietly competent. Usually on the jury rather than in front of it, he was only once brought to task, being one of those who kept his cattle on Salem common and was fined with many others for it at December Term 1642 [EQC 1:49]. He appraised the estate of Samuel Smith on 18 November 1642 and retired from public service shortly thereafter [EQC 1:47].

On 15 May 1639 "Lawrence Leach's two sons" were granted seventy acres in Salem [STR 1:88].

Capl.

(1924)

Aug 1925

LAWRENCE LEACH

OF

SALEM, MASSACHUSETTS

AND SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS

By F. PHELPS LEACH

"Historie is the memorie of time, the life of the dead,
and the happinesse of the lyvinge."—*Captaine John Smith.*

"A people which takes no pride in the achievements of
remote ancestors, will never achieve anything worthy to
be remembered with pride by remote descendants."
—*Macaulay.*

VOL. I.

Published by F. PHELPS LEACH
East Highgate, Vermont

GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY
OF THE CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST
OF LATTER-DAY SAINTS

8495

Printed by
THE MESSENGER PRESS
St. Albans, Vermont
1924

DATE MICROFILMED
6 May 1982
ITEM # 2
PROJECT and
ROLL #
XL1B7-102 1033861
1775
G.S.
CALL #

US/CAN
929.273
L 465
Vol. 1



BEATRICE JOSIE¹⁰ LEACH



HAZEL MAY¹⁰ LEACH



EDITH EMMA¹⁰ LEACH

DAUGHTERS OF 738 F. PHELPS⁹ LEACH
 GRAND-DAUGHTERS OF 656 HORACE BRAYTON⁸ AND CAROLINE A.¹⁰ (PHELPS) LEACH
 GREAT-GRAND-DAUGHTERS OF 4192 NASH DAVID⁹ AND ELIZABETH⁹ (HUNGERFORD) PHELPS

LAWRENCE LEACH OF SALEM, MASS.,

and

SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS

By F. PHELPS LEACH of East Highgate, Vt.

The immigrant ancestor in New England of the family which forms the subject of this article was sent over to Salem by the Mass. Bay Co., in 1629 (Suff., De., 1). In Edwin M. Stone's early history of Beverly, on page 29 I find the following paragraph: "June 24, 1662, Lawrence Leach died, aged 82. He held various offices in Salem. The usefulness of his life gained respect for his memory." His nunc will probated 25 (4) 1662; bequeathed all to his wife Elizabeth, and administration was granted to her. She died about 1674.

When Lawrence Leach was about leaving Old England for New England, Gov. Craddock wrote from Gravesend, England under date of 17 Apr. 1629, a long letter concerning the affairs of the new colony, to Gov. John Endicott of the Mass. Bay Colony, in which letter I find the following paragraph:

"We desire you to take notice of one Lawrence Leach, whom we have found a careful and painful man, and we doubt not, he will continue his diligence. Let him have deserving respect."

His life in America would seem to have fully justified the confidence reposed in him by Gov. Craddock, as he was chosen 31 Dec. 1638, one of the seven men to manage the public affairs of Salem; an office which he held for years, and had among his colleagues Gov. John Endicott, William Hawthorne, Roger Conant, John Woodbury and John Balch.

He was proposed for a freeman at Salem, in 1630, and was sworn 18 May, 1630; was one of the twelve jurymen which in Boston, in 1630, served on the trial of the first capital case that was heard in Massachusetts.

Lawrence Leach came from England to Salem, Mass., in the "fleet" with Rev. Francis Higginson, the first minister sent out by the Company, to superintend the spiritual affairs of the settlement. "The Talbot", which was probably the first vessel that ever entered Manchester Harbor, dropped anchor there 27 June, 1629, and the Rev. Francis Higginson, wrote in his journal:

"June 27, 1629—Saturday evening we had a westerly wind, which brought us, between five and six o'clock to a fyne and sweet harbor, seven miles from the head of Cape Ann (in this harbor twentie ships may lie and easily ride therein), where there was an island near, whither 4 of our men went with a boat, and brought back ripe strawberries, gooseberries, and sweet

single roses. Monday, 29th as we passed along to Naim Keake, it was wonderful to behold so many islands replenished with thicke woods, and high trees, and many fayere green pastures."

Lawrence Leach was one of the founders of the church at Salem, of which he was a prominent member. He engaged in farming and milling, at Rial-side. His mills were so important that a way was laid out to them, in 1657, from the meeting house at Cape Ann side and other adjacent towns caused roads to be opened to them. (Freeman). He also had an iron foundry, which was the first in the colonies. Pope's "Pioneers of Massachusetts" says: "Mr. John Leach, brother of Lawrence, was occupied at the iron works."

This family is said to have descended from John DeLeche, surgeon to King Edward III of England. The coat of arms has upon it three crowns, the significance of which is, that upon one occasion while the kings of France and Scotland were prisoners of King Edward, the three kings dined at the house of the surgeon, and as a token of the incident, Edward handed Leche three crowns. Afterwards, when the king granted him a large estate, three crowns were placed on his arms.

The spelling of the surname has varied at different times and in different branches of the family. Lawrence Leach, the immigrant ancestor in New England, and his descendants at Salem used the form Leach. Record's (the original entries, in the State House at Boston, of the various wars spells the name Leah, Leatch, Lecch, Lech, Leech, Leetch, Lirtch, Lish and Leach, although they are all descendants of the same Salem line.

(See records of Salem, Beverly and Manchester)

2ND GENERATION

Lawrence¹ and Elizabeth, probably had the following children:

2. i. Robert,² b. 1605.
- ii. Clement, b. in England; was m. and lived in England when his parents came to America.
3. iii. John.
- iv. Margaret, b. 1613; came on the "Susan & Ellen", 1635.
- v. Ambrose, b. 1616; mentioned in Pope's Pioneers of Mass., as "a carpenter Sudbury proprietor; contracted in 1641, to build a bridge over the river was one of the securities for Charles Dobson at Boston, 6 (9) 1649. Resided at Narragansett, 9 Nov. 1662, when he sold land at Boston".
- Ambrose, Boston, 1648, is spoken of in Hutch. Coll., 298, and in 1663 was concerned in Narragansett, or the king's province.
- Wyman's "Charlestown, Mass., Gen.", says: "Ambrose, carpenter age 37, 1653; money was paid him." (constable's account.)
- ✓ 4. vi. Richard, b. 1618.
- vii. Edmund, was in New Haven, Ct., 1647-9.
- viii. Rachel,
5. ix. James, b. 1633
6. x. Giles, b. 1632, at Salem, Mass.

2. ROBERT² LEACH (*Lawrence 1*), died 22 May, 1688, age 83. His will was proved 14 June, 1688.

He married twice (I think): first Mary or Miriam.....

who was admitted to the church 9 Sept. 1639, and died 11 Feb. 1648; and secondly Alice....., who married second Robert Elwell, of Gloucester, by whom she had several daughters; her will is dated 27 Mar. 1691.

Felt gives him grant of land at Salem 1637; and the freeman of 1644; he was one of the founders of Manchester, settled there in 1636; and was Town Clerk until 1648; Selectman from 1658 to 1661, and again in 1680.

Rev. D. F. Lamson's History of Manchester contains a good map of the estate's of his son's Robert & Samuel. He also owned estate's in Salem, and Charlestown at the time of his death.

Children:

- i. Mary,³
- ii. Elizabeth,.....; m. John Fosket.
- iii. Sarah.
- iv. Bethiah.
- v. Abigail,.....; m. 10 Dec. 1682, at Manchester, John Day, b. 28 April. 1657; and was living in 1715. He was a soldier in King Philip's War, and received grant of land at Kettle Cove for his services; son of Anthony and Susanna Day who was at Gloucester 1645.
7. vi. Robert, b. at Manchester, 1650.
8. vii. Samuel, b. at Manchester, 1655.
3. JOHN² LEACH (*Lawrence 1*), came from England to Salem, Mass., in 1629, (d. 1659) in the "fleet" with Rev. Francis Higginson.

He married first, before 1648, Sarah, daughter of Roger Conant, and secondly Sarah, daughter of John Waldron; she married second Timothy Goodwin.

He had a grant of land at Salem in 1637, near that of his brother Richard; he also appears on a list of grantees and claimants of Narragansett, No. 5 New Bedford etc., Boston, "soldier grantee John Leach; claimant, John's son John". (Bodges King Philip's War, page 431).

Roger Conant emigrated to Plymouth in 1623, where he remained until 1625, when in company with Rev. Mr. Lyford, he removed to Nantasket. He remained there but a short time, and proceeded to Cape Ann, where he was invested with the superintendence of the Dorchester Co., engaged in the fishery's and agricultural pursuits, being in fact the first Governor in the Colony of Mass. Bay, though not the Chief Magistrate of a Province.

Children, all born at Salem, and baptized at first church;

- i. John,³ bapt. 8 Sept. 1648.
9. ii. John, bapt. 19 Nov. 1648.
(twins)
- iii. Sarah, bapt. Nov. 1648.
- iv. Rachel, bapt. 6 Apr. 1651.
- v. Sarah, bapt. 6 June, 1652.
- vi. Elizabeth, bapt. 27 Nov. 1653.
- vii. Mary, bapt. 3 Sept. 1654; m. 2 Mar. 1681, Thomas Field.
- viii. Richard, bapt. 15 June, 1656; Probably d. in King Philip's War. See "Richard Salem, Essex Regt., Major Daniel Dennison, Lieut. Samuel Appleton". (Bodge.)

- ix. Remember, bapt. 3 Nov. 1661.
- x. Hannah, bapt. 3 Nov. 1661.
- xi. William. Did he d. unm., at Marblehead?

- ✓ 4. RICHARD² LEACH (*Lawrence*¹), of Salem, Mass., born in 1618, died at Rial-side (Leach farm), 9 May, 1687; will was probated 25 Nov. 1687; bequeathed to wife Sarah; son John; daughters Elizabeth, wife of Benjamin Collins; Mary, wife of Benjamin Ireson, Hannah & Rachel; Joseph, Sarah and John Herrick, children of daughter Sarah; and young Pasho Foote, now with him.

His wife Sarah, daughter of Amme Fuller was admitted to the first church at Salem, 1 Sept. 1648. ✓

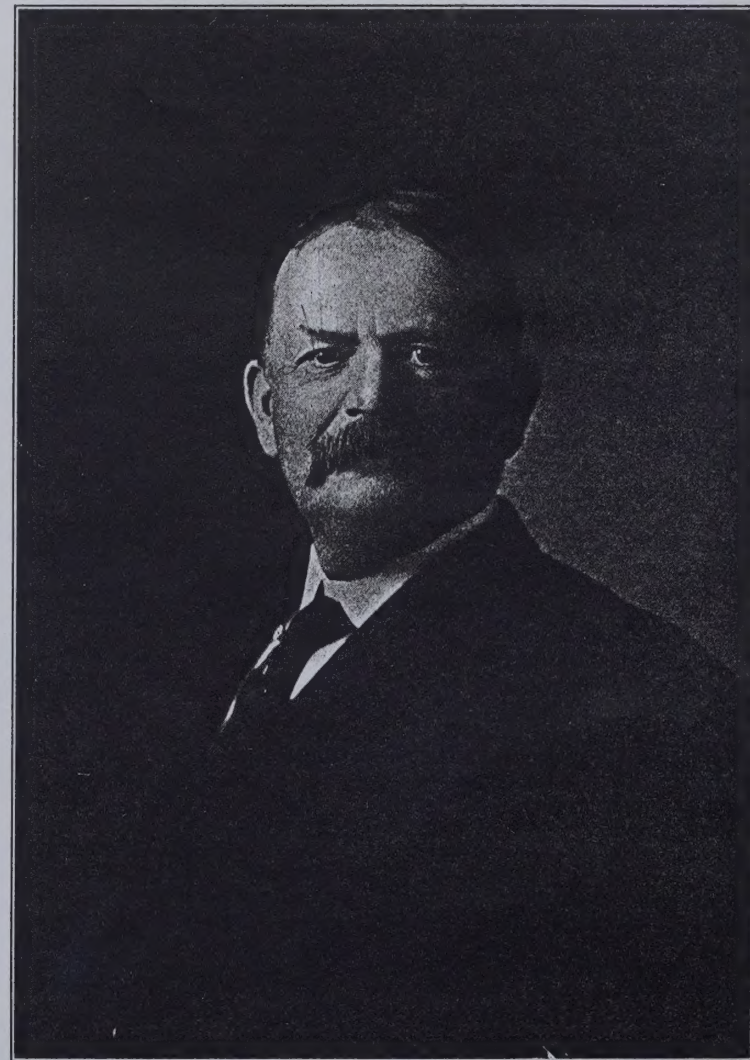
He had a grant of land at Salem, near that of his brother John, in 1639; was a member of the first church 1648; freeman, 1665; Lieut., 1675, and Captain two years later of the militia and his Lieut, was Nathaniel Putnam, grandfather of Samuel and of Daniel who graduated at Harvard College, 1687. Samuel and Daniel were cousins of General Israel and Brig. Gen. Rufus Putnam, of Revolutionary fame.

Children all born at Rial-side (Leach farm), and baptized at first church of Salem:

- ✓ 10. i. John,² bapt. 3 July, 1648.
 ii. Rachel, bapt. 6 Feb. 1651.
 11. iii. Sarah, bapt. 6 Apr. 1652.
 iv. Elizabeth, bapt. 27 Sept. 1653; m. 19 Sept. 1677, Benjamin Collins, son of Henry Collins who came on the ship "Abigail", 1635; they settled at Lynn.
 v. Mary, bapt. 3 July, 1654; m. 1 Aug. 1680, Benjamin Ireson, son of Edmond Ireson who came on the "Abigail," 1635. She was accused of witchcraft in 1692 but never tried; residence at Lynn, Mass.
 vi. Richard, bapt. 15 Apr. 1656.
 vii. Hannah, bapt. 3 Sept. 1661.

5. JAMES² LEACH (*Lawrence*¹), weaver at Great Island, Portsmouth, N. H., was probably born at Salem, Mass. His will dated 14 Jan. 1696, was proved 30 June, 1697. He married twice: first Jane, daughter of Thomas and Agnes Turpin; secondly Jane, widow of Walter Michemor, and probably daughter of Alexander Bachiler merchant of Portsmouth, and Ann his wife. Mrs. Bachiler's will dated 5 Nov. 1660, and probated 26 June, 1661, bequeath's to James Leach, his wife and 4 children; probably children by second marriage.

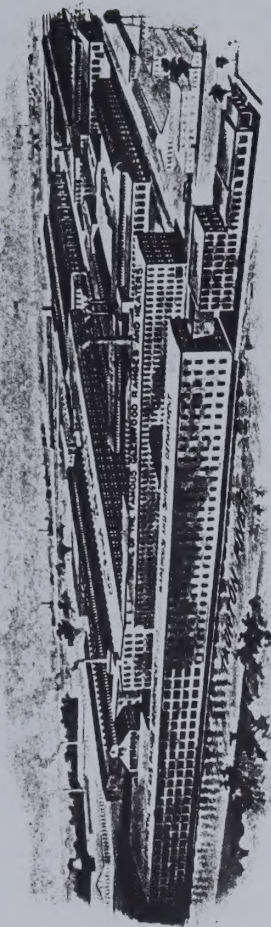
Mr. Leach was a weaver at Great Island, Portsmouth. He owned the Island now called Leach Island. Grand Juryman, 1654-5; took oath of allegiance and was sworn Constable 27 June, 1656; and was Tythingman in 1678. 26 July, 1660, he sued Richard Cummings (former partner of Walter Michemor), for the profits of a voyage about 11 years since. 13 Dec. 1699,



733 EDWARD GILES² LEACH, A. B., LL. B.

Governor's Council, New Hampshire, 1905-1906.
 County Solicitor, Merrimack County, 1880-1884.
 City Solicitor, Franklin, N. H., 1894-1925, inclusive.
 Mayor, Franklin, N. H., 1918-1919.
 Representative, New Hampshire Legislature, 1893-1895.
 Senator, New Hampshire Legislature, 1900-1902.
 President, Manufacturers & Merchants Insurance Co. since 1884.

GLENWOOD RANGE COMPANY



Plant and Main Office at Taunton, Mass.
 "Robert M. Leach¹⁰, Treasurer. Mr. and Mrs. Leach own
 one-half of the Glenwood Factory and Plant"

his sons James and John, sold to George Huntress, the land which was granted to him by the town of Portsmouth.

Children (perhaps others:)

12. ii. Thomas,³ b. 1652; d. 1732.
13. ii. James, b. 1654; d. 12 Sept. 1726. Pew occupant 1693.
- iii. Zachariah, Pew Occupant 1693.
- iv. John, conveyed land to George Huntress 13 Dec. 1699.
- v. Joseph, probably owned the Barrett right in Kennebunkport, and sold it to Thomas Perkins in 1719.
14. vi. Nathaniel, d. 18 Jan. 1759.

6. GILES² LEACH (*Lawrence 1*), of West Bridgewater, Mass., born at Salem 1632, was living 1705. He married at Weymouth, Mass., 20 Jan. 1656-7, Anne Nokes who was living at Braintree, with Dea. Bass' family at the time of their marriage.

He owned sixteen acres of land at Weymouth in 1663, moved to and settled in Bridgewater in 1664, where he became entitled, by purchase, to one of the fifty-six shares of the thousands of acres of land bought in 1645 of the old Indian chief, Massasoit (King Philip's father), by Capt. Miles Standish, Samuel Nash and Constant Southworth, for the use of the fifty-six original proprietors.

In the first mention of him in the Bridgewater records he is styled "Goodman", which fact suggests that he was then a prominent and esteemed member of the Bridgewater church, and head man of the 4th seat by the pulpit.

His residence was in the immediate vicinity of Satucket Pond, the haunt of King Philip and his tribe, and he was on friendly terms with them.

Mitchell's History of Bridgewater gives the following Children and says: "perhaps they had others".

15. i. Sarah,³ b. at Weymouth, 1656-7.
- ii. Elizabeth, b. at Weymouth, 1662; m. John Emerson, 1693.
16. iii. Samuel, b. at Weymouth, in 1662.
17. iv. David, b. at West Bridgewater, Mass.
18. v. John, b. at West Bridgewater, in 1665.
19. vi. Ebenezer, b. at West Bridgewater, 1672.
20. vii. Benjamin, b. at West Bridgewater.

3RD GENERATION

7. ROBERT³ LEACH (*Robert² Lawrence¹*), of Manchester, Mass., born there 1650, died there in 1717. He married twice: first in 1678, Sarah.....; secondly in 1684, Hannah.....;

He was a soldier in King Philip's War (Bodge p. 157-139); Selectman 1687, 88, 91, 94, 96, 98, 1700, 1701, 2, 3, 4, and 1705. "He and his nephew Samuel were on a committee chosen 5 Dec. 1715 to look out for a minister to preach at Manchester. As the result of this action, Rev. Ames Cheever, a grandson of the celebrated Ezekiel Cheever, was ordained 4 Oct. 1716. The church was organized on 7 Nov., of the same year".

During his term of office, as selectman in 1700, for £3 19s., a deed of the town of Manchester was obtained from the Indians (Acknowledged at Salem 18 Dec. 1700).

Children by first wife, born at Manchester:

21. i. Sarah,⁴ b. 1680.
22. ii. Robert, b. 1682-3.

Children by second wife, born at Manchester:

- +23. iii. Hannah,⁴ b. 1685; m. No. 29.
24. iv. John, b. 1687-8.
25. v. Mary, b. 1690-1.
- vi. Elizabeth, b. 1692-3; d. 4 Oct. 1713.
26. vii. Joseph, b. 1694.
- viii. Ann, b. 23 May, 1696; m. 16 Dec. 1715, Joseph Pitman.
27. ix. Paul, b. 1698.
- x. Charles, b. 7 Oct. 1702.

8. SAMUEL¹ LEACH (*Robert,² Lawrence¹*), born at Manchester, Mass., 1655, died there 14 Oct. 1696.

He married twice: first in 1672, Arabella, daughter of John and Arabella Norman, who died in 1681; secondly, Hannah, daughter of John and Hannah (Norman) Baldwin; niece of his first wife.

He was on the committee to distribute the common land, in 1690; was Selectman in the town of Manchester in 1681, 82, 86 and 90. In the former year he and his brother Robert petitioned for relief, in favor of that town, from the expenses of supporting worship, and they "came into a church state by themselves", in 1716. He was a planter; left an estate of £695. His son Richard inherited the homestead; it was the one on which Robert² settled in 1636. After Richard's death it was inherited by his son Benjamin,⁵ and after his death, by his son Benjamin,⁶ who, in 1790, tore down the original house (built by Robert²), and in 1791 erected another a short distance from the place where it stood. In 1903 this house was moved back to the site of the old one, and remodeled by the present owner, Hon. Henry Clay⁸ Leach.

John Norman was son of Richard Norman, who was with Roger Conant at Cape Ann, and had a house at Salem before Gov. Endicott came. Richard Norman Jr. died at Marblehead and bequeathed his estate to Hannah, second wife of Samuel Leach, 1682.

Children by first wife, born at Manchester:

- i. Penlope,⁴ b. 26 Sept. 1678.
28. ii. Catherine, b. 1680.

Children by second wife, born at Manchester:

- +29. iii. Samuel, b. 1682; m. No. 23.
- iv. Hannah, b. 26 Aug. 1686; m. in 1709, Jeremiah Hibbard.
30. v. Richard, b. 1690.
- vi. Benjamin, b. 14 February 1692.

9. JOHN¹ LEACH (*John,² Lawrence¹*) born at Salem, Mass., and bapt. at first church, 19 Nov. 1648.

He married Mary... EDWARDS....;

He appears on a list of grantees and claimants of Narraganset, No. 5 New Bedford etc., Boston, "soldier grantee John Leach; claimant, John's son John". (Bodge's King Philip's War, p. 481)

Children born at Wenham, Mass.

31. i. Richard,⁴
- ii. Mary, d. 4 Apr. 1696.
- iii. Deborah, d. 24 May, 1696.
32. iv. Mercy.
33. v. Hannah.
34. vi. William.

- ✓ 10. SERGT. JOHN¹ LEACH (*Richard,² Lawrence¹*), born in 1647, at Rial-side (Leach farm); bapt. 3 July, 1648, at Salem first church; died 5 Mar. 1711.

He married 20 May, 1667 Elizabeth Flint, who died 8 Feb. 1719, daughter of Thomas and Ann Flint of Salem.

"He was in Capt. Daniel Henchman's Co., Lieut. Philip Curtis, served from 2 Nov. and was credited 30 Nov. 1675 with £1, 19s 04d; also in Capt. Samuel Mosley's Co., credited with military service under Capt. Mosley, 10 Dec. 1675 with £4, 19s, 04d, and 29 Feb. 1675-6 with £2, 4s, 00d." (Bodge's King Philip's War, pp. 55, 71, 72.)

Children born at Salem, Mass., (Rial-side).

- ✓ 35. i. Elizabeth,⁴ b. 1 Dec. 1668.
36. ii. Sarah, b. 31 Aug. 1673.
37. iii. Samuel, b. 28 Apr. 1677.
38. iv. Hannah, b. 31 Aug. 1679.
39. v. Abigail, b. 19 Jan. 1683.
40. vi. Mary, b. 3 Mar. 1685.
- vii. Lydia, b. 12 Jan. 1691; m. 13 July, 1708, Benj. Honton.
41. viii. Ruth, b. 31 Mar. 1692.

11. SARAH¹ LEACH (*Richard,² Lawrence¹*), of Salem, Mass., bapt. at first church 6 Apr. 1652; died 1674.

She married 7 Feb. 1665, Joseph Herrick, Esq., bapt. at first church 6 Aug. 1645; died at Salem, 4 Feb. 1717-18.

He married three times: secondly Mary Endicott, granddaughter of Gov. Endicott; thirdly the widow of Capt. George March. He was son of Henry and Edith (Larkin), daughter of Mr. Hugh Larkin. His father came to Salem in the fleet with Lawrence¹ Leach and became a large landed proprietor. His estate is historically known as "Cherry Hill". Joseph was one of the leading men of Salem. Upham in his history of "Salem Witchcraft," says of him: "He was a man of great

born 1629; 2 JOHN, m. Mary, daughter of Roger Conant, and was drowned in crossing the ferry to Beverly, 16 Jan. 1662; and 3. Freeborn, who went to England and never returned.

Benjamin¹ Balch had: 1. SAMUEL, b. 1651, d. 1723; 2. JOHN, b. 1654, d. 1738; 3. JOSEPH, killed at Bloody Brook; and 4. FREEBORN, b. 1660, d. 1729. Freeborn lived near Wenham pond. His first wife was a Knowlton, by whom he had: 1. FREEBORN, (who removed to Bradford), 2. BENJAMIN, and 3. MIRRIAN. His second wife was Elizabeth Fairfield, by whom he had: 4. ELIZABETH, 5. ABIGAIL, 6. TABITHA, 7. WILLIAM and 8. MARY. William, son of Freeborn and grandson of Benjamin, was minister of Bradford, b. 1704; graduated 1724; and d. 1792. He had 7 children, one of whom, William, was father of Benjamin Balch, who was living in Salem 1842.

Samuel¹ Balch, married twice: first Sarah Newmarch, 1675; secondly Martha Putnam, 1721; d. 14 Oct. 1723, aged 72. 26 Oct. 1704 he was chosen Deacon of the first church; he had 11 children, viz: 1. JOSEPH, 2. JOHN, 3. PETER, 4. MARTHA, 5. SAMUEL, 6. BENJAMIN, 7. JOHN (twins), 8. PHOEBE, 9. CORNELIUS, 10. ABIGAIL, and 11. THOMAS.

JOHN¹ BALCH, son of Deacon Samuel, b. 1654, m. 23 Dec. 1674, Hannah Denning; d. 1738. He had: ISRAEL, 2. SARAH, 3. CALEB, 4. JOSHUA, 5. DAVID, 6. ROGER, and probably 7. HANNAH. He owned a large estate in the 2nd parish.

Children (surname Balch):

- i. Martha,^s b. 9 Dec. 1706; d. in infancy.
- ii. Mercy, b. 4 Feb. 1708; m. 1729, John Lovett, Jr.
- iii. Martha, b. 2 Feb. 1712; d. 14 Aug. 1714.
- iv. Mary, b. 9 Feb. 1715; m. 1734, Myhill Woodbury.
- v. Martha, b. 9 Feb. 1715; m. 1735, William Trask.
- vi. Deborah, b. 21 Aug. 1720; m. 1743, Jonathan¹ Dodge.
- vii. Benjamin, b. 22 Sept. 1725; d. 14 Aug. 1736.

33. HANNAH¹ LEACH (*John,^s John,^s Lawrence¹*), of Reading, Mass., born at Wenham. She married 22 Dec. 1702, Samuel Walton of Reading, by Rev. Robert Hale. He was son of Samuel, and grandson of Rev. William Walton, who was educated at Emanuel College, Eng., where he took degrees in 1621 and 1625; came to Mass. before 1635; was Minister of the church at Marblehead, Mass.

Children (surname Walton) born at Reading:

- i. Hannah,^s b. 1703.
- ii. Samuel, b. 1705.
- iii. Sarah, b. 1707.
- iv. William, b. 1709.
- v. Moses, b. 1712.
- vi. Mercy, b. 1717.
- vii. Jonas, b. 1720.

34. WILLIAM¹ LEACH (*John,^s John,^s Lawrence¹*), of Salem, Mass., born at Wenham, Mass. His will was filed 13 Mar. 1734; proved 1735; estate valued at £418; administration granted to his wife Typhosa, and she died 7 Oct. 1750.

He married 10 Feb. 1703, Typhosa, daughter of Joseph¹ and Mary¹ (Endicott) Herrick; Mary Endicott was Joseph's second wife and grand daughter of Gov. John Endicott. His first wife was Sarah¹ Leach No. 11.

Children born at Salem:

87. i. Catherine,^s b. 23 Apr. 1705.
88. ii. John, b. 29 May, 1707.
- iii. Mary, b. 31 July, 1709; m. 24 Nov. 1738, Moses Preston of Salem; probably lost at sea, 1740.
89. iv. Joseph, b. 4 Dec. 1712.
- v. Emma, b. 22 June, 1717; d. 18 Nov. 1779. "When 52 years of age she was only 25 inches tall (Stones Beverly)."
90. vi. William, b. 8 Dec. 1719.
91. vii. Elijah, b. 22 Nov. 1721.
92. viii. Benjamin, b. 29 Jan. 1724-5.

- ✓ 35. ELIZABETH¹ LEACH (*John,^s Richard,^s Lawrence¹*), of Danvers, Mass., born at Rial-side, Salem, Mass., 1 Dec. 1668; died 2 Mar. 1716. She married Joshua Rea, born at Salem, 6 Aug. 1664; son of Joshua and Sarah (Waters); and grandson of Daniel Rea. He paid tax in Danvers, 1682, and was probably a resident.

Children (surname Rea), probably born at Danvers: *Rea*

- i. Sarah,^s b. 28 Aug. 1686; m. John Batchelder; son John m. Jemima Conant; son John m. Mary Rea.
- ✓ ii. Elizabeth, b. 18 Aug. 1687. *m. John Taine*
- iii. Keziah, b. 1 Sept. 1689; m. 7 Mar. 1715, Timothy Moulton.
- iv. Joshua, b. prob. d. 1746.
- v. Lydia, b. Mar. 1693.
- vi. John, b. 14 Aug. 1696; m. 22 Apr. 1718, Abigail Herrick, and and second 3 Oct. 1723, Mary Moulton.

36. SARAH¹ LEACH (*John,^s Richard,^s Lawrence¹*), born at Rial-side, Salem, Mass., 31 Aug. 1673; married 25 May, 1691, Samuel Herrick, born 1670, son of Henry and Lydia (Woodbury) Herrick and gr.-son of Henry Sr., son of Sir William Herrick. He was nephew of Joseph who married Sarah¹ Leach No. 11.

Children (surname Herrick):

- i. Abigail,^s b. 3 Nov. 1699; m. Isaac Woodbury. She was his second wife. He m. 1st Elizabeth, d. of Paul and Mary (Patch) Thorndike.
- ii. Sarah, b. 8 Dec. 1692; m. Herbert Thorndike, son of Lieut. Paul and Mary (Patch) Thorndike. He m. 2nd Abby Sallows.
- iii. Joseph, b. 16 Nov. 1695; m. Mary Woodbury.
- iv. Lydia, b. 26 Jan. 1697; m. Benjamin Woodbury.
- v. Samuel, d. 22 Nov. 1702.
- vi. Samuel, b. 25 June, 1705; m. Prudence or Keziah Haskell, of Gloucester, Mass.
- vii. Thomas, b. 14 Apr. 1707; m. *Eleveth*.
- viii. Benjamin, b. 10 Dec. 1710; m. Eunice Haskell.
- ix. Lucy, b. 16 Apr. 1713; m. Thomas Woodbury.
- x. Ebenezer, b. 31 July, 1718.

37. SAMUEL¹ LEACH (*John,^s Richard,^s Lawrence¹*), of Salem, Mass., born at Rial-side, and baptized at Salem 28 Apr. 1677; died in 1732. His estate was settled and administration granted to

his son John, 13 Mar. 1731. Sureties: Josiah Batchelder and William Porter. He married first, 25 Sept. 1699, by Rev. Jos. Green, Ginger, daughter of Israel and Elizabeth (Hawthorne) Porter (John Porter). She was born at Salem, 10 Oct. 1679; died 1706. On her mother's side she was gr.-daughter of Maj. William Hawthorne, and her sister Elizabeth was mother of Gen. Israel Putnam. She died before her father, who by his will gave her share of his estate to Samuel Leach, giving as a reason for so doing, that he had "been a kind husband to her."

He married secondly 1 Apr. 1710, Hepzibah, daughter of Daniel and Hepzibah (Peabody) Rea, and gr.-daughter of Daniel Sr.; thirdly 5 Mar. 1718-19, Abigail Baker, of Beverly, who died 19 Aug. 1726.

Children born at Rial-side, and bapt. at Salem:

93. i. John, bapt. 8 Nov. 1702.
- ii. Eunice, bapt. 10 Sept. 1704; d. 1730; m. 26 June, 1726, Malacha, son of Samuel and gr.-son of Samuel Corring.

Children by Hepzibah Rea:

94. iii. Hepzibah, bapt. 16 Sept. 1711.
95. iv. Samuel, bapt. 5 July, 1713.
96. v. Mary, bapt. 1 Aug. 1714.
97. vi. Richard, bapt. 3 June, 1716.

38. HANNAH LEACH (John, Richard, Lawrence), born at Rial-side Salem, Mass., 31 Aug. 1679; died 1753. She married June, 1708, Thomas Preston, bapt. at first church 25 Sept. 1709; died in 1742. He paid tax in Danvers, 1682, and was probably a resident.

Children (surname Preston) bapt. at Salem:

- i. Thomas, 25 Sept. 1709.
- ii. Rebecca, 20 Apr. 1712.
- iii. Anna, 31 Oct. 1714.

39. ABIGAIL LEACH (John, Richard, Lawrence), born at Rial-side Salem, Mass., 19 Jan. 1683; married Nov. 1708, John Ganson, at Lynn, Mass.

Children (surname Ganson) bapt. at Salem:

- i. Elizabeth, 10 Feb. 1709.
- ii. Benjamin, 18 May, 1712.
- iii. Abigail, 2 Sept. 1716.
- iv. John, 29 Mar. 1716.

40. MARY LEACH (John, Richard, Lawrence), born at Rial-side Salem, Mass., 3 Mar. 1685; married 19 Oct. 1709, Samuel Putnam, born 5 Nov. 1684, at Salem. He was son of Capt. John and Hannah (Cutter), gr.-son of Capt. Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Prince) Putnam, and gt.-gr.-son of John Putnam, the first of the name in New England. The Putnam family was one of the most noted and the wealthiest in Salem. Mary's grand father Capt. Richard Leach, commanded the military or-

ganization, of which Nathaniel Putnam was Lieut. Samuel's brother Daniel graduated at Harvard College, 1687, and became minister of the first church at North Reading. He was cousin to Gen. Israel and Brig. Gen. Rufus Putnam of Revolutionary fame, and to Samuel Putnam, L. L. D., the eminent jurist of Mass.

Children (surname Putnam):

- i. Samuel, b. 24 Feb. 1711.
- ii. John, b. 8 Oct. 1715.
- iii. Elizabeth, b. 2 Dec. 1719.
- iv. Daniel, b. 27 Nov. 1717.
- v. Hannah, b. 7 July, 1722.
- vi. Nathaniel, b. 7 June, 1725.
- vii. Mary, b. 13 Feb. 1729.

41. RUTH LEACH (John, Richard, Lawrence), born at Rial-side, Salem, Mass., 31 Mar. 1692; married 24 June, 1709, Ambrose Hutchinson, born 4 June, 1684, at Salem; his estate was settled in Essex Court, 26 Sept. 1757, and letters of administration granted to Ruth, his wife and George, his son.

Children (surname Hutchinson):

- i. Amos, b. 10 June, 1710.
- ii. James, d. in infancy.
- iii. Samuel, b. 24 Apr. 1714; m. 13 Nov. 1735, Elizabeth Judd.
- iv. John, b. July, 1719.
- v. James, d. Nov. 1752, unm.
- vi. George, b. 1 Nov. 1730.

42. THOMAS LEACH (Thomas, James, Lawrence), born at New London, Conn; married at New London, 1712-13, Mary (or Mercy) Munsell.

Children born at New London:

98. i. Thomas, b. 1715.

See Perkin's "Old House's of Norwich, Ct."

43. CLEMENT LEACH (Thomas, James, Lawrence), of New London, Ct., born there in 1693; died in 1772, at Waterford, Ct. He married 25 Oct. 1725, Elizabeth Culver, who died in 1777, at Waterford, Conn.

Children born in Waterford:

- i. Ephraim, b. 13 Aug. 1726.
(twins)
 99. ii. Manassah, b. 13 Aug. 1726.
 - iii. Esther, b. 18 Mar. 1728.
- See "American Ancestry, Vol. x."

44. AMOS LEACH (James, James, Lawrence), of "Leach Hollow" New Fairfield, Ct.; probably born at Portsmouth, N. H.; died at Leach Hollow, 20 Jan. 1762. His will is recorded at the probate office in Danbury, Ct., and dated 20 Jan. 1762; proved 11

Coat of Arms



Leach

Historiography

The Leach Coat of Arms illustrated left was drawn by an heraldic artist from information officially recorded in ancient heraldic archives. Documentation for the Leach Coat of Arms design can be found in *Burke's General Armory*. Heraldic artists of old developed their own unique language to describe an individual Coat of Arms. In their language, the Arms (shield) is as follows:

"Erm. on a chief indented gu. three ducal coronets or."

When translated the Arms description is:

"Ermine; on a red indented upper third three gold ducal crowns."

Above the shield and helmet is the Crest which is described as:

"Out of a ducal coronet or, a lion's gamb holding a cross crosslet fitchee sa."

A translation of the Crest description is:

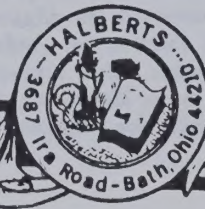
"Out of a gold ducal crown, a lion's leg holding a black cross crosslet pointed at the foot."

Family mottos are believed to have originated as battle cries in medieval times. A Motto was not recorded with the Leach Coat of Arms.

Individual surnames originated for the purpose of more specific identification. The four primary sources for second names were: occupation, location, father's name and personal characteristics. The surname Leach appears to be locational in origin, and is believed to be associated with the English, meaning, "dweller near a river of the same name (muddy ditch)." The supplementary sheet included with this report is designed to give you more information to further your understanding of the origin of names. Different spellings of the same original surname are a common occurrence. Dictionaries of surnames indicate probable spelling variations. The most prominent variations of Leach are Leache, Leech and Leeche.

Information available to us indicates that in 1971 there were approximately 9450 heads of households in the United States with the old and distinguished Leach name. The United States Census Bureau in 1970 estimated that there were approximately 3.1 persons per household in America which yields an approximate total of 29,295 people in the United States carrying the Leach name. Although the figure seems relatively low, it does not signify the many important contributions that individuals bearing the Leach name have made to history.

No genealogical representation is intended or implied by this report and it does not represent individual lineage or your family tree.



DUPLICATE

Copyright 1924, by
F. PHELPS LEACH
All rights reserved

71
L433
1924

LAWRENCE LEACH OF SALEM, MASS.,

and

SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS

By F. PHELPS LEACH of East Highgate, Vt.

The immigrant ancestor in New England of the family which forms the subject of this article was sent over to Salem by the Mass. Bay Co., in 1629 (Suff., De., I). In Edwin M. Stone's early history of Beverly, on page 29 I find the following paragraph: "June 24, 1662, Lawrence Leach died, aged 82. He held various offices in Salem. The usefulness of his life gained respect for his memory." His nunc will probated 25 (4) 1662; bequeathed all to his wife Elizabeth, and administration was granted to her. She died about 1674.

When Lawrence Leach was about leaving Old England for New England, Gov. Craddock wrote from Gravesend, England under date of 17 Apr. 1629, a long letter concerning the affairs of the new colony, to Gov. John Endicott of the Mass. Bay Colony, in which letter I find the following paragraph:

"We desire you to take notice of one Lawrence Leach, whom we have found a careful and painful man, and we doubt not, he will continue his diligence. Let him have deserving respect."

His life in America would seem to have fully justified the confidence reposed in him by Gov. Craddock, as he was chosen 31 Dec. 1638, one of the seven men to manage the public affairs of Salem; an office which he held for years, and had among his colleagues Gov. John Endicott, William Hawthorne, Roger Conant, John Woodbury and John Balch.

He was proposed for a freeman at Salem, in 1630, and was sworn 18 May, 1630; was one of the twelve jurymen which in Boston, in 1630, served on the trial of the first capital case that was heard in Massachusetts.

Lawrence Leach came from England to Salem, Mass., in the "fleet" with Rev. Francis Higginson, the first minister sent out by the Company, to superintend the spiritual affairs of the settlement. "The Talbot", which was probably the first vessel that ever entered Manchester Harbor, dropped anchor there 27 June, 1629, and the Rev. Francis Higginson, wrote in his journal:

"June 27, 1629—Saturday evening we had a westerly wind, which brought us, between five and six o'clock to a fyne and sweet harbor, seven miles from the head of Cape Ann (in this harbor twentie ships may lie and easily ride therein), where there was an island near, whither 4 of our men went with a boat, and brought back ripe strawberries, gooseberries, and sweet

gle roses. Monday, 29th as we passed along to Naim Keake, was wonderful to behold so many islands replenished with thicke woods, and high trees, and many fayere green pastures."

Lawrence Leach was one of the founders of the church at Salem, of which he was a prominent member. He engaged in farming and milling, at Rial-side. His mills were so important that a way was laid out to them, in 1657, from the meeting house at Cape Ann side and other adjacent towns caused roads to be opened to them. (Freeman). He also had an iron foundry, which was the first in the colonies. Pope's "Pioneers of Massachusetts" says: "Mr. John Leach, brother of Lawrence, was occupied at the iron works."

This family is said to have descended from John DeLeche, surgeon to King Edward III of England. The coat of arms has upon it three crowns, the significance of which is, that upon one occasion while the kings of France and Scotland were prisoners of King Edward, the three kings dined at the house of the surgeon, and as a token of the incident, Edward handed Leche three crowns. Afterwards, when the king granted him a large estate, three crowns were placed on his arms.

The spelling of the surname has varied at different times and in different branches of the family. Lawrence Leach, the immigrant ancestor in New England, and his descendants at Salem used the form Leach. Record's (the original entries, in the State House at Boston, of the various wars spells the name Leah, Leatch, Lecch, Lech, Leech, Leetch, Lirtch, Lish and Leach, although they are all descendants of the same Salem line.

(See records of Salem, Beverly and Manchester)

2ND GENERATION

Lawrence¹ and Elizabeth, probably had the following children:

2. i. Robert,² b. 1605.
- ii. Clement, b. in England; was m. and lived in England when his parents came to America.
3. iii. John.
- iv. Margaret, b. 1613; came on the "Susan & Ellen", 1635.
- v. Ambrose, b. 1616; mentioned in Pope's Pioneers of Mass., as "a carpenter Sudbury proprietor; contracted in 1641, to build a bridge over the river was one of the securities for Charles Dobson at Boston, 6 (9) 1649. Resided at Narragansett, 9 Nov. 1663, when he sold land at Boston". Ambrose, Boston, 1648, is spoken of in Hutch. Coll., 298, and in 1663 was concerned in Narragansett, or the king's province." Wyman's "Charlestown, Mass., Gen.", says: "Ambrose, carpenter age 37, 1653; money was paid him." (constable's account.)
4. vi. Richard, b. 1618.
- vii. Edmund, was in New Haven, Ct., 1647-9.
- viii. Rachel,
5. ix. James, b.
6. x. Giles, b. 1632, at Salem, Mass.

2. ROBERT² LEACH (Lawrence 1), died 22 May, 1688, age 83. His will was proved 14 June, 1688.

He married twice (I think): first Mary or Miriam.....,

who was admitted to the church 9 Sept. 1639, and died 1 ab. 1648; and secondly Alice....., who married second Robert Elwell, of Gloucester, by whom she had several daughters; her will is dated 27 Mar. 1691.

Felt gives him grant of land at Salem 1637; and the freeman of 1644; he was one of the founders of Manchester, settled there in 1636; and was Town Clerk until 1648; Selectman from 1658 to 1661, and again in 1680.

Rev. D. F. Lamson's History of Manchester contains a good map of the estate's of his son's Robert & Samuel. He also owned estate's in Salem, and Charlestown at the time of his death.

Children:

- i. Mary,³
- ii. Elizabeth,.....; m. John Fosket.
- iii. Sarah.
- iv. Bethiah.
- v. Abigail,.....; m. 10 Dec. 1682, at Manchester, John Day, b. 28 April. 1657; and was living in 1715. He was a soldier in King Philip's War, and received grant of land at Kettle Cove for his services; son of Anthony and Susanna Day who was at Gloucester 1645.
7. vi. Robert, b. at Manchester, 1650.
8. vii. Samuel, b. at Manchester, 1655.

3. JOHN² LEACH (Lawrence 1), came from England to Salem, Mass., in 1629, (d. 1659) in the "fleet" with Rev. Francis Higginson.

He married first, before 1648, Sarah, daughter of Roger Conant, and secondly Sarah, daughter of John Waldron; she married second Timothy Goodwin.

He had a grant of land at Salem in 1637, near that of his brother Richard; he also appears on a list of grantees and claimants of Narragansett, No. 5 New Bedford etc., Boston, "soldier grantee John Leach; claimant, John's son John". (Bodges King Philip's War, page 431).

Roger Conant emigrated to Plymouth in 1623, where he remained until 1625, when in company with Rev. Mr. Lyford, he removed to Nantasket. He remained there but a short time, and proceeded to Cape Ann, where he was invested with the superintendence of the Dorchester Co., engaged in the fishery's and agricultural pursuits, being in fact the first Governor in the Colony of Mass. Bay, though not the Chief Magistrate of a Province.

Children, all born at Salem, and baptized at first church;

- i. John,³ bapt. 3 Sept. 1648.
9. ii. John, bapt. 19 Nov. 1648. (twins)
- iii. Sarah, bapt. Nov. 1648.
- iv. Rachel, bapt. 6 Apr. 1651.
- v. Sarah, bapt. 6 June, 1652.
- vi. Elizabeth, bapt. 27 Nov. 1653.
- vii. Mary, bapt. 3 Sept. 1654; m. 2 Mar. 1681, Thomas Field.
- viii. Richard, bapt. 15 June, 1656; Probably d. in King Philip's War. See "Richard Salem, Essex Regt., Major Daniel Dennison, Lieut. Samuel Appleton". (Bodge.)

* R.C. Anderson (G.S.) says this book errs in combining date recording this Robert (of Manchester) with another man. He is not in fact the same.

Remember, bapt. 3 Nov. 1661.
Hannah, bapt. 3 Nov. 1661.
William. Did he d. unm., at Marblehead?

- ✓ 4. RICHARD² LEACH (*Lawrence*¹), of Salem, Mass., born in 1618, died at Rial-side (Leach farm), 9 May, 1687; will was probated 25 Nov. 1687; bequeathed to wife Sarah; son John; daughters Elizabeth, wife of Benjamin Collins; Mary, wife of Benjamin Ireson, Hannah & Rachel; Joseph, Sarah and John Herrick, children of daughter Sarah; and young Pasho Foote, now with him.

His wife Sarah, daughter of Amme Fuller was admitted to the first church at Salem, 1 Sept. 1648.

He had a grant of land at Salem, near that of his brother John, in 1639; was a member of the first church 1648; freeman, 1665; Lieut., 1675, and Captain two years later of the militia and his Lieut. was Nathaniel Putnam, grandfather of Samuel and of Daniel who graduated at Harvard College, 1687. Samuel and Daniel were cousins of General Israel and Brig. Gen. Rufus Putnam, of Revolutionary fame.

Children all born at Rial-side (Leach farm), and baptized at first church of Salem:

- ✓ 10. i. John,² bapt. 3 July, 1648.
ii. Rachel, bapt. 6 Feb. 1651.
11. iii. Sarah, bapt. 6 Apr. 1652.
iv. Elizabeth, bapt. 27 Sept. 1653; m. 19 Sept. 1677, Benjamin Collins, son of Henry Collins who came on the ship "Abigail", 1635; they settled at Lynn.
v. Mary, bapt. 3 July, 1654; m. 1 Aug. 1680, Benjamin Ireson, son of Edmond Ireson who came on the "Abigail", 1635. She was accused of witchcraft in 1692 but never tried; residence at Lynn, Mass.
vi. Richard, bapt. 15 Apr. 1656.
vii. Hannah, bapt. 3 Sept. 1661.

5. JAMES² LEACH (*Lawrence*¹), weaver at Great Island, Portsmouth, N. H., was probably born at Salem, Mass. His will dated 14 Jan. 1696, was proved 30 June, 1697. He married twice: first Jane, daughter of Thomas and Agnes Turpin; secondly Jane, widow of Walter Michemor, and probably daughter of Alexander Bachiler merchant of Portsmouth, and Ann his wife. Mrs. Bachiler's will dated 5 Nov. 1660, and probated 26 June, 1661, bequeath's to James Leach, his wife and 4 children; probably children by second marriage.

Mr. Leach was a weaver at Great Island, Portsmouth. He owned the Island now called Leach Island. Grand Juryman, 1654-5; took oath of allegiance and was sworn Constable 27 June, 1656; and was Tythingman in 1678. 26 July, 1660, he sued Richard Cummings (former partner of Walter Michemor), for the profits of a voyage about 11 years since. 13 Dec. 1699,

his sons James and John, sold to George Huntress, th and which was granted to him by the town of Portsmouth.

Children (perhaps others:)

12. ii. Thomas,² b. 1652; d. 1732.
13. ii. James, b. 1654; d. 12 Sept. 1726. Pew occupant 1693.
iii. Zachariah, Pew Occupant 1693.
iv. John, conveyed land to George Huntress 13 Dec. 1699.
v. Joseph, probably owned the Barrett right in Kennebunkport, and sold it to Thomas Perkins in 1719.
14. vi. Nathaniel, d. 18 Jan. 1759.

6. GILES² LEACH (*Lawrence* 1), of West Bridgewater, Mass., born at Salem 1632, was living 1705. He married at Weymouth, Mass., 20 Jan. 1656-7, Anne Nokes who was living at Braintree, with Dea. Bass' family at the time of their marriage.

He owned sixteen acres of land at Weymouth in 1663, moved to and settled in Bridgewater in 1664, where he became entitled, by purchase, to one of the fifty-six shares of the thousands of acres of land bought in 1645 of the old Indian chief, Massasoit (King Philip's father), by Capt. Miles Standish, Samuel Nash and Constant Southworth, for the use of the fifty-six original proprietors.

In the first mention of him in the Bridgewater records he is styled "Goodman", which fact suggests that he was then a prominent and esteemed member of the Bridgewater church, and head man of the 4th seat by the pulpit.

His residence was in the immediate vicinity of Satucket Pond, the haunt of King Philip and his tribe, and he was on friendly terms with them.

Mitchell's History of Bridgewater gives the following Children and says: "perhaps they had others".

15. i. Sarah,² b. at Weymouth, 1656-7.
ii. Elizabeth, b. at Weymouth, 1662; m. John Emerson, 1693.
16. iii. Samuel, b. at Weymouth, in 1662.
17. iv. David, b. at West Bridgewater, Mass.
18. v. John, b. at West Bridgewater, in 1665.
19. vi. Ebenezer, b. at West Bridgewater, 1672.
20. vii. Benjamin, b. at West Bridgewater.

3RD GENERATION

7. ROBERT³ LEACH (*Robert*² *Lawrence*¹), of Manchester, Mass., born there 1650, died there in 1717. He married twice: first in 1678, Sarah.....; secondly in 1684, Hannah.....;

He was a soldier in King Philip's War (Bodge p. 157-139); Selectman 1687, 88, 91, 94, 96, 98, 1700, 1701, 2, 3, 4, and 1705. "He and his nephew Samuel were on a committee chosen 5 Dec. 1715 to look out for a minister to preach at Manchester. As the result of this action, Rev. Ames Cheever, a grandson of the celebrated Ezekiel Cheever, was ordained 4 Oct. 1716. The church was organized on 7 Nov., of the same year".

Occurring during
King Philip's
War 1675/6!
He can be
very proud.

During his term of office, as selectman in 1700, for £3 19s., deed of the town of Manchester was obtained from the Indians (Acknowledged at Salem 18 Dec. 1700).

Children by first wife, born at Manchester:

- 21. i. Sarah,⁴ b. 1680.
- 22. ii. Robert, b. 1682-3.

Children by second wife, born at Manchester:

- +23. iii. Hannah,⁴ b. 1685; m. No. 29.
- 24. iv. John, b. 1687-8.
- 25. v. Mary, b. 1690-1.
- vi. Elizabeth, b. 1692-3; d. 4 Oct. 1713.
- 26. vii. Joseph, b. 1694.
- viii. Ann, b. 23 May, 1696; m. 16 Dec. 1715, Joseph Pitman.
- 27. ix. Paul, b. 1698.
- x. Charles, b. 7 Oct. 1702.

8. SAMUEL¹ LEACH (*Robert,¹ Lawrence¹*), born at Manchester, Mass., 1655, died there 14 Oct. 1696.

He married twice: first in 1672, Arabella, daughter of John and Arabella Norman, who died in 1681; secondly, Hannah, daughter of John and Hannah (Norman) Baldwin; niece of his first wife.

He was on the committee to distribute the common land, in 1690; was Selectman in the town of Manchester in 1681, 82, 86 and 90. In the former year he and his brother Robert petitioned for relief, in favor of that town, from the expenses of supporting worship, and they "came into a church state by themselves", in 1716. He was a planter; left an estate of £695. His son Richard inherited the homestead; it was the one on which Robert¹ settled in 1636. After Richard's death it was inherited by his son Benjamin,⁵ and after his death, by his son Benjamin,⁶ who, in 1790, tore down the original house (built by Robert²), and in 1791 erected another a short distance from the place where it stood. In 1903 this house was moved back to the site of the old one, and remodeled by the present owner, Hon. Henry Clay⁸ Leach.

John Norman was son of Richard Norman, who was with Roger Conant at Cape Ann, and had a house at Salem before Gov. Endicott came. Richard Norman Jr. died at Marblehead and bequeathed his estate to Hannah, second wife of Samuel Leach, 1682.

Children by first wife, born at Manchester:

- i. Penlope,⁴ b. 26 Sept. 1678.
- 28. ii. Catherine, b. 1680.

Children by second wife, born at Manchester:

- +29. iii. Samuel, b. 1682; m. No. 23.
- iv. Hannah, b. 26 Aug. 1686; m. in 1709, Jeremiah Hibbard.
- 30. v. Richard, b. 1690.
- vi. Benjamin, b. 14 February 1692.

9. JOHN¹ LEACH (*John,² Lawrence¹*) born at Salem, Mas and bapt. at first church, 19 Nov. 1648.

He married Mary.....;

He appears on a list of grantees and claimants of Narraganset, No. 5 New Bedford etc., Boston, "soldier grantee John Leach; claimant, John's son John". (Bodge's King Philip's War, p. 481)

Children born at Wenham, Mass.

- 31. i. Richard.⁴
- ii. Mary, d. 4 Apr. 1696.
- iii. Deborah, d. 24 May, 1696.
- 32. iv. Mercy.
- 33. v. Hannah.
- 34. vi. William.

- ✓ 10. SERGT. JOHN¹ LEACH (*Richard,² Lawrence¹*), born in 1647, at Rial-side (Leach farm); bapt. 3 July, 1648, at Salem first church; died 5 Mar. 1711.

He married 20 May, 1667 Elizabeth Flint, who died 8 Feb. 1719, daughter of Thomas and Ann Flint of Salem.

"He was in Capt. Daniel Henchman's Co., Lieut. Philip Curtis, served from 2 Nov. and was credited 30 Nov. 1675 with £1, 19s 04d; also in Capt. Samuel Mosley's Co., credited with military service under Capt. Mosley, 10 Dec. 1675 with £4, 19s, 04d, and 29 Feb. 1675-6 with £2, 4s, 00d." (Bodge's King Philip's War, pp. 55, 71, 72.)

Children born at Salem, Mass., (Rial-side).

- 35. i. Elizabeth,⁴ b. 1 Dec. 1668.
- 36. ii. Sarah, b. 31 Aug. 1673.
- 37. iii. Samuel, b. 28 Apr. 1677.
- 38. iv. Hannah, b. 31 Aug. 1679.
- 39. v. Abigail, b. 19 Jan. 1683.
- 40. vi. Mary, b. 3 Mar. 1685.
- vii. Lydia, b. 12 Jan Jan. 1691; m. 13 July, 1708, Benj. Honton.
- 41. viii. Ruth, b. 31 Mar. 1692.

11. SARAH¹ LEACH (*Richard,² Lawrence¹*), of Salem, Mass., bapt. at first church 6 Apr. 1652; died 1674.

She married 7 Feb. 1665, Joseph Herrick, Esq., bapt. at first church 6 Aug. 1645; died at Salem, 4 Feb. 1717-18.

He married three times: secondly Mary Endicott, granddaughter of Gov. Endicott; thirdly the widow of Capt. George March. He was son of Henry and Edith (Larkin), daughter of Mr. Hugh Larkin. His father came to Salem in the fleet with Lawrence¹ Leach and became a large landed proprietor. His estate is historically known as "Cherry Hill". Joseph was one of the leading men of Salem. Upham in his history of "Salem Witchcraft," says of him: "He was a man of great

born 1629; 2 JOHN, m. Mary, daughter of Roger Conant, and was drowned in crossing the ferry to Beverly, 16 Jan. 1662; and 3. Freeborn, who went to England and never returned.

Benjamin¹ Balch had: 1. SAMUEL, b. 1651, d. 1723; 2. JOHN, b. 1654, d. 1738; 3. JOSEPH, killed at Bloody Brook; and 4. FREEBORN, b. 1660, d. 1729. Freeborn lived near Wenham pond. His first wife was a Knowlton, by whom he had: 1. FREEBORN, (who removed to Bradford), 2. BENJAMIN, and 3. MIRRIAN. His second wife was Elizabeth Fairfield, by whom he had: 4. ELIZABETH, 5. ABIGAIL, 6. TABITHA, 7. WILLIAM and 8. MARY. William, son of Freeborn and grandson of Benjamin, was minister of Bradford, b. 1704; graduated 1724; and d. 1792. He had 7 children, one of whom, William, was father of Benjamin Balch, who was living in Salem 1842.

Samuel¹ Balch, married twice: first Sarah Newmarch, 1675; secondly Martha Putnam, 1721; d. 14 Oct. 1723, aged 72. 26 Oct. 1704 he was chosen Deacon of the first church; he had 11 children, viz: 1. JOSEPH, 2. JOHN, 3. PETER, 4. MARTHA, 5. SAMUEL, 6. BENJAMIN, 7. JOHN (twins), 8. PHOEBE, 9. CORNELIES, 10. ABIGAIL, and 11. THOMAS.

JOHN¹ BALCH, son of Deacon Samuel, b. 1654, m. 23 Dec. 1674, Hannah Denning; d. 1738. He had: ISRAEL, 2. SARAH, 3. CALEB, 4. JOSHUA, 5. DAVID, 6. ROGER, and probably 7. HANNAH. He owned a large estate in the 2nd parish.

Children (surname Balch):

- i. Martha,^s b. 9 Dec. 1706; d. in infancy.
- ii. Mercy, b. 4 Feb. 1708; m. 1729, John Lovett, Jr.
- iii. Martha, b. 2 Feb. 1712; d. 14 Aug. 1714.
- iv. Mary, b. 9 Feb. 1715; m. 1734, Myhill Woodbury,
- v. Martha, b. 9 Feb. 1715; m. 1735, William Trask.
- vi. Deborah, b. 21 Aug. 1720; m. 1743, Jonathan⁴ Dodge.
- vii. Benjamin, b. 22 Sept. 1725; d. 14 Aug. 1736.

33. HANNAH⁴ LEACH (*John,² John,² Lawrence¹*), of Reading, Mass., born at Wenham. She married 22 Dec. 1702, Samuel Walton of Reading, by Rev. Robert Hale. He was son of Samuel, and grandson of Rev. William Walton, who was educated at Emanuel College, Eng., where he took degrees in 1621 and 1625; came to Mass. before 1635; was Minister of the church at Marblehead, Mass.

Children (surname Walton) born at Reading:

- i. Hannah,^s b. 1703.
- ii. Samuel, b. 1705.
- iii. Sarah, b. 1707.
- iv. William, b. 1709.
- v. Moses, b. 1712.
- vi. Mercy, b. 1717.
- vii. Jonas, b. 1720.

34. WILLIAM⁴ LEACH (*John,² John,² Lawrence¹*), of Salem, Mass., born at Wenham, Mass. His will was filed 13 Mar. 1734; proved 1735; estate valued at £418; administration granted to his wife Typhosa, and she died 7 Oct. 1750.

He married 10 Feb. 1703, Typhosa, daughter of Joseph⁴ and Mary³ (Endicott) Herrick; Mary Endicott was Joseph's second wife and grand daughter of Gov. John Endicott. His first wife was Sarah³ Leach No. 11.

Children born at Salem:

87. i. Catherine,^s b. 23 Apr. 1705.
88. ii. John, b. 29 May, 1707.
- iii. Mary, b. 31 July, 1709; m. 24 Nov. 1738, Moses Preston of Salem; probably lost at sea, 1740.
89. iv. Joseph, b. 4 Dec. 1712.
- v. Emma, b. 22 June, 1717; d. 18 Nov. 1779. "When 52 years of age she was only 25 inches tall (Stones Beverly)."
90. vi. William, b. 8 Dec. 1719.
91. vii. Elijah, b. 22 Nov. 1721.
92. viii. Benjamin, b. 29 Jan. 1724-5.

- ✓ 35. ELIZABETH⁴ LEACH (*John,² Richard,² Lawrence¹*), of Danvers, Mass., born at Rial-side, Salem, Mass., 1 Dec. 1668; died 2 Mar. 1716. She married Joshua Rea, born at Salem, 6 Aug. 1664; son of Joshua and Sarah (Waters); and grandson of Daniel Rea. He paid tax in Danvers, 1682, and was probably a resident.

Children (surname Rea), probably born at Danvers:

- i. Sarah,^s b. 28 Aug. 1686; m. John Batchelder; son John m. Jemima Conant; son John m. Mary Rea.
- ✓ ii. Elizabeth, b. 13 Aug. 1687. *m. Jan 1708 John Tarrant ✓*
- iii. Keziah, b. 1 Sept. 1689; m. 7 Mar. 1715, Timothy Moulton.
- iv. Joshua, b. prob. d. 1746.
- v. Lydia, b. Mar. 1693.
- vi. John, b. 14 Aug. 1696; m. 22 Apr. 1718, Abigail Herrick, and and second 3 Oct. 1723, Mary Moulton.

36. SARAH⁴ LEACH (*John,² Richard,² Lawrence¹*), born at Rial-side, Salem, Mass., 31 Aug. 1673; married 25 May, 1691, Samuel Herrick, born 1670, son of Henry and Lydia (Woodbury) Herrick and gr.-son of Henry Sr., son of Sir William Herrick. He was nephew of Joseph who married Sarah³ Leach No. 11.

Children (surname Herrick):

- i. Abigail,^s b. 3 Nov. 1699; m. Isaac Woodbury. She was his second wife. He m. 1st Elizabeth, d. of Paul and Mary (Patch) Thorndike.
- ii. Sarah, b. 8 Dec. 1692; m. Herbert Thorndike, son of Lieut. Paul and Mary (Patch) Thorndike. He m. 2nd Abby Sallows.
- iii. Joseph, b. 16 Nov. 1695; m. Mary Woodbury.
- iv. Lydia, b. 26 Jan. 1697; m. Benjamin Woodbury.
- v. Samuel, d. 22 Nov. 1702.
- vi. Samuel, b. 25 June, 1705; m. Prudence or Keziah Haskell, of Gloucester, Mass.
- vii. Thomas, b. 14 Apr. 1707; m. Eleventh.
- viii. Benjamin, b. 10 Dec. 1710; m. Eunice Haskell.
- ix. Lucy, b. 16 Apr. 1713; m. Thomas Woodbury.
- x. Ebenezer, b. 31 July, 1718.

37. SAMUEL⁴ LEACH (*John,² Richard,² Lawrence¹*), of Salem, Mass., born at Rial-side, and baptized at Salem 28 Apr. 1677; died in 1732. His estate was settled and administration granted to

...to the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

...the ... of the ...

Perley Derby: Hutchinson Family (Salt Lake City Library).
 Snow-Estes Ancestry, 1:158.
 Perley: History of Salem, Mass., 1:249-252.
 Chamberlain: History of Lyndeborough, N.H., 717.
 Hurd: History of Hillsborough County, N.H., 502.
 New England Register, 19:18-20; 22:235-250; 21:277.
 American Genealogist, 14:84-5. (Bethiah Prince)
 Middlesex County, Mass., Historic Homes, &c., 3:982-984;
 4:1435.
 Essex Quarterly Court Proceedings, 3:102, 113; 4:66, 143,
 194; 5:416.
 Essex Inst. Historical Collections, 3:229, &c.
 First United States Census, 1790, Maine and New Hampshire.
 New Hampshire Provincial and Town Papers, 2:118. Revolution-
 ary service of John Hutchinson of Lyndeborough: Pvt.,
 Capt. Peter Clarke's co., Militia; marched from Lynde-
 borough for Ticonderoga, 7-1-1777. Also 9:541.

 ANCESTRY OF RICHARD¹ HUTCHINSON OF SALEM

BARNARD^I HUTCHINSON of Cowlam, Yorkshire, living 1282,
 married a daughter of John Boyville, Esq. 3 chil.
 JOHN^{II} HUTCHINSON married Edith, daughter of William
 Wouldbie. 4 chil.
 JAMES^{III} HUTCHINSON of Cowlam, married Ursula Gregory of
 Nafferton, Yorkshire. 5 chil.
 WILLIAM^{IV} HUTCHINSON of Cowlam, married Anna, daughter of
 William Bennet, Esq., of Theckley, Yorkshire. 4 chil.
 ANTHONY^V HUTCHINSON of Cowlam, married first, Judith, the
 daughter of Thomas Crosland. No children by this marriage.
 He married second, Isabel, daughter of Robert Harvie. 8 chil.
 THOMAS^{VI} HUTCHINSON is thought to have married the daugh-
 ter of a Mr Drake of Kinculton, Nottinghamshire. He was liv-
 ing during the reign of King Henry VIII (1509-1547), and was
 alive on Oct. 9, 1550, from documents. He bought the princi-
 pal part of Owthorpe, Notts., portions in the possession of
 his descendants. Also owned an estate at Colston Bassett, but
 lived at Cropwell Butler, Notts. 3 chil.
 LAWRENCE^{VII} HUTCHINSON lived at Tollerton, near Owthorpe.
 His will of July 21, 1577, was proved at York, Oct. 9, 1578.
 It named his wife Isabel and five children.
 THOMAS^{VIII} HUTCHINSON lived at Newark, Notts. His will,
 March 1, 1598, proved May 11, 1598, named three children.
 THOMAS^{IX} HUTCHINSON inherited the Newark estate, but be-
 tween 1601 and 1605 removed to Arnold, where he was buried on
 Aug. 17, 1618, survived by his wife Alice. His will of March
 4, 1618, bequeathed to wife Alice and seven children, includ-
 ing RICHARD, who emigrated to New England.

This gives details of service in King Phillips War.

LEACH

This family is said to have descended from John de Leche, surgeon to King Edward III of England. The coat of arms has on it three crowns, the significance of which is that upon one occasion while the kings of France and Scotland were prisoners of King Edward, the three kings dined at the house of the surgeon to the king, John de Leche, and as a token of the incident King Edward handed de Leche three crowns. Afterwards, when the king granted him a large estate, three crowns were placed on his coat of arms.

LAWRENCE^I LEACH was born in England, perhaps Ash, Martock, Somerset, about 1580-3. He married his wife Elizabeth in England, but her parents are not known. Lawrence died in Salem, Mass., on June 24, 1662, "age 82," survived by Elizabeth, who was living in 1670, and is said to have died in 1674.

The ship list of the Abigail, sailing from Weymouth, Dorset, Eng., June 20, 1628, contains the names of Lawrence Leach and "M^r John Endicott, new governor." The Abigail arrived in Salem on Sept. 6, 1628. Lawrence brought with him his wife, and sons John, RICHARD and Robert, his son Clement remaining in England. He had a brother, John Leach, in Salem, who was presented at court in 1647 for not living with his wife. In 1659 John Leach bequeathed his estate, amounting to £33.12.10, to his grandnephew and namesake JOHN³ LEACH, son of RICHARD². John is said to have been occupied at the iron foundry owned by Lawrence. He apparently left no children.

Before the Winthrop Fleet left Old England, Governor Matthew Cradock wrote from Gravesend, England, under date of April 17, 1629, a long letter concerning the affairs of the new colony to Governor John Endicott of Massachusetts Bay Colony, in which occurs the following paragraph: "We desire you to take notice of one Lawrence Leach, whom we have found a careful and painful man, [painstaking] and we doubt not he will continue his diligence. Let him have deserving respect." As Governor Endicott came on the same ship, he was probably aware of Lawrence's potentialities, and made good use of them.

His life in America would seem to have fully justified the confidence reposed in him by Governor Cradock, judging by the records. He was one of the founders of the church at Salem, of which he was a prominent member. He was sworn in as free-man of Salem on May 18, 1630. He was a member of the jury on

Nov. 29, 1630, in Boston, at the trial of the first capital offense case to be heard in Massachusetts, that of John Billington of the Mayflower Pilgrims, who was hanged that year.

On the list of Salem grantees, 1636, is: "Law:Leech, free-man, 100 acres." On the 1637 list is: "Lawr:Leech, family of five, 3/4 acre." He engaged in farming and milling at "Ryal-Side," now Beverly, and his mills were so important that a way was laid out to them in 1657 from the meeting house at Cape Ann side, and other adjacent towns caused roads to be opened to them. He also had an iron foundry, which was the first in the colonies.

On Dec. 31, 1638, he was chosen one of the seven men to manage the public affairs of Salem, an office which he held for years, and had among his colleagues, Gov. John Endicott, William Hawthorn, Roger Conant, John Woodbury and John Balch. He represented Salem for many years in the Massachusetts General Court, the legislative body, at Boston.

"An Englishman of parts, from every evidence a man of family and standing in his English home, well fitted to assume the position of prominence...which he held. His property was developed to capacity later, in connection with mills which drew patronage from all the nearby towns." "The usefulness of his life gained respect for his memory."

His nuncupative will, presented to the court on June 25, 1662, left everything to his wife Elizabeth, to whom administration was granted. His age was given as "85 or thereabouts." Mention was made that he owed £30 for the mill. He evidently disposed of his property among his children before his death, as his inventory amounted to but £138, and he was known to be a large land holder.

Probable children of Lawrence and Elizabeth, order not known:

- 1 Robert², England, cl605. D.1674. M.1, cl639, Mary or Miriam (d.1648); 4 or 5 daus. 2nd wife Alice d. cl691; 1 dau., 2 sons. She m.2, 1676, Robert Elwell; had daus.
- 2 Clement, England. M., and lived in England when parents came over.
- 3 John, b. England. D. 1659. M. 1, cl648, Sarah² (Roger¹) Conant (b. cl628). M. 2, Sarah² (John¹) Waldron; he had 11 chil. by two wives. Sarah m.2, Timothy Goodwin.
- 4 Margaret, b. England, cl613. Came on ship Susan and Ellen in 1635.
- 5 Ambrose, b. England, cl616, probable son. Res: Sudbury, Naragansett and Boston.
- + 6 RICHARD, b. England cl617. See following.
- 7 Edmund, possible son. Res: New Haven, Conn., 1647-8.

- 8 Rachel². Liv. 1683. M. cl663, John¹ Sibley (d. 1661); 5 chil. M. 2, cl671, Thomas¹ Goldthwaite (d.1683)
- 9 James, probable son, perhaps b. Salem. D. 1697. M., 1, Jane² (Thomas¹) Turpin. M.2, Jane² (Alexander?) Bachilor, widow of Walter Michemor. At least 6 chil. by two wives. Res: Portsmouth, N.H.
- 10 Giles, possible son. Liv. 1705. Prominent in Bridgewater, Mass. M.1, Weymouth, Mass., 1657, Anne Nokes; 7 or more chil. Given in Mitchell's History of B'water.

✓ CAPTAIN RICHARD² LEACH, son of Lawrence Leach, was born in England about 1617-18. He married about 1647, Sarah, daughter of Widow Anne Fuller. He died at the Leach farm in Rial Side, now Beverly, Mass., May 9, 1687. Sarah's death has not been found.

Richard Leach was appointed administrator of Widow Anne Fuller's estate on June 25, 1662. Her age was given as seventy-nine. She left him her five-acre lot for the charge of her burial, and made his residuary legatee, after bequests to Bethiah Farrow, John and Sarah Leach. Nothing more has been discovered about her.

Richard Leach is called Captain and yeoman in the records. He had a grant of land at Salem near that of his brother John, in 1639. He was a member of the first church in 1648, Sarah being admitted on Sept. 1, 1648. He was admitted a freeman in 1665; appointed lieutenant of the militia in 1675 and captain in 1677. He served in King Philip's War in 1675-6.*

His will dated Salem, June 17, 1685, was probated on Nov. 25, 1687. Administration was granted to son JOHN, on Dec. 7, 1687. He bequeathed to wife Sarah; son JOHN; daughter Elizabeth the wife of Benjamin Collins; daughter Mary the wife of Benjamin Ierson; two daughters, Hannah and Rachel; to Joseph, Sarah and John Herrick, children of daughter Sarah; to young Pascho Foote "who now lives with me." He appointed son JOHN sole executor; Israel Porter and Job Swinnerton, overseers.

Children of Richard and Sarah, born in Rial Side (Beverly), baptized in Salem:

- ✓ + 1 JOHN³, cl648. Bp. 9-3-1648, after his mother joined the Salem church. See following.
- 2 Sarah, bp. 11-19-1648. D.1674. Prob. m. Beverly, 1665, Joseph² (Henry¹) Herrick (1645-1718); 4 chil. Joseph m.2, Mary Endicott, grand dau. of Gov. John¹ Endicott; and 3, Mary, widow of Capt. George March.
- 3 Rachel, bp. 4-6-1651. D. yg.

* Qualifies for Society of Colonial Wars.

* Journey shows BOND Nathaniel (1660-1720) + Bethiah Fuller (1661-)
27 Feb 1694/5 winter town - no Bethiah Farrow or Fullers

- 4 Elizabeth³, bp. 11-27-1653. Liv. 1695. M., 1677, Benjamin² (Henry¹) Collins; 6 chil. b. Lynn, Mass.
 5 Mary, bp. 9-3-1654. Liv. 1692. M. 1680, Benjamin² (Edward¹) Ierston (b. 1645); son Benjamin b. 1681, Lynn. Mary was accused of witchcraft in 1692, but never tried.
 6 Richard, bp. 6-15-1656. Prob. d. yg. Not in father's will, 1685.
 7 Hannah, bp. 6-2-1662. Unmarried in 1685.
 8 Child, bp. 3-29-1665. Not in father's will, 1685.
 9 Rachel, bp. 5-7-1668. Liv. 1685, unmarried.

JOHN³ LEACH was born about 1648, and baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Sept. 3, 1648, the son of Richard and Sarah Leach. He married in Salem on May 22, 1667, Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Flint. She was born in Salem on June 30, 1650, and died his widow, Feb. 8, 1719/20, her husband having died in Salem on March 5, 1717/18. See FLINT.

He is called yeoman in the records. His grand-uncle John Leach left him his estate in 1659, inventoried at £33.12.10. He was executor of his father's estate in December 1687, and inherited the estate at Rial Side in Beverly. According to a deed of John Ganson, his son-in-law, the father had given his five youngest daughters land at Rial Side. This was probably when they married.

John was a soldier in King Philip's War in Captain Daniel Henchman's company, under Lieut. Philip Curtis, from Nov. 2, 1675, and was credited Nov. 30, 1675, with £1.19.04. He was also in Captain Samuel Mosley's company, credited with military service under him, Dec. 10, 1675, with £4.19.04, and on Feb. 29, 1675/6, with £2.4.0.*

Children of John and Elizabeth, born in Salem:

- ✓ 1 Elizabeth⁴, Dec. 1668. D. 1716. M., c. 1684, Joshua³ (Joshua², Daniel¹) Rea; 6 chil., 1686-1696.
 2 Sarah, 8-31-1673. M. 1690, Samuel³ (Henry², Henry¹) Her- rick of Beverly (1670-1743); 10 chil. in 1718.
 3 Samuel, 4-28-1677. D. 1731-2. M. 1, 1699, Ginger³ (Israel² John¹) Porter (1679-1706); 3 chil. M. 2, 1710, Hepzibah³ (Daniel², Daniel¹) Rea (d. 1716); 4 chil. M. 3, 1719, Abigail Baker (d. 1726). M. 4, 1727, Abigail Raymond (d. after 1632).
 4 Hannah, 8-31-1679. D. 1753. M. 1708, Thomas³ (Thomas², Roger¹) Preston (1709-1742); 4 chil.
 5 Abigail, 1-19-1682/3. M. 1705, John² (Benjamin¹) Ganson; 4 chil. M. 2, 1726, Thomas³ (2, 1) FLINT (1678-1741+)

* Qualifies for Society of Colonial Wars.

- 6 Mary⁴, 3-3-1684/5. M., 1709, Samuel⁴ (John³, Nathaniel², John¹) Putnam (1684-1753); 7 chil., 1712-1729.
 7 Lydia, 1-12-1690/1. M., 1708, Benjamin³ (Benjamin², Joseph¹) Houlton (b. 1690; d. by 1745); 9 chil. Benjamin m. 2, 1736, Widow Elizabeth Putnam. She m. 3, 1745, Edward Carlton.
 + 8 RUTH, 3-31-1692. See below.

RUTH⁴ LEACH was born on March 31, 1692, in Salem, Mass., where on Jan. 7, 1708/9, was published her intention to marry Ambrose Hutchinson, born in Salem Village (now Danvers), June 4, 1684, the son of Joseph Hutchinson. They were married on June 24, 1709. Ambrose died in 1757, apparently survived by Ruth, who with his son George was granted administration of his estate on Sept. 26, 1757. See HUTCHINSON.

Leach Genealogy.

Stone: Early History of Beverly, Mass., 29.

Pope: Pioneers of Massachusetts.

Banks: Planters of the Commonwealth, 1620-1640, p. 59.

Perley: History of Salem, Mass., 1:456, 463; 1:118-119.

Bodge: History of King Philip's War, 55, 71, 72.

Essex County, Mass., Court Records, 1:389; 4:19, 111.

Salem, Beverly and Lynn, Mass., Vital Records.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Foreword	vii
Origins of the Leach and Conant Families	1
Early New England: The Influences of Roger Conant and John Endecott	4
The Voyage From Gravesend, England to New England: 25 April — 29 June 1629	8
The Forbidding Wilderness	13
I Lawrence Leachb. 1579 d. 1662.....	19
II John Leachb. — d. 1659.....	29
III John Leachb. 1648 d. —.....	34
IV Richard Leachb. — d. 1719.....	38
V Richard Leachb. 1711 d. 1805.....	43
VI Caleb Leachb. 1748 d. 1845.....	48
VII David Fowler Leach ...b. 1781 d. 1869.....	57
VIII Daniel Bassett Leach ..b. 1820 d. 1909.....	62
IX George Randall Leach .b. 1854 d. 1916.....	72
X Owen Glenn Leach ...b. 1878 d. 1930.....	88
XI Owen Glenn Leach, Jr. .b. 1920.....	95
XII Owen Glenn Leach III .b. 1945.....	103
Atlas	111
Addenda	117
Bibliography	119
Index	121

LEACH: A GENEALOGY



A first edition limited to 100 copies,
published privately by Owen Glenn Leach, Jr.

1968

Copy Number 27

excellent source of information on early New England and particularly concerning Lawrence Leach¹ and Roger Conant. She also authenticated the Leach coat-of-arms at the New York Public Library.

Mrs. Marion C. Leach contributed many of the photographs depicting family members of generations VIII, IX and X.

Of course, substantial credit goes to the late F. Phelps Leach, who wrote *Lawrence Leach and Some of His Descendants*, a detailed and tedious task performed in the mid-nineteen twenties. In 1919 *Americana*, the magazine of the American Historical Society, estimated that by then there were perhaps 10,000 Leaches living in America.

It is hoped that this book will become the basis for tracings of other branches of the Leach and associated families. It has been indexed carefully to help make this possible.

OWEN GLENN LEACH, JR.¹¹

Greenwich, Connecticut
27 December 1968

ORIGINS OF THE LEACH AND CONANT FAMILIES

ACCORDING to the American Historical Society, the Leach family is thought to be descended from John LeLeche, surgeon to King Edward III, the fourth monarch of England (1327-1377), who reigned during the first half of the Hundred Years' War (1337-1453).

Edward apparently possessed great military capacity, but his knightly virtues, courtesy and love of adventure made him very popular, and England as well as all Western Europe looked up to him as the greatest King of his generation.

The Hundred Years' War began when Philip VI of France dispatched a fleet which ravaged the southern coast of England in 1337. Edward promptly laid claim, due to purportedly priority lineage, to the French throne. Over the next 20 years of spasmodic fighting, England's financial position worsened, and Edward declared bankruptcy in 1345. The fighting continued, and in 1346 he found that by relying on his own army and trusting nothing to allies, the fortunes of war improved for England. His troops captured David II (1329-1371), King of Scotland, on 17 October 1346. He was ransomed in 1357.

The war was interrupted by the appearance in England of the pestilence known as the "Black Death." Before renewal of the war with France, Philip VI died, and was succeeded by his son John the Good (1350-1364). During the battle of Poitiers in France, Edward, heavily outnumbered, won an astonishing victory that resulted in the capture of King John the Good on 19 September 1356.

John was in severe financial difficulties, and apparently was pleased by his capture.

King Edward III and his captives, Kings John the Good and David II, dined in 1356 or 1357 at the home of John LeLeche. As a token of the incident, Edward gave his host three crowns. Ultimately, when as a mark of further esteem Edward granted LeLeche a large estate, three crowns were embodied in his arms.

Later, when the adoption of surnames spread throughout England, "LeLeche" (the healer) gradually changed to Leech and Leach, since the term was an old English synonym for physician. The name appears in the Hundred Rolls with frequency under the form of LeLeche. Still later, the French particle "Le" was dropped.

The Custodian of Genealogy of Newberry Library, Chicago, reported that *The General Armory* contains six Leach coats-of-arms. Only one of them is attributed to John LeLeche by the American Historical Society (see Cover):

Arms — Ermine on a chief indented gules three ducal coronets or.

Crest — Out of a ducal coronet or, a dexter forearm grasping a serpent, all proper.

The Leach family ultimately became identified with the Conants by marriage.

The surname Conant is primarily of Celtic origin, derived from Conan or Conon. In very nearly its present form, it has existed in England for more than 650 years, and no less than 32 forms of spelling the name have been found in ancient and modern records. The Celtic Conan means chief or leader; this later became a personal name and as such lingered until nearly the close of the fifteenth century. The surname, which took its form from the baptismal name, came into use shortly after the custom of using surnames was introduced into England.

The authentic genealogy of the Conant family begins with John Conant, who lived in the parish of East Budleigh, Devonshire, England, and was probably born about 1520 at Gittisham, the adjoining town. He is thought to be the son of a John Conant who died at

Gittisham in September, 1559.

His son Richard was born in the parish of East Budleigh about 1548. In 1588 he was assessed for land there and he was church warden in 1606-16. On 4 February 1578 he married Agnes Clarke. They both were buried on the same day, 22 September 1630. They were known as "persons of exemplary piety."

Of their eight children, two came to America: Roger and Christopher, baptised 13 June 1588. Christopher was a grocer in London, where he married Anne Wilton 14 September 1619. He arrived at Plymouth, New England on the ship *Anne* in 1623, in the company of Edward Bangs, an ancestor of Betty Jane (Oakes) Leach, wife of the author. Roger's arrival in the New World is presumed to have preceded that of Christopher.

The Conant coat-of-arms is as follows:

Arms — Gules, ten billets or; four, three, two and one.

Crest — On a mount vert a stag proper, sustaining with his dexter foot an escutcheon of the arms.

Motto — *Conanti dabitur* ("It will be given to the undertaking").

Definitions of Heraldic terms: *ermine*: white field with black spots; *indented*: jagged; *chief*: the whole upper part of the field, cut off horizontally by a straight line, or any other of the partition lines used in Heraldry, and should comprise a one-third part of the escutcheon; *escutcheon*: shield; *gules*: red; *duc al coronet*: one of about 16 types of crowns; *or*: gold; *dexter*: right; *billets*: oblong figures (when exceeding 10 and placed irregularly, the number is not expressed in the Heraldic description); *mount vert*: when the bottom or base of the shield is represented green, as a field, and curved somewhat semicircularly, arched.

SOURCES:

Americana, magazine of the American Historical Society, New York, 1919, Vol. 13, pp. 177-8, 181-183.

Burke, Sir Bernard, *The General Armory*, London, 1882, pp. 591-592.

Encyclopaedia Britannica, 1949, Vol. 8, pp. 494-496; Vol. 9, p. 617; Vol. 20, pp. 151-152.

Leach, F. Phelps, *Lawrence Leach of Salem, Massachusetts and Some of His Descendants*, The Messenger Press, St. Albans, Vermont, 1924, Vol. I, p. 4; 1926, Vol. III, p. 66.

EARLY NEW ENGLAND: THE INFLUENCES OF ROGER CONANT AND JOHN ENDECOTT

ROGER CONANT lived most of his life in what is now known as Beverly, Massachusetts. Born at Budleigh, Devonshire, England, and christened 9 April 1592, he was a salter. He came to New England as early as the autumn of 1622, at the age of 30, lived in Plymouth for about a year, and then removed to Nantasket, which was then the commercial center of the Pilgrim territory. He had been there about a year when he was offered a commission by the Dorchester Company of England as governor of the settlement of Cape Ann. He immediately removed there, and entered upon the arduous duties of his new position. He found that insubordination existed among the men, and that its suppression was a difficult task.

Under the government of Roger Conant, the affairs improved but little, if any, and in 1626 the arrangement was abandoned by the English merchants, due largely to losses in fishing and great depreciation in the value of vessels. In the two and one-half years of Conant's governorship, 1,000 pounds had been spent and not 100 pounds received in profits. "Ill-carriage of our men at land" was given as the cause of failure. Great credit is due to the public spirit of Conant, but the conditions were such that success was probably impossible. The Company was dissolved and the ships and provisions sold.

The company paid the men their wages and offered them passage home. This offer was accepted by "the ill-behaved, thriftless and weak-minded" portion of the colonists, who were said to be in the

majority. Thus happily freed of these people, though greatly lessened in numbers, the colony gained in strength, and then consisted only of honest and industrious individuals who were dedicated to the object of colonization.

The scanty means of obtaining a living from the soil had been a serious drawback, and as soon as the colonists were on their own and free of any obligation or control by the Dorchester Company, they sought a more fertile and sheltered location within the bay. Roger Conant investigated the shores. About 16 miles to the southwest of Cape Ann he found a secluded place on a peninsula by a wide river with good harbors, in a territory called by the Indians "Naumkeag" (Salem). Conant and his companions removed there in 1626. He believed that a plantation there would be a fitting haven for those seeking religious freedom. Among his associates at the time was John Balch, a distinguished contemporary of Lawrence Leach¹.

Forests were cleared and cottages built upon foundations of clay and stone. The houses had no cellars, and were probably constructed of logs with thatched roofs. There were 19 cottages, but all had disappeared by 1661, indicating that they were not built substantially. In one of them, Roger Conant sired the first white child born in the region.

A large marsh was located behind the settlement. From it, thatch for the roofing of the cottages was obtained, as well as clay for the foundations, chimneys and walls. The soil was prepared for the planting of maize (corn) and probably several other crops congenial to it, including tobacco. The colonists were busily engaged in planting by the spring of 1627. The number involved at either Naumkeag or Cape Ann at that time is unknown.

Some of the English members of the Dorchester Company, regardless of the failure of the Cape Ann settlement, wished to establish another colony in the vicinity. They thought that if they sent more cattle to Conant and his companions at Naumkeag, they might profit and also encourage others to join the plantation. On 19 March 1627-8 an establishment was arranged at Plymouth "for the plant-

ing, ruling, ordering and governing of New England," and sold to numerous knights and gentlemen of England, including John Endecott, all of whom resided in or near Dorchester. The territory assigned to them included all the area in New England, extending from three miles north of the Merrimack river to three miles south of the Charles river.

Soon, these grantees became acquainted with other religious people of similar stature in and near London (including Matthew Cradock and Sir Richard Saltonstall) who became associated with them for the purpose of founding a plantation where non-conformists in religion might be received. The new company was first called The New England Company, and later The Company of Massachusetts Bay. This new organization bought all the interests of the defunct Dorchester Company in the properties at Cape Ann and Naumkeag.

A few of the men of the old Dorchester Company offered to send over cattle, and conferred casually with some of the London gentlemen, who added as many cattle and proposed to invest money in the plantation if "a fit man" might be procured to go to New England to superintend it. John Endecott was finally selected, being "a man well known to divers persons of good note, who manifested much willingness to accept the offer as soon as it was tendered, which gave much encouragement to such as were undecided." Endecott was born at Chagford, Devonshire, England in 1589.

The Massachusetts Bay Company leaders undoubtedly knew that Roger Conant was the acknowledged head of the little colony at Naumkeag, though the authority he had received from the Dorchester Company had expired with it, and he had obviously not succeeded in making Cape Ann plantation a success. Although he had been promised supplies and a new patent, it was not agreed that he should be head of the new colony, as he may have assumed. The Massachusetts Bay Company was composed of hardened businessmen, of which Conant was ignorant. It was natural that one of their "own," John Endecott, would be appointed.

Good reports of the conditions at Naumkeag hastened the prepa-

arations for the departure of representatives of the Massachusetts Bay Company in the spring of 1628. Endecott sailed from Weymouth, England, 20 June 1628 on the *Abigail*, and after a good voyage arrived at Naumkeag 6 September 1628. The sight of the ship as she sailed up the harbor gladdened the hearts of Conant and his friends. How much Conant ultimately personally felt his quick reduction in status is not known. The conflict between him and the new Governor was brief, probably, for he continued to do his part in the building of the colony. The personality of the new representative of English businessmen was so different from that of Conant that the original settlers must have deplored the change.

The policy of the Massachusetts Bay Company was, understandably, to colonize on a businesslike basis. They appointed only strong men to office, and urged the colonists to do the same, and to choose "such as are sound both in profession and confession, men fearing God and hating bribes."

Endecott ruled with a determined hand, sometimes with violence. He was quick to assert and ready to maintain his "rights." Firm and unyielding, he confronted all obstacles with vigorous resistance, and crushed insubordination. His arrival, with his associates, increased the Naumkeag colony to 50 or 60 persons.

Various contentions soon arose between the "old" planters and the newcomers. The earlier planters had subdued the soil, suffered privations and hazards; others had now come to reap the benefits of what had been sown before. Roger Conant quietly subdued his own feelings and the resentment of his associates toward the new arrivals, and secured harmony. Eventually, he became one of the most respected men in New England.

Meanwhile, the Massachusetts Bay Company was searching in England for able men willing to emigrate to the New World. Lawrence Leach¹ would soon volunteer.

SOURCES:

- Adams, James Truslow, *The Founding of New England*, The Atlantic Monthly Press, Boston, 1921, pp. 125-145.
Perley, Sidney, *History of Salem, Massachusetts, The*, 1924, Vol. I, pp. 78-101.

THE VOYAGE FROM GRAVESEND, ENGLAND TO NEW ENGLAND: 25 APRIL-29 JUNE 1629

MASSACHUSETTS Bay Colony Governor John Endecott (*q. v.*) received a letter in February, 1629 from Governor Cradock of the Massachusetts Bay Company in London, announcing the intention of the Company to send additional colonists and clergymen to New England. Endecott had written to Cradock in England earlier (13 September 1628, one week after his arrival), reporting favorably upon the progress that had been made by the preceding settlers.

The letter from Endecott had greatly influenced potential colonists, and three ships were readied to transport 200 or 300 of them and about 100 head of cattle to Naumkeag (Salem) the following spring. One ship, the *Lion's Whelp*, was purchased by the Company; two others, the *George Bonaventure* and the *Talbot*, were hired.

Massachusetts Bay Company records indicate that cargoes and supplies included two loads of chalk, 10,000 bricks, five cauldron of sea coal, nails, red lead, iron, steel, lead, salt, sail cloth, leather, plaster of paris, material for millstones; cannon, muskets, flasks, ensigns, pikes, swords, belts, shot and powder for military use; armor for 20 soldiers; seeds, roots of plants for coloring, hemp and flax seed, potatoes, hop roots; various utensils and instruments; clothing of all sorts; and cows, horses and turkeys.

For the accommodation of the passengers, there were 50 bed-ticks and bolsters; 50 mats to lie under 50 beds; 50 rugs; 50 pairs of Welsh cotton blankets; 100 pairs of sheets; linen for towels, table cloths and napkins; and sea-chests. For consumption during the

voyage and as supplies for the colonists at Naumkeag were secured 12,000 pounds of bread, 22 hogsheads of beef, 162 flitches of bacon, 1,400 pounds of haberdine cod, 3,000 pounds of cheese, 40 bushels of peas, 20 bushels of oat meal, groats and malt, 20 firkins of butter, two tierces of beer vinegar, 45 hogsheads of beer, Malaga and Canary wines, two barrels of Spanish wine, 20 gallons of brandy, six hogsheads of water, 140 gallons of oil, eight dozen candles; one and one-half bushels of mustard seed, two firkins of soap, and 4,000 sticks of wood (probably for firewood aboard the vessels).

The *Talbot* and *Lion's Whelp* embarked from Gravesend, Kent (about 10 miles due east of the present boundary of London) on Saturday, 25 April 1629, at seven in the morning. The *Talbot*, a strong ship of 300 tons, had 19 pieces of ordnance and was manned by 30 mariners. It carried about 100 planters, including Lawrence Leach¹ and the Reverend Francis Higginson, soon to become the first minister of Salem and whose notes preserved the record of the voyage. As freight, the vessel carried six goats, five great pieces of ordnance, oatmeal, pease and all kinds of munitions and provisions sufficient for the plantation for a year. Several servants of the Pilgrims were included.

Because of a light wind, progress of only 12 miles was made on the first day. The *Talbot* remained at anchor on the Sabbath. Still heading east, they anchored at The Downs on Wednesday, and because of high winds were obliged to remain there until Sunday, 3 May. The water was so rough during the time that many passengers were seasick. The vessels, now heading south into the English Channel, passed Dover the next day. That night the Isle of Wight was reached, and the ships were anchored to wait for the light before attempting to go through the remainder of the Channel.

On Monday they continued through the Channel, and sailing westward passed Portsmouth and anchored at night opposite Cowes. Here some of the passengers went ashore to refresh themselves and wash their linen, and they remained there all night. In the evening, however, sails were hoisted and the ships proceeded about eight miles. The next morning a shallop from the *Talbot* was sent to bring

in those who had gone ashore the night before. The water was so rough that the women, at their request, were put ashore when they were within three miles of the vessels (off the coast of Yarmouth) and they walked to the town, where they were lodged that night.

Here the vessels remained until Monday, 11 May, and took fresh provisions aboard. While there, on Sunday, Reverend Higginson had preached aboard the *Talbot* in the morning, and in the afternoon in Yarmouth in response to an earnest invitation. On Monday afternoon at three o'clock, sail was again set, and about an hour later the vessels passed the narrow Needles and entered the sea.

The next day, they sailed as far as Lizard Point, and on Wednesday, 13 May to Land's End (located at the extreme southwestern tip of the coast of England). There, most of the company saw their native England for the last time. Reverend Higginson called the passengers to the stern of the ship to take a last look at their homeland.

He said, "We will not say, as the separatists were wont to say at their leaving of England, 'Farewell, Babylon! Farewell, Rome!' But we will say, 'Farewell, dear England! Farewell, the church of God in England, and all the Christian friends there!' We do not go to New England as separatists from the church of England, though we cannot but separate from the corruptions in it; but we go to practise the positive part of church reformation, and propagate the gospel in America." He concluded with a fervent prayer for the King, and church and state in England; and for the presence and blessing of God in their undertaking for New England, according to a later account by the Reverend Cotton Mather.

About 10 leagues (approximately 30 miles) further on, they passed the Scilly Islands and turned the prows of their ships directly toward the New World. Seasickness again followed the first experience of the passengers with the rough Atlantic.

The next Sunday, religious services were disturbed by the approach of a man-of-war of the Biskaniers. Apparently concluding that an attack upon the heavily armed vessels would be unsuccessful, the ship sailed away. On the same day, some of the passengers

contracted smallpox, and subsequently many more were afflicted. The disease had been brought aboard, probably unknowingly, by a passenger who had contracted it in Gravesend. A daughter of Reverend Higginson died of the disease after two days, and her body was committed to the sea.

Thursday, 21 May was observed as a day of humiliation, fasting and prayer to beseech God to cease the sickness and death aboard the *Talbot*. The mariners were very much interested in the exercises, for they had never heard of a fast day service at sea. During the entire passage, the seamen were religious and kind. Each day was opened and closed with reading and expounding a chapter of the Bible, and by singing and prayer. On Sundays Reverend Higginson preached twice and catechised. The master of the ship and his crew set the eight and twelve o'clock watches each night with the singing of a psalm and a prayer "that was not read out of a book."

On Wednesday, 27 May, when the ship was in mid-ocean, there was a fearful gale, and rain fell in torrents. The darkness was intense, and the waves poured over the ships. However, no lives were lost. As the end of the voyage approached, some of the passengers became ill with scurvy and additional cases of smallpox appeared, but during the entire journey there were no more deaths until the very end, when two died (one from consumption), both having been sick before they left England. On Tuesday, 2 June, another fast was held.

As the days passed and the coast of New England was approached, many kinds of fish and whales were seen, and great icebergs floated nearby. While much of the time the ships were in sight of each other, on 15 and 16 June fog shut off the view, and a drum was beaten on the *Talbot* to learn the position of the *Lion's Whelp*; response was made by firing a cannon. A week elapsed before the ships were again within sight.

The shoreline of New England was clearly sighted on Wednesday, 24 June, the vessels being seven or eight leagues (21 or 24 miles) south of Cape Sable. There they saw, on the water, flowers resembling yellow gilliflowers, and in the afternoon of the next day

viewed many islands and hills by the shore. By noon on Friday they were within three leagues (nine miles) of Cape Ann (located on the coast a few miles east of the present Rockport, Massachusetts), and as they sailed along the coastline saw "every hill and dale and every island full of gay woods and high trees."

Saturday, 27 June, they anchored at the fishing village of Cape Ann, located on a small island. Some of the men went ashore and brought back ripe strawberries, gooseberries and sweet single roses.

Some of the planters at Cape Ann had seen the colors of the vessels and apprised Governor Endecott, who sent a shallop with two men to pilot the vessels into the harbor. The next day was the seventh Sunday they had spent on the voyage, and the two pilots remained with them during the day. On Monday, 29 June they sailed to Naumkeag, in the harbor of Naimkecke, and observed the *George Bonaventure*, which had arrived during the previous week.

With great thankfulness, joy and satisfaction, they had ended their tedious voyage of 3,000 miles (six weeks and three days from Land's End, and nine weeks and three days from Gravesend).

SOURCE:

Perley, Sidney, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, pp. 102-114, adapting *Journal of the Voyage* by Reverend Francis Higginson, London, 1630.

THE FORBIDDING WILDERNESS

ON TUESDAY MORNING, 30 June 1629, Governor John Endecott went aboard the *Talbot*, anchored at Naumkeag, and bade the passengers welcome. He invited the Reverend and Mrs. Higginson ashore to take lodgings in his house. The others, including Lawrence Leach¹ and his family, disembarked, established themselves as best they could, and set about immediately to face the problems of the forbidding wilderness. ✓

What they found was noted by the Reverend Higginson: "When we came first to Nehumkek [Naumkeag, Salem], we found about halfe a score Houses, and a faire House newly built for the Governor [John Endecott], we found also abundance of Corne planted by them, very good and well liking. And we brought with us about two hundred Passengers and Planters more, which by common consent of the old Planters were all combined together into one Body Politicke, under the same Governor.

"There are in all of us both old and new Planters about three hundred, whereof two hundred of them are settled at Nehumkek, now called Salem: And the rest have planted themselves at Masathulets Bay, beginning to build a Towne there which wee doe call Cherton, or Charles Towne.

"We that are settled at Salem make what haste we can to build Houses, so that within a short time we shall have a faire Towne. We have great Ordnance, wherewith wee doubt not, but wee shall fortifie our selves in a short time to keepe out a potent Adversary. But that which is our greatest comfort, and meanes of defence

above all other, is, that we have here the true Religion and hold Ordinances of Almighty God taught amongst us: Thankes be to God, wee have here plenty of Preaching, and diligent Catechizing, with strickt and carefull exercise, and good and commendable order to bring our People into a Christian conversation with whom wee have to doe withall. And thus wee doubt not but God will be with us, and if God be with us, who can be against us?"

✓ When Reverend Higginson, Lawrence Leach¹ and their companions arrived at Naumkeag, they had no thought of limitation or boundaries of the territory to which they had taken possession. So far as they knew, there was no claimant of the forest in any direction. Originally, it included the present cities of Salem, Beverly and Peabody; the towns of Wenham, Manchester, Danvers and Marblehead; and parts of Middleton and Swampscott. The area they occupied was a representative part of the "rock-bound coast" of New England.

There are 13 hills within the original territory of Salem that rise more than 200 feet above mean sea level. One is Folly Hill, in Danvers — a drumlin 207 feet high. It is long, with steep sides, while at both ends the ascent is gradual. From its top, Salem Harbor is presented picturesquely with its islands and shores, and the various rivers of Danvers and Salem are so plainly and fully seen that the view furnishes a better idea of their courses and environment than can be obtained otherwise. (In 1692, this elevation was known as Leach's Hill, from the principal owner at that time. About 1740, one William Browne of Salem erected a great mansion house upon its summit. The people of the time regarded its location and construction as extravagant and foolish, and the name "Folly Hill" was applied.)

The early planters immediately searched for adequate sources of fresh water, and found abundant springs and lakes. Too, they discovered that both Salem and Marblehead harbors were spacious and deep, and that the former was well sheltered (Reverend Higginson called Salem Harbor "Marvel Harbor" in 1629). Stone was plentiful, and in 1631 Captain John Smith wrote: "For the building

of houses, townes and fortresses, where shall a man finde conveniency, as stones of most sorts, as well lime stone, if I be not much deceived, as iron stone, smooth stone, blew slate for covering houses, and great rocks we supposed Marble, so that one place is called marble harbour."

At first, New England was regarded in England as a most barren rocky desert. However, according to a writer at the time of the first settlement of Salem, "in some places the soil or black mould is over a foot deep, and so fertile that the vegetation is rank; and the woods are accounted better ground than the Forrests of England or woodland ground, or healthy plaines." Apparently neither of these descriptions was entirely accurate; another writer was more realistic: "This ground is in some places of a soft mould, and easie to plow; in other places so tough and hard, that I have seene ten Oxen toyled, their iron chains broken, and their Shares and Coulters much strained: But after the first breaking up it is so easie that two Oxen and a Horse may plow it."

Forests were almost universal on hill and plain when the first planters arrived, and there were open spaces of upland and lowland where grass grew. In 1629, Reverend Higginson wrote, "though all the Countrey bee as it were a thicke Wood for the generall, yet in divers places there is much ground cleared by the Indians, and especially about the Plantation." Where the forests were thickly grown, the lumber was straight and tall, and the lowest branches of many of the trees were 30 feet from the ground. Forest trees were of many kinds; the principal one was oak.

Grass grew in every open area, especially in the salt marshes and meadows, and the cattle readily ate it. Native edible vegetables included leeks, onions, turnips, parsnips, pumpkins, gourds, muskmelons, watermelons, cucumbers, beans, peas and corn. Fruits included plums, mulberries, cornel berries, gooseberries, blueberries, bilberries, raspberries, blackberries, huckleberries, strawberries, currants and cherries. The early settlers found plentiful supplies of chestnuts, filberts, hazelnuts and walnuts.

The virgin forest was the home of large numbers and many kinds

of animals, birds and reptiles. Black bears were especially ferocious during strawberry time, when their offspring were young. Moose were abundant, and their hides furnished excellent material for clothing. Venison was well liked by the old planters, and was plentiful.

The greatest enemy of the settlers was the wolf, which preyed upon the cattle as well as defenseless and useful wild animals. The wild cat was another dreaded denizen of the forest. About as large as an ordinary dog, and with a fierce nature, it was more dangerous to meet than any other creature, fearing neither dog nor man. Other animals common at the time included the fox, otter, beaver, raccoon, ferret, skunk, martin, musquash, porcupine, brown rabbit, white purblind hare, and many varieties of squirrel.

Birds and fowl were abundant. Eagles were seen frequently, as were hawks, ducks, geese, partridges, turkeys, pheasants, heathcock, teal, cormorants, cranes, loons, gulls, bittern, hern, owls, blackbirds, crows, ravens, thrushes, robins, swallows, humming birds, and many other species, most of them entirely new to the colonists.

The waters, both salt and fresh, were filled with innumerable varieties of fish, one of the major reasons for the early colonization of the region. There were seals, or sea calves, and the oil extracted from their skins was burned in lamps. Sharks were used as fertilizer. Sturgeon, skate, thornback, haddock, hake, mullet, shad, smelts, bass, catfish, mackerel, salmon and herring were plentiful. Halibut was sometimes two yards long and a foot thick. The chief commercial fish, however, was cod. Eels were eaten fresh, or salted for winter use. Lobsters were numerous, and sometimes weighed over 20 pounds. Oysters were large, often a foot long. Clams and mussels were fed to swine. The settlers had ready access to a wide variety of edible crab.

Snakes existed in great numbers, particularly in the area now known as Beverly. The largest and most dangerous was the rattlesnake, which would not retreat from man as would the other varieties. Its sting was so mortal that persons bitten died quickly; the

root of a plant called snake weed was the only known antidote (the victim would chew and swallow the plant, and apply the root to the wound).

When the settlement of New England was contemplated, it was supposed by the English that the climate was too severe for their permanent residence. But they soon learned that a short experience would enable them to become accustomed to it. The temperature range was from 100 degrees above zero in summer, to 20 degrees below zero in winter. The prevailing wind from the northwest provided pure, dry and invigorating air. The most uncomfortable wind was from the northeast, damp and often accompanied by rain, sleet or snow according to the season. More rain fell in New England than in Europe, but the first settlers found more sunshine than in England.

The Algonquin Indians who were living within the territory of original Salem when the English took possession were the survivors of a race which had been numerous, but which became weakened by disease and few in number. These aborigines were tall and erect with far-sighted black eyes, high foreheads, strong limbs, long and slender hands, broad shoulders and small waists and feet. Their straight black hair was very long, but nothing could induce them to wear a beard.

Their clothing was scanty. An Indian's breeches consisted of a piece of cloth a yard and a half long, tied with a snake's skin about the waist. In the winter, the more aged wore leather drawers, made like trousers, and fastened under their girdle with buttons. In cold weather they wore shoes which reached above the ankle, and were made of moose hide. Most of them had thick-furred skins of wild cats on their shoulders.

Basically, the New England Indians were no different from the standpoint of customs, living conditions or social mores than other tribes that would be discovered later. They had pride, were affable and courteous, and were ready to devote the best they had to the general good. It was only after the Indians were cheated and exploited by the new settlers that they became surly and warlike,

feeling that their geniality had been betrayed. The English neither feared nor trusted them. The Indians are known to have come in groups to the houses of the early settlers at mealtimes, but they asked for nothing and took only what was given to them.

Their language was that of the Algonquin tribe, and because of its difficulty of pronunciation few of the English in the vicinity were able to speak any of it. It was unwritten.

The chief ruler was called a sagamore, and the government was similar to a monarchy. The right to rule came by inheritance from father to son. If there was no son, the widow reigned as queen. The sagamore about Salem, in 1629, had less than 300 men due to the ravages of disease. Actually, they had no military organization, and found protection among the settlers. Generally, they were idle except when hunting and fishing, and they traded skins and animal flesh with the settlers.

In 1629, the region was practically unoccupied, as the few Indians located there needed but a small portion of the land for cultivation and the chase. It is difficult to appreciate the thoughts of the red men as they saw whole tribes disappear before relentless disease. Despondency settled over them as all hope of future enjoyment was forever banished, their spirit broken. When the English came, no resistance was offered, nor any claim of title to the land made or thought of. The Indians were simply passive, waiting for the end.

It would appear that the wilderness was not quite as forbidding as the settlers had feared.

SOURCE:

Perley, Sidney, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, pp. 1-46; 185-6.

LAWRENCE LEACH

b. 1579 in England, parish of Ash (Martok), Somersetshire ✓

d. 24 June 1662 at Salem, Massachusetts, age 83

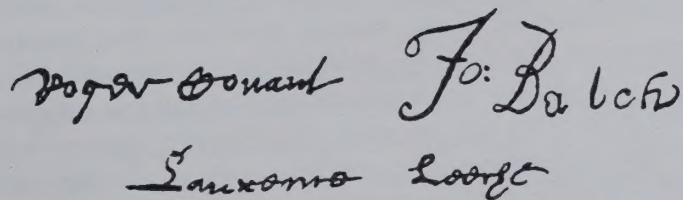
HISTORIANS have often depicted the early settlers of New England as grim, pious and lack-luster people in ignominious circumstances. They have been described as temperate, God-fearing souls who cared for little else than sustenance, peace and the opportunity to work hard.

In general, this picture is true, although far from the extent to which it has been accepted. The mere fact that the *Talbot* carried quantities of beer, wines and brandy to the New England shore dispels the notion that these people were teetotalers. And many, probably including Lawrence Leach¹, had achieved financial success ✓ in England. There were, of course, people of ill repute in England who merely wanted to try something new, but for the most part they were unable or unwilling to undertake the hard work required in the New World and soon returned to their native land.

Even the most earnest Puritans were not indifferent to beauty, although they eschewed extravagance. The wardrobes, like the homes of these people, were more colorful than legends have indicated. Elder William Brewster, most venerable of the Pilgrims, owned red and white caps, a violet-colored coat, a blue suit, a green waistcoat, black silk stockings, and green drawers. Governor Richard Bellingham of the Massachusetts Bay Colony owned a scarlet coat as a mantle of respectability and authority, and the records tell of violet-colored petticoats, red breeches, blue aprons, silver buttons and other colorful bits of finery. Only ministers followed the ancient sacerdotal custom of wearing black.

While the earliest arrivals brought little in terms of personal possessions with them, a number of even the first generation of settlers left adequate if not abundant estates — chests, chairs, tables and the like.

"Before you come," wrote Reverend Higginson (*q.v.*), "be careful to be strongly instructed what things are fittest to bring with you for your more comfortable passage at sea, as also for your husbandry occasions when you come to the land. For when you are once parted from England you shall meete neither markets nor fayres to buy what you want. Therefore be sure to furnish yourselves with things fittest to be had before you come: as meale for bread, malt for drinke, woollen and linnen cloath, and leather for shoes, and all manner of carpenter tools, and a great deal of iron and steele to make nails, and locks for houses, and furniture for ploughs and carts, and glasse for windows. . . ."



Autographs of Roger Conant, John Balch, Lawrence Leach¹

Higginson also advised prospective colonists to bring with them complete armor, with a "long piece," a sword bandoleer, and ammunition. Weapons and armor were considered essential equipment for able-bodied emigrants. Settlers at the Massachusetts Bay colony brought plate armor with them. All heavy protection was found to be impractical in wilderness warfare against Indians who fought like savage guerrillas rather than as European soldiers.

In a letter to Captain John Endecott (*q.v.*), "the Governor and

Deputy of the New England Company for a Plantation in Massachusetts Bay, to the Governor and Council for London's Plantation in the Massachusetts Bay in New England," dated 17 April 1629, postmarked Gravesend, England and giving observations and instructions, it was stated: "Wee desire yow to take notice of one Lawrence Leach, whom we have found a carefull & painfull man, and wee doubt not but hee will continue his dilligence; lett him have deserving respect."

Lawrence Leach¹ arrived at Cape Ann in the company of Samuel Sharpe (who could have been sailing on any one of the three vessels that left Gravesend in 1629), who was to have charge of the fortifications; William Dodge, a "skillful husbandman" from Dorchester; Thomas Beard, a shoemaker; George Farr and Robert Moulton, shipwrights; Richard Howard, a "Bedfordshire man"; Richard Ewstead, a wheelwright "who was commended to us by Mr. Davenport for a very able man, though not without his imperfections."

Lawrence Leach's¹ life in America would seem to have fully justified the confidence placed in him by the Massachusetts Bay Company. He signified his desire to become a freeman 19 October 1630, and in a list entitled, "Names of Such as Tooke the Oath of Freeman," dated 18 May 1631, his name — along with Roger Conant, John Balch and others — was included. According to the Salem Historical Society, it is probable that a great majority of the earliest settlers were neither "gentry" nor indentured servants. In most of the records researched, the first and most prominent requisite of being proposed a freeman was membership in the church.

He was a farmer and miller, living on the south side of what is now Elliott Street, on Rial (Royal) Side, Beverly. He deeded his farm to his son Richard about 1643.

Lawrence was one of 12 jurymen that served at the trial of the first capital case that was heard in Massachusetts, in 1630.

By order of the general court in April, 1635, Lawrence Leach¹ and Richard Ingersoll promised to make a sufficient highway between their lots for carts to "bring home wood."

For the furtherance of fishing and trading, and to avoid the

inconveniences found in granting land for fishermen to plant, the Town voted at its meeting 2 January 1636-7 "that none Inhabiting at Marble Head shall have any other accommodation of land, other than such as is usuallie given by the Towne to fishermen, viz. a howse lott & a garden lott or grownd for the placing of their flakes: according to the company belonging to their families, to the greatest family not above 2 acres: & the comon of the woods neere adioyning for their goates & their cattle."

JOHN Leach, brother of Lawrence, was admitted as an inhabitant about that time, and was granted land. His wife did not emigrate from England, and when he died in the spring of 1658 he gave his small property to his grandnephew, John Leach. It cannot be determined whether this was John Leach³ in the direct line; he might have been a cousin.

The first session of the quarterly court was held in Salem 27 June 1636. There were three civil cases to be adjudicated, but no criminal cases. The 12-man trial jury consisted of Lawrence Leach¹, Jeffrey Massey, Daniel Ray, Richard Waterman, Richard Raymond, Henry Freake, Boniface Burton, John Woodbury, Thomas Talmadge, John Smith, John Sibley and Timothy Tomlins, foreman. Messrs. Leach, Massey, Ray, Waterman, Raymond, Woodbury and Sibley lived in Salem, and the others in Lynn.

In the book of grants of land in Salem, there is a listing of names of persons to whom grants had been made, and the number of acres granted, bearing the date 1636. Included is an entry, "Mr. S. Sharp f. 300" (the "f." symbolizing "freeman"). Following the name of Mr. Sharp was written and then cancelled: "Jno. Horne f. 75 Law: Leach f. 100." Lawrence Leach¹ is listed separately as owning 100 acres, with the notation in shorthand: "John Woodbury did view it and it lyeth along in divers marshes and coves." A further description was added: "over against mrs. Daniels farme with ye marsh neere adioyning upon survey."

Commencing in 1636, the Town's representatives granted land and performed other acts as delegates of the freemen. In 1637, until 19 June, the men who served were Lawrence Leach¹, John Balch,

Jacob Barney, Townsend Bishop, John Endecott, Ralph Fogg, Robert Moulton, Daniel Ray, Thomas Scruggs, Elias Stileman, Philip Verrin and John Woodbury.

On 20 February 1636-7, a warrant was issued by the Town for laying out to Lawrence Leach¹ 100 acres of upland and six acres of marsh "over against Mrs. Daniels."

Philip Verrin, on 17 April 1637, was permitted to cut three loads of hay grass near the property of Lawrence Leach¹, provided that "he burn all the marshes thereabout."

In a list of land grants occupying two pages in the Town records, handwritten by Roger Conant (*q.v.*), there is a notation of the division of the marsh and meadow ordered to be assigned and laid out to the families at a Town meeting 25 December 1637. There is a listing, "5. Lawr: Leach 3." This indicates that Lawrence had five persons in his family at that time, and that he was allotted three acres. The frugality of the early settlers also is evident from the date of the meeting; apparently they were willing to utilize Christmas Day for the purposes of a Town meeting.

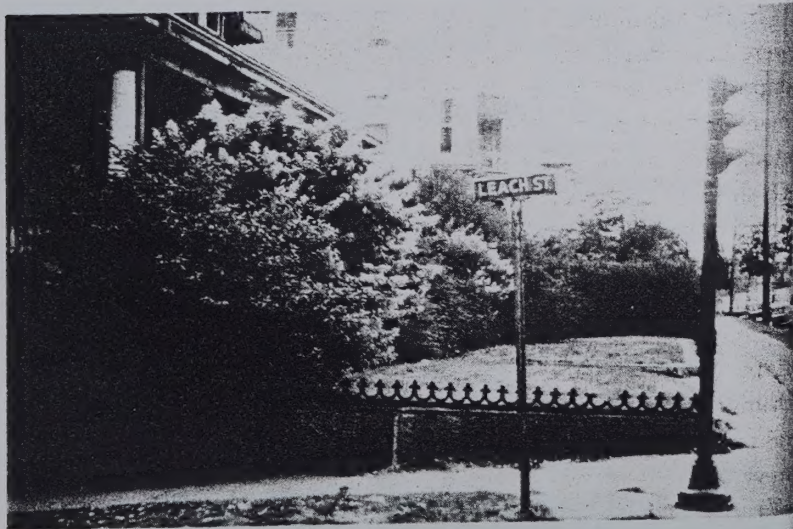
In the Salem quarterly court, 27 March 1638, the Salem jurymen were Lawrence Leach¹, Peter Palfrey, Jeffrey Massey, Richard Davenport, Thomas Venner, George Norton and John Woodbury, foreman. At this court, Abram Whiteire was sentenced to sit in the stocks for one hour for misdemeanors. Richard Lambert was fined 10 shillings and ordered to sit in the stocks on two public days for drunkenness. Robert Morgan was fined one pound, and Edward Hall, servant to a Mr. Friend, was fined 10 shillings, each for being "overseen in drink."

Other degrees of drunkenness at the time were tippling, common tippling, drinking, much in drink, excessive drinking, suspicion of drunkenness, distempered with drink, disguised with drink, overtaken with drink, overcome with drink, and second drunk. It must have been interesting as well as difficult to determine the gradations of the offense.

At a general Town meeting in Salem on 31 December 1638, seven men were chosen to manage the affairs of the settlement for the

coming year. An assumption that these were the most prominent men of the community may be warranted. They were Lawrence Leach¹, John Balch, Roger Conant, John Woodbury, John Endecott, William Hathorne and Jeffrey Massey. All were reelected in 1639.

In 1638, the meeting house became inadequate to accommodate the people who attended religious services, and on 31 December the Town agreed that there should forthwith be created an addition, and that a rate should be levied for payment. It was decided to enlarge the meeting house by lengthening it 25 feet. A fireplace (which must have been about 10 and one-half feet in width) was authorized; this provision for heating of a meeting house was most extraordinary, for few if any other Towns boasted of this convenience at the time. The cost of the addition was 63 pounds, and the builder was John Pickering. In addition to him, the signers of the proposed construction agreement on 12 December 1638 (as witnesses) were Lawrence Leach¹, John Endecott, John Woodbury, Will Hathorne and Roger Conant. The document was subsequently sub-



Sign designating Leach Street, Salem, Massachusetts, 1964

mitted to the Town meeting for approval. Obviously, contractual commitments were carefully overseen and guarded by the early residents of New England.

On 9 December 1639, the Town granted Lawrence another 10 acres of meadow, soon followed on 23 December 1639 by a grant of an additional 15 acres. Earlier, at the Town meeting of 15 May 1639, two of his sons were granted 70 acres, of which seven were to be meadow; they relinquished their former grants of 20 and 30 acres, respectively.

It became evident that land ownership was expanding rapidly by the early 1640's. On 5 February 1643-4, the Town ordered that the lots laid out next to Goodman Leech's, "at the great hill, namely Jacob Barney's and Richard Ingersoll's, should all determine with a straight line, at the top of the hill at the marked tree where Lawrence Leach's lot ends."

By 1646, the settlement of Manchester required better means of transportation and access. The old path to Cape Ann was very poor, and probably nothing had been done to improve it since it was originated. The first spot which was sought to be improved was at a place called Mackarel Cove. Salem was presented to the local Manchester court because there was no sufficient bridge at the Cove, and the Town was ordered to build one. At a Town meeting on 26 October 1646, probably to meet the necessities of the Manchester settlers, the Town of Salem ordered that a way between the ferry at Salem and the head of Jeffry's Creek be laid out forthwith, by Lawrence Leach¹, William Woodbury, Richard Brackenbury, Ensign William Dixy, Roger Conant and Lieutenant Lothrop, and "that it be such a way as men may travel on horseback and drive cattle; and if such a way may not be found then to take speedy course to set up a foot bridge at Mackarel Cove." Ensign Dixy certified that the committee of Salem, appointed to lay out a way toward Manchester, had done so and made it sufficient, on 30 December 1646.

It is probable that Lawrence had fully earned the confidence of his peers by that time, for he had also served on trial juries in 1639,

1640 and 1642. He was a Grand Juryman in 1642 and 1645.

On 20 March 1647-8 the Town gave Robert Cole liberty to mow the grass bordering the highway between Henry Herrick's rock and the west end of Lawrence Leach's¹ lot yearly, "provided he does not hinder passing through the way."

John Friend erected a grist mill in the early seventeenth century at a point which was, in 1926, the Elliott Street bridge in Salem. After Mr. Friend's death in 1655, his son sold the mill to Lawrence Leach¹, but the deed was not passed until after 1662, the year of Lawrence's death. The mill was appraised at 40 pounds, of which only 30 pounds had been paid.

On 20 November 1657, the Salem selectmen ordered that the way from the meeting house "on Cape Ann-Side to Lawrence Leach and his mill shall be directly in the Country way to Edmund Grover's and from thence to the way lying betwixt the said Grover's land and of Osman Transke and so forward through the land of Henery Hericke."

The last known references to Lawrence Leach¹ occurred a few years before his death in 1662. At a Town meeting held 14 December 1659, it was agreed that "our brethren and neighbors of Cape Ann-Side are thus bounded in reference to the maintenance of the ministry, viz. first, from the east side of the river commonly known by the name of Bass River and so to the swamp that runneth out of Lawrence Leach's meadow where it will meet with Wenham line and so unto Manchester bounds, provided they maintain their poor and make and maintain the highways within the said limits: and so to be free from all charge about our poor or highways and all levies or rates which concern them and all things about ordering of fences shall be made by the select men in being, and if there be no select men or man on their side then they have liberty to make choice of two or three of themselves to join with the select men in the premisses above said."

In 1660, Lawrence was listed as the owner of Plat 100, land approximating 2,500 feet by 500 feet in size, fronting on the Cow-House River.

It was reported in the Phelps Leach source book that Lawrence also had an iron foundry, the first in the colonies, and that his brother John worked there. However, no documentation of the source was offered, and other references consulted by the author made no mention of iron foundry ownership.

Lawrence's will bequeathed all to his wife, Elizabeth, and administration was granted to her. She died 12 years after his death, about 1674.

Lawrence Leach¹ is credited with 10 children:

1. Robert, b. 1605 in England; d. 22 May 1688.
2. Clement, b. in England and remained there.
3. John², b. in England; d. 1659.
4. Margaret, b. 1613 in England; arrived on the *Susan and Ellen*, 1635.
5. Ambrose, b. 1616 in England; a carpenter, in America by 1641.
- ✓ 6. Richard, b. 1618 in England; m. ^{Sarah} Ann Fuller 1639; freeman ^{son of Wm. Law} ^{Ann} ^{Fuller} 1665; d. 9 May 1687 at Rial-side, Salem, Massachusetts, the Leach farm.
7. Edmund (was in New Haven, Connecticut 1647-49).
8. Rachel.
9. James, b. in Salem; d. 30 June 1697.
10. Giles, b. in Salem, 1632.

SOURCES:

- American Heritage History of Colonial Antiques*, American Heritage Publishing Company, 1967, pp. 9-10, 16-17.
- Americana*, op. cit., p. 178.
- Banks, Charles E., *Topographical Dictionary of 2885 English Emigrants to New England, 1620-1650*, Third Edition, Genealogical Publishing Co., 1963, p. 143.
- Leach, F. Phelps, op. cit., Vol. I, pp. 3-4.
- Perley, Sidney, op. cit., Vol. I, 1924, pp. 118-119, 127, 197, 293, 316-18, 352-5, 417-19, 423, 428, 454, 459, 463; Vol. II, 1926, pp. 8-10, 62-4, 68, 75, 77, 155, 174-5, 188, 190-1, 231, 408-9; Vol. III, 1928, p. 328.

Savage, James, *Genealogical Dictionary of First Settlers of New England, Showing Three Generations of Those Who Came Before May 1692, on Basis of Farmer's Register*, 1860, Vol. III, pp. 66-7.

Somerset Parish Registers, Marriages 1559-1812, Vol. III, Phillimore & Co., London, 1901.

GENERATION II

JOHN LEACH

(Lawrence¹)

- b. In parish of Ash (Martok), Somersetshire, England
- d. 1659

PROBLEMS in human relations soon overtook the early settlers of New England. In 1633, the Reverend Thomas Hooker, pastor of the congregation at Newtown (Cambridge), objected to the way in which the Reverend John Cotton manipulated control of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. In Hooker's opinion the manner in which Cotton dictated decisions of the magistrates and insisted upon the clergy's right to advise the civil authorities in matters of law and justice was dangerously close to tyranny.

By 1636, Hooker's congregation became dissatisfied with the land available to them, and hearing about the fertile land of the Connecticut Valley, petitioned the General Court for permission to move, which was granted grudgingly. Thus began the first major exodus from the original areas settled, and later a future generation of Leach would remove to Connecticut.

Despite the flight of occasional "heretics," the Massachusetts Bay Colony prospered, and John Leach² remained in his original home in Salem. Her citizens, confident that they had been chosen by the Almighty, made work an end in itself, and they feared idleness as they feared the devil. They cultivated diligence, thrift and sobriety as cardinal virtues, and so great was their application to their vocations that material success could hardly elude them.

Fishing was only one of the profitable operations of Massachusetts Bay. The forest provided white oak for barrel staves and ships' timbers, spruce and pine for spars, and turpentine, rosin and tar for ships' stores. Shipbuilders in New England were soon supplying

ships for both colonial and English commerce. Massachusetts farms existed primarily for the subsistence of the owners, but they also produced a surplus of foodstuffs for shipment to the West Indies and other markets.

The primitive conditions of life in New England when John Leach² lived in Salem in the early seventeenth century are highlighted in a commentary that appeared in Governor John Winthrop's journal (1631): "The governor, being at his farm house at Mistick, walked out after supper, and took a piece in his hand supposing he might see a wolf (for they came daily around the house and killed swine, calves, etc.), and being about a mile off, it grew suddenly dark, so as, in coming home, he mistook his path and went till he came to the little house of Sagamore John, which stood empty. There he stayed, and having a piece of match in his pocket (for he always carried about him match and a compass, and in summer time snake weed) he made a good fire near the house, and lay down upon some old mats which he found there, and so spent the night, sometimes walking by the fire, sometimes singing psalms, and sometimes getting wood, but could not sleep. It was (through God's mercy) a warm night; but a little before day it began to rain, and having no cloak, he made shift by a long pole to climb up into the house.

"In the morning, there came thither an Indian squaw, but perceiving her before she had opened the door, he barred her out; yet she stayed there a great while essaying to get in, and at last she went away, and he returned home, his servants having been much perplexed for him, and having walked about, and shot off pieces, and hallooed in the night, but he had heard them not. . . ."

John Leach² had, in 1636 or 1637, a 10-acre land grant at Salem near that of his brother RICHARD. In a list of land grants handwritten by Roger Conant (*q.v.*) 25 December 1637, John Leach² is listed as entitled to two acres. Also, since the figure "1" preceded the listing of his name, he was apparently single at that time (the number indicated the persons in the family). However, this entry could have been ascribed to John Leach, brother of Lawrence¹, for

his brother John was known to have been single, since his wife remained in England.

John² married first, before 1648, Sarah, daughter of Roger Conant, and second, Sarah, daughter of John Waldron.

Some of John Leach's² brothers are noted in the records:

ROBERT received a grant of land in Salem in 1637; became a freeman in 1644; was a founder of Manchester and settled there in 1636, where he was Town clerk until 1648, Selectman 1658-61, and again in 1680.

JAMES was a weaver at Great Island, Portsmouth, New Hampshire, and owned the island that in 1924 was called Leach Island. He was grand juryman 1654-55; constable 1656; and tythingman 1678.

GILES owned 16 acres of land at Weymouth, Massachusetts in 1663. He became one of the founders of Bridgewater in 1664 where he became entitled, by purchase, to one of the 56 shares of the thousands of acres bought in 1645 from Indian chief Massasoit (Indian King Philip's father) by Captain Miles Standish. He is listed in Bridgewater records as "Goodman," suggesting that he was a prominent and esteemed member of the Bridgewater church, and "head man of the fourth seat by the pulpit." He was on friendly terms with King Philip and his tribe, and his residence was in the immediate vicinity of Satucket Pond, the location of King Philip's headquarters.

RICHARD received a grant of land in Salem near John² in 1639. He became a member of the first church of Salem in 1648, and a freeman in 1665. He was a lieutenant in 1675 and became a captain in 1677 of the militia at the time of King Philip's war (see John Leach³). His lieutenant was Nathaniel Putnam, grandfather of Samuel and Daniel Putnam, cousins of Israel and Rufus Putnam, famed generals in the War of the American Revolution.

RICHARD's son John, nephew of John² and cousin of John³ in the direct line, served in King Philip's War under Captain Henchman beginning 2 November 1675, and was credited on 30 November with £01 19 04. This sum was considerably more than his associates

ours -
this does
not follow
them

were paid, and the discrepancy may indicate that he carried the rank of trooper.

John (not in the direct line) was credited with military service under Captain Moseley on 10 December 1675, and received £04 19 04 at Dedham for service in the Dedham Plain campaign. On 29 February 1675-6 he received £02 14 00 for further service under Moseley in the Narragansett campaign.

Ultimately, in 1733, John's son John (not in the direct line) was a claimant of his grant in "Narragansett Township No. 5, Souhegan East, now Bedford, part of Merrimac, and part of Manchester, N. H." In that year this township was drawn to the grantees or their claimants then residing in numerous towns, including the Boston area. The grantees met and chose a committee of three to administer the grants.

A different method of management and settlement was proposed by this committee, and it was allowed by the General Court. They proposed to settle 60 families; the other 60 grantees, or those who became proprietors, were to pay five pounds on their rights into the general propriety. Those who drew odd-numbered lots were to pay the five pounds; those who drew even numbers were to settle families. All were to bear a proportional part in meeting the conditions of settlement of the township.

John Leach² in the direct line had the following children:

1. John, bapt. 3 September 1648; d. 1648.
2. John³, bapt. 19 November 1648 (twin).
3. Sarah, bapt. 19 November 1648 (twin); d. 1649 or 1650.
4. Rachel, bapt. 6 April 1651.
5. Sarah, bapt. 6 June 1652.
6. Elizabeth, bapt. 27 November 1653.
7. Mary, bapt. 3 September 1654; m. Thomas Field 2 March 1681.
8. Richard, bapt. 15 June 1656; probably died in King Philip's war.

SOURCES:

- American Heritage History of the Thirteen Colonies*, American Heritage Publishing Company, 1967, pp. 103, 106, 138-9.
- Bodge, George M., *Soldiers in King Philip's War*, Genealogical Publishing Company, Baltimore, 1967 (originally published Boston, 1906), pp. 55, 71-2, 431.
- Leach, F. Phelps, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, pp. 4-7.
- Perley, Sidney, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, pp. 118, 456, 461.
- Savage, James, *op. cit.*, Vol. III, pp. 66-7.

duplicate

Leach

coming year. An assumption that these were the most prominent men of the community may be warranted. They were Lawrence

→ Roger Conant To: Balch
Lawrence Leach

Autographs of Roger Conant, John Balch, Lawrence Leach¹

Higginson also advised prospective colonists to bring with them necessities, were Lawrence Leach, John Lincolnton, John Woodbury, John Hathorne and Roger Conant. The document was subsequently sub-



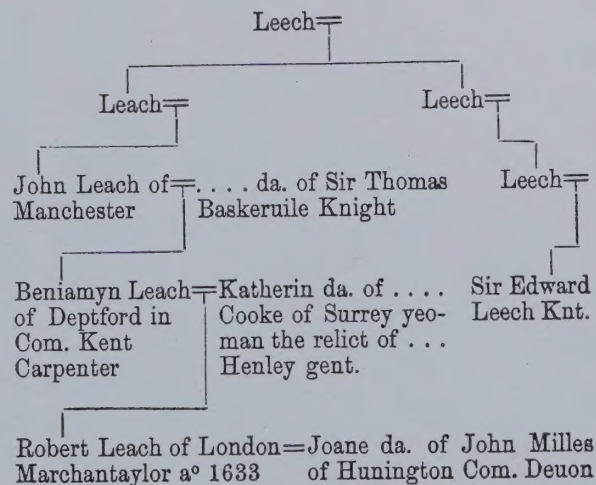
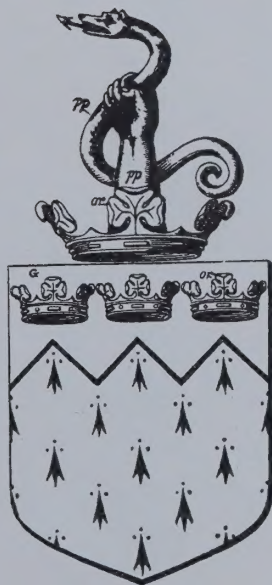
Sign designating Leach Street, Salem,
Massachusetts, 1964

The following copied just because it was there. Relation, if any, unknown

Leach.

Billingsgate.

Quere the Armes what difference



ROBERT LEACHE.

Jamer Savage - Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England

LEACH, AMBROSE, Boston 1648, is spok. of in Hutch. Coll. 298, and, in 1663, was concern. in Narraganset, or the King's Province. BENJAMIN, Bridgewater, s. of Giles, m. 1702, Hepzibah, d. of Joseph Washburn, had Ann, b. 1703; Joseph, 1705; Mary, 1708; Sarah, 1711; Benjamin, 1713; Ichabod, 1716; Jerathmeel, and Benanuel, tw. 1718; Nokes, 1720; Susanna, 1722; Hannah, 1725; Phebe; Nathan; and Eunice. DAVID, Bridgewater, br. of the preced. by w. Hannah had Mercy, b. 1693; Hannah, 1696; Ephraim, 1699; Experience, 1702; David, 1706; Mehitable, 1711; and Abigail, 1714; and he d. 1757.

EBENEZER, Bridgewater, br. of the preced. m. 1707, Prudence Stetson of Scituate, may have had Lydia and possib. others. EDMUND, New Haven 1647-9 and may be longer. GILES, Weymouth 1656, but rem. to Bridgewater bef. 1665 says Mitchell, wh. ment. that he m. Ann Nokes, 1656 (but Weymouth rec. says, 20 Jan. 1657), had Sarah, b. 1656 (but rec. says, 13 Nov. 1657); Eliz.; Samuel, 1662; David; John; Ebenezer; Benjamin; and, perhaps, others, add. that Sarah m. John Aldrich; and Eliz. m. 1693, John Emerson. JOHN, Salem 1637, then had, says Felt, gr. of ld. was br. of Lawrence, d. Dec. 1658. He gave his small prop. to his neph. Richard's s. John. JOHN, Salem 1637, s. of Lawrence, had gr. of ld. says Felt, that yr. and there bapt. John, 3 Sept. 1648; John, and Sarah, tw. Nov. 1648; Rachel, 6 Apr. 1651; Sarah, again, 6 June 1652; Eliz. 27 Nov. 1653; Mary, 3 Sept. 1654; Richard, 15 June 1656; Remember, and Hannah, 3 Nov. 1661; was, prob. the freem. 1681. Mary m. 2 Mar. 1681, Thomas Field. JOHN, Beverly 1671, may have been s. of the preced. or of other s. of Lawrence. JOHN, Bridgewater, s. of Giles, by w. Alice had John, b. 1695; Giles, 1697; Stephen, 1698; Abiel, 1700; Ebenezer, 1702; Mehitable, 1704; Timothy, 1707; Nehemiah, 1709; Solomon, 1712; and Jesse, 1714; and d. 1744. LAWRENCE, Salem 1629, came ✓ in one of the fleet with Higginson, req. adm. 19 Oct. 1630, and 18 May foll. was sw. freem. d. June 1662, aged 82, or 85, leav. all his est. to wid. Eliz. wh. d. 1674. Of his s. beside John, and Robert, herein ment. Clement liv. in Eng. and Richard d. here 1647, leav. s. John and Robert. RICHARD, Salem 1639, m. Ann Fuller, freem. 1665, lieutenant. ✓ 1675, and capt. two yrs. aft. d. 1687, leav. sev. ch. of wh. I only kn. that Hannah was bapt. 2 June 1662; and Sarah m. 7 Feb. 1667, Joseph Herrick. ROBERT, Charlestown 1637, where Mary unit. with the ch. 9 Sept. 1639, might be thot. his w. but Felt gives him gr. of ld. at Salem 1637; and the freem. of 1644 was mem. of neither of the chs. in those towns, yet he is said to be s. of Lawrence, and to have d. bef. his f. However, we may presume there was one at ea. and he of Charlestown was householder in 1658 and 78, chos. tythingman 1679, and d. 22 May 1688, aged a. 80, says the rec. ROBERT, and SAMUEL were inhabs. of Manchester, and in favor of that small town petit. for relief, in 1686, from expense of support. worship. See Geneal. Reg. X. 322. SETH, Bridgewater, m. Mary, d. of Thomas Whitman. The name was freq. A Margaret, aged 15, was passeng. in the Planter, ano. Margaret, 22, in the Susan and Ellen, both from London 1635. SAMUEL, Bridgewater, s. of Giles, m. Mary, d. of Nicholas Byram, had Samuel, Josiah, Seth, and Elijah. THOMAS, New London 1680, m. Abigail, d. of Richard Haughton, wh. d. soon aft. her ch. Sarah was b. 7 July 1684. By two other ws. he had ten ch. more bef. 1719.

LEACH

A Genealogy

Top Red (Gules) with
gold crowns

Bottom ermine

This follows the line of
(Capt) Richard's bro, John,





Ao. 1636.	
Lands granted to those following :	
To Roger Conant	200 acres
Peter Palfrey	200
John Balch	200
Captane Endicott	200
Mr Reade	300
mr Sharpe	300
Leiftenant Johnson	200
Robt. Coles	300
mr. Blackleech	300
Townsend Bishop	300
Thomas Scruggs	200
mr Phillip Verrin	160
mr Batter	200
John Alderman	50
Thomas Antram	30
mr Alford, prided in case	} 200
depte, to leave yt, de-	
siring no advantage by it.	
Richard Bishop	20
John Barber	30
Hugh Browne	20
Thomas Browning	40
Thomas Chub	20
Willm Connyus	10
Nichus Cary	20
John Cook	20
Sam Eborne	20
John Elford	25
George Emery	40
Jeffrey Esty	20
Pascha ffoote	40
Benjamyn felton	20
mr. Garford	30
Edw. Gaskell	20
Edw Grover	20
Roger Haskell	20
Robt Goodall	20
John Gally	20
Willm Goose	50
Thomas Golthwaite	10
George Harris	20
John Hart	10
Richard Hutchinson	60
Richard Hollingworth	20
Richard Ingersoll*	80

Willm James	25
mr Jackson	50
Willm Jegles	50
Robt Leech	20
John Leech	10
Robt Lemon	10
Willm Lord	20
John Leech jun	30
willm Marston	30
John Marshe	20
widow Mason	20
Robt Morgan	20
Thom Moore	20
John Norman	20
Robt Pease	10
John Pease	20
francis Perry	20
Jonathan Porter	20
John Pickworth	20
Thom Reade	10
Thom Roots	20
Joshua Roots	20
James Standishe	20
James Smyth	20
John Stone	10
John Sheply	20
Michell Shafflyn	20
Elias Stileman	30
John Symonds	20
francis Skerry	20
Mich. Sallowes	20
mr Smyth	150
mr John Thorndike	100
Abram Temple	—
Rich Waters	10
Rich Walker	40
Abram warren	20
Thom Watson	10
Humphrey Woodbery	40
mr Hathorne	200
Thom Tuck	10
John Devorex	10
Willm Woodbery	40
Thom Moores widow	10
Thom Eaborne	30
Richard Roots	20
Anth Dike	40
mr. felton	20

Edm marshall	20
Thom Lathrop	30
Robt Cotta	30
John Talbye	30
widoe Skarlett	30

AT JEFFRYES CREEKE.*

Sam Archer	60
Wm Allen	50
John Sibley	50
Geo: willms	40
John Moore	40
John Blake	30
Serjeant wolfe	50
Serjeant Dixie	50
Wm Walcott	30
Wm Agur	30
Roger Morie	50
John Sanders	40
Wm Bound	40
Henr. Herrick	40
Geo Norton	40
Thom Olney	40
Willm King	40
Jo Grafton	30
John Hardy	60
Sam Moore	40
Hugh Laskyn	70
Edr. Giles	60
Jacob Barnes	50
Willm Dodge	60
mr Gott	75
Rich Brackenbury	75
John Horne	75
Jeffry Massy	75
Rich waterman	80
Leift davenport	80
Raph ffog	80
John Holgrave	60
Rch. Reymont	60
Lawr Leech	100
Rbt Moulton	100
mr Stileman	100
mr Gardner	100
Captane Traske	100
fr weston	120
mr Higginson	150
daniell Ray	160
mr Peters	300

next mr
Coles.

*The 80 acres granted to Richard Ingersoll were at Ryall side and were improved him as a farm. His

estate was settled 1664, and this farm was appraised at £7.

(To be continued.)

*Jeffreyes Creek is now Manchester.

Salem QC 27:7.1630 Lawrence Leech on jury

" 28:1 (Mar) 1637 " " on jury. Roger Brent farmer, Daniell Ray & others
Dec 1636 " " " " & others on jury

" Oct 1637 " " farmer of - jury

" 27:1 (Mar) 1638 Lawrence Leech on jury

" Sept 1639 John Leech & John Arden

" " v Rich Graves. If old brother promises to pay the debt if Graves acknowledged for it

" 29:7 (May) 1640. Captain Traske admonished to be more careful about grinding and toll-taking. Richr. Inkersell testified that he had grists weighed before Lawrence Leech, a grandjurymen, before they went to mill, and when they came back they were much short of weight wanting in two grists 7li. each and 5li. in another, besides being badly ground. Others testified. Richard Inkersell to have satisfaction.

" Mar? 1641 on jury again

" Jan 1641 John Leech & William Mead & Wm. Cotton.
Lawrence Leech on grand jury

" 27:10 (Dec) 1642 He, Daniell Ray & others on jury of twelve

" Dec 1642 A dozen men incl. Lawrence Leech & Daniell Ray presented for breach of entry of cow, keeping their cattle in the common cow fields & see but Roger Haswell fined - his cattle being "discreet" he was quiet. Complaint of by neighbors. heard testified

" 27:6 (July) 1644 Richard Leech received a pig of John Burrage, servant to Jno. Porter and himself, and his uncle Jno. Leech concealed it, not having it cried, until three months later. Wit: Jacob Barney.

" Feb 1644-5 Richard and Jno. Leech fined 20s. each.
List of presentments signed by Lawrence Leech

" Feb 1648-9 John Leech, sr., being presented for living from his wife, answered that he often sent and wrote to her, but she was unwilling to come, and he was not able to live in Old England. Discharged.

" Feb 1650-1 Town of Manchester presented for a bad way between Manchester and Lawrence Leech's farm. Line between John and Manchester to be run, to ascertain which town shall repair it.

" Sep 1649 John Leech Jr fined for beating Samuel Allin, son of William Allin, and setting his dogs on cow to the pillage of their tails.

" 24:4 (June) 1651 Rob. Leech chosen & sworn constable of Manchester.

Sep 1650

Thomas Goldsmith asked that George, son of George Harris, deceased, might be restored to him, being his servant and taken from his brother in his absence and placed by Tho. Tuck, father-in-law to said Geo. Harris, with John Leech. Referred to arbitrators, who granted the request.

See Reverse for John Leech's will

12 2432
Salem Quarterly Court June 1659

Will^t of John Leach, sr., proved by Eliza. Buxton and Mary Felton; Richard Leach, executor. Amount of inventory,* 33li. 12s. 10d.

† "That wth John Leach senior spake about the disposinge of his estate.

"We whose names ar underwritten, beinge both in one roome, about halfe a yeare before the decease of s^d John Leach Senior, the sayd John Leach comminge in from worke he sayd unto us he was so sicke he thought he should haue falln downe dead at his worke: & he did feare that he might at one tyme or other dye suddenly: therefore he did desire of us both (that if in case it should so fall out) to be witnesses that all that he had he gaue unto John Leach, and at another tyme hauinge further conference about the disposinge of his estate unto the sayd John Leach we told him there were seuerall John Leaches he should doe well to expresse w^{ch} of them he sayd to John Leach the son of Richd Leach: sayinge further that he had was but litle, if he should deuide it it would come but to litle." Elisabeth (her mark) Buxton and Mary (her mark) Felton.

*Inventory of the estate of John Leach, sr., was taken 20: 10: 1658, by Daniel (his mark) Rea and Henery (his mark) Cooke: House, orchard & 6 acres of land, 13li.; 20 acres of land & 2 acres of meadow, 3li.; 1 ox, 5li.; 1 Cow, 2li. 10s.; 1 calfe, 18s.; 1 sheep, 16s.; in Corne, 2li. 16s. 6d.; his wearinge apparel, 2li.; his beddinge, 2li.; 1 Cart, 1li.; 1 smal pot & kette, 10s.; 1 chest, 2 axes & other old Lumber, 1li.; in hay, 1li.; total, 35li. 2s. 6d. In yarne, 1li. 1s.; an old table and a gun and sword, 1li.; total, 37li. 3s. 6d. Debts: To Philip Veren, 6s.; Adam Wesgate, 4s. 6d.; John Ingersol, 3s.; Willyam Curtis, 5s.; Ed. Beecham, 2s. 6d.; Tho. Ricks, 1s. 4d.; the Cow keeper, 4s.; John Burton, 3s.; John Grover, 1s. 4d.; the charges of his burial, 1li. 10s.; rates for 2 yeare, 10s.; total, 3li. 10s. 8d.

Ipswich Q.C. Mar 1672. Complaint by Petrus & others that highway by beverden is unsafellike flint & Sgt Richard Leach to see to it the situation is corrected. (See Flint fee)

Mar 1655

Capt. Richard Leach, aged about sixty-seven years, testified that some time before Mr. Hugh Peters went out of the country for Old England, he heard John Norman's wife say that she had on then (which she showed) cloth that she had of Mr. Peters in part payment for the ten acre lot of theirs that her husband had sold him. This was in the North field and about the year 1640. Sworn, Feb. 4, 1684-85. before John Hathorne,* assistant.

Records of the Glory of the Mass. Bay in New England (Vol 5)
by Nathaniel Shurtleff (1854)

33 12 May 1675. It is ordered that Richard Leach be left en't, & John Pickering ensigne, to the second ffoote company in Salem, under the conduct of Capt. John Corwin.

It is ordered that Thomas Barnum be ensign to the ffoote company in Ipswich, under the conduct of Major General Denisson, Esq, their capt.

172 22 Oct 1677 In ans^r to the petition of Salem villagers for a ffoote company, it is ordered, that all those of the said village that live on the west side of Ipswich road may be freed from Capt. Bickins company, and shall be exercised at home by left en't Richard Leach, who is hereby appointed their left en't, leaving it to the militia of Salem to bound the two companies of Salem.

223 1680 - re R. Leach / Chubb's creek - boundaries Beverly, Woburn, Waverchester

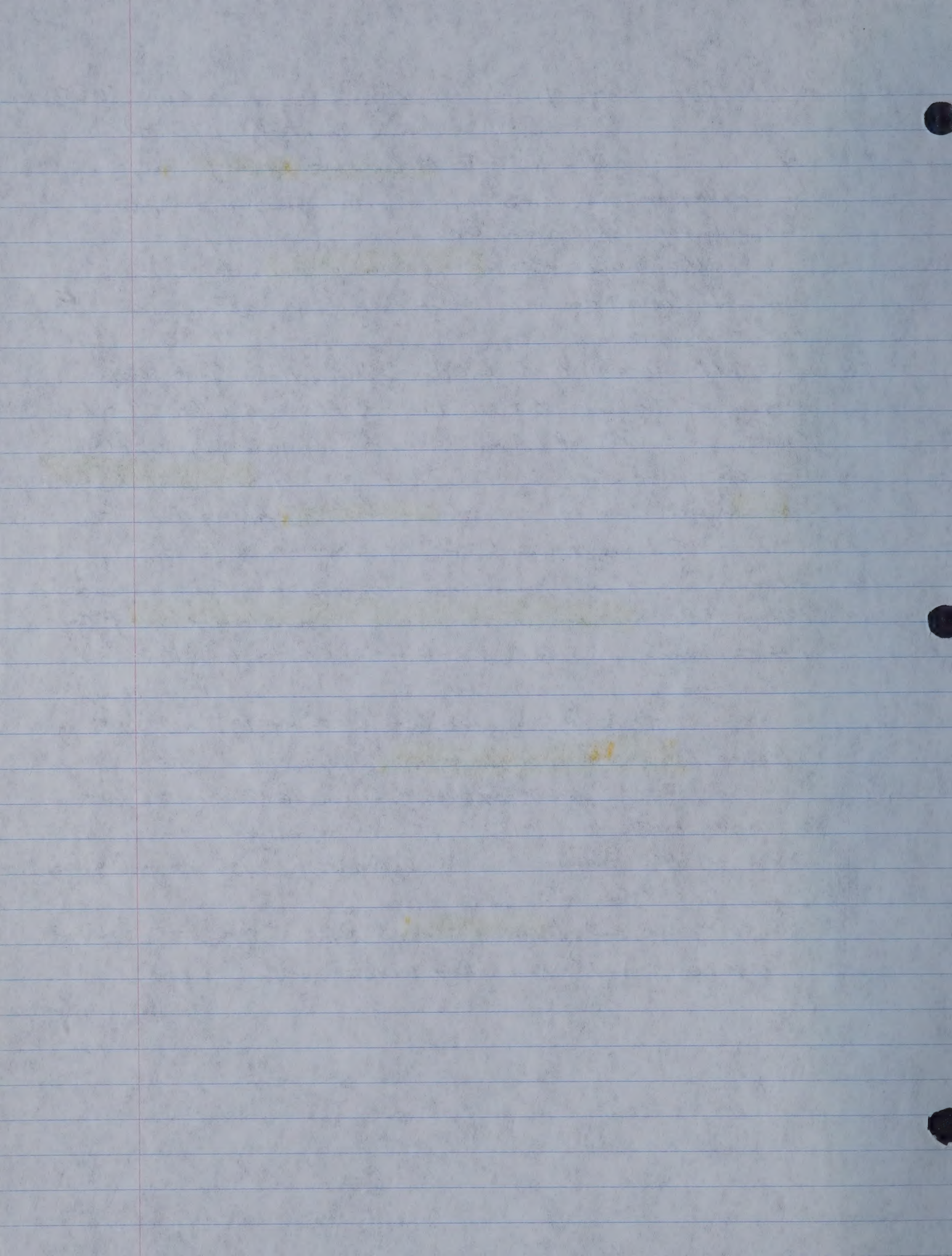
384 30 Nov 1683 Left en't Richard Leach is appointed captain of the ffoote company at Salem Village & Nathaniel Putnam to be left en't.

Samuel Apleton, Esq, is appointed captain to the first foot company in Ipswich, Ensigne Thomas Barnum left en't, Symon Stacey ensigne.

Mr Daniel Eggs is appointed captain of the second foot company in Ipswich, Mr J^r Apleton, J^r left en't, & Tho J^r ensigne

Corporall John Andrews appointed left en't to the 3^d company of Woburn, and Wm Goodhue, J^r, ensigne

It is ordered, that Ensigne J^r Good be left en't to the foot company at Topsfield, & Sarg^t John Pebody ensigne



Pioneers of Massachusetts

Charles H. Pope - pp 280-1

LEECH, LEACH,

Ambrose, carpenter, Sudbury, propr., contracted in 1641 to build a bridge over the river. Was one of the sureties for Charles Dobson at Boston 6 (9) 1649. Res. at Narragansett Nov. 9, 1663, when he sold land at Boston. [Mdx. Files, 1650.]

Mr. John, bro. of Lawrence, Salem, recd. for an inhabitant in 1636. Presented at court in 1647, for not living with his wife. Frm. May 29, 1644.

His nunc. will was prob. 20 (10) 1653. He was occupied at the Iron Works. Beq. all to John, son of Richard Leech.

✓ Lawrence, sent over to Salem by the Mass. Bay Co. in 1629. [Suff. De. I.] Juryman Nov. 29, 1630. Frm. May 18, 1631. Propr.; town officer repeatedly. Lands gr. to his sons Robert and John, 1636-7. A way laid out in 1657 from the meeting-house on Cape Ann side to his mill. Wife Elizabeth memb. chh. in earliest list.

His nunc. will prob. 25 (4) 1662. He was 85 years old. Beq. all to his wife. Owed £30 for the mill. Admin. gr. to widow Elizabeth.

Margaret, ae. 22, came in the Susan and Ellen in April, 1635.

Richard, Salem, 1638; frm. May 3, 1665. He deposed in 1678, ae. about 60 years. Wife Sarah adm. chh. 1 (9) 1648 or 13 (6) 1648. Ch. John bapt. 3 (7) 1648, John and Sarah bapt. 19 (9) 1648, Rachel bapt. 6 (2) 1651, Eliza bapt. 27 (9) 1653, Mary bapt. 3 (7) 1654, Richard bapt. 15 (4) 1656.

His will dated 17 June, prob. Nov. 25, 1687, beq. to wife Sarah; son John; daus. Elizabeth, wife of Benjamin Collins, Mary, wife of Benjamin Ireson, Hannah and Rachel; Joseph, Sarah and John Herrick, ch. of dau. Sarah; young Pascho Foote, now living with him. [Original, written on parchment, in Es. Files, 47, 87.] See Fuller, Ann.

Robert, collar maker, Charlestown, 1637. Propr. He deposed in 1663, ae. about 57 years. Sarah adm. chh. 9 (7) 1639. Mary d. Feb. 11, 1658. Ch. Elizabeth m. John Fosket.

He d. May 22, 1688, ae. about 80. Will prob. at Boston 14 June, 1688, beq. to the 7 children of John Fosket and dau. Mary; chiefly to Thomas F. and his wife Miriam.

Directory of Ancestral Heads 1620-1700

Frank R. Holmes - p cxlviii

LEACH

The English lineage is traced to John Le Leche, a surgeon to Edward III. The term *leach* is an old synonym for a physician, and is derived from the Teutonic root meaning to heal.

GILES, was at Weymouth, Mass., 1656; removed to Bridgewater, Mass., before 1665.

JOHN, living at Salem, Mass., 1637.

✓ LAWRENCE, brother of preceding, b. Eng., 1589, located at Salem, Mass., 1629.

RICHARD, at Salem, Mass., 1639.

THOMAS, b. Eng., 1652, married at New London, Conn., 1680.

✓ The Norman People

Publ. anon., London (1874) Reprint SAC (1909) p 307

Leach (or Medicus)

Robert, William, Odard, Hugh, Nicholas, Matthew, Durand, Arnolph, Medicus - Normandy 1180-1880 (MRS).

William, Robert, Julian, Alexander, Medicus - England 1184-1200 (RCR)

(Also Leche, Leech)

Founders of American Families - by Meredith Colke p 174:

Leach, Lawrence - Salem Mass 1629, d there 24 June 166-

Freeman, Miller - "Lawrence Leach of Salem"

1924-26, 3 volumes.

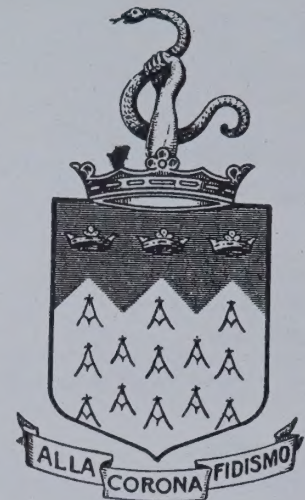
SEE FULLER SEARCH DATA-BACK SECTION

(No break-through has been found.)

LEACH ANCESTRY

The Coat of Arms of the family has upon it three crowns, and the significance of these crowns is this: On one occasion, about the year 1358, John Leach had the English King, Edward III, and his two prisoners, King David of Scotland and King John of France, as his guests, and as a token of the incident, on leaving, King Edward handed to Leach three crowns. Afterwards, when the King granted him a large landed estate, three crowns were placed on his Arms.

The author has in her possession an old English deed of the Leach Family written in old English on sheepskin and given during the reign of Charles the II.



Lawrence Leach, with his wife, Elizabeth, and sons, John, Richard and Robert, came from England to Salem, Mass., in 1629, in the "fleet" with Rev. Francis Higginson. Lawrence Leach was descended from an ancient family in the west of England, and one of his ancestors was Dr. John Leach, surgeon to King Edward III.

Lawrence Leach held many important offices in the new colony; for years he was one of the seven chosen men who conducted the public affairs of Salem, and had among his colleagues Gov. John Endicott, William Hawthorne, Roger Conant, John Woodbury and John Balch. He was one of the Founders of Mass. Bay Colony.

As a historian has said of Lawrence Leach, so it may be said of many of his descendants. "The usefulness of his life gained respect for his memory. (See Journal of American Gen., 1928.)

Lawrence Leach lived on the southerly side of what is now Elliot Street, on Rial Side, about on the site of the barn of the late William Putnam, and he gave his farm to his son Richard about 1643. Nov. 15, 1693, the selectmen appointed a committee, consisting of John Putnam, Sr., Israel Porter and Samuel Gardner, to lay out a road from his house to the country road (now Conant Street), and the road is where Elliot Street now runs to Foster Street, and then through the latter street to Conant. The next day, the committee "laid out a highway twenty feet wide from the place where Capt. Richard Leach did live straight unto the Country road near unto the dwelling house of John Flint upon the northeast side of John Trask, Jr., his land. Said Trask hath liberty to hang a gate on that end of said way next the country road if he see cause." The house of John Flint stood on the otherside of Conant Street, on the southerly corner of Burley Street. Timothy Norman² lived here in

1693. Besides John Robert and Giles herein mentioned, Clement lived in England. Lawrence Leach had the first iron foundry in America.

SECOND GENERATION

Brothers of
son
GILES, the founder of the Leach family of Bridgewater, Mass., was the youngest son of Lawrence and Elizabeth Leach, of Salem, Mass. He was born in 1632. The earliest record of him is under date of 20 February, 1656/7, on which day he married Anne Nokes, who at that time resided with the family of Deacon Samuel Bass, at Braintree, in the same colony. At this date, he was probably himself residing at Weymouth, where he participated in a division of lands in 1662 and 1663. At about the same time, he purchased one of the fifty-six proprietary rights in Bridgewater, to which town he removed, as did Dr. Nicholas Byram, and other of his fellow Weymouth townsmen. Bridgewater was the first inland town settled in Plymouth Colony, and as it was the home for some generations of a large number of the descendants of Giles Leach, it must ever be a place of interest to the entire race descended from him.

His position in the church. In the first mention of him in the Bridgewater records (1662) he is styled "Goodman," which fact suggests that he was then a prominent and esteemed member of the Bridgewater Church. Further evidence on this point is furnished by the action of the Town Meeting held 17 December, 1674, at which it was voted: "That Goodman Bayley should sit in the second seat (of the Church) and Lieut. Hayward and Goodman Alden, Jr. the third seat and that Goodman Hayward and Willis should sit with the Deacon, and that the Elder's wife and old Goodman Hayward's wife and Deacon's wife should sit in the foreseat by the pulpit and that Goodman Leach head man of the 4th seat, and that Nathaniel Hayward in his uncle Willis' his pew." The seats here mentioned were places of honour in the sanctuary, and when it is borne in mind that places of distinction were not assigned in those early days to the undeserving, or out of favoritism, it is apparent that Giles Leach ranked among the first inhabitants of the town. The town records also bear testimony to the fact that he took an active part in municipal affairs, and was entrusted with important public matters. The following entries appear on such records: "Jan. 8, 1668, it was voted at town meeting that Arthur Harris and Giles Leach be appointed a committee to 'see to the execution of and order that boards and bolts not to be carried out of Town from Commons.'" February, 1668, "It was agreed that the Town make choice of Elder Samuel Edson, Ensign Hayward, Giles Leach, and John Carey, to run out the westerly line (west 4 mile line) being the four miles from the centre and to be paid for their trouble." November 24, 1671, "The Town made choice of Giles Leach, Samuel Edson, Mark Lathrop and Thomas Snell to look to the swamps that none be found falling or drawing out any timber out of the swamp, on the penalty of five shilling for every such default." On 10 May, 1681, Giles Leach and John Washburn were chosen surveyor of highways, and in 1683, he was chosen a member of a commission to "Divide the great cedar swamp on the southerly side of the town." On 27 May, 1689, he and Edward Mitchell were elected constables, a position of large importance in early New England, and on 20 May, 1690, he was again chosen surveyor of highways, his fellow surveyor being Joseph Alden, a son of John Alden, the noted Mayflower passenger. In 1695, he was chosen a member of the Grand Inquest of the Colony.

His residence. Mr. Leach resided in the immediate vicinity of Satucket Pond, the haunt of King Philip and of his tribe. He was on friendly terms with King Philip, and in 1680, he conveyed to an Indian named Robin, a "Twenty acre lot situate within the township of Bridgewater lying near unto that pond called Satucket pond and bounded on the one side by ye lands of John Washburn & by lands of Samuel Lombards on ye other side." By virtue of his proprietary

right in Bridgewater, he became a large land holder. His possessions in 1705 consisted of the following tracts, which were surveyed to him that year: "Upland and meadow in Town of Bridgewater—1st, 11 acres upland s. side Town River, where he now liveth; 6 acres of it being a garden plot, which six acres butt on said river, & is bounded by the lands of John Ames to the West, & Samuel Edson's to the East.

"5 acres of upland on same side of river, butting on land of Samuel Edson and Samuel Wadsworth.

"20 acres, lot s. side river bounded by land of Wm. Snow to the south, & Thomas Gannetts to the North W.

"50 acres on Taunton road, adj. Samuel Edson, Sr. on S. E. & Thomas Gennetts, N. W.

"Meadow land adjoining John Carey, Jr. Meadow land adjoining Elder Brett & Samuel Edson, Sr. Meadow land adjoining Thomas Gennett & Frances Carey.

"Fifty acres on Southern side of Nunketnuct Pond.

"10 acres at Cutting Cove river, adj. Elihu Bretts.

"8¼ acres at head of his 50 acres lot on Taunton road, lying upon head butts house to the highway that is at the head of Goodman Ames.

"20 acres at Indian Field, & Bounded at the upper corner next to John Aldrich's house by land of Edward Fobes.

"L and ¾ acres at head of his land where his house stands bounded by Goodman Ames his range, and the head range is bounded by white oak sapling.

"10 acres for Giles Leach laid out Feb. 1701, which he sold to Henry Hersey for 10 years from the date of the deed, which 10 acres lies Easterly of Comfort's Saw Mill.

"82½ acres laid out on E. side of 50 acre lot which butts on the pond, bounded on easterly side by Nathaniel Packard's lane."

The date of the death of Giles Leach has not been ascertained, he was living in 1705, but probably died shortly after that year.

Children of Giles and Anne (Nokes) Leach. Mitchell's History of Bridgewater gives the following children and says: "perhaps they had others."

1. SARAH, b. at Weymouth, Mass., 1656/7; m. John Aldrich.
2. ELIZABETH, b. at Weymouth, Mass., 1662; m. John Emerson, 1693.
3. SAMUEL, b. at Weymouth, Mass., 1662; m. Dr. Nicholas Byram.
4. DAVID, b. at West Bridgewater, Mass.
5. JOHN, b. at West Bridgewater, in 1665.
6. EBENEZER, b. at West Bridgewater.
7. BENJAMIN, b. at West Bridgewater.

THIRD GENERATION

JOHN LEACH (Giles², Lawrence¹), was b. at West Bridgewater, Mass. in 1665; died 1743; married Alice —. He was a farmer and lived in the South part of the town. March 13, 1701/2, the Selectmen were ordered to lay out a highway from the Taunton road on the other side of the four-mile brook, to John Leach's house, and on to the Taunton Line. John Leach was chosen Jurymen of the Plymouth County Court. The inventory of his estate was filed Feb. 6, 1744. His estate was appraised at £341.

Children of John and Alice Leach:

1. JOHN, b. 1695.
2. GILES, b. March 28, 1697.
3. STEPHEN, b. Jan. 28, 1698/9.
4. ABEL, b. Dec. 18, 1700; m. Sarah —. He was a Revolutionary Soldier.
5. EBENEZER, b. Dec., 1702.

they shall see cause, as also in refference to further licensing him, to act further therein as they see meet.

1679.

It hauing pleased the only wise God to remoove by death our late honoured Goũno^r, who, as wee are informed, was at considerable charge for procuring a new seale, which is vsed wth a skřw, much more convenient then the hand seale, it is therefore ordered by this Court, that the Treasurer of the country doe treat wth & purchase of the execcutrix of sajd late Gouverno^r the sajd seale & skrew, and deliuer the same to our present honored Goũno^r, and also receive of the sajd execcutrix the old seale, together wth a duplicate of our patent lying now in her hand, w^{ch} seale, duplicate, & skřw henceforward shall remajne in the Goũno^{rs} hand, for time being, for the vse of the country.

28 May.

Order about y^e
countrys seale,
skrw, & patent.
To ly wth y^e
present Gov.

In ans^r to the petition of James Blake, humbly craving the favour of this Court, that he, hauing agreed wth the late John Holdbrooke, of Roxbury, to exchange some lands wth him for mutual benefit, & signed his deed, but sajd Holdbrooke dying quickly before he signed his deed to yo^r petiõner, humbly desireth that Elisabeth Holdbrooke, his widdow & administratrix of y^e sd Jn^o Holdbrooke, may be allowed & impowred to passe deeds accordingly, the Court judgeth it meet to grant this petiõn.

Ans^r to James
Blake petiõn.

✓ *Whereas the honoured Gennerall Court, at their sessions, October 2, 1678, did appoint vs, whose names are vnderwritten, a comittee in refference to a difference betweene Wenham, Beuerly, & Village, relating to a diuissionall lñe betweene them, as to a suiteable accomodation in way of proportion betweene each place, & empowred fully to settle the diuicõnall lñes betweene them, and also finally to settle the matter in controũsy betweene Salem & Beverly relateing to an addition of land out of Salem, in obedience wherevnto wee did repajre vnto the sajd places on the eleventh of November ensuing, & vejwed the same; and fully heard the seuerall pleas, & allegations, & euidences of all the partjes concerned; and seene Salems grant of towneship & bounds to Beuerly to be from the east side of Bass Ryuer to Wenham lñe at a pine stump by a swamp runing out of Laurenc Leaches meadow, and so to Manchester lñe, but doe not say to what part of the sajd lñe, —

[*215.]

Courts judgment inter
Beverly &
Wenham.

And considering the selectmen of Salems answer to the inhabitants of Wenhams petition for to declare their minds concerning a diuissionall lñe betweene Beverly & them, and the sajd selectmen expressing themselues that, considering Wenham is the auntients towne, they desire the lñe betweene Wenham & Beuerly may be settled in favour to Wenham, Beuerly hauing a farr more larger accomodation in proportion then Wenham, and finding that Salem & Wenham were both agreed of their lñe from the aforesajd pine

1679.

28 May.

stumpe to a white oake tree, marked, & standing on Alfords Hill, nere the Great Pond, and was ouned by both partjes, & stones lajd to the sajd pine stumpe & trees, — vpon due & serious consideration of the premisses, wee haue determīed for a full settlement of the sajd diuissionall līnes as ffolloweth: namely, that the bound līnes betweene Wenham & Beverly shallbe from the aforesajd pine stumpe by the swamp runing from Lawrence Leaches meadow, as the line was formerly stated & agreed on, to the marked white oake on Alfords Hill, nere the Great Pond; and from the sajd white oake, the līne to rvnn streight to Manchester līne to the fowerth part of the sajd līne, from the white oake tree, marked, at the east end of the Pleasant Pond to the head of Chubbs Creeke; allwayes prouided, that the meadowes wthin sajd line belonging to Beverly, from Longham bridge eastward shall remajne to Beuerly, and also that Wenhams sixe hundred acres of land granted to them by Salem formerly, be made good to them. *And in refference to the bounds līne betweene Wenham & the villag, wee haue concluded & determined that the line shall rvnn from the abouesajd pine stumpe, by the swampe runing from Lawrenc Leaches meadow, on a west līne, to Topsfeild līne. And as for the matter in controuersy betweene Salem & Beverly relating to an addition of land from Salem, wee see not reason to grant it, Beverly hauing farr more large accomodation in way of proportion then the other places. Witnes our hands.

JOHN WAYTE,
JOHN CORUIN,
WILLJAM JOHNSON,
JONATHAN POOLE,
RICHARD HUBBARD,
JOHN PUTMAN.

The Court approoves of this returne: th

Courts judgm^t
in Quilters
case.

In ans^r to the petiōn of Francis Quilter, widdow, & relict of Marke Quilter, deceased, crauing the Courts favour for a settlement of the estate of the deceased, the Court, hauing heard & considered of what hath binn alleadged in the case by all persons concerned, doe finde that the sajd Quilter died intestate, and that the pretended will presented tō this Court ought to be accounted null & voyd, and doe therefore judge meete that the petiōner shall haue the vse of the whole estate during hir life, and afterwards the one halfe to be disposed of as shee sees good, and the other halfe to the relations of hir deceased husband, to be ordered & regulated in the dispose of the same as the County Court of Ipsuich shall see meete; & hir bill of costs was granted

FULLER

The original bearers of the surname Fuller assumed the title of their occupation as a means of distinction. They were fullers of cloth, and their surname was most worthily borne in England for many generations by a family of fullers in what was then the greatest cloth market in the world. This Fuller family was of Redenhall Parish, Norfolk, England. Although William Fuller (1539-1614) is believed to be the first known ancestor of the line, Robert Fuller (1539-1614) is believed to be the first certainly known. Four members of this family were on the voyage of the *Mayflower* in 1620. They were the brothers, Samuel and Edward Fuller, and Edward's wife and son.

Fuller, Mayfl. pp. 3-6; Fuller, JFB p. 5; Chapin p. 168; Conant p. 145; Colket p. 115; NEHGR 1:209 (1847), NEHGR 4:33 (1850), NEHGR 9:286 (1855), NEHGR 55:192-196, 410-416 (1901), NEHGR 110:182 (1956); Hillsborough II:221; GPM Boston IV:1766; Barnstable pp. 371-381; Surry pp. 622-627, 710; Bullard pp. 194-197, 283, 284; NEFGM II:184; Enc. Mass p. 195

Line 648

1. **William Fuller**, (ca 1433- aft 1492),
m.
ch. 2. **John Fuller**.

William Fuller, earliest known of this line, was born about 1433.

2. **John Fuller**, (ca 1460-1511),
m. ca 1480, **Alice**,
ch. **John Fuller**,
3. **William Fuller**,
Thomas Fuller,
Alice Fuller,
Robert Fuller.

John Fuller was born about 1460. He was a freeholder in Redenhall. He died before 17 May 1511, when his will was proved. In his will he is called yeoman, and he asks to be buried in the churchyard of Redenhall.

3. **William Fuller**, (ca 1483-),
m.
ch. 4. **John Fuller**,
William Fuller,
Robert Fuller.

4. **John Fuller**, (ca 1510-1559),
m. ca 1533, **Ann**,
ch. **John Fuller**,
Alice Fuller,
5. **Robert Fuller**.

618

John Fuller was born about 1510. He was buried 9 Feb 1559, at Redenhall.

5. **Robert Fuller**, (ca 1539-1614),
m. (1) 1573, **Sara Dunthorne**,
ch. Thomas Fuller, m. Anne,
6. **Edward Austin Fuller**,
Susannah Ann Fuller,
John Fuller, died in infancy,
Samuel Fuller, m. (1) Alice Glascock;
m. (2) Agnes Carpenter;
m. (3) Bridget Lee,
John Fuller, m. (1) Ann;
m. (2) Margaret Balls,
Edmond Fuller, died in infancy,
m. (2) Frances Blackwell,
ch. Sarah Fuller, m. James Spaulding,
Christopher Fuller, died in infancy,
Elizabeth Fuller,
Mary Fuller.

Robert Fuller was born about 1539, at Redenhall parish, Norfolk, England. He lived in comfortable circumstances, practicing his trade as a butcher. Robert married first, 29 Jan 1573; at Starston parish, Norfolk, Sara Dunthorne, or Dunkhorn. Redenhall and Starston are adjacent parishes. Sara, who was born about 1550, was buried 1 July 1584. Robert married second, Frances Blackwell. In his will, dated 19 May 1613, and proved 31 May 1614, Robert is called yeoman. Robert was buried 23 May 1614, at Redenhall parish.

6. **Edward Austin Fuller**, (1575-1621); **IMMIGRANT**.
m. Ann Hall,
ch. 7. **Matthew Fuller**,
Samuel Fuller, m. Jane Lothrop. [649-7]

Edward Fuller was baptized 4 Sep 1575; at Redenhall parish, county Norfolk, England. The name of his wife is not certainly known, but it is believed to be Ann Hall. Edward and his wife were among the English Separatists living in Leiden, Holland. Edward is mentioned in Leiden Judicial Archives 79, L, Folio 172 verso.

Edward Fuller, his wife, and son Samuel emigrated to New England on the ship *Mayflower* in 1620, landing at Plymouth, Massachusetts. Also on the ship was Edward's brother, Samuel Fuller, who became the noted physician of the Pilgrims. Edward and Samuel were signers of the *Mayflower* Compact in the cabin of the *Mayflower* before landing on Cape Cod, on 11 Nov 1620. Edward was the 23rd signer. The

619

Unless Edward Fuller of the Mayflower named on written deed, Sarah named for his mother & she could have written deed in Salem when sent married Richard Leach (lawyer); His does not give any question of when our ladies Anne Fuller was. The timing is right.

The first part of the report is a summary of the work done during the year. It is divided into two main sections: a general summary and a summary of the work done in each of the four departments. The general summary is a brief statement of the work done during the year, and the summary of the work done in each of the four departments is a more detailed statement of the work done in each of the four departments.

The second part of the report is a summary of the work done during the year. It is divided into two main sections: a general summary and a summary of the work done in each of the four departments. The general summary is a brief statement of the work done during the year, and the summary of the work done in each of the four departments is a more detailed statement of the work done in each of the four departments.

Very little is known about the background of Richard Leach's wife Sarah Fuller nor her mother, Ann Fuller - not even whether her father came over. The following are too young to be her father but maybe someday one will prove to have been a relative.

Founders of American Families - by Meredith Colket

FULLER Fuller genealogy 1908 (chiefly Edward); 1910 (chiefly Samuel); 1914 (chiefly Matthew with the Johns and Robert); 1919 (chiefly Thomas of Woburn), v 1-4.

EDWARD Came on "Mayflower" 1620, Plymouth, d there by 10 Apr 1621. Signer of Mayflower Compact. Brother of Samuel. Fuller family 1971 (reprint of vol 1 with additions); tag 16:38 (son Samuel). Society of Mayflower Descendants five-generation project in progress.†

JOHN Boston (Mass.) 1630, Lynn 1639, d there 6 Apr 1695. Lieutenant. Representative. Gentleman. Joiner. "John Fuller of Lynn," Register of the Lynn historical society 1914 (pamph reprint); ner 50:533 (clue) 100:255 (clue).

JOHN Came over ca 1635, Cambridge Village (Newton, Mass.) ca 1644, d 7 Feb 1697/8.†

JOHN Ipswich (Mass.) 1634, Salisbury 1639, Ipswich 1648, d there 4 June 1666. Town Surveyor. Commissioner. ner 53:335 (desc). #1951, 3566.†

MATTHEW Plymouth (Mass.) 1640, Barnstable 1650, d there Aug 1678. Captain. Freeman. Magistrate. #1763.

ROBERT Came on "Bevis" 1638, Salem (Mass.) 1638, Rehoboth 1668, d there 10 May 1706. Bricklayer. Freeman. Robert Fuller of Salem and Rehoboth 1931 (pamph; line); Robert Fuller of Salem and Rehoboth 1969 (line). #1773, 2020, 2147, 2478, 2538, 2549, 2733.†

ROBERT Dorchester (Mass.) 1640, Dedham, d 14 Dec 1688.

SAMUEL Came on "Mayflower" 1620, Plymouth (Mass.) 1620, d there 1633. Physician. Deacon. Brother of Edward. Society of Mayflower Descendants five-generation project in progress.†

THOMAS Cambridge (Mass.) 1638, Woburn 1638, Salem 1668, d there June 1698. Smith. Lieutenant. Joseph Fuller, descendants of Thomas Fuller 1897; Historical Collections Danvers Historical Society. 30:11 (line)*.†

THOMAS Dedham (Mass.) 1642, d there 28 Sept 1690. Selectman. Chief Justice Fuller, a descendant 1888 (pamph); Dedham historical register 4:156 (desc). Apparently not of Cambridge. See Pope.

WILLIAM Severn River (Md.) 1654, Cape Fear River (S.C.) 1678, d there by 10 July 1695. Governor of Maryland. Jester, Adventurers 1964 ed.

FULLER,

✓ Ann, widow, ae. 79; will prob. at Salem 25 (4) 1662. Son Richard Leach; Bethia Farrow, John and Sarah Leach.

Edward, came in the Mayflower; signed the Compact. Res. at Plymouth. He and his wife who came with him d. in 1621. Their son Samuel, who also came, survived and res. in Plymouth.

Edward, Charlestown, before Gen. Court 3 (7) 1639.

Giles, prop. for propr. at Dedham, 1638. Rem. to Hampton. Near kinsman of Doctor Matthew, of Barnstable in 1673. [See Pettingall.]

Giles, weaver, Hampton, son of Roger, of Topcraft, co. Norf. Eng., yeoman. His only sister Susanna, wife of Tho. Thurton of Croydon, co. Surrey, tobaccoconist, applied for inheritance of his estate in London 5 April, 1677. [Norf. Co. Rec. Lib. III, folio 63.]

John, joiner, Boston, bought land at Lynn 9 (6) 1639, to be paid for by Edward Fuller of Olney, Bucks. [L.] See will of Edward, John's father, prob. 20 Sept. 1656. [Reg. L, 533.] He testified at Salem 25 (2) 1651, ae. 30 years, concerning his bro. Dexter's sale of Lady Moody's farm.

John, came in the Abigail in May, 1635, with William F. Settled at Ipswich, 1637; rem. to Salisbury, but ret. about 1648 to Ips. Wife Elizabeth; ch. John, James, William, Thomas, Nathaniel, Joseph, Susanna, Elizabeth, Sarah.

He d. June 4, 1666; will prob. Sept. 25, 1666. His will not dated, prob. 25 Sept. 1666, beq. to wife; to ch. James, William, John, Susanna, Elizabeth, Thomas, Nathaniel, Joseph and Sarah; another ch. expected. Their gr. father had lately given them portions. James, exec.; and he is to have a double portion of any est. that may be recovered in England.

John, farmer, maltster, Cambridge, propr. 1644. He deposited 16 (3) 1656, ae. about 40 years. [Mdx. Files.]

He d. Feb. 1697-8, ae. 87. Will dated 30 Jan. 1695-6, prob. Feb. 28, 1697-8, beq. to wife Elizabeth; ch. John, Jonathan, Joshua, Jeremiah, Berthia Bond; Jonathan Hide, son of dau. Elizabeth H., dec.; also to gr. ch. Mary Brown, Elizabeth and Hannah Hides.

178

FULLER, cont.

Matthew, planter, Plymouth; captain. Rem. to Scituate; rec'd to chh. Nov. 7, 1636, by letter from Plym. chh. Propr., sergeant, prop. frm. 7 Sept. 1642. Rem. to Barnstable. Physician. He, or his son Matthew, m. April 8, 1635, Jane, dau. of Mr. John Lothrop.

Will dated 25 July, prob. 30 Oct. 1678, gave to wife Frances; to gr. ch. Shubael, son of Ralph Jones; son John; Thomas, Jabez, Timothy, Matthias and Samuel, sons of his dec. son Samuel; daus. Mary, wife of Ralph Jones; Elizabeth, wife of Moses Rowley; and Anne, wife of son Samuel; to Bethiah, wife of his son John; to gr. ch. Sarah Rowley, Jedidiah Jones, and all the rest. To Robert Marshall, the Scotchman.

Robert, Salem, 1639; question whether he was to remove in 1643. [Town Rec.]

Robert, Dorchester, 1640. Rem. to Dedham. He and his wife rec'd to chh. from Dorch. chh. 19 (11) 1648. Wife Ann; ch. no. Jonathan b. 15 (6) 1643, Benoni b. 16 (4) he 1646, d. 5 (7) 1647, Sarah b. 21 (7) 1647, John died b. 26 (9) 1649, Mary b. 1 (1) 1653. His wife he d. 4 (5) 1646. He m. 2, Sarah —; she d. 2 (4) 1686.

He d. Dec. 14, 1688. Will prob. 28 April, 1690, beq. to gr. ch. John and Prudence Ranger; to son Jonathan F. and dau. Mary Richards.

Samuel, physician, also say-maker, m. 1, in Eng. Elsie Glascock; m. 2, at Leyden, Holland, April 30, 1613, Agnes, dau. of Alexander Carpenter of Wrentham, Eng.; m. 3, in L. May 27, 1617, Bridget Lee. Came in the Mayflower, signed the Compact. Settled at Plymouth. Deacon, frm. 1633; an important citizen of Plymouth; aided the settlers at the Bay on their arrival in 1630. See his letters about these settlers at Boston and Dorchester to Bradford. [Mass. Hist. Coll. 3.] His wife and child came afterward; another ch. born here. [B.]

He d. in 1633, of an infectious fever, after he had much helped others. [B.] Will prob. July 30, 1638, mentions son Samuel, dau. Mercy, bro. Wm. Wright and his wife Priscilla; sister Alice Bradford. Refers to children, Sarah Converse and Elizabeth Cowles, committed to his care, the latter, at Charlestown, to be returned to her parents. His cosen Samuel is to remove from the estate.

FULLER, cont.

Servants Thomas Symons and Robert Cowles. To the church, to Wm. Brewster, Mrs. Heeks and others. [Reg. IV, 33.] [The widow] Bridget Fuller b. 30 Sept. 1641. Henry Sirkman.

Samuel, nephew of Doctor Samuel, was with his uncle at Plymouth before 1638; rem. to Barnstable. [Is he not son of Edward above?] Ch. Thomas b. 18 May, 1650, Sarah b. 14 Dec. 1654, a child b. and d. 1658.

Thomas, [smith,] Woburn, propr. 1640. He m. 1, June 13, 1643, Elizabeth Tidd; he m. 2, Aug. 25, 1684, Sarah Wyman. He m. 3, Hannah —, whose daus., wives of James Proctor, Aaron Cleveland and John Wilson, agreed to care for her in 1697. [Wob. Rec.] Ch. Thomas b. 22 or 30 (2) 1644, Elizabeth b. Sept. 12, 1645, Ruth b. May 17, 1648, Deborah b. May 12, 1650, John b. March 1, 1652-3, Jacob b. May 14, 1655, Joseph b. Aug. 8, 1658, Benjamin b. April 15, 1660, Samuel b. May 9, 1662. (to Salem 1668)

He made will 9 June, prob. July 4, 1698; beq. to daus. Dean, Ruth Wilkins, Deborah Shaw, sons Thomas, Jacob and Benjamin F.; gr. ch. David Richardson, Ruth Wheeler and Bethia Fuller. Genealogy.

Thomas, Dedham, propr. Nov. 25, 1642. Ralph Fuller of Wortwell, Norfolk, linen weaver, in will dated 23 Oct. 1645, beq. to John, son of his son Thomas F., now in New England. [Reg. LII, 241.] He m. 22 (9) 1643, Hannah Flower; ch. John b. and d. 1644, John b. about 1645, Elizabeth b. 1 1648, Hannah b. 9 (9) 1650, Thomas b. (12) 1652, Mary b. 25 (1) 1655, Samuel b. (2) 1657, Sarah b. 3 (7) 1659, Thomas b. 23 June, 1662, Hannah Fuller d. April 11, 1672.

Will dated 24 Sept. prob. 13 Nov. 1690; "aged;" beq. to wife Hannah, sons John and Thomas, daus. Elizabeth Meadcalfe, Mary Fisher and Sarah Day.

William, ae. 25, wih John, ae. 15, came in the Abigail in May, 1635. Settled at Ipswich; propr. 1635; sold house and land in 1639. App. gunsmith by Gen. Court 17 May, 1637. Frm. June 2, 1641. He kept the mill in 1639. [Col Rec.] Rem. to Concord. Perhaps he is the W. F., locksmith, who bought land at Hampton 9 (12) 1647. Wife Elizabeth d. 24 (5) 1642. Ch. Hannah b. 8 (6) 1641.

179

FULLER, Thomas (?1618-1698) & 3/wf Hannah/Harnet? (?JAMES) WILSON, w John WILSON; aft 25 Aug 1688; Woburn

FULLER, Thomas & Elizabeth COBLEY/COBLEIGH?/COOLEY; 8 Jan 1693, 8 Jun 1693?; Rehoboth

FULLER, Thomas & Elizabeth ANDREWS, ?wid; 3 May 1693?, 1694?; Salem/Middleton

FULLER, Thomas (-1718) & 2/wf Martha DURGY?/DURKEE?; 19 Jul 1699; Salem/Windham, CT

FULLER, Thomas & Anne [WOODCOCK] (1672-, Hingham); b 1701; Attleboro

FULLER, Timothy & 1/wf Sarah GATES (1670-); b 1695; East Haddam, CT

FULLER, William (?1610-) & Elizabeth ? (-1642); b 1641; Concord/Ipswich

FULLER, William (1610, 1608?-1693) & Frances ? (-1699, ae "above" 80); b 1678, b 9 Jan 1671/2; Hampton, NH

FULLER, William & Susanna (PERKINS) BUSWELL/BUZZELL/BOSWELL (1652-), w Isaac; 29 Jun 1680, 22 Jun 1680; Hampton, NH/Ipswich/Salisbury

FULLER, William & Bethiah MAPLESDAME; 17 Oct 1696, m int; Lynn

FULLER, William & Ruth (BISHOP) [PIERCE], w John; b 1701?, aft 1684, 27 Feb 1683; Watertown/Lexington

→ FULLER, ? & Ann ? (1583-1662); Salem

FULLER, ? & Elizabeth [BUXTON] (1672-); b 1715, b 1701?; Salem

young
1703;
young
and d.
at Sa
prece
29 Ju
the y
Abig
gr.st.
first
13 A
10 F
two
d. se
not
gr.
Isaa
74 t
166
4th
par
* Jc
yrs.

Salem, s. of Thomas, m. 15 Dec. 1685, Bacon, had Samuel, Benjamin, Sarah, Ruth, Abigail, and Hannah. He liv. in the vill. wh. became Danvers, was freem. 1690. DANIEL, New Haven 1640. EDWARD, Plymouth, br. of the famous Samuel, came with him in the Mayflower 1620, bring. w. Ann and s. Samuel, and leav. Matthew, on the other side, wh. was elder, d. early next yr. as did his w. but his s. Samuel outliv. the hardships. EDWARD, Boston 1630, whose s. John, says Lewis, sett. at Lynn. But I believe we kn. no more, than that the name has much prevail. there. Edward was employ. in 1643, to bring, with others, the cattle of the Gortonists, taken near Providence, under the absurd pretence of being spoil of war. No doubt he was of the true, or popular faith, or he would not thus have been trusted; and this may, perhaps, render it less prob. that he was the same Edward subject. in 1639 to cens. by the Gen. Ct. for distemper. with wine. EDWARD, Lynn, freem. 1691, was, perhaps, s. of Robert of the same. GILES, Hampton, 1640, d. 2 Apr. 1673. JACOB, Salem vill. now Danvers, freem. 1690. JAMES, Ipswich, by w. Mary, had James, b. 2 Dec. 1673; Mary, 30 May 1675; John, 20 Feb. 1677; Eliz. 25 Feb. 1679; Daniel, 24 Feb. 1681; Nathaniel, 18 Feb. 1683; and Dorothy, 18 Dec. 1684. His wid. prob. liv. to 16 Oct. 1732, aged 85. JEREMIAH, Newton, s. of the first John of the same, was lieut. had bur. four ws. Mary, wh. d. 17 Aug. 1689; Eliz. wh. d. 1700, in which yr. he took Thankful, wh. d. 1729; and Rachel, d. 1742; by first and last had no ch. but by Eliz. had Eliz. b. 14 Apr. 1694, d. soon; and Jeremiah, 3 July 1697, d.

This doesn't even show Ann Fuller

ward; Elisha, b. 5 Apr. 1697; Joseph, 16 Dec. 1665; at wh. time his w. was Eliz. JOHN, Dedham, s. of Thomas of the same, m. 8 Jan. 1672, Judith, d. of John Grey, had Judith, b. 21 Nov. 1673; Hannah, 5 Sept. 1675; John, 19 Nov. 1677; Thomas, 19 Nov. 1681; Robert, 11 Aug. 1685; and Hezekiah, 5 Aug. 1687; was prob. the freem. of 1690. JOHN, Rehoboth, m. 25 Apr. 1673, Abigail Titus, perhaps d. of John or Robert of the same, had John, b. 8 Sept. 1674, d. under two yrs.; Abiel, 30 Dec. 1676. One John, aged 15, came 1635, in the Abigail, and he may be the man of Lynn, or of Cambridge. JOHN, Barnstable, s. of Matthew, a physician, by first w. had Lydia, b. 1675; and by sec. w. Hannah, of Boston, whose surname is not found, had Bethia, b. Dec. 1687; John, Oct. 1689; and Reliance, 8 Sept. 1691. In this yr. he d. and his wid. m. 9 Dec. 1695, Capt. John Lothrop, it is thot. Of ano. at Barnstable, call. little JOHN (to disting. him from his cous. John, s. of Matthew wh. was elder), when his w. Mehitable was adm. of the ch. 30 Sept. 1688, and was s. of that Samuel wh. was s. of Edward, we kn. his ch. bapt. were Samuel, Thomas, and Shubael, on 21 Oct. foll. and Thankful, 19 May after; he rem. to East Haddam, there had John, 10 Nov. 1697; Joseph, 1 Mar. 1700; Ben-

jamin, 20 Oct. 1701; and Mehitable, 16 Apr. 1706; and perhaps others. JOHN, Newton, eldest s. of John of the same, freem. 1680 (ten yrs. bef. his f.), m. 1682, Abigail, perhaps d. of the sec. Thomas Boylston, had Sarah, b. 5 Oct. 1683; John, 2 Sept. 1685; Abigail, 8 Mar. 1688; James, 4 Feb. 1690; Hannah, 31 Aug. 1693; Isaac, 22 Nov. 1695; Jonathan, 13 Feb. 1698, d. soon; Jonathan, again, 28 Mar. 1700; Caleb, 24 Feb. 1702; and he m. 14 Oct. 1714, Margaret Hicks, and d. 1720. JONATHAN, Rehoboth, eldest s. of Robert of Salem, m. 14 Dec. 1664, Eliz. Wilmot, perhaps d. of Thomas, had Jonathan, b. 23 Dec. 1665; David, 11 Sept. 1667; Daniel, 6 Aug. 1669; Robert, and Thomas tw. 28 June 1671, of wh. one, if not both, d. soon; Robert, again, 2 Mar. 1673; Nathaniel, 1676; Eliz. 12 May 1678; Sarah, 23 Apr. 1680; Mary, 1 Oct. 1681; and Noah, 12 Feb. 1685. JONATHAN, Dedham, a. 1642, freem. 1671. JONATHAN, Dedham, the freem. of 1672, was, perhaps, s. of Robert of Dorchester, by w. Mary had Mary, b. 20 Apr. 1679, prob. d. young; Samuel, 15 Feb. 1682; John, 3 Dec. 1684; Mary, again, 21 Feb. 1687; Joshua, 23 Jan. 1689, d. soon; and Joshua, again, 15 Feb. 1692. His w. d. 29 Mar. 1701; and he d. 1720. JONATHAN, Newton, s. of the first John of the same, m. Mindwell, d. of deac. James Trowbridge, d. 12 Aug. 1722, aged 74, without ch. and his wid. d. 1758, aged 96. He was freem. 1680; and gave most of his est. to Jonathan, s. of his br. Joseph. JOSEPH, Newton, s. of the first John of the same, freem. 1680, was under Turner in the Falls fight, 1676, m. 13 Feb. 1681, Lydia, d. of Edward Jackson, wh. d. 12 Jan. 1726, had John, b. 15 Dec. 1681; Joseph, 4 July 1685; Jonathan, 7 Jan. 1687; Lydia, 15 Feb. 1692; Edward, 7 Mar. 1694; Isaac, 16 Mar. 1698; and Eliz. 1 July 1701; and he d. 5 Jan. 1740. JOSHUA, Newton, br. of the preced. freem. 1680, m. 7 June 1679, Eliz. d. of John Ward, had only ds. Eliz. b. 22 Feb. 1680; Hannah, 8 July 1682; Experience, 5 Nov. 1685; and Mercy, 11 Mar. 1689. His w. d. 6 Sept. 1691. By 2d w. he had Abigail, a. 1697; Sarah; and Ruth; d. 1752. He was in 89th yr. when he m. 19 July 1742, Mary Dana, in her 75th for third w. but they had no ch. LANCELOT, New Haven 1643. MATTHEW, Plymouth, a. 1640, s. of Edward the first, b. in Eng. rem. to Barnstable 1652, a physician, appoint. surg. of the force of the col. 1673, a capt. 1675, as Thatcher says, and d. 1678. By w. Frances he had Mary, wh. m. 17 Apr. 1650, Ralph Jones; Eliz. wh. m. 1652, Moses Rowley; Samuel; and John; and by Hannah, had Ann, wh. m. her cous. Samuel Fuller. ROBERT, Dorchester 1640, freem. 2 June 1641, by w. Ann had Jonathan, b. 15 Aug. 1643; rem. to Dedham, there had Benoni, 16 June 1646; and perhaps his w. d. very soon; by w. Sarah, had Sarah, 21 Sept. 1647; John, 26 Nov. 1649; Patience, 22 Feb. 1652; and Mary,

1 Mar. 1654. His w. Sarah d. 1680, and he d. 14 Dec. 1688. ROBERT, Salem 1639, rem. to Rehoboth, there was freem. 1658, wh. he had visited perhaps fifteen yrs. bef. and may there have had one or more ch. of wh. we kn. only, that he calls Jonathan his eldest s. in a deed of 28 May 1696 for ld. in R. but had, also, Benjamin, old eno. to take deed of 1 Dec. 1679 for ho. and six acres at R. while he styles hims. in both, of Salem, bricklayer. Prob. he had been driv. in Philip's war from enjoym. of his est. and would encourage his s. to ascertain if it might be profit. in peace. By the rec. at R. his w. Sarah was bur. 14 Oct. 1676; and w. Margaret, wh. may not have been mo. of any ch. d. 30 Jan. 1700; and he d. 10 May 1706. Abigail, perhaps his d. m. at R. 16 Oct. 1679, Thomas Cushman. ROBERT, Lynn, freem. 1680, may be the same as preced. but not prob. SAMUEL, Plymouth 1620, one of the most valu. pilgrims of the Mayflower, the first physician that came to sett. in our country. He had been a deac. at least 8 yrs. at Leyden, tho. his w. Bridget, wh. came in the Ann 1623, with a ch. that, I think, liv. not long, may have been m. but short time bef. he left Holland. He brot. serv. William Batten, a youth, wh. d. bef. reach. the coast; had Samuel, and Mercy, b. here, both after 22 May 1627, and both liv. 1650; and d. 1633, betw. 30 July, the date of his will, and end of Oct. foll. when it was pro. His w. Bridget liv. until 1664. SAMUEL, Plymouth, neph. of the preced. made excor. of his will, was s. of the first Edward, and by him brot. in the Mayflower 1620; after d. of his parents, liv. with the uncle, and at the div. of lds. 1624, was count. I presume, out of respect to f. and mo. for three persons; freem. of the col. 1634, rem. to Scituate, thence to Barnstable, at Scituate hav. m. 8 Apr. 1635, Jane, d. of Rev. John Lothrop, had Hannah, wh. m. 1 Jan. 1659, Nicholas Bonham; Samuel, wh. was bapt. at S. 11 Feb. 1638, and may be the one wh. d. at Rehoboth 15 Aug. 1676; Sarah, tho. b. at S. bapt. at B. 1 Aug. 1641, d. young; and b. at B. were Mary, 16 June 1644, wh. m. Joseph Williams, 18 Nov. 1674; Thomas, 18 May 1651; Sarah, again, 14 Dec. 1654, wh. m. a Crow; and John; beside one, 8 Feb. 1658, wh. d. at a fortnight; and he d. 31 Oct. 1683; one of the latest Mayflowers. SAMUEL, Plymouth, s. of the first Samuel, was a preach. but seems to have been slow to rem. prob. giving his time to pious care of his mo. refus. invit. to Rehoboth after d. of Newman, but preach. at Middleborough sixteen yrs. and at last was ord. there when the first ch. was gather. 26 Dec. 1694, and d. 17 Aug. foll. in 71st yr. if his gr. stone be correct. Of this the doubt is almost invinc. for it would carry his b. to 1623 or 4, at least, whereas in the div. of cattle, May 1627, his f. head of the eighth lot, counts only for hims. w. and cous. or neph. bef. ment. Still stranger, however, to our modern notions, seems the nomin. of him as excor. of will, when he could not be

8, and prob. was only 5 yrs. old. He had w. Eliz. but was not m. bef. 1650, ch. nam. in the will, pro. 1 Oct. 1695, Mercy, w. of Daniel Cole, perhaps his sec.; Samuel, b. 1659; Experience, w. of James Wood; John; Eliz. w. of Samuel Eaton; Hannah, w. of Eleazer Lewis, and Isaac, wh. was under age, as may have been the last d. By Lewis, in Hist. of Lynn, ed. 2, p. 111, this Samuel is call. br. of John, s. of Edward, and he speaks of his arr. in Boston 1630, so as to lead to confusion, if not starting from it. Deane, in Hist. of Scituate, seems almost as confus. as his br. Hist. of Lynn. The name of his w. is giv. in the ch. Hist. of M. as Brewster, and perhaps she was gr. d. of the noble William; she d. at Plymouth 4 Nov. 1713. Confusion, indeed, is often unavoidable. With all the aid deriv. from books, and the scrupulous dilig. of Otis, I am uncert. whether SAMUEL, Barnstable, s. of the first Samuel of the same, wh. m. Ann, d. of his uncle Matthew and had Matthew, Barnabas, Joseph, Benjamin, Desire, and Sarah, were the same man as SAMUEL, Rehoboth, wh. m. 17 Apr. 1673, Mary Ide, perhaps d. of Nicholas. SAMUEL, Barnstable, s. of Capt. Matthew, by w. Mary had Thomas, Jabez, Timothy, Matthias, wh. d. unm. Abigail, Ann, and Samuel, posthum. b. 1676. THOMAS, Salem, perhaps 1638, in that N. W. part now Middleton, had Thomas, John, Jacob, Benjamin, Joseph, Samuel, and Ruth. THOMAS, Woburn, m. 13 June 1643, Eliz. Tidd, had Thomas, b. 22 or 30 Apr. 1644; Eliz. 12 Sept. 1645; Ruth, 17 May 1648; Deborah, 12 May 1650; John, 1 Mar. 1653; Jacob, 14 May 1655; Joseph, 8 Aug. 1658; Benjamin, 15 Apr. 1660; and Samuel, 9 May 1662. Prob. he was of Salem 1670, but perhaps went back to W. and m. 25 Aug. 1684, Sarah, wid. of John Wyman, d. of Miles Nutt. * THOMAS, Dedham 1643, by w. Hannah Flower, m. 22 Nov. of that yr. had John, b. 1 Nov. 1644, d. soon; John, again, 28 Dec. 1645; Eliz. 1 Apr. 1648; Hannah, 9 Nov. 1650; Thomas, 26 Feb. 1652, d. young; Mary, 25 Mar. 1655; Samuel, 25 Apr. 1657; Sarah, 3 Sept. 1659; and Thomas, again, 23 June 1662; freem. not in 1653, as Farmer said, but perhaps in 1672, was ensign, rep. 1673, 9, and 86. His w. d. 11 Apr. 1672; and he d. 28 Sept. 1690, hav. made his will four days bef. Eliz. m. the sec. John Kingsbury of the same, and next, 17 Sept. 1672, m. third Michael Metcalf. THOMAS, Dedham, prob. s. of Thomas of the same, freem. 1690. THOMAS, perhaps s. of Thomas of Woburn, m. 25 Aug. 1684, Sarah Wyman, may hav. liv. at Danvers, and been freem. 1690. * WILLIAM, Ipswich 1635, came that yr. in the Abigail, aged 25, with John, perhaps his br. aged 15, may have had w. Frances, rem. 1639 to Hampton, rep. 1667, d. 26 May 1693. WILLIAM, Concord, appoint. gunsmith May 1637, to accomp. the troops against the Pequots; was a miller there 1639; had Hannah, b. 8 Aug. 1641; and his w. Eliz.



Family Record

(Dodge Ancestors)

Family No.

Flint

Father -

Thomas FLINT

(NOT from Wales)

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.	
Birth			1603				He and his brother William		
Death	15	Apr	1663	Salem Village		Bay Colony	to Salem by 1608. He		
Buried							lived in the part which		
Married			by 1644				became Danvers.		
Occupation	yeoman			Military		Church	Puritan		
Places Lived	freeman of Salem 1638								
Other Wives									

His Father's Name

Flint (Welsh spelling)

His Mother's Maiden Name

Mother -

Hannah (or Ann)

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			16					
Death		Summer	1668	Salem Village	Essex	Mass Bay Col		
Buried								
Occupation				Military		Church	Puritan	
Places Lived								
Other Husbands	② after 1663 in Salem - John Southwick (1620 - 1672) a widower							

Her Father's Name

Her Mother's Maiden Name

For children of John & Elizabeth (Flint) Leach, see Leach Family Records

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. (Captain) Thomas Flint, Jr	Birth			1645	Danvers		MA	
	Spouse - ① Hannah Moulton (-30 Mar 1678) ② Mary Doughton	Death	24	May	1721			(carpenter/ farmer - large landowner. Worked in expedition against Narragansets in King Philip's War)	
		Married	① 22 May 1666 ② 15 Sep 1674						
+	2. Elizabeth Flint	Birth	30	Apr	1650	Danvers			
	Spouse - John Leach (1648-1718)	Death	8	Feb	1719/20				
		Married	22	May	1667				
	3. George Flint (farmer)	Birth	16	Mar	1652/3				
	Spouse - ① Elizabeth Putnam (1662-6 Mar 1697) ② Susanne Gardner (-Mar 1720)	Death			17	Reading			
		Married	① ce 1684 ② 2 Mar 1697/8						
	4. John Flint	Birth	3	Oct	1655				
	Spouse - Elizabeth	Death			1730	Salem			
		Married			16				
	5. Anne Flint	Birth	25	Feb	1657/8	Danvers			
	Spouse - age 5	Death		Apr	1663			(of same illness as father?)	
		Married						(of same illness as father?)	
	6. Joseph Flint	Birth			1662				
	Spouse - Abigail Howard (or Hayward) (1667-)	Death			1710				
		Married	6	Aug	1685	Salem			
	7.	Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
	8.	Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
	9.	Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
	10.	Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							

Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information - then list each on the reverse side.

1-10-11

1-10-11

1-10-11

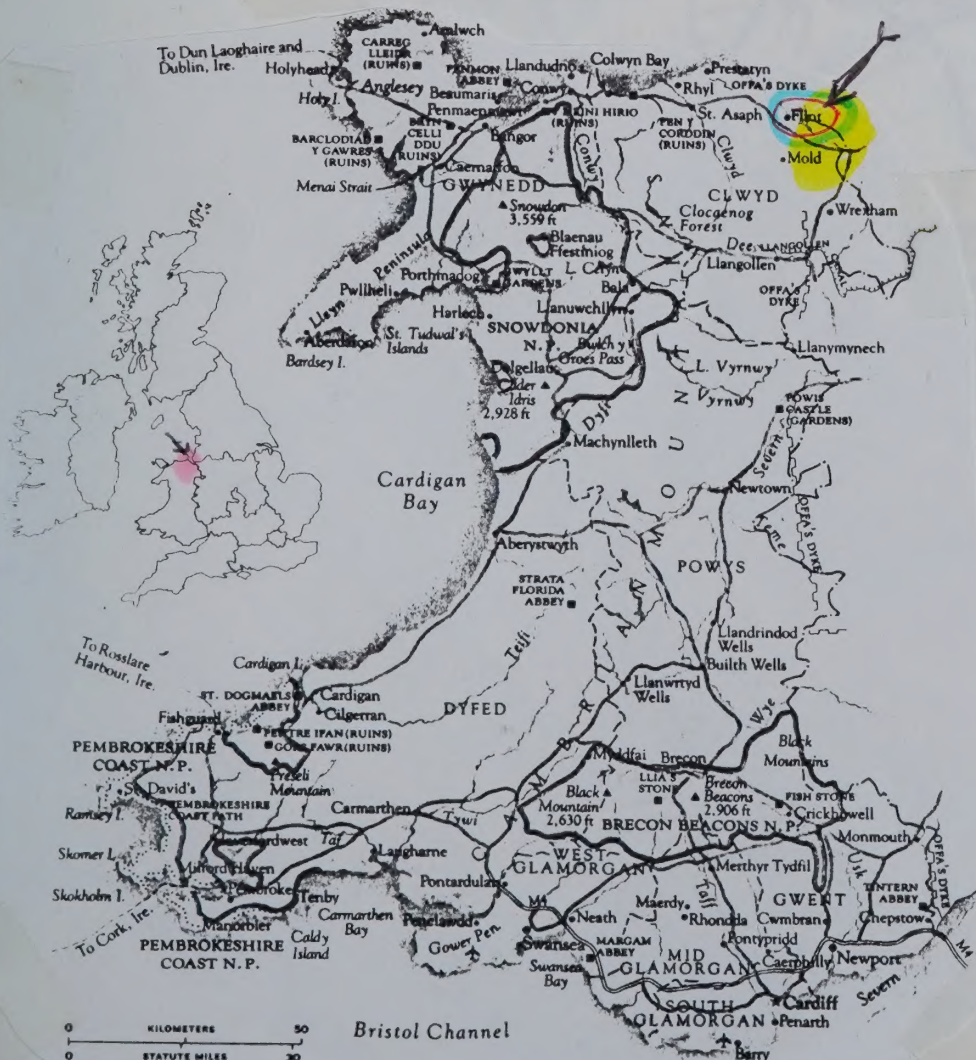
1-10-11

1-10-11

1-10-11



FLINT HOMESTEAD, 1720, destroyed by fire about 1900
 Located on corner Flint and Salem Streets (or Lowell St.) North Reading, Mass.
 Bunker Hill tree on right destroyed with house, tree on left (an offshoot) still standing, 1939



Not from Wales

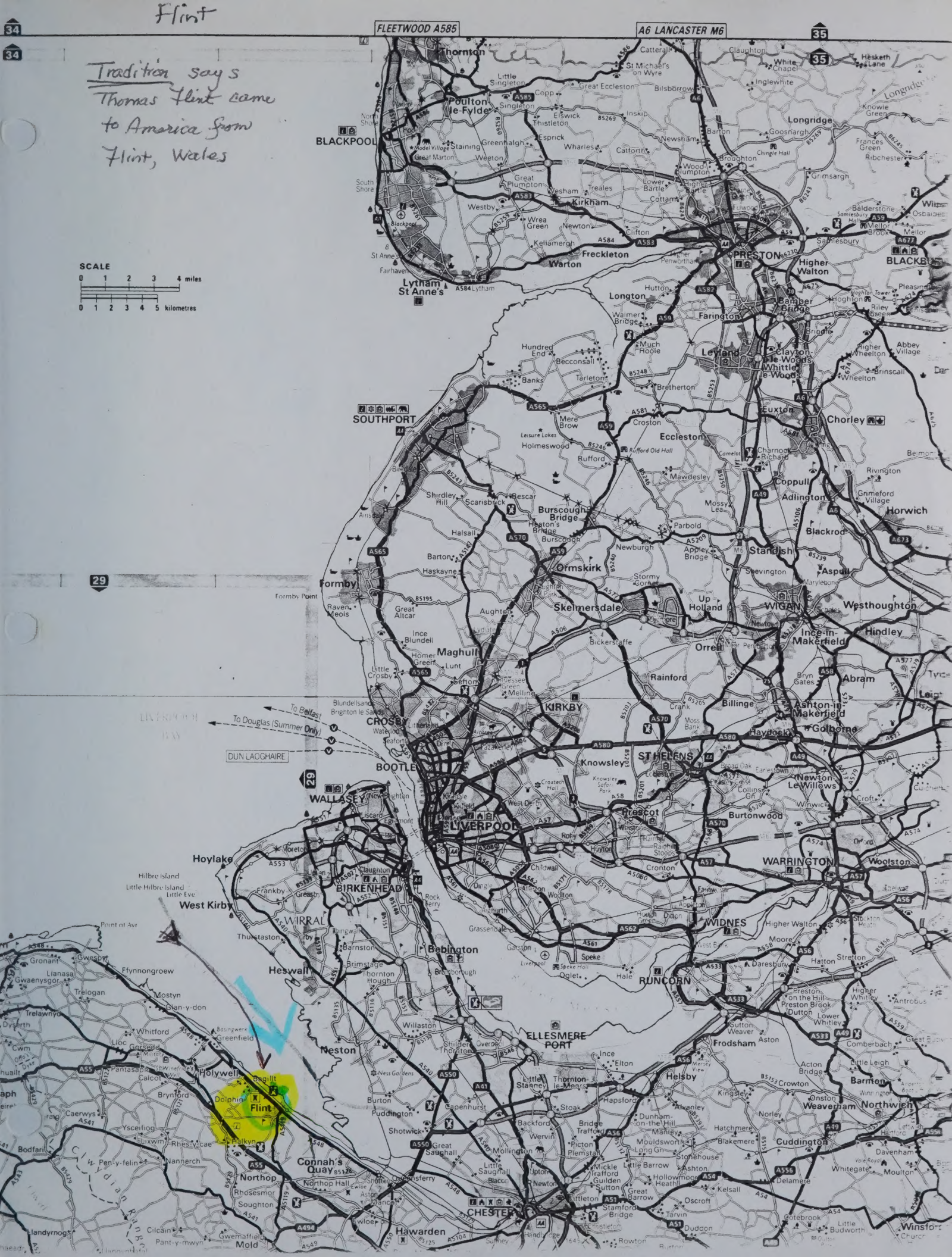
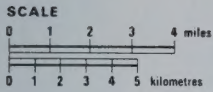
NOTE

Henry Flint is said to ~~come~~
is said to have from
North of Derbyshire
That is just east of Flint (see map)
is close to northern Wales.
Probably Henry Flint came from Derby too

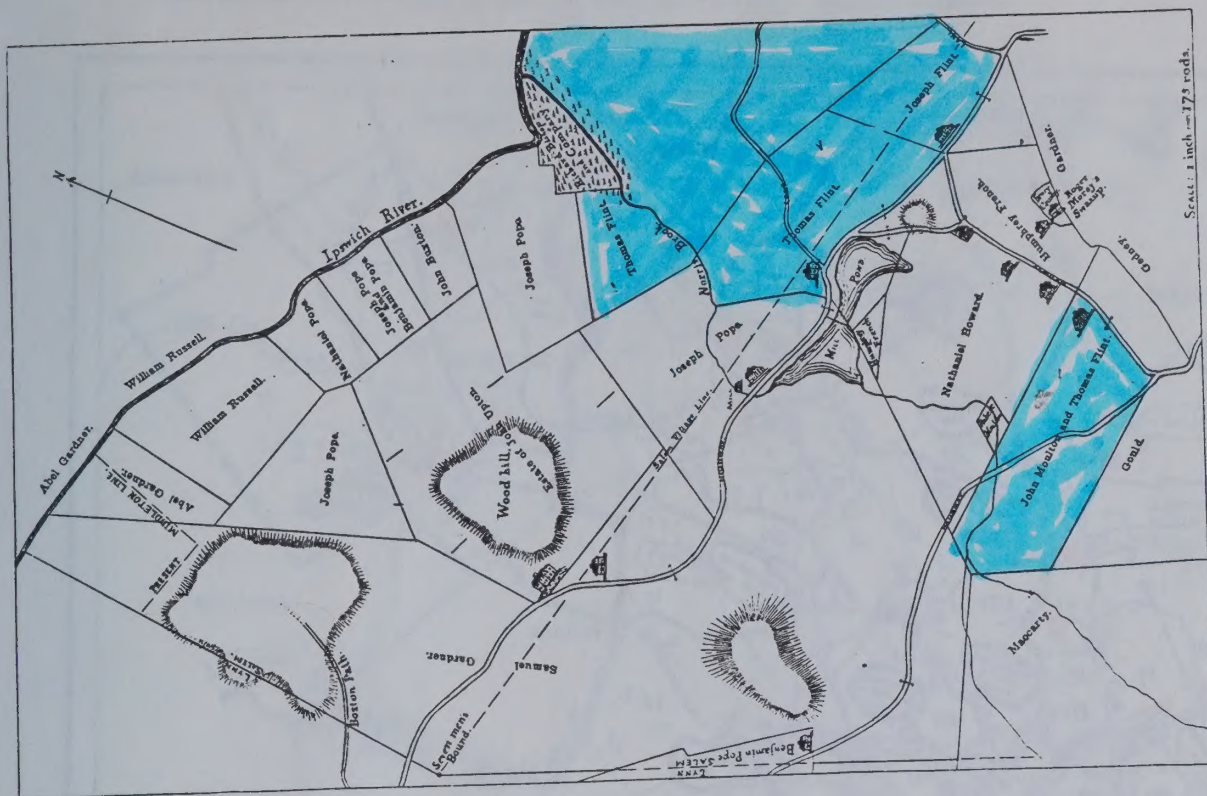


Flint

Tradition says
Thomas Flint came
to America from
Flint, Wales

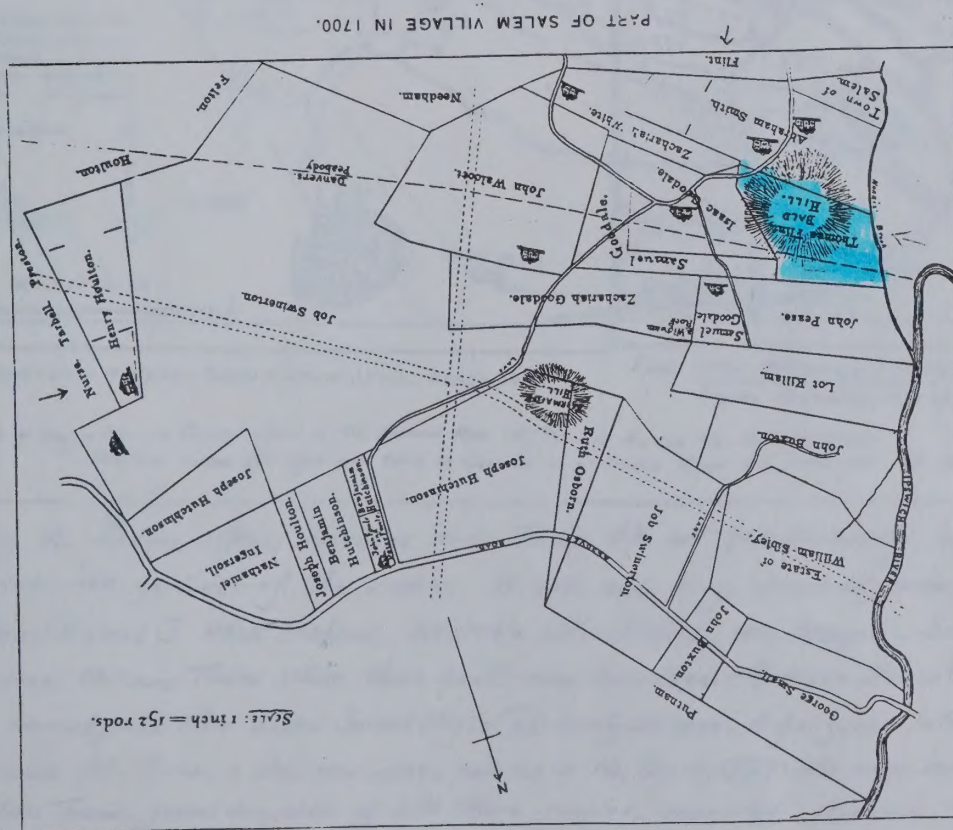






Scale: 1 inch = 172 rods.

A PART OF SALEM VILLAGE IN 1700.

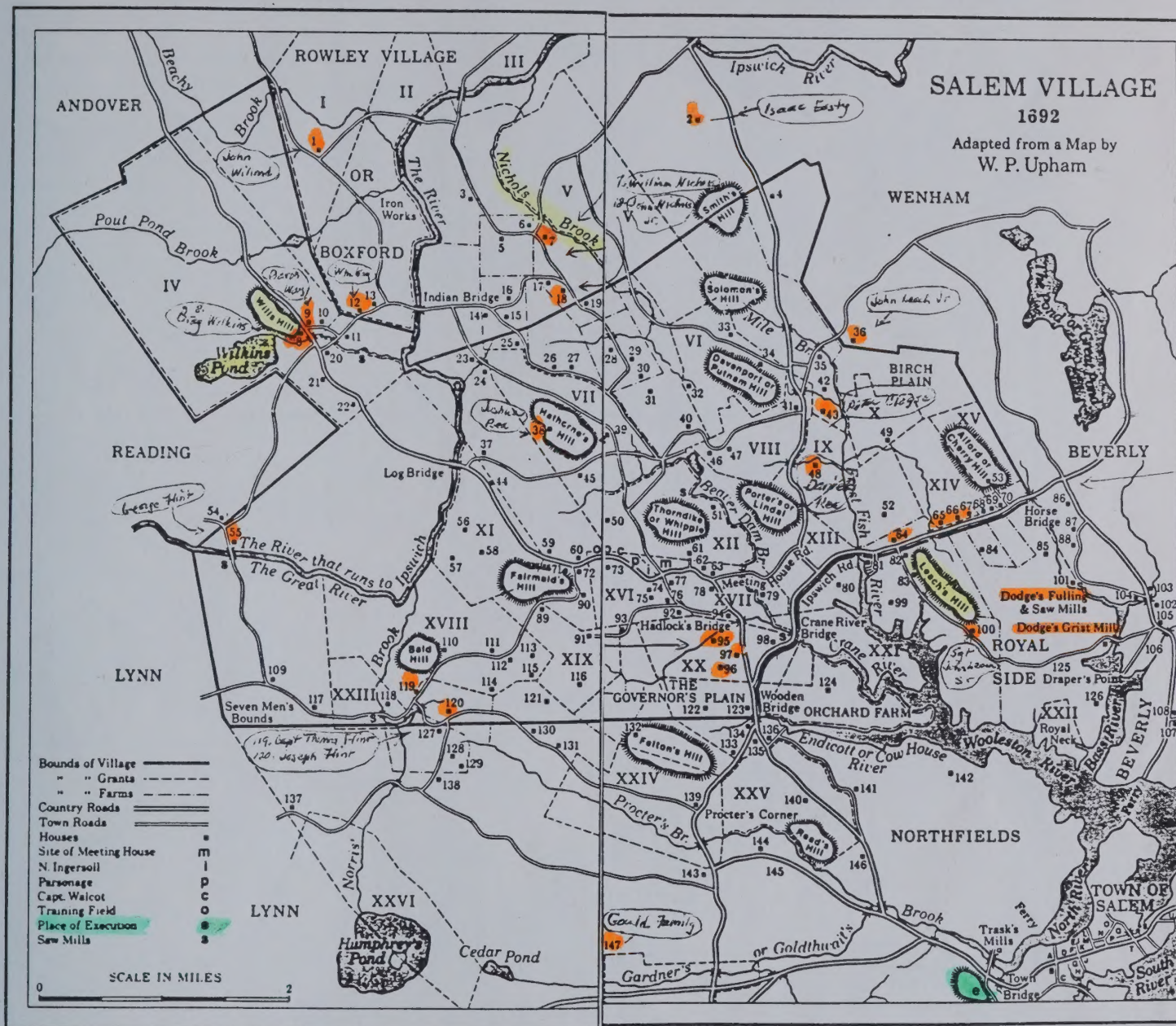


Scale: 1 inch = 152 rods.

A PART OF SALEM VILLAGE IN 1700.



Residents of Salem Village during the witchcraft hysteria



*Adapted from Charles W. Upham, Salem Witchcraft, 2 vols., Boston, 1867.

From: Salem Witchcraft & Hawthorne's House of Seven Gables
Eugene A. Stratton (1992) Pages 38-45

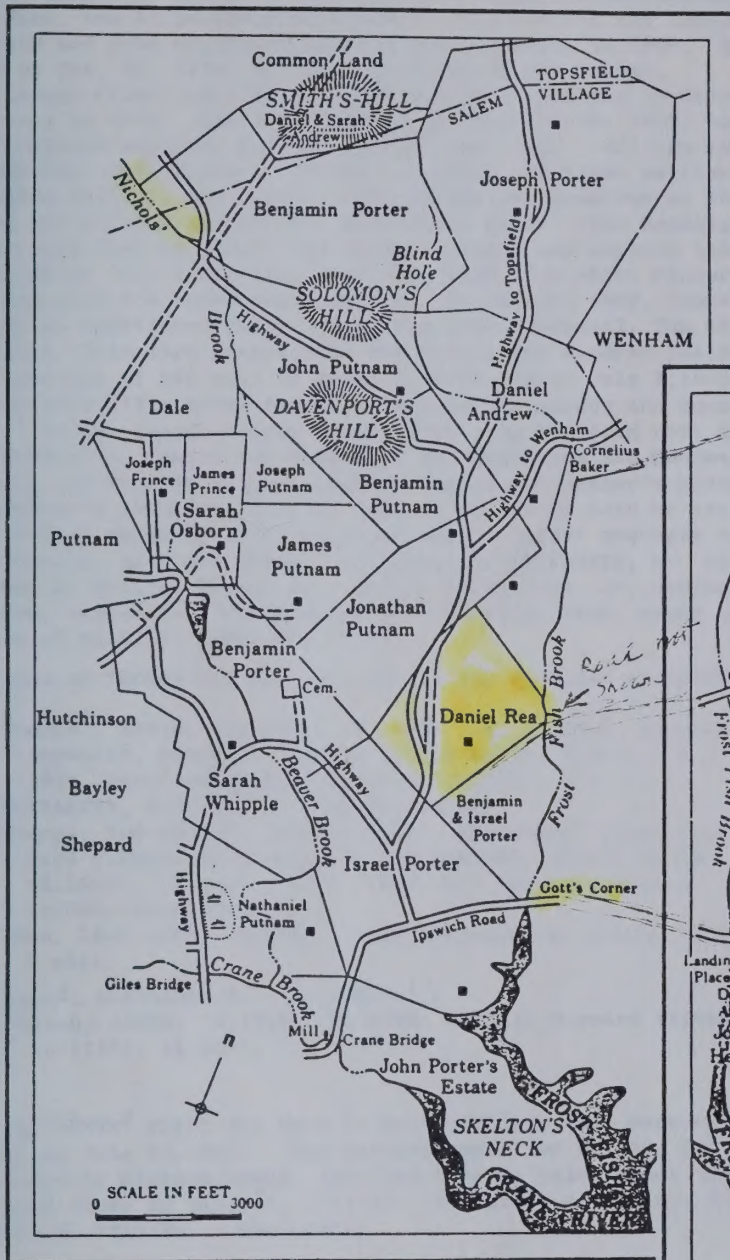
Part of Key - See. xx Center right - 44. Samuel Rea 55. Francis Nurse 46. Samuel Nurse
See XIV Center far right - on road to Ipswich - 64. John Flint 65. John Rea 66. Joshua Rea

Though the Dodges, Reas, Leaches and Flints did not get personally involved, their offspring married into families of the victims. Nichols and Wags (involved) were related to Margerat (Wickins) Willard ① whose husband, constable John Willard, was hanged. Soon afterwards she married William Towne whose three aunts were convicted - Rebecca Nurse ⑤ and Mary Easty ③ were hanged, and their sister Sarah Cloyse ④ barely escaped. A few years later Elizabeth Rea ③⑤-⑥ married John Towne, a close cousin (also related to the Goulds ①④⑦) who were involved. Lois Towne, grand daughter of both these couples, married Richard Dodge V.



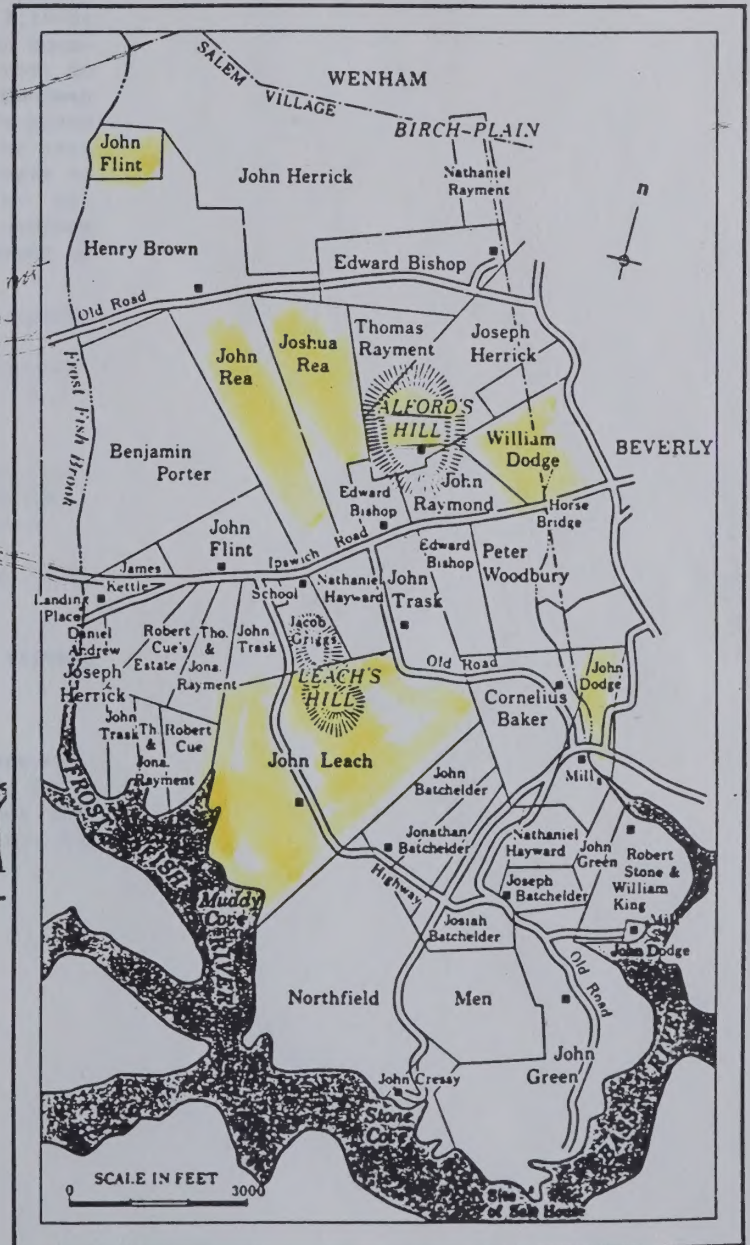
The map shows the distribution of settlements in the Haiyu Mountain region. The settlements are concentrated in the central and eastern parts of the area, with a few scattered in the western and southern parts. The map also shows the network of roads and the administrative boundaries of the region. The legend indicates that the red dots represent settlements, the black lines represent roads, the blue areas represent water bodies, and the dashed lines represent administrative boundaries. The scale of the map is 1:50,000, and the north arrow is located in the bottom right corner.

Frost



Salem Village sections in the 1690's. The reason they do not fit together at Frost + Fish Brook is that the scale is different. The section on the right is enlarged more.

Second and third generation inter-related families highlighted. The Reas here were Daniel's grandchildren. His relative Charles Gott (for whom the corner was named) had moved to Wenham & sold his property.



adjoining the first Daniel Rea to John Porter - the Porters above were descendants. See Dodge Family for others related to them on this map - including Alford's (later called Alford) for whom the hill was named - though that connection occurred nearly 200 years later.

*Adapted from maps by Sidney Perley.

The map shows the distribution of the
 species in the area. The species
 is found in the area of the
 river and the surrounding area.
 The species is found in the area
 of the river and the surrounding area.
 The species is found in the area
 of the river and the surrounding area.
 The species is found in the area
 of the river and the surrounding area.



The map shows the distribution of the
 species in the area. The species
 is found in the area of the
 river and the surrounding area.
 The species is found in the area
 of the river and the surrounding area.
 The species is found in the area
 of the river and the surrounding area.

FLINT

✓ THOMAS¹ FLINT was born in England about 1603. He died in Salem, Mass., on April 15, 1663, and his widow Ann married second John, son of Lawrence Southwick. Ann died in the summer of 1668 and John Southwick married Sarah Burnett in 1669. He died on Oct. 25, 1672, and Sarah married Thomas Cooper.

see over re: suit of heirs vs John Southwick

Thomas Flint had a brother William Flint who was in Salem as early as 1642. The first record of Thomas is in 1650, but the brothers may have arrived at the same time. William and Thomas were both farmers. Thomas was among the first settlers of Salem Village, now Danvers. His wilderness home was on the Salem and North Reading road, about five miles from Reading. Deeds show that he bought 150 acres of meadow and pasture land in Salem of John Pickering, Sept. 18, 1654, for which Pickering had paid £13 three years before. In January 1662, Thomas bought an additional fifty acres from Robert Goodall, for £20 sterling. This farm remained in the family two hundred years.

Abstract of his will of April 1, 1663, proved July 2, 1663: To his wife fifty acres improved land and his meadow and housing. To son Thomas thirty acres upland on his farm next to Mr. Gardner's, "which was bought of Mr. Higginson and Goodman Goodell, as he sees fit, not encroaching on his mother's meadow or brother's [William Flint's] land; also £10 in corn or cattle, all of which he is to enjoy at age." After bequests to sons George, John and Joseph, and daughter ELIZABETH, he appointed Mr William Brown, Sr., Joseph Swinnerton, Jr., Goodman Moulton, overseers. The inventory of April 14, 1663, shows an estate of £330.15; debts £65.13.4.

Children of Thomas and Ann, all but Thomas recorded in Salem:

- 1 Thomas², c1645. Captain. D. 1721. M. 1, 1666, Hannah³ (Robert², Robert¹) Moulton (c1646-1673); 2 chil. M. 2, 1674, Mary² (William¹) Downton (d.1721); 9 chil.
- + 2 ELIZABETH, 6-30-1650. See following.
- 3 George, 3-6-1652/3. D.1720. M.1, Elizabeth³ (Nathaniel², [and Elizabeth² (RICHARD¹) HUTCHINSON], John¹) Putnam, (d.1697); 10 chil. M. 2, 1699, Mrs Susannah Gardner (c1668-1720); no chil.
- 4 John, 12-3-1655. D.1730. Wife Elizabeth d. before 1730; 9 chil.
- 5 Anna², 2-25-1657/8. D. 1663.
- 6 Joseph, c1662. D.1710. M. 1685, Abigail Hayward (living in 1713); 11 chil.

✓ ELIZABETH² FLINT was born in Salem Village (now Danvers), Mass., on June 30, 1650. She married there on May 20, 1667, John, son of Richard Leach. John was born in Salem about 1645, and died there on March 5, 1717/18. Elizabeth died his widow on Feb. 8, 1719/20. See LEACH.

Flint Genealogy.

Perley: History of Salem, Mass., 2:265
Essex Historical Society Collections, 1:389.
Essex County Probate Court Records, 1:416.
Salem and Danvers, Mass., Vital Records.

FLINT "Thomas Flint and William Flint of Salem" 1931 (typescript NYPL).

THOMAS Boston (Mass.) 1637, Concord ca 1638, d there 8 Oct 1653. Assistant. ner 14:58 (desc). Male line of desc of brother, Rev. Henry of Braintree, died out in 1760 (ner 61:198); Pope. #27, 97.†

✓ THOMAS Salem (Mass.) 1650, d there 15 Apr 1663. Descendants of Thomas Flint of Salem 1860; Flint Supplement gives line to Henry and descendants of Henry 1939 (pamph).

WILLIAM Salem (Mass.) 1642, d there 2 Apr 1672. Proprietor. Perley, Salem 2:19; Pope; "William Flint" 1929 (typescript pamph. biog).

Ipswich Quarterly Court
RECORDS AND FILES

71

1668]

Jno. Tod v. Jno. Godfery. Slander. Verdict for plaintiff. Court did not accept this verdict.*

Thomas Flint, son and heir of Thomas Flint, in behalf of himself and the rest of his brethren and sister v. John Southwick, late husband of the executrix of Thomas Flint's estate. Withdrawn.†

Jno. Godfery v. Phillip Bill. Debt. Of thirty-four bushels of wheat. Verdict for plaintiff.†

John Godfery v. George Hadly. Forfeiture of a bond. Verdict for plaintiff.‡

*Writ, dated Oct. 23, 1668, signed by Tho. Leaver,¶ for the court, and served by Henery Skerry,¶ marshal of Salem. Bond of John (his mark) Godfrey.

John Tod's bill of cost, 1li. 13s. 6d.

John Dresser, aged about sixty-one years, deposed that about the beginning of July, 1667, finding John Pickard and John Godfrey discoursing, he heard Godfrey affirm that "J. T." was a cheating knave. Deponent told him he might as well say John Tod. Sworn, Nov. 24, 1668, before Samuel Symonds.†

John Pickard, aged about forty-seven years, deposed that he asked John Godfrey why he dealt so hardly with John Tod when he was attorney for him against Goodman Niccols. He answered that Tod was a deceitful fellow and that he was forty pounds worse off for him that day. Whereupon deponent's neighbor Dresor came to them, etc. Sworn in court.

†Writ: Thomas Flint, sr., heir to Thomas Flint in his own behalf and that of the rest of his brethren and sister v. Jno. Southwick of Salem; for withholding the estate of said Flint left with his widow at his decease to be given by her to his children, as by his will appears in land, corn, cattle, household stuff and tools to the value of 295li. as per inventory proved at the last Ipswich court, a great part of which estate said Southerick was possessed of a little while after he was married to the said widow Flint; dated Oct. 11, 1668; signed by Simon Bradstreete,¶ assistant.

*See P1
on reverse*

"Pioneers of Massachusetts" page 170
by Charles Henry Pope
(see note below)

FLINT,

Rev. Henry, came to N. E. in 1635; adm. chh. Boston 15 (9) 1635; frm. May 25, 1636; was dism. to ye gathering of a chh. at Mt. Wollaston, (Braintree,) 11 (6) 1639, and was ord. teacher in company with Mr. Wm. Tompson, pastor. He m. Margery, dau. of Charles Hoar, Jr., of Gloucester, Eng. Ch. Dorothy b. 11 (5) 1642, Annah b. 7 (11) 1643, (Hanna m. 15 (9) 1662, John Dassitt,) Josiah b. 24 (6) 1645, Margaret b. 20 (4) 1647, d. 29 (6) 1648, Joanna b. 18 (12) 1648, (m. 30 (10) 1669, Noah Newman,) David b. 11 (11) 1651, d. 29 (1) 1652, Seth b. 2 (2) 1653, Ruth b. 31 (11) 1654, Cotton and John b. 16 (7) d. 20 (9) 1656.

He d. April 27, 1668. Will, dated 24 (11) 1652, prob. 2 July, 1668. Wife Margery; sons Josiah and Seth; daughters. The widow d. March 10, 1686-7. [S.] [Reg. IX, 151, XVIII, 327, and LIII, 92.]

John, [Marblehead,] a witness at Es. court in 1639.

Mr. Thomas, bro. of Henry, Boston, 1637; frm. March, 1637-8; rem. to Concord. Deputy. Wife Abigail; ch. Ephraim b. 14 (11) 1641.

He d. Oct. 8, 1653, ae. 50. Will, dated 21 (10) 1651, left children to care of wife with counsel of Mr. Bulkley, teacher of chh. Conc.; his bro. Mr. Henry F., teacher of chh. Braintree; Capt. Simon Willard, and his uncle William Wood of Conc. [Reg. XVI, 72.] The widow d. Dec. 18, 1689, ae. 82.

William, Salem, with wife Alice and child, 3 (9) 1645; propr., overseer of fences and highways; jurymen. He deposed in 1661, ae. about 58 years.

Will prob. Essex Court 27 (4) 1673; wife Alice; dau. Alice m. Henry Bullock, Jr. [Es. De. I, 39;] sons Thomas and Edward F.; son Joshua Ward, son Joshua; to John Hathorne; the court also gave a portion to son John Pickering. Widow Alice deposed in 1677, ae. about 70 years.

The above does not show our Thomas Flint but above William was his brother.

*copies from
(One book, by Edwin W. Flint (1904)
CS 71, F 627 & its contents were picked out, as not
contributing anything new regarding our line)*

FLINT ANCESTRY

"DESCENDANTS OF THOMAS FLINT OF SALEM" BY JOHN FLINT AND
JOHN H. STONE, 1860

We find there were four individuals by the name of Flint, who had migrated to this country and settled in Massachusetts before 1650, namely: Thomas and William, of Salem; Henry, of Braintree; and Thomas, of Concord.

Flynt, Flint Ancestry, Rev. Henry¹, b. Matlock, Derbysh., Eng., Bost., 1635; Braint., ord. Mar. 17, 1640; m. Margery Hoar², Rev. Josiah², b. Aug. 24, 1645, H. C., 1664, Dorchester; m. Esther Willett², b. July 10, 1648; Dorothy³ Flynt m. Edmund Quincy⁴. Mr. Quincy was b. Oct. 21, 1681, d. London, Feb. 23, 1738. ("Cleveland Family," E. J. and H. G. Cleveland, Vol. I, p. 493.)

Thomas and William, of Salem, were brothers and arrived here probably before the year 1640. William is mentioned in the Salem records in 1642, at which time there is some evidence to show that he had a mother living in this country. Hanson, in his History of Danvers, says that William landed here about 1640. Flint Street, in Salem, is said to be over land he once owned, and near to where

his dwelling-house stood. By a plan now extant it is shown that he owned the land from the corner of Flint and Essex streets, running through to Broad Street, and from thence easterly, nearly or quite, to Pickering Street, and from thence to Essex Street. He also owned land in the Southfields. The first deed to him on record is dated July 23, 1652. He died February 2, 1673, aged 70 years. His widow Alice Flint, died Oct. 5, 1700. The inventory of his estate amounted to £911 15s.

He had six children, namely: (William)

EDWARD, THOMAS, ELIZABETH, MARGARET, ALICE, and HANNAH. They were all married, and all lived in Salem, excepting Elizabeth, who married — Woodis, and resided in England. His daughter Alice was arraigned before the Essex County Court, in 1652, for wearing a silk hood; but, proving she was worth £200, was discharged. She subsequently married John Pickering, and lived in a house in Broad Street, which is now standing, and owned by one of her descendants.

no! 1. THOMAS FLINT, the emigrant ancestor, came to America, as tradition reports, from Wales, in Great Britain. The first mention made of him in the town records of Salem is in 1650; but there is reason to believe that he came to this country much earlier; and there is also some evidence to show that he had a mother here as early as 1642. He was among the first settlers of Salem Village, now South Danvers. The spot in the wilderness which he selected for his home is situated on the Salem and North Reading road, about six miles from the present Court House in Salem, and five miles from the town of North Reading, and near Phelps' mill and brook. He acquired his land by purchase. The first deed to him on record, "containing one hundred and fifty acres of meadow and pasture land, and lying within the bounds of Salem," he bought Sept. 18, 1654, of John Pickering. The price paid for this land is not mentioned; but quite a good opinion can be formed of its value, from the fact that John Pickering, three years before, gave Mr. John Higginson thirteen pounds for the same land.

The second lot recorded, containing fifty acres, he purchased 1st January 1662, of Robert Goodall, for which he paid twenty pounds sterling. It is described as situated in Salem, and as being "near upon a square," and bounded southerly by land of Henry Phelps, westerly by Phelps' Brook, and northerly and easterly by land of said Goodall.

The farm of the old patriarch has always remained in the possession of his descendants. It is now occupied by the heirs of Elijah Flint (238), and may truly be called the old homestead, it having been in the family more than two hundred years. He died April 15, 1663. His wife's name was Ann.

They had six children:

1. THOMAS.
- ✓ 2. ELIZABETH, b. April 30, 1650. m. John² Leach (Richard) out line
3. GEORGE, b. Jan. 6, 1652.
4. JOHN, b. Oct. 3, 1655.
5. ANNA, b. Dec. 25, 1657, d. April, 1663.
6. JOSEPH, b. 1662.

SERGEANT GEORGE FLINT, 2nd son of Thomas (1), born Jan. 6, 1652. He went to Reading before the year 1682, and settled on land he acquired by inheritance from his father and was the first of the name in that town. He was a farmer and resided in the North Precinct, in that part which now constitutes the village of North Reading. His house stood on a gentle eminence, commanding a fine prospect of the river and the adjacent meadows, which to the early settlers was the chief attraction of the town. Tradition says that his was the first framed house built in the precinct, and that it was used as a garrison house while there were hostile Indians in the colony and that upon the doors of which were seen marks, said to have been made by the bullets of the Indians. Another circumstance connected with this family, and which was frequently related by the older portion of it, is, that on a pleasant Sabbath all the family were absent at church but two of the daughters of Sergeant Flint, who were left at home in charge of the house. During the absence, one of the daughters took a pistol, and, aiming it at the other, said: "Suppose you were an Indian, how easily I could shoot you!" At that moment the pistol went off, and lodged its contents in the shoulder of her sister, which crippled her for life. Her father in his will mentions his "unfortunate daughter Mary," and makes suitable provision for her proper maintenance. Her grandfather, Nathaniel Putnam, gives her a double portion, "because she hath a lame arm." The old garrison house was taken down several years since, and one of modern construction erected in its place. He was one of the Selectmen of the town for several successive years; was a member of the Salem Village church, and was quite active in religious matters, as appears by the interest he took in the organization of the North Parish and church. He presided as Moderator of the first meeting of the parish and ever after, as long as he lived, took a leading part in the management of its affairs. He gave the parish one acre of land, on which the first meeting-house was built.

The first minister of the precinct church, Rev. Daniel Putnam, was his nephew.

He died June 23, 1720, aged 68. Married Elizabeth, daughter of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Hutchinson) Putnam, who was born Aug. 11, 1662, and died March 6, 1697. Married (second) March 2, 1699, Mrs. Susannah Gardner, by whom he had no issue. She died March, 1720.

Had ten children, by first wife:

1. ELIZABETH, b. Aug. 19, 1685; m. Ebenezer Damon.
2. GEORGE, b. April 1, 1686.
3. ANN, b. April 18, 1687; m. Jonathan Parker, Dec. 21, 1706.
4. EBENEZER, b. Dec. 16, 1689.
5. NATHANIEL, b. Oct. 21, 1690, d. in infancy.
6. MARY, b. Nov. 4, 1691.
7. MERCY, b. Oct. 7, 1692; m. Benj. Damon, Sept. 9, 1714.
8. NATHANIEL, b. Jan. 4, 1694.
9. HANNAH, b. Feb. 12, 1695; m. John Hunt, July 10, 1716.
10. JOHN, b. March 4, 1696, d. in infancy.

Copied from NEHER Vol

April 1885
Pages 175-179

Re: Thomas Flint, Jr (later Capt)
extended in R-P war.
Brother of our Elizabeth
(Flint) Leach

SOLDIERS IN KING PHILIP'S WAR.

Communicated by the Rev. GEORGE M. BODGE, of East Boston, Mass.

[Continued from page 78.]

No. X.

CAPT. JOSEPH GARDINER AND HIS MEN.

JOSEPH GARDINER was the son of Thomas and Margaret Gardner of Salem. He married before August, 1656, Anne Downing, daughter of Emanuel Downing and niece of the first Gov. Winthrop (REGISTER, xxxviii. 199).

He was a man of energy and ability, and held many positions of honor and importance in Salem. In May, 1672, he was appointed by the General Court of Massachusetts, lieutenant of the foot company under Capt. William Price of Salem (Mass. Colony Records, v. 517).

On May 12, 1675, the militia of Salem was divided into two companies by order of the Court, and by the same order the election of Joseph Gardiner as captain of the First Company in Salem was confirmed. When the expedition against Narraganset was organized, Capt. Gardiner was appointed, November 3, 1675, to command the company raised at Salem and the adjoining towns, and mustered his men, ninety-five strong, at Dedham Plain, December 10th, and marched with the army towards the rendezvous at Wickford. During the march several skirmishes took place, and Mr. Hubbard relates that some of Stone-wall-John's crew "met with some of Capt. Gardiner's men that were stragling about their own business contrary to order, and slew his Sergeant with one or two more." In "Capt. Oliver's Narrative" it is related that on this occasion the Indians "killed two Salem men within a mile of our quarters and wounded a third so that he is dead." The names of

these are given in the list below. The fall of Capt. Gardiner is thus related in Church's "Entertaining History":

"Mr. Church spying Capt. Gardner of Salem amidst the Wigwams in the East end of the Fort, made towards him; but on a sudden while they were looking each other in the face, Capt. Gardner settled down, Mr. Church stepped to him, and seeing the blood run down his cheek lifted up his cap and calling him by name, he looked up in his face but spake not a word, being mortally shot through the head."

After the death of Capt. Gardiner, the command of his company fell upon his lieutenant, William Hathorn, under whom the men served during the campaign, until disbanded about February 7th to 10th. It is thus that the men were credited sometimes under Gardiner, sometimes Hathorn, occasionally both; the latter's name, signed to the voucher on "debenter" which each soldier presented to the paymaster, doubtless confused the clerks and caused this appearance of double command. Capt. Hathorn's subsequent career at the eastward will be given in its proper place.

His widow, then aged about thirty-four, married June 6, 1676, Gov. Simon Bradstreet, whose age was about seventy-three. She died April 19, 1713, aged 79 (REG. viii. 313; xiii. 234). Leaving no children, Capt. Gardiner's Narraganset claim fell to the oldest male heir of his eldest brother Thomas. This heir was Habakkuk Gardiner, son of the Captain's nephew Thomas, who in the list of claimants claims in the "right of his uncle, Capt. Joseph Gardiner."

Capt. Joseph Gardiner and his men.

February 29 th 1675 & 6				
£	s.	d.		
William Hathorne, Capt.	11	09	08	Charles Knight 03 03 00
Samuel Gray	03	06	07	John Prince 03 15 08
Peter Cary	02	14	00	Andrew Sargeant 02 19 02
Jeremiah Neall	04	18	00	Edward Haradine 02 19 02
Peter Cole	02	14	00	John Trask 02 17 08
Joseph Price	01	13	00	Joseph Houlton 02 14 00
Samuel Tarbox	03	09	03	Isaac Welman 02 14 00
Sam. Beadle	04	01	00	William Pritchett 02 14 00
Benjamin Hooper	02	14	00	John Maston 02 14 00
Rice Husband	02	14	00	Benjamin Chadwell 02 14 00
Marke Stacy	02	14	00	Stephen Greenleaf 01 10 00
William Hollis	02	18	00	Amos Gurdon 02 14 10
John Clark	01	14	00	Peter Emons 02 14 10
Thomas Weymouth	02	14	00	William Webb 02 14 00
William Hutchins	02	07	00	Robert Sibly 02 14 00
Christopher Read	02	14	00	Andrew Ringe 05 08 00
William Bassett	05	04	04	Benjamin Langdon 03 00 00
Samuel Graves	02	14	00	James Briatly 04 01 00
John Farrington	02	02	00	Benjamin Webster 02 14 00
William Driver	02	14	00	Freegrace Norton 03 12 00
Andrew Townsend	02	14	00	Israel Thorne 02 14 00
Jonathan Looke	02	14	00	Ezekiel Woodward 02 14 00
				John Wheeler 05 08 00
				William Wainwright 02 14 00

1885.] Soldiers in King Philip's War. 177

John Boutell	00 18 00	Michael Towsley	02 15 08
Jonathan Clark	02 14 00	Thomas Kemball	02 14 00
William Williams	02 14 00	Thomas Blashfield	02 14 00
Samuel Rust	04 01 00	William Allen	02 14 00
Benjamin Sweet, Lieut.	03 00 00	Edward Whittington	02 14 00
Henry Dow	01 16 00	John Parker	02 14 00
Silvester Hayes	03 03 00	Philip Butler	02 14 00
Thomas Tenney	02 14 00	James Wall	04 10 10
Joseph Jewett	02 14 00	John Ballard	02 14 00

John Boynton	02 14 00	July 24, 1676	
Peter Coomes	03 08 00	William Hathorne, Capt.	07 03 09
Jonathan Copp	01 04 00	Amos Gourdin	01 04 00
John Mann	02 04 00	Daniel Johnson	03 10 00
		Jeremiah Neale, Lieut.	03 00 00

March 24 th 1675-6			August 24 th 1676	
John Vowden	02 14 00	Edward Counter	02 14 00	
Lawrence Majore	02 14 00	Ebenezer Barker	02 02 00	
Thomas Flynt	02 16 00	Thomas Russell	02 14 00	
Thomas Greene	02 14 00	Joseph Jeffords	01 09 00	
John Read	02 14 00	Thomas Vely	02 05 00	
Adam Gold	02 14 00	Eleazer Linsey	01 16 00	
Zacheus Perkins	02 14 00	Thomas Bell	04 05 08	

William Pabody	02 14 00	Sept 23 ^d 1676	
Joseph Gardiner, Capt.	05 03 00	Mark Bachelier	00 14 00
James Fry	02 14 00	Robert Cocks	02 02 00
Leonard Toser	02 14 00	Moses Morgaine	02 14 00

April 24 th 1676.			Credited under Capt. Hathorne.	
Thomas Kenny	02 14 00	Samuel Story	04 05 08	
John Stacy	02 14 00	Peter Ashamaway	04 05 08	

June 24 th 1676				
Francis Jefford	02 14 00	Jacob Knight	01 10 00	
Samuel Phelps	02 14 00	William Wainwright	04 16 06	
John Presson	02 14 00	Samuel Moulton	01 04 00	
Joseph Abbott	02 14 00	James Creeke	04 04 00	
Samuel Pickworth	00 11 06	James Cox	04 05 00	
Abraham Snitchell	01 01 00			

✓ - our ancient anchor - this Flint (later Capt) - is recorded as Elizabeth's brother.

A list of y^e names of Capt. Gardiner's Souldiers for this p^resent Expedition

Salem.
 Serjeant Jeremiah Neall
 Serjeant William basset
 Ser^t Samuel bradell
 Corp. Samuell Pikworth
 Charls Knight
 John boden
 William holess
 Marek Stace
 Samuell Gray
 Larance Magery
 John Polott
 Philip butteler
 Beniamen Lemon

Edward Counter
 Lenard Tossier
 William Hind
 Joseph Price
 ✓ Th^o Flint
 Pelter Prescote
 Isack Read
 Tho. Buffingtog
 John Stacey
 Henery Rich
 Tho. Greene
 James Wall
 Joseph Holton jun^r
 Tho. Reay

Salem

Joseph Dees—wounded
 Abraham Switchell
 Samuell ffrail—not apear
 frances Jefford
 Clem. Rumeall
 Adam Gold
 Samuell Tarbox

Glos'ter.

John Prince
 Andrew Serjant
 Joseph Somes
 Vincensont Davis
 Moses duday

Beverley.

Christopher Brown
 John Trask
 Thomas Blashfield
 Lott Cunant
 Christopher Read
 William fferyman
 Moses Morgine
 John Clark
 William Allen
 William bath
 Richard Hussband

Lyn.

Nicholas Huchin
 John Linsey
 Robert driver
 Daniell Huchin
 John Davis
 Samuell Graves
 Andrew townsend
 Thomas baker
 Johnathan Looke
 Iseck Welman
 Isaack Hartt
 John Farington
 Samul Rods
 Mark Bachelor
 Richard Hutton
 Thomas Kemball
 Philip Welsh
 John Hunkens

Topsfield.

William Peabody
 Zacheus Curtis
 ✓ Zacheus Perkins
 Robertt Andrews
 Isek burton

Andover.

Nathan Stevens
 James Fry
 Eben baker
 John Parkcr
 Joseph Abett
 John balard
 John Lovejoy
 Edward Whittington
 Samuell Philips
 John P^rston

A Lyst of Capt Joseph Gardiner Company y^t were wounded and Slayne of his Company, some y^e 16 Dec^r & Other 10 dec 75

Joseph Rice of Salem
 Samuel Pikeworth of Salem
 M^rke Batchiler of Wenham

} wch. 3 were slayne
 abroad from y^e Garrison

Capt Joseph Gardiner of Salem
 Abra. Switchell of Marblehead
 Joseph Soames of Cape Anne
 Robert Andrews of Topsfield

} 4 men Slayne more

Charles Knight of Salem
 Nicholas Huchins of Lynn
 ✓ Thomas flint of Salem
 Jn^o Harrington of Lynne
 Robert Cocks of Marblehead
 Eben Baker of Andiver
 Edw^d Mardin of Cape Ann
 Joseph Read of Beverly
 Joseph Abett of Andiver
 Joseph Holeton of Salem

} 10 men wounded

Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England Vol II

by James Savage

FLINT, EDWARD, Salem 1665, ensign 1690. EPHRAIM, Concord, s. of Thomas, m. 20 Mar. 1684, Jane Bulkley, and d. 3 Aug. 1722. GEORGE, early sett. at Reading, freem. 1691, may have been s. of Thomas of Salem. HENRY, Braintree, came in 1635 to Boston, b. at Matlock in Derbysh. freem. 25 May 1636, ord. 17 Mar. 1640, m. Margery, eldest d. of Joanna Hoar, and sis. of Rev. Leonard, Presid. of H. C. wh. long surv. had Dorothy, b. 11 July 1642; Ann, 11 Sept. 1643, or, as the Arabic numerals (in Geneal. Reg. XII. 109), better read, 7 Jan. 1644; Josiah, 24 Aug. 1645, H. C. 1664; Margaret, 20 June 1647, d. soon; Joanna, 18 Feb. 1649; David, 11 Jan. 1652, d. soon; Seth, 2 Apr. 1653; Ruth, 31 Jan. 1655; John, and Cotton, tw. 16 June or Nov. 1656; both d. soon; he d. 27 Apr. 1668, and his wid. d. 10 Mar. 1687. His will, tho. not duly witness. was pro. 2 July 1668. Perhaps Dorothy m. 30 Apr. 1666, Rev. Samuel Shepard of Rowley, and both d. within two yrs.; Ann m. 15 Nov. 1662, John Dassett; Joanna m. 30 Dec. 1669, Rev. Noah Newman; Seth d. at Dedham, 12 May 1673, being in his 2d yr. at H. C.; and Ruth d. next mo. *JOHN, Concord, s. of Thomas, m. 1667, Mary, d. of Edward, and sis. of Presid. Oakes, had Thomas; was rep. 1677 and 9, and d. 1687. JOHN, Salem, perhaps s. of Edward, perhaps of Thomas, serv. in Philip's war 1676, k. an Ind. at Lynn, but next yr. was conv. of manslaughter for d. of a white man, liv. at the village, freem. 1690, by w. Eliz. prob. d. of Nathaniel Putnam, had Joseph, b. 25 Feb. 1693. JOSEPH, Salem, s. of Thomas of the same, was freem. 1690. JOSIAH, Dorchester, eldest s. of Henry, ord. 27 Dec. 1671, m. 24 Jan. 1672, Esther, d. of Capt. Thomas Willet, had Mary, b. Nov. 1672, d. 9 Aug. foll.; Henry, 9 Feb. 1674, d. in few days; and Henry, again, a. 1675, H. C. 1693 (the disting. perman. tutor from 1699 to 1754, d. unm. 13 Feb. 1760), wh. always wrote his name Flynt, as did his f. wh. d. 16, but grave st. says 15 Sept. 1680; and Dorothy. His wid. d. 26 July 1737, aged 89. *THOMAS, Concord, dr. of Rev. Henry, sold the Matlock est. wh. had been in the fam. sev. ages (as father Flynt, his gr. neph. writes), to come to N. E. 1636, freem. Mar. 1638; was rep. 1637-40, and Assist. 1642 to his d. 8 Nov. 1653. He had brought £2,000, says his pastor, Rev. Peter Bulkley, in 3 Mass. Hist. Coll. I. 38; and Rev. Dr. Ripley, in his Dedie. sermon, p. 35, shows, that it was exp. chiefly for the benefit of the town. He had other ch. perhaps one or more b. in Eng. besides Ephraim, b. 14 Jan. 1642; and John; both above ment.; but tho. his will, made 21 Dec. 1651, "intending a voyage to our native country of Eng." provides for w. and childr. it does not name them, but commends the latter to care of Rev. Peter Bulkley and Rev. Henry Flint, Capt. Simon Willard, and uncle William Wood of Concord. THOMAS, Salem, d. 15 Apr. 1663, leav. wid. and ch. Thomas (Eliz.) George, John, and Joseph. THOMAS, Salem, prob. s. of the preced. was wound. in the great swamp fight, 19 Dec. 1675, when his capt. Gardner was k. but serv. afterwards as ensign 1689 in the Danvers co. perhaps was freem. 1690. WILLIAM, Salem 1645, d. May 1673, leav. good est. to wid. and s. Edward, b. 1638; and Thomas. His d. Alice m. in 1657, John Pickering. Four of nine of this name gr. at Harv. up to 1834, were clerg. and three of seven, at other N. E. coll.

Gen. of N. Eng. Fam. Vol II
by Wm. Coffer MFL Ref 9729.3 C991

627

Thomas Flint, the first American ancestor of the family bearing this name, tradition says, came to this country from Wales, Great Britain. He is first mentioned in the town records of Salem in 1650, but there is reason to believe that he came to America much earlier. It is also thought that his mother was here as early as 1642. He was among the first settlers of Salem Village, now South Danvers, and his home was situated on the Salem and North Reading road, about six miles from the present court house in Salem, five miles from North Reading, and near the Phelps' mill and brook. He acquired his land by purchase. The first deed found on record is September 18, 1654, when he bought of John Pickering, one hundred and fifty acres of meadow and pasturage land, within the bounds of Salem. John Pickering had paid John Higginson thirteen pounds for this land three years before. Thomas Flint also purchased on January 1, 1662, fifty acres of land of Robert Goodall, and paid twenty pounds sterling therefor. This land was in Salem, and was bounded on the south by land of Henry Phelps, on the west by Phelps' brook, and on the north and east by Goodall's land. This land remained in the family for a period of over two hundred years. Thomas Flint died April 15, 1663. He married Ann ———, and their children were: Thomas Jr., mentioned below; Elizabeth, born April 30, 1650; George, January 6, 1652; John, October 3, 1655; Anna, December 25, 1657; Joseph, 1662.

(II) Captain Thomas (2) Flint, son of Thomas (1) Flint, was a carpenter and farmer and lived on the homestead. He seems to have been much respected by the people of the village and to have had much influence in the community, which he used prudently and judiciously. He was in King Philip's war, and served in the expedition against the Narragansetts, in 1675. In the attack at the swamp he was wounded, but probably not seriously, as he afterwards held several commissions in the village company of militia. He was also a prominent member of the church, and was one of those who established the first church of Salem Village. He was a large landholder, owning real estate in the counties of Salem and Middlesex, a large portion of which was in the latter county, in the town of Reading, which is now North Reading. These purchases were made at different times, from 1664 to 1702, and amounted to more than nine hundred acres. One of these lots, in Reading, purchased December 29, 1701, of Ephraim

Savage, of Boston, for sixty pounds, is described as being upland, containing one hundred acres and called Saddler's Neck, and bounded on the east by Adam Hart, on the north by Ipswich river and the meadows, south by Bear Meadow, and west by common land. He died May 24, 1721, aged about seventy-six years. He married (first) May 22, 1666, Hannah Moulton, who died March 30, 1673. He married (second) September 15, 1674, Mary, daughter of William Dounton. The children by first wife were: Abigail, born June 27, 1668; George, April, 1672. Children by second wife were: Thomas, born August 20, 1678; Mary, November 11, 1680; Ebenezer, April 6, 1683; William, July 17, 1685; Elizabeth, August 30, 1687; Jonathan, mentioned below; Ann, October 29, 1691; Samuel, September 29, 1693; Lydia, June 1, 1695.

(III) Jonathan Flint, son of Captain Thomas (2) Flint, was born November 8, 1689. He was a farmer, and lived on a farm adjoining that of his brother, William, and which was given him by his father, by deed dated March 22, 1720. This farm has always remained in the possession of his descendants. He married, February 18, 1722, Mary, daughter of Adam Hart, and their children were: Lydia, born September 21, 1723, married, June 10, 1752, Hezekiah Upton; Jonathan, mentioned below.

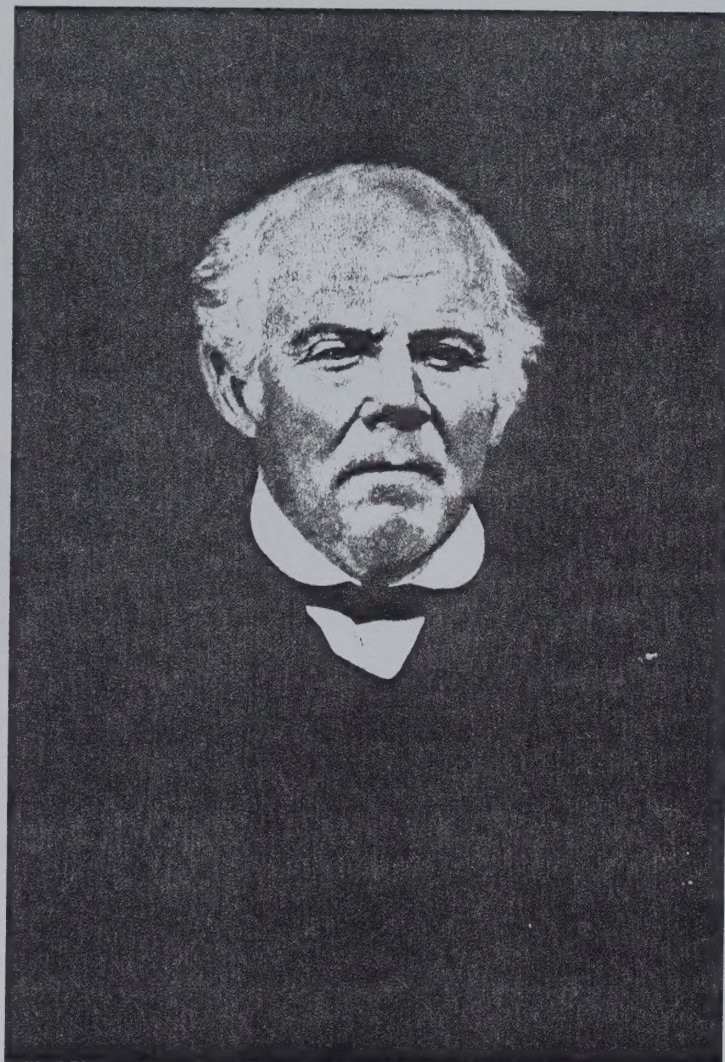
(IV) Jonathan (2) Flint, son of Jonathan (1) Flint, was born August 11, 1730. Like his father, he was a farmer, and resided on the old homestead, which has remained in the possession of his descendants to the present time. He married (first) Lydia Proctor, (second) Widow Smith. His children, all born to first wife, were: Jonathan, August 2, 1751; Lydia, February 12, 1753; Molly, April 4, 1754; Mary, April 4, 1755; Edmund, December 18, 1758; John, mentioned below; Daniel, October 27, 1767; Sally, married Nathaniel Upton.

(V) John Flint, son of Jonathan (2) Flint, was born April 3, 1761, died August 26, 1836. He was a farmer, and resided on the homestead at North Reading, Massachusetts. He married (first) July 22, 1782, Mehitable McIntire, who died October 28, 1790, aged twenty-three years. He married (second) May 26, 1791, Phebe, born March 8, 1763, died in December, 1846, daughter of George and Hannah (Phelps) Flint. Children by first wife: Sally, born January 10, 1784, married, December 23, 1802, Levi Nichols; John, born March 23, 1785. Children by second wife: Henry, mentioned below; Proctor, born March 17, 1794; Phebe, February 8, 1796; Mehitable, March 19, 1798; Hannah Phelps, May 9, 1800;

James Bancroft, March 10, 1803; Olive, July 25, 1805; George, September 6, 1808.

(VI) Henry Flint, son of John Flint, was born May 18, 1792, in North Reading, Massachusetts. During his life he was engaged in agricultural pursuits. For a number of years he lived in Danville, Vermont. He died November 29, 1866, in Fall River, Massachusetts. He married, September 5, 1819, Mary Sandborn, born September 21, 1804, died June 14, 1854. Children: Henry Sandborn, born August 4, 1821; Samuel Warren, August 10, 1823; John Dexter, April 26, 1826; Harrison Orlando, April 5, 1828; George Putnam, October 7, 1830, died February 16, 1852; Albert Augustus, July 10, 1833, died in 1853; Alonzo, mentioned below; Ezra Harvey, May 26, 1838, died in 1866; Ellen Mary, May 9, 1840; Annette, March 22, 1845, married, January 25, 1871, Ebenezer Luther (see Luther VI).

(VII) Alonzo Flint, son of Henry and Mary (Sandborn) Flint, was born in Peacham, Vermont, November 18, 1835. His boyhood days were spent on his father's farm, assisting with the work thereon, a portion of each year being devoted to attendance at the district schools of his native town. In 1853, at the age of eighteen years, he went to Fall River, Massachusetts, where his older brother, John D. Flint, had been located for some time, and in the latter city he found employment as a clerk in a furniture store, in which capacity he continued for several years. In January, 1860, he became associated with his brother, in the general house furnishing business, under the firm name of J. D. Flint & Company. This was the beginning of his independent mercantile career, and his success in the business world from that time on was pronounced. During the civil war, when the general business of the country was greatly depressed, this enterprising firm did a very large and profitable business in the buying and selling of second-hand cotton, the scarcity of the new material causing it to be so high in price that there was a marked demand for the partly used product, and this firm was wide-awake to note the demand and opportunity in this new line of trade. Although J. D. Flint & Company were enjoying a very prosperous business in Fall River, nevertheless, in 1865, at the close of the war, Mr. Alonzo Flint, in company with his brothers, Henry S. and Ezra H., opened a general house furnishing store in Providence, Rhode Island, under the firm name of Flint & Company. The business was first carried on in a building which stood on the present site of the Narragansett Hotel, remaining at that location until the building was ready to be torn down to make place for



HENRY FLINT, 1792-1866

ILLUSTRATED BY G. S. U.
A Supplement to the
GENEALOGICAL REGISTER

of the
DESCENDANTS OF
THOMAS FLINT OF SALEM

giving the direct line from

THOMAS FLINT [I] TO HENRY FLINT [581]

and

THE DESCENDANTS OF HENRY FLINT [581]

Compiled by
CARRIE E. CROWELL

Privately Printed for
ELLIOT FLINT
Providence, Rhode Island
1939

21955

929.273
F646
Supp.

FHL
(Salt Lake City)



Alonzo

Samuel Warren
Ellen Flint Wrightington

Annette Flint Luther
Henry Sanborn

Harrison Orlando
John Dexter

GENEALOGICAL REGISTER

FIRST GENERATION

- [1] THOMAS FLINT, the emigrant ancestor,
b. about 1600, in Wales, Great Britain,
d. Apr. 15, 1663, at Salem Village (became South
Danvers in 1855 and Peabody in 1868) Mass.,
m. Ann———,
d. 1668.

Six Children.

- *2 THOMAS FLINT,
b. about 1645.

- ✓ 3 ELIZABETH FLINT,
b. Apr. 30, 1650,

m. John Leach.

- 4* GEORGE FLINT,
b. Jan. 6, 1652,

m. 1st, Elizabeth Putnam,
2nd, Susannah Gardner.

- 5 JOHN FLINT,
b. Oct. 3, 1655,

m. Elizabeth———.

- 6 ANNA FLINT,
b. Dec. 25, 1657,

d. Apr. 1663.

- 7 JOSEPH FLINT,
b. ———, 1662,

m. Abigail Howard.

SECOND GENERATION

- [2] THOMAS FLINT, 1st son of Thomas [1],
b. about 1645, probably at Salem,

d. May 24, 1721, at Salem Village,
 m. 1st, May 22, 1666,
 Hannah Moulton,
 b. about 1646,
 d. Mar. 20, 1673, at Salem Village,
 dau. of Robert and Abigail (Goode)
 Moulton,
 2nd, Sept. 15, 1674,
 Mary Doughton,
 b. ———,
 d. ———, 1721, at Salem Village,
 dau. of William and Rebecca (———)
 Doughton.
 Eleven Children.

by HANNAH

- 8 ABIGAIL FLINT,
 b. June 27, 1668, m. Henry Holton.
- 9 GEORGE FLINT,
 b. Apr. 1672, m. Sarah (———).
 by MARY
- 10 THOMAS FLINT,
 b. Aug. 20, 1678, m. 1st, Lydia Putnam,
 2nd, Mary Putnam,
 3rd, Abigail (Leach) Ganson.
- 11 MARY FLINT,
 b. Nov. 11, 1680, m. Jonathan Hayward.
- 12 EBENEZER FLINT,
 b. Apr. 6, 1683, m. Gertrude Pope.

Alonso

Samuel Warren
 Ellen Flint Wrightington

Annette Flint Luther
 Henry Sanborn

Harrison Orlando
 John Dexter

- 13 WILLIAM FLINT,
 b. July 17, 1685, m. Abigail Nichols.
- 14 ELIZABETH FLINT,
 b. Aug. 30, 1687, m. Thomas Nichols.
- *15 JONATHAN FLINT,
 b. Nov. 8, 1689.
- 16 ANN FLINT,
 b. Oct. 29, 1691, m. Ebenezer Nichols.
- 17 SAMUEL FLINT,
 b. Sept. 29, 1693, m. Ruth Putnam.
- 18 LYDIA FLINT,
 b. June 1, 1695, m. Joseph Putnam.

THIRD GENERATION

- [15] JONATHAN FLINT, 5th son of Thomas [2],
 b. Nov. 8, 1689, at Salem Village,
 d. ———, 1753, at Reading, Mass.,
 m. Feb. 18, 1723, at Reading, Mass.,
 Mary Hart,
 b. Sept. 22, 1704, at Reading,
 d. ———,
 dau. of Adam and Elizabeth (———) Hart.
 Two Children.

- 84 LYDIA FLINT
 b. Sept. 21, 1723, m. Hezekiah Upton.
- *85 JONATHAN FLINT,
 b. Aug. 11, 1730.

*After this ensued an account of ancient Walsley including
 Flint Castle - omitted here. There is no evidence except tradition
 that Thomas was really Welsh, though he may have been of that
 background if he came from Somerset or nearby.*

EARLY FLINTS IN NEW ENGLAND

Four men by the name of Flint were among the founders of New England. They were Henry Flint, a clergyman, who came to Boston in 1635 and became minister of the church at Braintree, Mass. in 1640; his brother, Thomas Flint, who came in 1638 and settled in Concord, Mass.; another Thomas Flint who came to Salem, Mass. in or before 1638 and his brother, William Flint, who came to Salem probably about the same time, although the first mention of him on the records is in 1642. Henry of Braintree and Thomas of Concord came from the parish of Matlock in Derbyshire, England, while Thomas and William of Salem came from Wales. That these two sets of brothers had a common ancestor is probable, but what the relationship was, has never been learned.

Henry Flint, the minister at Braintree, married a sister of President Hoar of Harvard. His oldest son, Josiah, graduated from Harvard in 1664 and became minister of the church in Dorchester, Mass. Josiah died when a young man but left two children who became well known. These were Henry who graduated from Harvard in 1693 and who held the position of tutor at the college for fifty-five years, and Dorothy who married Edmund Quincy and by so doing became the first "Dorothy Q" of colonial

history. It was this Dorothy who added to the famous mansion house at Quincy, now popularly known as the "Dorothy Q house", the two-story ell for the use of her brother, Tutor Flint.¹

Thomas Flint of Concord has been characterized as a "man of wealth, talents and a Christian character." He took an active part, as shown by the town records, in the affairs of Concord until his death in 1653, holding important offices and using his wealth which appears to have been considerable, for the benefit of the town. He left many descendants.²

William Flint of Salem was an active member of that community from 1642 until 1673. He accumulated considerable property in Salem in the section of the town where Flint Street now is. It is probable that his dwelling house stood near the corner of Flint and Essex Streets and that his sons and later descendants built homes in this vicinity.³ According to one historian he, at one time, occupied the

farm of Emanuel Downing at Salem Village.⁴ The settlement of his estate in 1673 shows that he left a widow, two sons, Edward and Thomas, and three daughters, all living in Salem. Another daughter was married and living in England. An interesting item which indicates the status of the family is found in the early records where it is stated that in 1652, Alice, daughter of William Flint, was arraigned before the Essex County Court for wearing a silk hood, but on proving that her father was worth two hundred pounds, was discharged.

Thomas Flint of Salem, the fourth of the early Flints in New England, was the emigrant ancestor of the line whose record follows.

THOMAS FLINT OF SALEM

Thomas Flint [1], the first of the family with which this record is concerned, came, according to

⁴Emanuel Downing, brother-in-law of Governor Winthrop, settled in Salem in 1638, received a large grant in Salem Village and established there a game preserve and a home for his family. This was at a place later known as Proctor's Crossing, now in Peabody. In 1645, while Downing was in England, the house burned and the family thereafter lived in Salem Town and rented the farm. The tenant from 1646-1648 was William Flint. It is interesting to note that Emanuel Downing's son George, who as a boy of fourteen lived on this farm and was later graduated from Harvard College (the second member of the first class to graduate, 1642) is the one for whom Downing Street in London is named and the one in whose office the famous Samuel Pepys was a clerk. Sidney Perley in his "History of Salem" Vol. 2, pages 18-29, gives an account of Downing and of William Flint. It should be noted, however, that the statement that William Flint was a son of Thomas of Concord cannot be correct since the two men were born in the same year, 1603.

tradition, from Wales, in or before 1638. He was made a freeman of Salem in March of that year. It is probable that he lived in Salem for a short time but it is impossible now to be sure of the location of his first residence. The map of Salem in 1700 marks the site of a Thomas Flint house on Essex Street near the corner of Summer Street and it is possible that this was the earliest Flint house in Salem. The fact that it was nearly opposite the ancient house still standing on the corner of Essex and North Streets and known as the Witch House is at least an indication that there may be truth in this theory, for the Witch House has been called also the Roger Williams House and there is a family tradition that the earliest Flint house stood near that of Roger Williams.¹

Thomas Flint did not however remain long in Salem Town but was one of a small group who very early moved out into the wilderness some six miles beyond the original settlement and founded what was known as Salem Village.² Thomas increased his

first property in the new village by a purchase in 1654 and another in 1662. The homestead which he established remained in the family for generations and the farm provided sites for the homes of a number of his descendants. In April 1663 Thomas and his five year old daughter Anna died and it is probable that theirs were the first graves in the ancient family burial place on a hilltop in the fields back of the site of the old house.¹

Of Ann the wife of Thomas nothing is known except that when she made her will in 1668, five years after her husband's death, she was the wife of John Southwick (Sutherick).

¹The site of this property is in West Peabody, on the present Lowell Street not far from the Newburyport Turnpike. (See Map of Salem Village in 1692 contained in Volume I of "Salem Witchcraft" by Charles W. Upham.) Two quotations from Perley's, "History of Salem," Vol. III, pages 240 and 241, throw light on the location of the house in Thomas Flint's lifetime. "November 25, 1690, the selectmen appointed Josiah Pope, surveyor of the highway between his house and the house of Thomas Flint, Sr., to mend it at his own expense where it was damaged by his stopping the water. Mr. Pope lived opposite the mill at the southerly end of his mill pond at Phelps' mill, in West Peabody, and Mr. Flint lived at the western corner of Russell Street and Goodale's lane." "May 18, 1691, the selectmen empowered Israel Porter and Daniel Andrew to lay out a highway from the house of Ens. Thomas Flint to the country road by the house of John Porter. This is apparently that part of Lowell Street, now in Peabody, between Prospect and Russell Streets."

Another aid in locating the old place is found in the 9th annual report of the Peabody Historical Society (for the year 1904-1905). Here are listed the old burial places in Peabody including a "Flint Burial Place on Newbury Street, West Peabody" and "old Flint Burial Places in the fields in the rear of the houses of Mr. Charles Williams and B. F. Danforth, West Peabody."

36

THE FLINT FAMILY

THE SECOND GENERATION

Thomas Flint [2] was a farmer and carpenter and was also active in the necessary military organization of his community. He lived on the homestead of his father. The property must have come into his possession as soon as he became of age for his father had died and his mother had married Mr. Southwick. His brothers, all younger than he, built, later on, on sites left them by their father. The plan of the village in 1692 shows that there were two houses close together on the original lot, one occupied by Thomas and the other by his youngest brother, Joseph.

In addition to what he inherited Thomas [2] acquired considerable land in and about what is now North Reading, where later several of his sons established homes. In 1690 after the death of Giles Corey, his neighbor and a victim of the witchcraft delusion, he added the Corey property to his estate.¹

The military records show that Captain Thomas Flint served in King Philip's War and was wounded in the expedition against the Narragansetts at the time of the defeat of the Indians in the Great Swamp

¹A pamphlet issued by the Peabody Historical Society entitled "Places of historical interest in Peabody in 1900," describes the site of the Giles Corey house as "in the triangle west of the West Peabody Station and north of Pine Street." The map of Salem Village in 1692 shows the Giles Corey property to have been across the road from the Thomas Flint property.

Fight which took place in southern Rhode Island on December 19, 1675.

That he was prominent in civic and religious affairs is shown by the frequent mention of him on the town records. When the families of Salem Village decided that a meeting house was needed, the one in Salem Town being too far away, Thomas Flint was one of the petitioners. The meeting house was built in 1673 and was later the scene of many "examinations" during the time of the witchcraft delusion. In 1700, after this distressing episode was over the parish voted to erect a new meeting house, partly because the old one was outgrown and out of repair, and partly because of the unpleasant associations of the witchcraft years. It took a year to erect the new building and Capt. Thomas Flint is believed to have been the builder. It is probable that he was also the builder of the old meeting house.

In 1697, Capt. Thomas Flint was named first on a committee to secure a new pastor after the removal of the Rev. Mr. Parris who had caused the village a great deal of trouble, especially in connection with the witchcraft prosecutions.²

It is of interest to his descendants to state that Thomas Flint took no part in the witchcraft prose-

38

THE FLINT FAMILY

cutions except to give evidence for some of the victims, while during the same period his name constantly appears in connection with matters of justice and public welfare.

THE THIRD GENERATION

Jonathan Flint [15] was born at the homestead at Salem Village and probably lived there until 1720. He did not inherit it, for by his father's will it went to two brothers, Thomas and Samuel. On March 22, 1720, however, about a year before his father's death, Jonathan received by deed from his father a piece of land in North Reading. Here he built the home to which three years later he brought his wife. This property remained the homestead of this line for four generations and of a collateral line for some time longer. It was originally described as adjoining that of Jonathan's brother William which was "on the south side of the river and about half a mile below the centre of the village" (North Reading). Here it may be found—on the present Lowell Street—but only remnants of the old foundations, the old well and the elm trees remain. A modern house stands on part of the old foundation.

THE FOURTH GENERATION

Jonathan Flint [85] was an only son and succeeded his father in the possession of the home-

FLINT

Essex County Quarterly Courts (Salem)

Salem Sept 1649. William Flint, presented for beating a ball and cow and his son at one time in a cruel manner, was discharged

Ipswich 24: 7 (Sep) 1650. Edmund Forington v Willm Flint. Trespass for taking away hay.

Salem June 1652. Will of John Hardie of 30 Nov 1652 proved, bequeaths to son-in-law Roger Heskell lands on Bass River, also "a cowe now in his own keeping and one Oxx in the head of William Flint, the which Oxx my wife shall chase and apoynt to my son-in-law or of any three oxen in William Flint's hands" etc.

Salem June 1659 Thomas Flint (his mark) Flint witness to will of John Woodie proved:

Will* of John Woodice of Salem proved by Tho. Antrum and Tho. Flint. Amount of inventory, 69li. 5s. Inventory† taken by Thomas James, Thomas Antrum and Thomas Flint.

*The will of John Woodice of Salem, dated, 24: 3: 1659, was proved 29: 4: 1659: "Imp^r he gave, vnto Sam^l Very sen 2 oxen and his wearing cloaths. Ite he gaue vnto Alice his Daughter: the wife of Sam^l Very 2 Cowes. Ite he gaue vnto Thomas and Jn^o Very the Children of Sam^l very 1: mare Ite he gaue vnto Sam^l son to Sam^l Very 1: younge horse yeare old and the vantage Ite he gaue vnto Elizabeth: the Daughter of Sam^l Very 1: cowe & 1 heifer of 2 years old and 1 Iron pott Ite he gaue vnto Sarah the Daughter of Sam^l Very one Cowe one hieffer of three years old and all my

bedding one Chest and that that is in it and one iron Kitle my pewter & sixe pounds ten shillings in the hands of Tho. Flint.

"Ite he gaue vnto Emme Muse one Cowe. He apoynted & Constituted Sam^l Verrey his son in law his Executor." Wit: Tho. (his mark) Antrum and Thomas (his mark) Flint.

†Inventory of estate of John Woodices, taken by Thomas James, § Thomas (his mark) Flint and Thomas (his mark) Antrum: Two oxen, 12li.; 4 cowes, 15li. 10s.; 3 heifers, 9li. 10s.; one maire, 13li.; one horse colt, 6li.; a bed rugge and blanket, 1li. 10s.; a chest and a sheett, 12s.; a 3 pint pot, a pewter bottle and a porringer, 5s.; an Iron pot and pothookes, 10s.; an Iron kettle, 12s.; in Thomas Flints hand, 6li. 10s.; his wearing clothes, 3li.: in monv. 6s.: total. 69li. 5s.

Ipswich 24: Mar 1653. Alice, dau of William Flint, presented for wearing a silk hood He was proved to be worth over 200 li and she was discharged. Wit, Mr Price and Lieut Latrop

Ipswich 24: Sep 1649 (over) William Flint, presented for beating a ball and cow and his son at one time in a cruel manner, was discharged

Ipswich 24: Mar 1661. William Flint, constable of Salem returned names of a list of jowes (cattle)

Ipswich 24: Nov 1672

In the complaint of Lieut. Thomas Puttnam v. Joseph and John Hutcheson about annoyance upon a common highway at Beaver dam, putting themselves upon trial by a jury and the case committed, the jury found the common highway at Beaver dam to be unsafe for travellers by reason of a mill and dam of theirs, court ordered that the dam be pulled down that caused the water to overflow so as to make the way impassable, or else sufficiently mend it as to be judged safe by Sergt. Richard Leach and Wm. Flint. It was to be completed by the next Salem court.*

*On 10: 4: 1668, "Its ord^d by the Select men of Salem that a highway shall be Laid out beginning at Richard Hutchesons field and soe to Runn to the Beaver Dam near to Serg^t porters Meadow & soe to the extent of the bownds And Willm Flint & Sergt. Richard Leach are Impowred to Lay it out And to make a returne to the select men. Copy from Salem town book, taken Mar. 22, 1671-2, by Wm. Browne, Junr.†

Id. Thos. Putnam's bill of cost, 26s.

Thos. Putnam's complaint: He was riding over at Beaver dam with his wife and the water had so drawn away the gravel that was laid on the causeway on the lodges that his horse fell in with his hind legs near a foot and a half deep when his wife was behind him, so that they and the horse might have been spoiled. "Allo I haue no dart way ouer: the bridg is part of it Careyed out the Place: there is no fout way ouer but by wadding: the Cunstebel nath Ingrson Com to my house & said he was faint to put ofe his shoues & stockinges to Com ouer: I was greatly deprived of my neborhod; I am also deprived of the benefit of my on land where I formerly liued hauing Eight or tenn akers fenced in that hath much English gras for sheep & lames

Thomas Flint's farm was somewhat

remote, but even so he must have had a quiet and rather peacable life.

Only one of these entries regards Thomas Flint, the rest his brother William. On another sheet we show Thomas Jr's protestation v. John Southwick in Nov 1668 Ipswich QC - for withholding William Flint's estate of £295 from him, his brother and sister. (Southwick had been married to their widowed mother, the executor)

(over)

out of order

Salem Court 28 June 1661

Thomas Flint and John Upton testified that coming in to Henery Phelpes' house on a Sabbath day evening, spring was a twelve-month, they heard Hanna Phelpes, wife of Nickoles Phelpes, say that Higgeson had sent out his wolves apace. John Upton asked her if Mr. Higgeson sent the wolves amongst them to kill their creatures and she answered, the bloodhounds, to catch the sheep and lambs. Sworn in court.

E 742.5

T 62 (1995)



*Vert, three flintstones of the field,
two-one, silver*

Illus. 2 - COAT-OF-ARMS, FLINT FROM MATLOCK, ENG.
TO TUTOR HENRY FLYNT, ESQ., [3]

*How do they know for sure our flints came from
Flint, North Wales? He did not use a coat of arms
but probably some of his ancestors did.
He was a shrewd landowner.*



Flint

*Vert, a chevron and three
flintstones silver*

Illus. 3 - COAT-OF-ARMS, FLINT FROM WALES [8]
TO CHARLES RANLETT FLINT

CHAPTER IV

THE FLINTS OF WALES TO SALEM, MASSACHUSETTS

Thomas[1-1] and William Flint[1-1], Welch clansman from Flint, a municipal borough in Wales, Great Britain, were two of the adventuresome men who decided to try their fortune in the new world, becoming the two migrant ancestors from Wales. It is a family tradition that they were cousins of Thomas and Henry Flint (Flynt) of Matlock, England. This has not been proven.

Near the town of Flint, Wales, were located the ruins of the Flint Castle, begun in 1276 by Edward I, and finished in 1280. He made the settlement a borough. It was in this castle that Richard II was taken prisoner in 1399 by Henry Boilingbroke, Duke of Lancaster, who then came Henry IV, and successor to the castle. During the Puritan revolution, the castle was twice besieged by the Parliamentarians who dismantled it ca.1649, but the ruins may still be seen today, eleven miles from Chester.

Flint (or in Welsh, 'Fflynt') Castle, was built on an isolated rock by the side of the River Dee, and for about four hundred years remained a town stronghold, except for two brief intervals during the civil war when it was held temporarily, after the siege by the parliament.

History relates that Edward I was frequently at Flint Castle. He came to its relief in 1282 when the Welsh princes, David and Llewelyn, besieged it in their last attempt to rid themselves of the English invaders. Two years later, after they were finally subdued, Edward was there to grant the English charter to the town of Flint and to appoint its first mayor. His mayor also served as constable of the Castle. It was here that the next king, Edward II, came in 1321 to meet his favorite, Piers Gaveston, on his return from banishment in Ireland.

It was from this background that Thomas and William sailed for Massachusetts. It is believed that Thomas was a yeoman, or freeholder, as distinguished from a tenant farmer.

The first mention of Thomas Flint and his wife Ann, is found in Salem 1650, but there is reason to believe that he came to this country in about 1642. The map of Salem in 1700 shows the site of the Thomas Flint house as located near the corner of Sumner St., which is believed to be the earliest Flint house in Salem. Thomas did not remain long at this location. He purchased his first land in 1654 from John Pickering, and moved to Salem Village where he was among the first settlers. This area was set off in 1855 as South Danvers, and in 1868, the name was changed to Peabody. The section where the Thomas Flint property was located is

located five miles from North Reading. The second lot recorded contained fifty acres and was purchased in 1662 from Robert Goodall for the sum of £20 sterling. This farm remained in the possession of his descendants for over two-hundred years, and may truly be called the old homestead. The old farm provided sites for many of his descendants.

On November 25, 1690, the selectman appointed Josiah Pope surveyor of the highways between his house and the "house of Thomas Flint, Sr., to mend it at his own expense where it was damaged by his stopping the water" (Hist. of Salem Vol.III). Mr. Pope lived opposite the mill at the southerly end of his mill pond at Phelp's mill, in West Peabody, and Thomas Flint lived at the western corner of Russell Street and Goodall's lane. On May 18, 1692, the selectman empowered Israel Porter and Daniel Andrew to lay out a highway from Ensign Thomas Flint's to the country road by the house of John Porter.

In The Ninth Annual Report of the Peabody Historical Society is listed among burial places in Peabody, "Flint Burial Place on Newbury St., West Peabody and old Flint Burial Places in the fields in the rear of the houses of Mr. Charles Williams and B.F. Danforth." Thomas and his five year old daughter both died in 1663 and probably were buried in the old Burial Place.

ESTATE OF THOMAS FLINT OF SALEM

"Dated Aprill the first 1663. This present writing doth declare that I Thomas fflint being on my sicke bed, doe leaue this as my Last will & testament. To my wife I giue fiftie Acres of emproved Land & my meadow & housing. To my sonne Thoms I giue thirtie acres of upland one my ffarme next to M^r Gardners as hee sees fit not entrenching one his mothers meadow or broken land as also ten pounds in Corne or Cattell all which he is to enjoy at age: As also after my wife's decease to enjoy two thirds of my ffarme I bought of which was M^r Higginsons & Goodman Goodall, & in case his mother doth marrie then that he shall enjoy the one halfe of the emproved Lands & meadow & housing To my sonnes George & John, I give all my Land I bought beyond the River, to enjoy equally devided to them when they are at age or at theire mothers decease if shee die before, it is my will that yf George die without seed, then my sonne John to enjoy his part, & yf John die without seed then my sonne George to enjoy his parte To my sonne Joseph I give the other third part of my Land which was M^r Higginsons & Goodman Goodalls, It is provided that my sonne Joseph enjoy it at his mothers decease, & yf my sonne Thomas die without seed vnmarrried then his part to fall to my sonne Joseph & Contrariwise yf my sonne Joseph die without seed then his part to fall to Thomas & soe to pass from one to another yf hee that enjoyes it die without issue. To my daughter Elizabeth I Give thirtie pounds at marriage in Corne & Cattell, & I doe apoint my sonne Thomas when he enjoyes his two thirds as abouesaid then to pay to my Daughter Elizabeth & in case the ffarme fall

Moulton to see my overseers, to see this my will & testament pformed, & this I Leave at my Last will and Testament. In witness wheareof I set to my hand."

T. F.

Witness: Robert Moulton, Joseph Pores marke, Job Swinerton Juner.

"my will is that my wife at her death giue the estate shee leaues to my children whome shee will my desire is that my freind Job Swinerton Junior be joined with m^r Browne & Goodman moulton." (Essex Co. Quarterly Court Files, vol. 9, leaf 16.)

Proved in Salem court 30:4:1663 by Roert Moulton and Job Swinerton. (Salem Quarterly Court Records, vol. 4, page 116.)

Whereas there was some land to be divided by the will of Tho. Flint, deceased, to his sons Tho. and Joseph, and it being not yet divided, court 30:4:1674, appointed Lt. Tho. Putnam and John Pickering, together with one whom said Thomas was to choose, to see it done. (Salem Quarterly Court Records, vol. 5, leaf 74.)

Thomas Putnam, John Pickering and Thomas Flint^{jr} being chosen by the court to make a division between Thomas and Joseph Flint of land given them by will of their father, Thomas Flint, deceased, and finding Thomas Flint in possession of the whole, have allotted and set out to Joseph as his part according to his father's will as followeth: of that farm, which was formerly Mr. Higginson's of the upland the east end of the farm, the whole breadth of the farm being the length of his land laid out to Joseph and his breadth lies from the outermost corner bounds of the farm inwards at each end fifty six poles; of the meadow of said farm we allot three acres and half bounded on the east, north and south with his own land above mentioned, and on the west with Tho. Flint's meadow; and of the fifty acres that was purchased of Robert Goodale, his part we have laid out in the middle of said fifty acres in breadth thirty three poles at the west end bounded with two red oaks both at Norise's brook and at the east end thirty-five and one half poles. Also it is agreed by both parties that they and their heirs forever shall each allow convenient highways for carting. (Essex County Quarterly Court Files, vol. 33, leaf 79.)

Ann married in 1668, John Southwick (Sutherick), as his second wife. She was probated in the Ipswich Court, August 13, 1668, soon after her second marriage. She honored her late husband's will, and left her estate to their children. Her will named overseers, brother-in-law, John Flint, and Job Swinerton.

ESTATE OF ANN SOUTHWICK OF SALEM

"I Ann Southwick, lately the wife of Thomas fflint Deceased being in pfect Memory Do make this as my last Will & testament Imp^r I giue my Soule vnto y^e Lord Jesus my Redeemer And my Body vnto my friends decently to bee interd by them For what ||Estate|| I was posessed with by my fore Sd Husband fflint & by him impowred to bestow it vpon his Children & vpon none other as appeares by his last Will I therefore dispose of what Esstate remaines in my hands left by my Sd Husband to bee my mee given vnto his Children at my decease, as followeth It I giue my Sonn Thomas fflint fifteen pounds It I giue my Daughter Elizabeth y^e Wife of John Leach fifteen pounds It I giue my Sonn George fflint fifteen pounds It I giue my sonn John fflint fifteen pounds It I giue my sonn Joseph fflint Thirtie pounds Allsoe I further confirme Thirty pounds vnto my three Sons fore named George ||John|| & Joseph Equally to be deuded among them ten pounds to each Son, which thirty pounds I verbally gaue my Sd three Sonns before I was Married to my Husband southwick and Secured by bill to the ouerseers And that this my Will may be faithfully pformed according to the tenor hearof I make my Son Thomas fflint and my son in law John Leach my Executors and for Ouerseers I chuse ||my Brother in law|| William fflint & Job Swinerton Jun^r In Witnes hearof I haue hearunto Set my Hand and Seale this twenty Eight of May Ano Dom one thousand Six Hundred Sixty & Eight."

Anne (her A mark) Suthrick.

Witness: Job Swinerton, Thomas Preston, Thomas Flint and Athony (his A mark) Needum.

Proved Ipswich court Aug. 13, 1668 by Job Swinerton, Thomas Flint and Anthony Needum before Mr. Symon Bradstreet and Maj. Gen. Denison. (Essex County Probate Files, Docket 25,894.)

The eldest son of Thomas, known as Captain Thomas[2-1], was mentioned in the town records, showing him to be prominent in civic and religious affairs. When the people of Salem Village decided a meeting house was needed because the one in Salem Town was too far away, Thomas was one of the petitioners. The meeting house was built in 1673, and was later the scene of many "examinations" during the time of the witchcraft delusion. In 1700, after the distressing episode was over, the parish voted to erect a new meeting house. They had outgrown the old one and it needed repair, but they also wanted a new one because of the unpleasant associations of the witchcraft years. Thomas worked diligently helping establish the first church of Salem Village, of which he was supervisor of construction, taking a year to build. In 1697 Capt. Thomas Flint was named first on a committee to secure a new pastor after the removal of Rev. Parris, who had caused the village a great deal of trouble, especially in connection with the witchcraft prosecutions. Thomas took no part in the witchcraft persecutions except to give evidence for some of the victims, while during the same period his name appears constantly in the records. In addition to the

02. One of these purchases was from Ephraim Savage of Boston for £60, land containing one hundred acres and called Saddler's Neck, bounded on the east by Adam Hart and meadows south by Bear Meadow and west by common land. He owned more than 900 acres. These farms were given by deed of gift to three sons, Ebenezer, William and Jonathan.

He was in King Philip's War and served in the expedition against the Narragansetts as a trooper under the command of Capt. Curwin and Capt. Gardner, in the attack of the Great Swamp Fight, which took place in northern Rhode Island on December 19, 1675, where he was wounded (Salem's - Annals of Salem). He was granted, for his services, land at Narragansett No. 3., Sonehegan West, New Amherst, New Hampshire. He also held several commissions in the Salem Village Company of militia (Judge's - Soldiers in King Philip's War). In the war records his name is called Flynt. King Philip's War caused Massachusetts many destroyed villages and heavy loss of life before Philip was captured.

Thomas' only daughter, Elizabeth[2-2], who lived to an adult age, married Sgt. John Leach, who was in the King Philip's War in Capt. Daniel Nehman's Co., serving from November 2 until November 30.

The second son of Thomas, Sergeant George Flint[2-3], was only eleven years old when his father died, and George chose as his guardian Daniel Putnam, who gave a bond of £60's (Ipswich Court Records Vol.5, 9). George moved to Reading in 1682, and settle on land inherited from his father on which he lived as a farmer. Tradition states he built the first framed house in that vicinity, and it was later used as a garrison house. His house was later replaced by a modern home. For several years he was one of the selectmen of the town. He gave one acre of land where the first meeting house was built, and he helped organize the North Parish church where he presided at the first meeting as moderator, always taking an active part in the management of its affairs. The minister of the church, Daniel Putnam, was his nephew.

The third son, John[2-4], was only eight years old when his father died, and the Probate records of Essex county show that John chose William Flint, his uncle, as his guardian. William was the brother of Thomas, who came from Wales also. John also resided in Salem Village where he was a carpenter, and served in King Philip's War in 1676. He lived to the age of 75. His will of April in 1730, Salem, County of Essex in New England, gave to "Son John 100 pounds and a gun. To Stephen 100 pounds, Joshua 100 pounds, Joseph 100 pounds, and all my apparel, all to be divided into seven shares." Stephen Flint and Benjamin Ingham were executors, inventory amounting to £860. His wife was not mentioned, and it is believed she had died earlier.

The fourth son, Joseph, was one year when his father died, and his mother, Ann, remarried when he was six years old. He later resided on a farm set off from his father's land in Salem Village. He was the father of several children, dying when he was forty-eight years old.

The Flint families of Salem were well represented in the wars of the early days of the colonies. Captain Samuel Flint[3-5], son of the second

his father's absence to enlist in another company. "Young rogue, where are you going? Come home with me." cried the father. But the son declined (History of Middlesex Co.). Captain Samuel inherited his father's house on part of the homestead divided between he and his brother, Thomas. When the town of So. Danvers became incorporated Samuel was one of the first on the Board of Selectmen. Throughout his life, he was active in public affairs, and known as an influential and worthy man.

His son, Captain Samuel[4-14], inherited by will from his father the farm in Danvers, Massachusetts, where he resided until his death. He was born April 9, 1733 in South Danvers, Massachusetts and was the only officer from Danvers killed in the American Revolution. He had married Ede Upton in 1858, and they had ten children.

He was active in the service of his country, and first had fought in the King Philip's War. The following is an excerpt taken from the diary of John Preston. The spelling of the original document has been preserved.

September 25, 1755.

Capt. Samuel Flint marched of Salem with his company to go to Crown Point. Cold and frost come very early in the field so that Indian Corn was very much hurt in some places.—

Oct. 18,
very cold. Snowed considerable.

Oct. 30.
Very snowey, stormy day as most of you know in the winter time.

Nov. 1 to 17, very unusual fogey weather and north winds until the 18th, in the morning between three and four o'clock was a terrible hard Earth Quake that throw down a power of Stone wall and a great many tops of chimneys. the winter was moderate.

The diary continues—1759— "This year the English took Ticondoroga Crown Point and Quebeck.—1760— "The 20th of March, a great fire in Boston burnt 300 or 400 houses.

Captain Samuel took a very active part in the affray at Lexington. He was an officer in the Revolution and was called one of the bravest of those who answered their country's call in the hour of her danger. An officer asked him where he should be found on a certain occasion. His reply was worthy of him. "Where the enemy is, there will you meet me." A report returned to Danvers on the evening of the Battle of Lexington, that Capt. Flint was killed, but he soon returned home, which was a joyful surprise. He was engaged in the army, constantly doing good service, having been eight months in the League of Boston. He was drafted with three other captains to go to New York. They had but twenty-four hours to prepare, and met at Leach's tavern, where they chose Flint as captain, and Henrick of Beverly as first lieutenant:

He was Captain of a company of minute-men in Col. Timothy's regiment on the alarm of April

Regiment, stating that said Flint and others served in his regiment as Captains of Militia by order of Brigadier General Spencer, from Dec. 10, 1775, to Jan. 25, 1776; ordered in Council Feb. 23, 1776, that said officers be commissioned; reported commissioned Feb. 23, 1776; also Captain of 2nd Co. 8th Essex Co. regiment of Massachusetts Militia; list of officers chosen in said company returned by Henry Herrick, Colonel of said regiment; ordered in council June 5, 1776, that said officers be commissioned, and reported commissioned same date; also Captain of Col. Samuel Johnson's regiment; engaged August 18, 1777, killed October 7, 1777, service 1 mo. 21 days at the Northward; company raised for 3 mos; also same regiment return of said Flint's Co. for mileage from Scarsdale, N.Y., to home; warrent for pay allowed in Council July 27, 1778 (Mass. Soldiers and Sailors in the War of the Revolution, Vol. V, p. 799).

Samuel was killed at the head of his company, at Stillwater on tober 7, 1777. He was a thriving and energetic man. The sword that he re was preserved with great care until the original old Flint homestead s destroyed by fire in 1874. It was taken from the cellar of the old use after the fire and was owned by D. Webster King.

THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR

Captain William Flint[4-8] was born in 1714 at No. Reading, Massachusetts, son of Deacon William, and lived on the old homestead, which remained in the family one-hundred and twenty-five years. He died in 1756, in the French and Indian War. He married in 1736, Susannah Flint, daughter of George and Jerusha (Pope) Flint. They had eight children. Before he was killed, he wrote the letter below to his wife, showing the conditons at military camps at thattime.

Some events leading up to the letter are related as follows: General Shirley had been busy collecting troops and stores for an expedition against Crown Point and to provide for the defense of Oswego, New York. He had gathered a large force at Half Moon (which later became the town of Waterford, New York), at the junction of the Hudson and the Mohawk Rivers. The force consisted of some regulars, remnants of Braddock's expedition, provincial troops from New England, and some New York Troops, besides some rangers for scouting. He had also made arrangements with Sir William Johnson for assistance from his Indians. He had strengthened the fortification of Oswego and arranged a transport system for supplies to that point by way of the Mohawk River and Oneida Lake.

On June 7, 1756, Colonel (later General) Webb arrived in New York bringing letters from the Ministry, directing General Shirley to return to England. On June 25, 1756, General Abercrombie arrived at Albany and took over command, pending the arrival of the Earl of Londoun, who had been appointed Shirley's successor. Abercrombie brought with him a regiment of regulars and one of Highlanders. On July 15th the New England troops advanced from Half Moon, and the 48th Regiment followed the next day for Fort Edward, where William Flint was located when this letter was written. The spelling of the original document is carefully preserved.

My Dear

I now send you a line or two to let you Know that I am in helth hoping that you are all well I have had a bad turn with a cold & cawgh and flux or camp Deceaze but thro the undeserved Mercys of my God I am in good helth. I have Buried Jona Hart and fear I shall Loose Srg't. Masson two a hearty men as any in my Company we have Rain Every Day and it is very unwholsom weather hear I can scarce Keep my Cloaths that ant on my back from Moulding and spoiling as for Living I live well enough for we have fresh beef Evry week & Salt Fish and I have Bought me a Good tea Kittle which cost me abou(t) two Dollars very handy in the ca(mp) I have Tea Chocalat or Coffee with Biscit & Butter for Breakfast Constantly when at my tent, things have be(en) Dull with us but there is a Sudden turn of affairs and we Genera(ly) suppose that we shall Quickly come to action the march forward tomorrow

CHAPTER II

THE FLINTS OF MATLOCK ENGLAND TO CONCORD, MASSACHUSETTS

Honorable Thomas Flint[1-1] of Concord Massachusetts, son of Thomas, Yeoman[0-1] and Dorothy (Wood) Flint, was born 1603 in Matlock, England, a parish in Derbyshire. Honorable Thomas arrived in Boston in 1636, and the records show he owned two lots there: Lots 84 and 86 on Washington Street, between West and Winter Street, and on June 2, 1637 "Mr. Thomas Flint hath allotted unto him 24 acres of the marsh ground at the mouth of Muddy River, and there layd out for him." "Mr. Flint has possession within the limits of Boston, One house and garden bounded with Anthony Harker north; Thomas Clarke South; the street east; and George Burden west." F.84. - Mr. Thomas Flint (House & Garden with R. Blott north, J. Leverett west, the street east, and A. Harker South). F.86. - Mr. Flint, (his second lot, a house and garden, with the street, east; G. Burden, West; Mr. Flint, north; and R. Mason, south). (Second Report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston)

Contemporaries represented Thomas as a gentleman of wealth, talent, and an eminently Christian character. Johnson wrote, in his Wonder Working Providence in New England, the following:

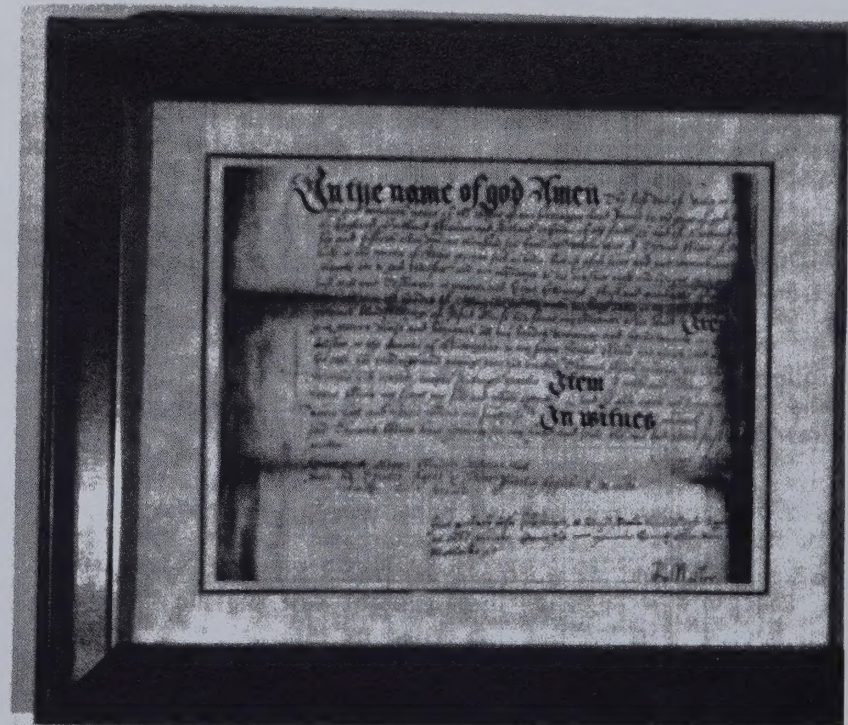
At Christ's commands, thou leav'st thy lands, and native habitation:
His folke to aid, in desert straid, for gospel's exaltation,
Flint, hardy thou, will not allow, the undermining fox,
With subtill skill, Christ's vines to spoil, thy sword shall give them
knocks,
Yet thou base dust, and all thou hast is Christ's, and by him thou
Art made to be, such as we see; hold fast for ever now.
This is what Johnson calls "remembering in short metre."

Johnson also wrote:

Mr. Thomas Flint a Sincere servant of Christ, who had a faire yearly Revenue in England, but having improved it for Christ, by casting it in the common Treasury, he waites on the Lord for doubling his Talent, if it shall seeme good unto him to so doe, and the meane time spending his person for the good of his people in the Office of a Magistrate.

Thomas brought with him a fortune of between £2,000 and £4,000, quoting from Rev. Bulkley, Mass Historical Collections and Rev. Ripley in his dedication sermon. The money was spent chiefly for the town of Concord where Thomas moved in 1638. He was the largest investor in the town after Peter Bulkley.

he owned tenements in Carr-Colston, England, a parish in the division of the Wapentake of Bingham, County of Nottingham, 9 m by S.) from Newark; containing 213 inhabitants. "The living is a vicarage, in the arch deaconry of Nottingham, and diocese of York in King's books at £6.1. 10 1/2 and in the patronage of the Farmery. The Church was dedicated at St. Mary."



Illus.5 - WILL OF THOMAS FLINT[0], MATLOCK ENGLAND, 1
(Flint Historical Documents)

The following will proves Thomas and Henry were brothers:

PART OF WILL 1623, OF THOMAS FLINT[0-1], MATLOCK
ENGLAND
Obtained from England

ITEM

I give, grant, divide and bequeath all my lands, tenements, horeditament in Carr-Colson* in the County of Nottingham to son Henry Flint, his heirs, and assent forever his yielding paying unto his brother Thomas Flint. During the life of Dorc his mother, 20S yearly.

ITEM

I make and ordeyne the said Henry Flint, my son my sole

WITNESS

Robert Hall, Henry Wooddis, Millicent Hall, Marie Spenser,
Agnes Storer, Modelin Applebee.

(The map of England shows Car-Colston—Thomas' will shows Carr-Colston; Thomas' will shows Wooddis spelled two different ways—Wooddis and Woodis.)

Some reports state, the land in England had been in the Flint family for over 800 years. Although the land mentioned above was in Car-Colston, the family lived in Matlock, Derbyshire, England.

Matlock is located 17 1/2 miles north from Derby. Derby is a borough located 15 miles (W) from Nottingham 20 miles (N.W.) from Leicester, and 126 miles from London on the Derwent River and on the high road to Manchester.

The following is a letter of introduction written to Governor Winthrop when Thomas was planning to leave his native land and make a voyage to New England (Winthrop Papers).

EDWARD REVELL TO JOHN WINTHROP¹

To the worshipful and my worthie good freind John Winthroppe
Esqr. in New Englande these present New England

Worthie Sir, That kinde respect and fauour yow pleased to shew vnto me, whiles yow was a magistrate of Justice in this our ould England, and I a poore seruant with your deere associate and my good Mr. maister Gurdon, doth much encourage me to write two lines vnto yow wherein I desire with all thanckfull acknowledgment to remember my humble service vnto yow, with my prayers to god for a continuall supplie of blessinge, to be powred vppon yow and the rest of that christian companie whom it hath pleased the lord to select and sett aparte for the aduanceinge (I doubt not) of his glory, and your eternall welfares; whose tender bodies goods and estates haue not bene thought too deere to be exposed to the danger of the merciles waues, soe as our good god might haue a church established amongst poore heathens, and Indians, that neuer yett knew him; manie prayers haue bene and are continually sent vpp to the throne of grace, by your deere fellow breethren in this our poore land for a good successe vppon your godly vndertakeings; the benefitt whereof I trust the lord will make manifest amongst yow. Manie of my good freinds in Darbshire my native Countrey (where now by gods prouidence I liue) haue bene and are yett takeinge their Journey vnto yow, whom I trust yow shall haue cause (for the most parte of them) comfortably to entertaine; amongst the rest there is this voyage one Mr. Flint both an able man in estate as alsoe in

their estates too deere to parte withall soe as they may hel sett forward this godly enterprise so considerably vndert. and as wee doe heere (to all our comforts through blessinge) with soe much hope of good successe hith continues; lett me be soe bould I humbly intreat you, to your countenance and respect for their kinde intertainement acquaintance with yow. I trust neither of these two christians will frustrate my expectation, nor faile in some to gaine your fauour, there is amongst some seruants Mr. F taketh ouer with him, one James Farren (the bearer heret plaine youth, but borne of honest christian parents, neigbo the same towne, where I liue, whose wellwishes and pray know are not wanteing for a blessinge vppon your proceedings; I pray yow be pleased alsoe to take notice of and as ocation shalbe offerred and his indeauours sutable to good likeinge lett him haue your respect and fauour whi know wilbe a great comfort and incouragement vnto him, in absence of his deere and tender parents, whose care hitherto bene expressed (to their poore abillities) in his and honest educacion. I hope good Mrs. Winthroppe with sweete children are in good health. Yett what alteration hath pleased the lord to make since I saw them, I am ign of. much I should reioyce to heere of the welfare of your fi in generall; we haue in most parts of this land a great mort amongst children which dye of the small pockes, and it is fe this summer that the sicknes wilbe very great amongst vs, tymes haue bene of late soe vnseasonable. the lord in m prepare vs for a stroake, for longe hath this nacion b treasureing vpp wrath, which justly may be feared eare I will fall full heauie vppon vs. Thus worthy sir hopeinge yow excuse my bouldnes, I leaue yow and all that belonge vnto to the good blessinge and proteccion of the allmighty, wt onely able to reward and crowne all that paines and trauell haue taken to promote his glory, with longe life and manie h dayes heere; and a crowne of glory for euer hereafter rest euer to be Your seruant and welwisher in the lord whiles I a

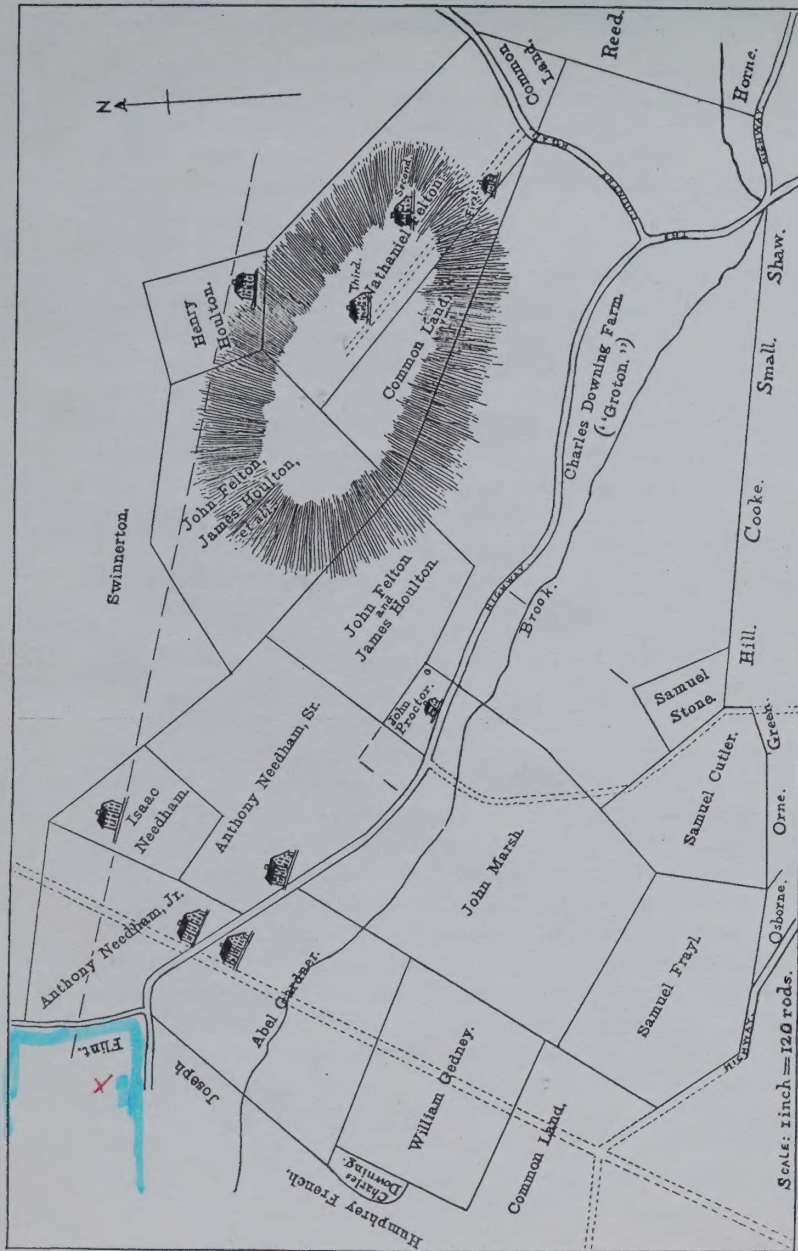
Edw: R

CHESTERFEILD DARBISHIRE April 20th 1636

[Endorsed by Governor Winthrop:] Edward mr. Gurdons Clark.

¹(W. 4. 80; 5 Collections, I. 220-222. Edward Revell, a appears from Governor Winthrop's endorsement of this le was at one time clerk to Brampton Gurdon.)

Ship records for years 1636 and 1637, were lost in a fire a College, and it is impossible to determine in what ship Thomas ca New World. Savage states— "William Buttrick, Concord, came pr the Susan and Ellen 1635, age 18 and he may have come as thought with Thomas Flint, the chief planter of Concord, as we what ship Flint came in; yet the estate of Flint was so large, tha have been liable as a subsidy man" (subsidy - a pecuniary ak



"GROTON," SALEM, IN 1700.

in the center of this map was born of John Proctor & his wife, expected for at least 100 years, but after many also lived nearby

Flint named me & had that shown here

This is probably too late

"GROTON", SALEM, IN 1700.

BY SIDNEY PERLEY.

THE name of this portion of Salem, in 1700, has been called "Groton", because that was the name given by Emanuel Downing to his great farm of more than three hundred acres which is included in this area. The territory included in this article is two and a quarter miles in length, nearly one and one-half miles in width, and has an area of three and one-third square miles. It extends east and west from one hundred rods easterly from Proctor's crossing to the West Peabody junction railroad station and southerly and northerly from about Forest street to about Andover street (formerly the Andover turnpike).

The southern line of Salem Village is shown by the broken line.

The ancient Ipswich road, laid out in 1643, runs across the eastern end. This is now known by two names, that part running northeasterly from Proctor's crossing as Prospect street, and that running southerly from Proctor's crossing as the Ipswich road in 1740, and later as Lowell street. What is now called Prospect street was known as the country road in 1700; and was called Prospect street as early as 1882.

Lowell street was called ye highway, in 1681; the path leading from the county road unto Anthony Needham's, in 1700; ye country road, in 1701; the highway leading from Anthony Needham's unto Salem Towne, in 1701; the town highway that leads from Salem to Captain Flint's, in 1721; the highway leading to Joseph Pope's, in 1734; Reading road, in 1740; the road leading from Salem to Reading, in 1802; the road leading to Salem, in 1805; the road leading from Reading to Salem, in 1806; the county road, in 1808; and Lowell street as early as 1858.

Danvers HX 400 Vol 4

Re: Flint

Refer to property owned by original settlers (brothers) Thomas & William Flint & their sons (both had sons Thomas)

Forest street is an old road; and was called the country road or highway, in 1733; the highway leading from Zachariah King's to George Southwick's, in 1799; the road or highway leading from Zachariah King's, in Danvers, to Lynnfield, in 1800; and Forest street in 1882.

The street up Mount Pleasant is called Felton street.

There was early a way between Forest and Lowell streets, shown on the map by broken parallel lines, which was known as Cutler's way in 1729.

Proctor's brook was called the fulling-mill brook in 1740, and is generally known as Proctor's brook.

The western portion of the lot of John Felton and others is on the highest part of what is now known as Mount Pleasant. It was formerly called Hog hill, being, perhaps, a hog pasture in early times. It is one of the few hills of original Salem which are more than two hundred feet in height above sea level.

The location of the Boston and Newburyport turnpike, laid out in 1804, is shown on the plan by parallel dotted lines.

Charles Downing Farm ("Groton"). The town of Salem granted three hundred acres of land to Robert Cole Dec. 21, 1635, in the following words: "That m^r Cole shall haue a farme of three hundreth acres in the place where his catle are by Brooksby, And Captaine Traske & y^e rest of the Surveyors are to lay it out and bound y^t according to y^r discretion, pvided in Case m^r Cole be disposed to pte wth y^t by Sale that he make his first pro[fer] vnto the towne vpon reasonable tearmes before he offer y^t vnto any other."* A week later the town "Granted vnto Robt Cole his heires and assignees three hundreth acres of land whereof fortye acr[es] is Marshe fitt to be mowed lying and being abou[t] 3 myles from Salem West ward vpon a freshe w[ater] brooke called the North brooke."* This included the Roger Morey land.

Mr. Cole sold this farm to Emanuel Downing of Salem before July 16, 1638, when the town granted to Mr. Downing one hundred acres of land on the southwest

*Salem Town Records, volume I, page 11 (printed).

side of Mr. Cole's farm, "next vnto Roger Maury his farme."* Oct. 17th following the town of Salem passed the following vote: "Whereas there was graunted to M^r Emanuell Downinge one hund. acres of land adioyning to M^r Coles farme w^{ch} hee purchased lying on the Southwest side of the said ffarme, next vnto Roger Maury his farme. The towne hath thought good to graunt to the said M^r Emanuell Downinge one hund. acres of land one the north side of the said ffarme purchased of M^r Coles, next adioyning to the said farme whereby the ffarme may be comodious to him. And the former Graunt of one hund. acres is reversed."†

Dec. 27, 1638, the town of Salem passed the following vote: "Whereas there were former graunts of Land to M^r Emanuel Downinge of ffive hundred acres neere vnto M^r [Humphreys] ||Bishops|| ffarme & one hundred thereof taken in exchange of one hundred acres to be added to that ffarme w^{ch} hee purchased of M^r Coles, the said M^r Downing finding the said ffarme vnfitt for husbandry in regard of want of plow land, we haue vpon his request graunted vnto him one hundred acres more to be adioyned to the said ffarme whereby hee may be encouraged to plowing, for w^{ch} hundred acres hee doth hereby resigne vp vnto the towne one hund. acres more of his ffirst graunt of 500 acres so that there is now remayning vnto M^r Downing but 300 acres thereof."‡

✓ Mr. Downing named this estate "Groton." William Flint lived upon it about 1648;§ and his son Thomas Flint lived here from 1649 to 1653.|| John Proctor of Salem hired and lived upon the farm from about 1666 until his execution for witchcraft in 1692. Thomas Preston subsequently lived upon it. Benjamin Proctor then possessed it until Sept. 13, 1700, when Thorndike Proctor of Salem, yeoman, bought it of Charles Downing of London, England, esquire, grandson of Emanuel Downing, ✓

*Salem Town Records, volume I, page 71 (printed).

†Salem Town Records, volume I, page 72 (printed).

‡Salem Town Records, volume I, page 76 (printed).

§Essex County Quarterly Court Records and Files, volume I, page 213; Essex Registry of Deeds, book 15, leaf 5.

||Essex Registry of Deeds, book 15, leaf 6.

Robert Goodell, who sold it to Giles Corey about 1662. This was conveyed by Mr. Corey, in the general conveyance of all his property, made while he was in jail, to his sons-in-law William Cleeves of Beverly and John Moulton of Salem April 24, 1692.* Mr. Cleeves was a seaman and Mr. Moulton a cordwinder, and, for five pounds, two shillings and sixpence, they conveyed the meadow to Thomas Flint and Joseph Flint, both of Salem Village, Nov. 24, 1692.† Capt. Thomas Flint, aged about sixty-eight years, deposed about this meadow and some meadow on the south side of this lot as follows, viz.: "that those meadows lying below my house betwixt my land and y^e land formerly mr Blackleaches on y^e Left hand of y^e highway as I goe to Joseph Pop's Sawmill on both Sides of y^e Brook called Blackleaches meadows Was Occupied & pofsefsed by Robert Goodale as his owne meadows belonging to y^e aboves^d land which he bought of Said Blackleaches for many yeares, & that y^e said Goodale was in quiet peaceable pofsefsion of y^e Said meadows for near threecore yeares past untill Said Goodale Sold Said land & meadows to Giles Corey about fifty years Since who Enjoyed & pofsefsed them So long as he lived but after Said Coreys death my Brother Joseph flint & my Selfe bought part of Said meadow" in 1692. Zachariah Goodale, aged seventy-three years, and Robert Moulton, aged sixty-nine, deposed the same. All three deponents made oath to the truth of their statements Sept. 2, 1712.‡

Joseph Flint House. This lot was the eastern portion of the lot of one hundred and fifty acres granted by the town of Salem in 1636 to Mrs. Ann Higginson, widow of Rev. Francis Higginson. It was laid out to her in the same year, the order therefor being dated Feb. 20, 1636-7. She died in New Haven, Conn., in 1640; and her son, Rev. John Higginson, who was then pastor of the church at Guilford, Conn., conveyed the lot to John Pickering, for thirteen pounds, March 23, 1651.§ Mr. Pickering conveyed it to John Woody (Woodis?) and Thomas Flint

*Essex Registry of Deeds, book 9, leaf 46.

†Essex Registry of Deeds, book 9, leaf 54.

‡Essex Registry of Deeds, book 26, leaf 172.

§Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 9.

Oct. 18, 1654.* Mr. Flint apparently bought Mr. Woodis' interest in it before 1659; and died, possessed of the lot, April 15, 1663. Upon division of the property of Mr. Flint, June 30, 1674, this portion of it became the sole property of Joseph Flint, son of the deceased, who was born in 1662, and married in 1685.

When and by whom the house on this lot was built is unknown, but in the inventory of the estate of Joseph Flint, who died, possessed of the house and land, in 1710, the house is described as "a dwelling old house, much out of repaire," and valued at twenty-five pounds. Dower was set off to his widow April 18, 1721. The house was standing at that date. A lower room in the east end, a chamber in the west end and cellar under ye great room are mentioned. The estate passed to his eldest son Joseph Flint. The house was gone apparently a few years later.

Humphrey French Lot. This lot consisted of three strips of meadow and ten acres of woodland; and they were part of the land granted by the town of Salem to Edward Giles in 1636. He sold it to Mr. Blackleech, who sold it to Robert Goodell of Salem, husbandman. Mr. Goodell conveyed it to Giles Corey of Salem, yeoman, March 15, 1659-60.† Mr. Corey conveyed the strips of meadow to his daughter Mary, wife of John Parker, and to her husband, May 20, 1681.‡ Mr. and Mrs. Parker died before Feb. 11, 1697-8, when their eldest son, John Parker, conveyed his interest in this meadow land to Humphrey French of Salem, tailor.‡ Their son Joseph Parker of Salem released his interest to Mr. French Nov. 20, 1702.§ Their daughter Martha Parker released her interest to Mr. French in 1703.¶ Their daughter Mercy Parker released her interest to Mr. French April 10, 1706.§ Their daughter Margaret Parker released her interest to Mr. French Oct. 14, 1706.¶

The ten acres of woodland was conveyed by Giles Corey in the general deed he gave, while in jail, to his sons-in-law

*Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 26.

†Essex Registry of Deeds, book 2, leaf 69.

‡Essex Registry of Deeds, book 12, leaf 140.

§Essex Registry of Deeds, book 21, leaf 20.

¶Essex Registry of Deeds, book 21, leaf 22.

¶Essex Registry of Deeds, book 21, leaf 21.

ter Margaret Parker released her interest to Mr. French Oct. 14, 1706.*

Henry Crosby House. This lot of three acres was a part of the fifty acres which was conveyed by Ezra Clapp, son of Edward Clapp, and Nathaniel Clapp, son of Nicholas Clapp, all of Dorchester, to Giles Corey of Salem, yeoman, July 24, 1663.† Mr. Corey, in consideration of love, conveyed to his daughter Deliverance, wife of Henry Crosby of Salem, and to him "and her lawful natural children," this three acres "and dwelling house standing near sd land, in Salem, to bee his sd Crosbee's during my life, and y^e ground it stands on with a way to it," April 26, 1686.‡ The house disappeared before June 16, 1705, when John Moulton of Salem, husbandman, for three pounds, conveyed the land to Humphrey French of Salem, who owned the land adjoining.§ Giles Corey had conveyed to Mr. Moulton his reversionary interest in the land April 24, 1692.||

Nathaniel Howard House. The northerly part of this lot was a part of the lot of fifty acres which was granted by the town of Salem to Edward Giles in 1636. He sold it to Mr. Blackleech; and Mr. Blackleech sold it to Robert Goodell of Salem, husbandman. Mr. Goodell conveyed it to Giles Corey of Salem, yeoman, March 15, 1659-60.¶

The southerly part of this lot was a part of the fifty acres of upland and meadow which was conveyed by Ezra Clapp, son of Edward Clapp, and Nathaniel Clapp, son of Nicholas Clapp, all of Dorchester, to Mr. Corey, July 24, 1663.†

This lot was included in the general deed which Mr. Corey gave, while in jail for witchcraft, to his sons-in-law William Cleeves of Beverly and John Moulton of Salem, yeomen, April 24, 1692.|| Mr. Cleeves and his wife Margaret, for fifty pounds, conveyed the land and two dwelling houses thereon to Nathaniel Howard of

*Essex Registry of Deeds, book 21, leaf 21.

†Essex Registry of Deeds, book 4, leaf 108.

‡Essex Registry of Deeds, book 7, leaf 72.

§Essex Registry of Deeds, book 21, leaf 13.

¶Essex Registry of Deeds, book 9, leaf 46.

||Essex Registry of Deeds, book 2, leaf 69.

Salem, yeoman, June 25, 1697.* Mr. Howard erected a small dwelling house upon the lot, probably immediately after his purchase of the land. He sold the house and land around it to William Curtis of Salem, carpenter, Jan. 19, 1701-2.† How much longer the house stood is uncertain.

✓ *Robert Moulton Lot.* This lot of upland and meadow was a part of the lot of fifty acres of upland and meadow which was conveyed by Ezra Clapp, son of Edward Clapp, and Nathaniel Clapp, son of Nicholas Clapp, all of Dorchester, to Giles Corey of Salem, yeoman, July 24, 1663.‡ Mr. Corey conveyed to Robert Moulton of Salem this lot of meadow "on y^e western Side of y^e brooke from John Moultons Land to y^e lower End of y^e great meadow to y^e Stake Sett in by the brooke at y^e lower End of y^e Said meadow and alfoe take in So much of y^e upland on y^e outside of y^e meadow westerly to y^e heap of Rocks in y^e Hollow & So thence streight downe to y^e meadow & so along by y^e meadow Side as ffar as y^e meadow doth Extend from y^e Said Rocks which are laid for bounds in y^e hollow downe to y^e Stake by y^e brooke Side & from y^e heap of Rocks which are on y^e western Side on y^e vpland downe to y^e Said meadow alfoe the meadow on y^e Easterne side downe from y^e vpper End into y^e Coue within my land to a Stake driuen in by y^e meadow & from yt to a growing maple Tree markt & from thence to a Stake driuen on y^e other Side of y^e Coue & from that Stake to an other Stake neere to a point of my upland by y^e Lower Row of Springs Westerly & So Streight to a Stake by y^e brooke Side alfoe a little Island of vpland which lyes within y^e Said meadow," reserving the brush growing on the island for twelue months, May 20, 1681.§ This meadow belonged to Mr. Moulton in 1700.

✓ *John Moulton and Thomas Flint House.* This lot of one hundred acres was granted to Robert Moulton in 1636, by the town of Salem. He died in the spring of 1655. There was "housing" upon this farm at the

*Essex Registry of Deeds, book 12, leaf 40.

†Essex Registry of Deeds, book 15, leaf 118.

‡Essex Registry of Deeds, book 4, leaf 108.

§Essex Registry of Deeds, book 13, leaf 46.

✓ *Thomas Flint Lot.* This lot apparently belonged to Thomas Flint in 1700.

Joseph Pope House. This lot of upwards of a hundred acres was granted by the town of Salem to Rev. Edward Norris, the pastor of the church at that time, Jan. 21, 1639-40.* Mr. Norris, when still "minister and teacher to the church of Salem," for twelve pounds, conveyed the lot to Eleanor Trustler, widow of Thomas Trustler, late of Salem, deceased, Aug. 7, 1654.† Mrs. Trustler evidently built a small house upon the land; and died, possessed of it, the next spring. The land with the housing was appraised at twenty pounds in the inventory of her estate. In her will, she devised this estate to her sons Henry and Nicholas Phelps. The interest of Nicholas undoubtedly passed to his brother Henry Phelps when it was taken, in 1660, to pay the fines levied upon Nicholas for being absent from religious services in the meeting house and for being a Quaker. Henry Phelps conveyed the house, orchard and land to Joseph Pope of Salem, husbandman, July 18, 1664.‡ Mr. Pope died in the spring of 1667; having, in his will, devised to his eldest two sons, "Joseph and Beniamen pope the House in which I now dwell together with the Land or farme on which it standeth with all the apurtainances ther to belonging to them and to ther heirs foreuer thay to Inioy the same after ther mothers deceas: provided and it is my will that thay shall pay to my two yongest sonns Enos and Samuel pope twenty pounds a peece within two years after thay shall Inioy the same the house and Land abouesaid to stand as security for the payment of the said Legase to my two yonger sonns." Benjamin Pope apparently released his interest in this estate before 1700, when it belonged to his brother Joseph Pope. Joseph Pope died Feb. —, 1711-2, having, in his will, devised the estate to his eldest son Joseph. The ancient house was probably gone soon afterward.

There was a saw mill upon this lot in 1681 and 1702; owned by Joseph Pope and Benjamin Pope, brothers. It

*Salem Town Records, volume I, page 97 (printed).

†Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 24.

‡Essex Registry of Deeds, book 2, leaf 89.

was called, in 1702, "an old saw mill," and valued at sixteen pounds.

✓ *Thomas Flint House.* The eastern part of this lot was the western portion of a lot of one hundred and fifty acres granted by the town of Salem in 1636 to Mrs. Ann Higginson, widow of Rev. Francis Higginson, the first teacher of the church in Salem, provided she returned to Salem. She was then living in Charlestown. This tract of land was laid out to her in 1637, the order therefor being dated Feb. 20, 1636-7. She died in New Haven, Conn., in 1640; and her son Rev. John Higginson, who was then pastor of the church at Guilford, Conn., conveyed the whole lot to John Pickering, for thirteen pounds, March 23, 1651.* Mr. Pickering conveyed it to John Woody (Woodis?) and Thomas Flint Oct. 18, 1654.† Mr. Flint apparently bought out Mr. Woodis' interest in the land, as Mr. Flint afterward is recognized as its sole owner, and at the death of Mr. Woodis, in the spring of 1659, he owed the estate six pounds and ten shillings, which was his one-half of the price paid for the Higginson lot.

See Court
record show
is this
fact.

The western portion of this lot was a part of the land laid out to Robert Goodale of Salem, farmer, Feb. 13, 1651;‡ and, for twenty pounds, Mr. Goodell conveyed this part of his lot to Thomas Flint of Salem, farmer, Jan. 6, 1662.§

Mr. Flint died April 15, 1663, possessed of the Goodell part of this lot and the entire Higginson land, which was then valued at one hundred and twenty pounds. This lot became the property of his son Thomas Flint, who built upon it a house in which he lived. Thomas Flint died May 24, 1721, possessed of the house and land around it; but how much longer the house stood is unknown to the writer.

Within the bounds of this lot at its southern side was two acres and ninety-one square rods of meadow, entirely surrounded by Flint's land. This belonged very early to

*Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 9.

†Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 28.

‡Salem Town Records, volume I, page 171 (printed).

§Essex Registry of Deeds, book 2, leaf 76.

ner, by deed, Aug. 28, 1667.* The latter died in 1684, possessed of this tract of land, which is described in the inventory of his estate as follows: "80 acres of upland 8 acres of meadow scituate among the farmes." It was then valued at ninety pounds. His son Nathaniel Gedney of Salem, mariner, released his interest in it to the latter's brother William Gedney of Salem Nov. 23, 1696.† John Gedney's widow Susannah Gedney was appointed administratrix of his estate, and afterward married Deliverance Parkman of Salem, merchant. Mr. and Mrs. Parkman released the lot to her son William Gedney Sept. 18, 1704.‡

Charles Downing Lot. This lot of land was granted by the town of Salem to Roger Morey June 25, 1638, in the following words: "Graunted to Roger Maury a stripe of meadow contayning 2 acres & halfe or thereabouts & one acre & a halfe or thereabouts of vpland lyinge betweene the ffarmes of Robt Moulton & John Gedney."§

Roger Morey removed from Salem in 1642 or 1643, and this lot came into the possession of Emanuel Downing. Nathaniel Felton, aged eighty-five, deposed "y^t soon after Roger Morrey removed from Salem w^{ch} was before y^e year 1644 I" heard that he "had sould his land in y^e woods unto m^r Emanuel Downing" and "a parcell of upland & swamp & meadow land being a part of & Belonging to y^e s^d Morreys Land and lyeth at y^e westerly End of m^r Downings farme lying in y^e Township of salem about 3 miles westerly from y^e town." I "having lived a near neighbour to s^d farme about 55 years never heard or understood y^t y^e s^d morreys land was claimed or posfessed but only by y^e tenants living vpon m^r Downings farme in y^e right of m^r Downing as belonging to his farme & to my certain Knoledge y^e Prockters who have Liued upon y^e s^d Downings farme about 30 years haue during y^e time of their abode upon the said farme Improued y^e said Morreys land as Belonging to m^r Downing."|| Samuel Cutler, sr., aged about seventy-one, de-

wrought most
"woked for"

executed
"dittoes"
Prockters

posed "y^t in severall years at severall times before y^e year" 1652 "I wrought with William fflint upon a farm wthin y^e township of salem w^{ch} he hired of m^r Emanuel Downing lying about three miles westwardly from y^e Town & I then heard y^t Roger Morrey when he Remoued from salem sold his Land in y^e woods vnto m^r Emanuel Downing" and "a certain pcell of upland swamp & meadow on y^e westward end of s^d farme & allso a percell of meadow lying near unto moultons & aldermans farme which was called by y^e name of moreys land was yⁿ claimed & posfessed by y^e s^d William fflint as a part of m^r Downings farm he yⁿ lived upon & which hath been posfessed by y^e Prockters as tenants for above thirty years Last past & I never Knew it claimed or posfessed by any since y^e year" 1649, "but only as a part of s^d farm by y^e tennants living upon y^e same."* Em Harwood, aged seventy-two, deposed that from 1649 to 1653 "I liued wth Thomas fflint upon a farm within y^e Township of salem which he hired of m^r Emanuel Downing lying about three miles westwardly from y^e town & I then heard y^t Roger Morrey when he removed from Salem sold his land in y^e woods unto m^r Emanuel Downing & . . . y^t a certain pcell of upland swamp and meadow on y^e westwardly End of y^e afores^d farm & also a percell of meadow lying near unto Moultons & Aldermans farm which was called by y^e name of Morreys land was then claimed & posfessed by y^e s^d Thomas Flint as a part of m^r Downings farme he then Liued on & w^{ch} y^e prockters as Tenants have lived upon for above thirty years last past."† All of these witnesses made oath to their statements Sept. 18, 1700.

No deed of this lot from Mr. Morey is known to exist. From Emanuel Downing the title to the Downing farm descended to his grandson Charles Downing, Esq., of London, England. In the latter's deed of that farm to Thorndike Procter of Salem, yeoman, this lot, called three acres of meadow, was included. It is described as lying "betwixt the lands of Robert Moulton and Humphrey French." The date of this deed is Sept. 13, 1700.‡

*Essex Registry of Deeds, book 3, leaf 20.

†Essex Registry of Deeds, book 11, leaf 194.

‡Essex Registry of Deeds, book 16, leaf 186.

§Salem Town Records, volume I, page 71 (printed).

||Essex Registry of Deeds, book 15, leaf 5.

*Essex Registry of Deeds, book 15, leaf 5.

†Essex Registry of Deeds, book 15, leaf 6.

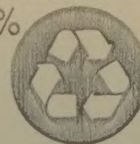
‡Essex Registry of Deeds, book 17, leaf 7.

Oxford.

NO. 40519

 ESSELTE

10%



The Norman People - full. among mostly in London 1874 (reprint GPC 1989)

Alice & Nicholas Arden

Arden, or Arden - see Bracebridge

Bracebridge, or De Arden, Ralph, son of William de Arden, was lord of Bracebridge, Lincoln, 13th cent. (Testa 327). The family of Arden or Arden were Normans and came to England 1066. The Bracebridge family bear the arms of Arden or Arden, being a fesse gules with different tincture of the field.

In 1165 William de Arden held a fief in Kent, Helias de Arden Somerset, Thomas de Arden Essex (Lib. Reg.). In the 13th cent Ralph de Arden of Essex held a fee in the honour of Peverill of London (Testa 368). He was probably the same who held Bracebridge. That this family was connected to the Eastern Counties appears from the marriage of William de Criketot, Baron of Ixworth, Suffolk to the dau. of John Bracebrigg (Mon. ii 184). The latter was living 1305 (Mon. ii 327).

Alice & John Lee

Lee, for Leigh, also local English of unknown origin, (see Leigh of Alderston 3rd E of Warwick (or the well) (see by Denard's list - pg 89)

Leigh, a branch of the Norman house of De La More; also borne by other families.

De La More - from La More near Pont-Audemer, a castle built on piles in a lake (describes a Chester family) - from Ran. ap. de L. M. Dep. Jan of Chester dec. the Lord Leigh.

Phebe, George, John (x 3), Hugh, Symon (x 2), William & Stephen Manning

Manning (also Marion)

Lambert Margn, 1188; William, Anstabel le Margn, Normandy 1180-95 (MRS) (Richard)

Henry Manning, Eng. c 1272 (RH)

Christine & John Philpot

Philpot, see Philpot. Hence the celebrated Henry Philpot, Bishop of Exeter.

Philpot. N. Philpot, Normandy 1180-95 (MRS) (also Philpotts)

Joan, William, Walter (x 2) Wallis

Wallis. Sacene Wallis, Normandy 1180-95 (MRS); John de Waller, Eng c 1272 (RH).

(also Wallace, but that family was of Scotland)

Margaret, John Rolfe

Rolfe. See Rolfe. Of this family was Lord Chancellor Cranworth Rolfe see Rolfe

Rolfe. Symon de Ros, Normandy 1180-95 (MRS); William Rolfe, Eng. c 1272 (RH)

The above shows that various of the related families and the Mannings were probably of Norman descent, since their surnames were Norman; also probable or possible places in Normandy or Brittany some could have come from.

pg 274
Domestic Slaves Arden
as N. part of Warwickshire
Sir Hugo Arden 281
John Trenchard
The kill of Warwick
was descended from
a Danish Earl who
retained lands in
Warwick (S 333)

Deerdy had ^{pg 341} 15 sons William Perard - Perhaps illegitimate son of William I by his mistress.
Took name Perard from his stepfather, who married her. Large holdings in Notts.
& Derbyshire & other Counties.

Reynold Perard m. the former mistress - Holdings in Berks, Norfolk, Devon & Suffolk.

From: The Ancestry of Chamberlain and Great
pages 716-9

HASTINGS

CP VIII:178; Anc.Rts.155A:26

Line 697

6. Robert de Hastings,
m. Maud de Flamville,
ch. 7. Alice de Hastings.

7. Alice de Hastings,
m.(1) Ralph de Cornhill,
m.(2) ca 1199, Sir Godfrey de Lovaine, Duke of Lorraine,
son of Godfrey III, Count of Brabant, [791-16]
ch. 8. Matthew de Lovaine, m. Muriel. [791-18]

Alice de Hastings married first, Ralph de Cornhill. She married second, about 1199, Godfrey de Lovaine. In this year Godfrey offered 400 marks to have her in marriage and the lands of her late husband, if she could give no reason for refusing him. She, on her part, offered 200 marks, three palfreys and two hawks for leave not to have him, but to marry where she pleased. She did, however, marry him of her own will. Godfrey became responsible for this proffer after his marriage, and the "Duke of Louvain" gave 50 marks towards the payment. Alice was an heiress of the Windsor family, and with her Godfrey had ten knights' fees and lands in London, Middlesex, Essex, and Suffolk. Godfrey died before 26 Apr 1226.

(To Lovaine Line 791-17)

• 0 • 0 • 0 •

HASTINGS

S.Wales pp.186,189,190,198;
DNB 8:644 (Grey), DNB 9:125,130 (Hastings);
Anc.Rts.93:27,93A:27,99:32; Falaise pp.110,111;
CP I:23, CP III:378, CP VI:345-349,667,CP VII:452,638,
CP X:336,388, CP XII(1):630, CP XII(2):199,433

Line 698

- * 1. William de Hastings, (-1226),
m.
ch. 2. Sir Henry de Hastings.

William de Hastings took part with the barons against King John, and in 1216 his lands were forfeited. He was taken prisoner at Lincoln in 1217, and was one of William of Aumale's supporters at Biham in 1221.

2. Sir Henry de Hastings, (-1250),
m. Ada of Huntingdon, dau. of David of Huntingdon, [277-26]
ch. 3. Sir Henry de Hastings,
Maud de Hastings, m. Gilbert Pecche, [892-5]
Ada de Hastings, m.(1) Stephen de Segrave; [983-3]
m.(2) Hugh Pecche.

Sir Henry de Hastings, of Ashill, Norfolk, fought in Poitou in 1242 and was taken prisoner at Saintes. He served in Scotland in 1244. In 1250 he was one of the nobles who took the cross, but he died in July of the same year. Matthew Paris calls him 'a distinguished knight and wealthy baron.'

3. Sir Henry de Hastings, (-1268),
m. Joanna de Cantelou, dau. of William de Cantelou, [478-4]
ch. 4. Sir John de Hastings,
Edmund de Hastings, m. Isabella Comyn,
Auda de Hastings, m. Rhys ap Maredudd ap Rhys Gryg,
Lora de Hastings, m. Thomas de Latimer,
Joan de Hastings.

* This William is #5 generation in the
fine print Burke's lineage, f.s. in which
Cantelou is de Cantelou, and does not get
as far as the Hastings of Gressing Hall

Henry de Hastings was under age at his father's death, and the King granted the wardship of his estates to Geoffrey de Lusignan, who in the following year, transferred it to William de Cantelou. In 1260 Hastings received a summons to be at Shrewsbury in arms to take part in the Welsh war. He was one of the young nobles who, at the parliament held in May 1262, supported Simon de Montfort in his complaint of the non-observance of the provisions of Oxford, and siding with the barons in the war of 1263 was one of those excommunicated by Archbishop Boniface. Hastings also joined in signing the instrument which bound the barons to abide by the award of Louis IX in December 1263. Hastings was one of the leaders of the baronial army at the battle of Lewes, 14 May 1264. He was knighted by Simon de Montfort before that battle. Hastings commanded the Londoners, and took part in their flight from Edward. On 3 June 1265 he was appointed constable of the castle at Winchester, during pleasure, in succession to Humphrey de Bohun. At the battle of Evesham, 4 Aug 1265, he was wounded and taken prisoner. He obtained his release and joined Robert de Ferrers, Earl of Derby, at Chesterfield in the following May, and only escaped capture with him through being out hunting. He then went to Kenilworth, and joining John de la Warre and others, ravaged the surrounding country. They held Kenilworth Castle against the King from June to October when they were finally forced to surrender. Hastings was specially excepted from the 'Dictum de Kenilworth,' and sentenced to pay a fine of seven years' value of his estates. Being released, he broke his oath not to take up arms again, and joining 'the disinherited' in the Isle of Ely, became their leader. He was forced to submit to Edward in July 1267 and died the next year. Wykes, who was a royalist, speaks of his inordinate pride and violence.

Henry de Hastings married Joanna, daughter of his guardian, William de Cantelou, by whom he had three daughters and two sons. He died shortly before 5 Mar 1268. His widow died before June 1271. Both are buried in the church of the Friars Minor at Coventry.

4. Sir John de Hastings, (1262-1313),
m.(1) 1275, Isabel de Valence,
dau. of William de Valence, [1065-13]
ch. William de Hastings, m. Eleanor de Valence,
John de Hastings, m. Julianne de Leyburn,
Joan de Hastings, m. William de Huntingfield,
5. Elizabeth de Hastings,
✓m.(2) ca 1306, Isabel Le Despenser,
dau. of Sir Hugh Le Despenser, [812-8]
ch. ✓Hugh de Hastings, m. Margery de Foliot, our line
Margaret de Hastings, m.(1) William Martin;
m.(2) Robert de Wateville,
Thomas de Hastings.

Sir John de Hastings was born 6 May 1262, at Allesley, county Warwick. Besides his father's lands, he had the lands of his uncle, George Cantelou. In 1292 he claimed a third part of the Kingdom of Scotland, as grandson and heir of Ada, daughter and heir of David, Earl of Huntingdon. His claim was rejected. He was summoned for military service from 1294 to 1310, and to parliament from 1295 to 1312. He took part in the Barons' Letter to the Pope in 1301. In 1302 he was appointed Lieutenant and Seneschal of Gascony, and held the office until 1304. He was re-appointed to the office in 1309, and surrendered it in 1311. John de Hastings married first, at Braxted, Essex, Isabel, daughter of William de Valence. She died 5 Oct 1305, and was buried in Coventry Priory. He married second, Isabel, daughter of Hugh Le Despenser. Hastings died 10 Feb 1313. His widow married second, Sir Ralph de Monthermer. Hastings was evidently trusted by Edward I and is highly spoken of. Langtoft calls him a 'knight of choice'. The writer of the song of Caerlaverock says, "In deeds of arms he was daring and reckless, in the hostel mild and gracious, nor was ever judge in eyre more willing to judge rightly." He had great wealth, and left land in ten counties besides in the marches of Wales and in Ireland.

5. Elizabeth de Hastings,
m. Sir Roger de Grey, son of Sir John de Grey, [677-4]
ch. John de Grey, m. Anne de Montagu,
6. Reginald de Grey, m. Eleanor LeStrange, [677-6]
Juliane de Grey, m. John Talbot.

(To Grey Line 677-5)

From the history of chemistry and physics
1700-1800

From the history of chemistry and physics
1700-1800

The
Visitation of Kent,

Taken in the Years

1619—1621.

By JOHN PHILIPOT, ROUGE DRAGON,

Marshal and Deputy to

WILLIAM CAMDEN, CLARENCEUX.

EDITED BY

ROBERT HOVENDEN, F.S.A.

GENEALOGICAL SOC
OF UTAH

#607

LONDON:

1898.

942
B4h
v42

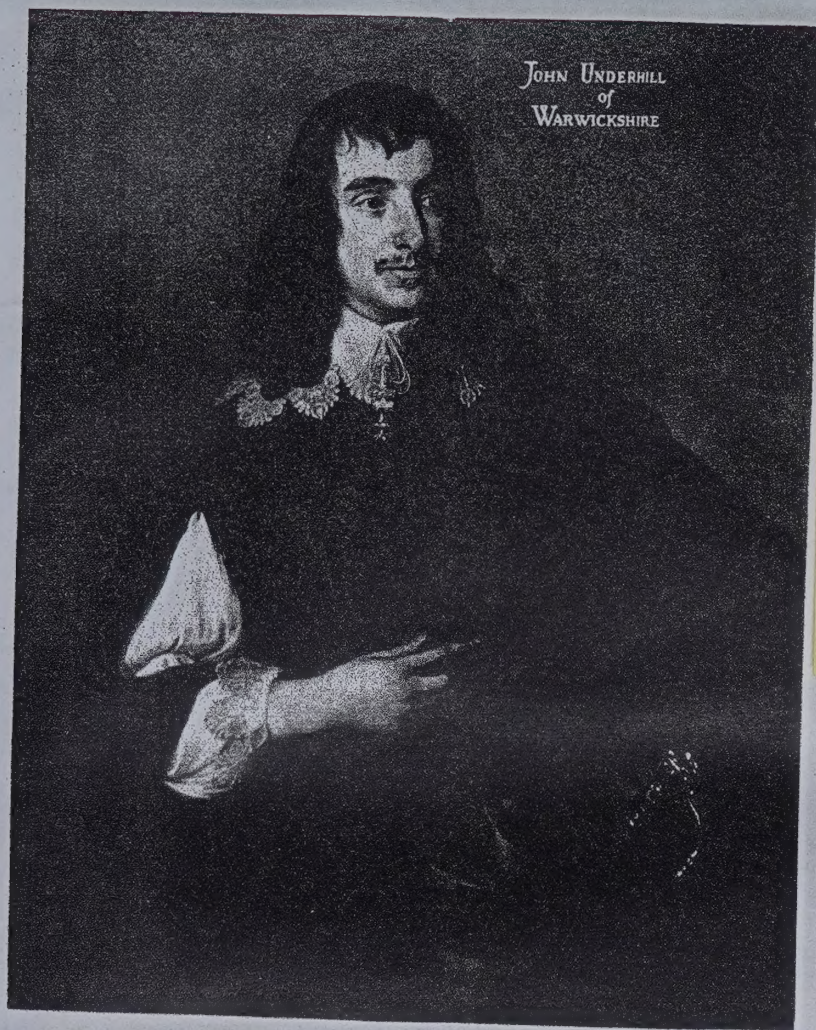
Philipot

This tells more about the Manning family also, it seems,
was highly connected with Tudor royalty.

This does not connect to Bree (Learna) line

See pg 8 - Hugo Underhill m. Catharine Manning, sister
of our Phoebe Manning who m. James Waters

UNDERHILL GENEALOGY



CAPT. JOHN UNDERHILL
ORIGINAL OWNED BY MYRON C. TAYLOR
(Vol. II, page 1)

NORMAN People says
Umfrick (Underhill) was a
Norman baronial knight
The original seat with Amysbury
Viscounts in France of Evereux
etc (page 423 on). They came to
England with William the Conqueror
came to Northumberland
UMFREVILLE
(Only clerics could write in
early England)

We need Edward Underhill (Juffe)
who m. Elizabeth Maureson
Thomson & had
Thomas Underhill (living 1501, Juffe)
who m. 1425 Thomas de
Caldbeck. These people are of
Norwich, not Juffe. The
early ones (if some given names
or ours) were contemporary
with ours. Did they share
EARLIER ancestry? No proof of
it here.

VOL. I.

The name was originally Umfreville

PUBLISHED PRIVATELY
BY
MYRON C. TAYLOR
IN THE INTERESTS OF
THE UNDERHILL SOCIETY OF AMERICA

1932

This family was of the Underhill line area of Staffordshire,
etc - lots of Thomas but no obvious connection to
the Caldwell/Craig family and that in Am. ca 1400 or so

Connected to our Manning family

Catharine Manning, sister
of our Phoebe Manning
(Catharine) Plester, m.
Hugo Underhill as second

CUM FREYVILLE, born in Normandy

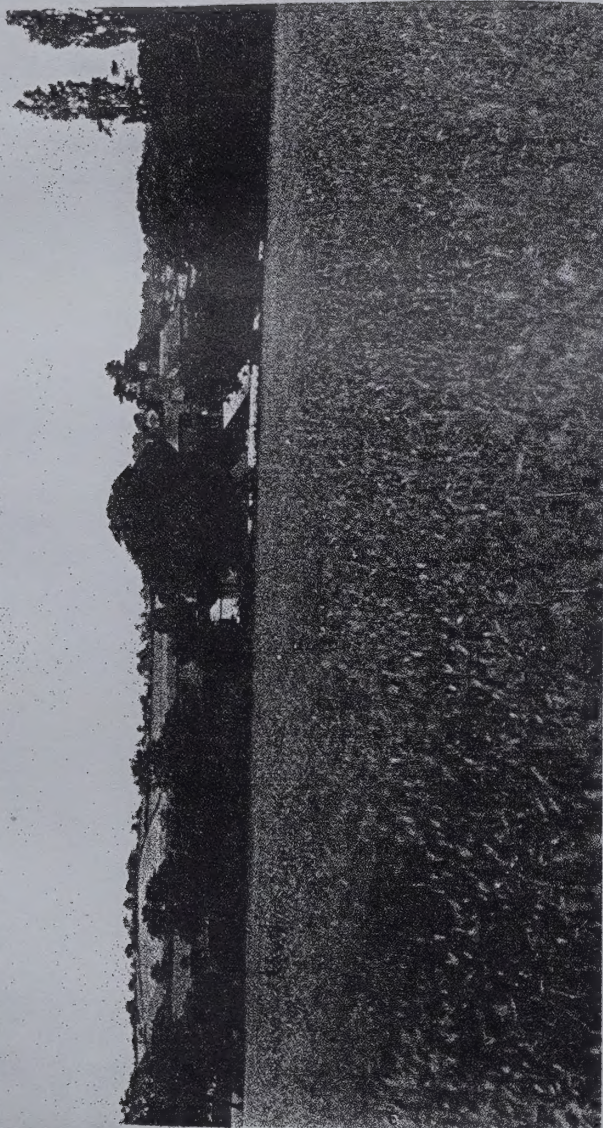
(See Norman Page)
pages 42/81

Underhill Family History in England

(Names in italics indicate direct line of Capt. John Underhill)

At just what period the Underhill name with its various spellings appears in the annals of England is a problem which will not be solved until thousands of unsorted and unread documents in the Public Record Office in London have been calendared and indexed, but there is ample evidence that the progenitors of Capt. John Underhill had achieved the status of country gentlemen by the thirteenth century and the Huntbach manuscript begins the Underhill pedigrees with *Robert de Underhulle*. In 1308 one Robert quit claimed to *Thomas, son of Robert, in Bushbury, Staffordshire*, "part of the rent of a tenement at Underhulle in Bisshebury, which he lately purchased of William de Underhulle." As surnames began to come into general use in the thirteenth century the probabilities are that Robert was one of the first of his line to use the place-name "Underhulle" or "Underhill" as a surname and it is of interest to note that there is still a small village named Underhill in the parish of Bushbury, about three miles north of Wolverhampton. Robert Underhill is also mentioned as an attorney in a Staffordshire "Foot of Fine" dated June 17, 1313. Known issue: *Richard and Thomas*. His son *Richard de Underhull* is named in the Huntbach pedigrees and is mentioned in documents bearing dates 1311, 1314, 1319 and 1343 and in 1333 paid subsidy at Wednesfield, Staffordshire. In the annals of the Privy Council held at Windsor in 1364 is an entry which sets forth how one Richard Underhill of Plymouth, was appointed to a small commission at that important seaport for the purpose of preventing anyone from crossing the seas without the King's license. *Thomas Underhull*, only known child of Richard, married Isabella — (?), as per the Huntbach pedigrees, and is mentioned under various dates, 1343-1398. A note states: "This

FARMSTEAD OF UNDERHILL IN PARISH OF BUSHBURY,
FROM WHICH THE FAMILY DERIVED ITS NAME IN THE 13TH CENTURY



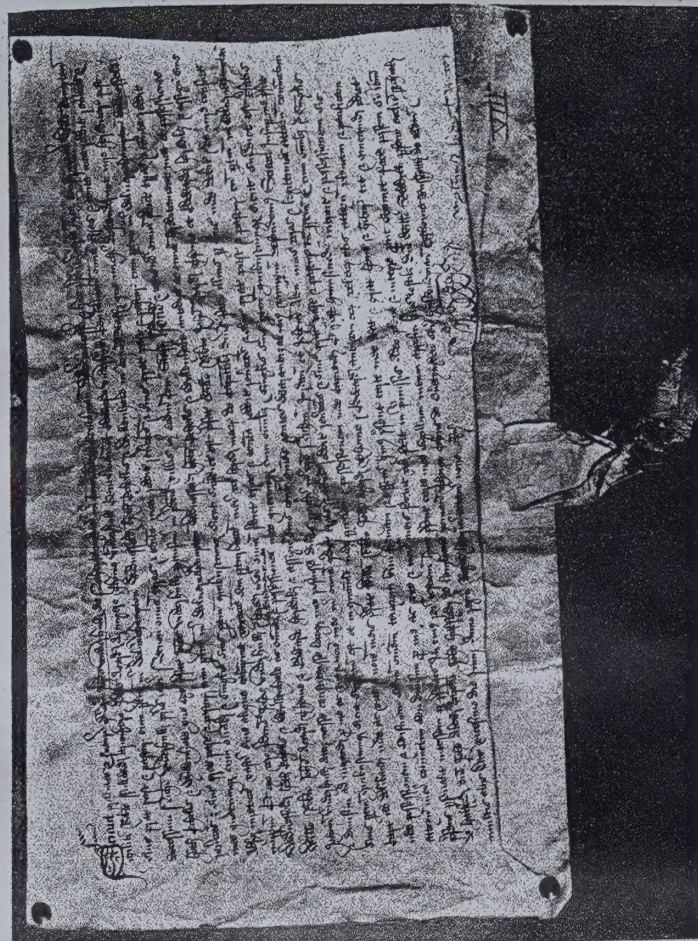
Thomas began to purchase lands in Wednesfield." Issue: William, Thomas, John, Julia.

The son *William Underhull* is the one affecting the pedigree in which our interest lies. He is described in the Herald's Visitation Pedigree taken in 1563 as of Wolverhampton, but he witnessed a deed in Wednesfield, June 23, 1417. He married Joan, maiden name not known, but in error stated in certain Visitation Pedigrees to have been a "daughter of Stanley of West Bromwich." She may have been a Stanley but not one of the family of West Bromwich. The only issue found is *Nicholas Underhull*, who married a Batte of Long Compton, County Warwick, and was steward of the Manor of Stow Heath near Wolverhampton and was living in 1481. His name is given erroneously as William or Nathaniel in most copies of the Visitation Pedigrees but is correctly stated in the Huntbach Pedigrees and in a deed dated June 20, 1517, given by John Underhull of Nether Etyngdon, gentleman, to Sir William Compton, knight, Robert fullwood, Esquire, John Agard, Esquire, Thomas Underhull, Gentleman, and Edward Underhull, Gentleman, he mentions his lands and holdings . . . in Wolverhampton, Wednesfield, "heth Echelles and Wyllenshall" in County Stafford, which "descended to me by right of inheritance after the decease of Nicholas Underhill my father." This deed has been framed and glazed and hangs on the main staircase of the Birmingham Public Library. Issue: John, Richard, Nicholas, William.

The son *John Underhull*, was born about 1450 and married first Susan Slade of Maxstoke, County Warwick; second, *Agnes Porter*, daughter of Thomas of Ettington, whose first husband was Myles Norwood by whom she had a son John. John Underhill of Ettington in his will and other documents spells his name "Underhull," but on the small well preserved brass in the Shirley Chapel in Nether Ettington, it appears as "de Underhul." No doubt it was placed in position originally by his son Edward, on a wall near the tombs of himself and wife Agnes after her death. Numerous documents are extant recording his land transactions and the late E. P. Shirley possessed the original of a lease of Ettington for eighty years, dated 1509, from Sir Ralph Shirley to John Underhull but this document has now disappeared.

John Underhull made his will Dec. 16, 1514, and mentions: Parish Church of "Netheretngdon"; Abbot and Convent of "Eucsham"; convents of Warwick and Stoneley; Guild of Henley and of "Stratford

It seems these Underhills were in Warwick - say more likely in Staffs - but both branches found the name Edward & Thomas!



DEED OF LAND DATED JUNE 20, 1517, BY JOHN UNDERHILL
IN WHICH HE NAMES HIS FATHER NICHOLAS
(Vol. I, page 2)

an Edward in 1400's +
we need to find a Thomas Underhill who m.
Thomasine Cederbeke ca 1460 or so + had dau Anne
who m. Thomas Crigton. If this is our branch he would fit
in on page 1 or page 2.

upon haven"; chapel of St. Stephen in the Lord King's palace of Westminster; chapel of St. Mary; daughters Susan and Dorothy, unmarried; wife Agnes to have the farm at Netheretyngdon for life; at her death to son Edward. If he fails to occupy it, to son Robert; also to wife Agnes, lands, etc., in Wolverhampton, Wednesfield, etc., in County Stafford; at her death to son William; if he dies without heirs, to son Thomas in entail, etc.; on death of wife Agnes, lands, etc., in "Overetyndon" to John Norwood; if he leaves no heirs, to son Thomas in entail, etc.; son Thomas to pay wife Agnes, out of income of Manor of Honyngham and out of lands and tenements lately obtained from Roger Wynter, which late belonged to Sir Thomas Cokesey, Knight in County Warwickshire, ten pounds yearly for life; wife Agnes, for life to have lands, etc., in Crymesote, son Edward to inherit at her death; she also to have for life lands, etc., in Exshulf, County Warwick, to revert to Robert at her death, etc. Probate granted Feb. 10, 1518/19. John died Oct. 29, 1518.

His wife Agnes made her will April 2, 1526, which was proven May 9, 1526. She requests burial near the tomb of her father Thomas Porter in the south part of the parish church of Nether Ettington in the Chapel of St. Nicholas and mentions her mother church in Worcester and names her children Edward, Robert, Elizabeth, Susan, Dorothy. Her son Thomas died in 1520.

Until John passed his thirtieth birthday he resided on the family estate in Wolverhampton, but after his second marriage removed to Ettington, some seven miles southeast of Stratford-on-Avon, where he made his home for more than twenty years, doubtless residing in the Manor House leased from the Shirleys' in 1509 for eighty years and renewed for one hundred years in 1541 to John's son Edward. John became a large landowner, not the least of his purchases being effected in November, 1500, when he and his wife bought of Sir Thomas Pulteney the Manor of Huningham, which consisted of three dwelling houses and over six hundred acres of land. His means appear as ample as many of the nobility in the early sixteenth century. This purchase was situated about fifteen miles northeast of Ettington and by 1512 was occupied by his son Thomas, in whom our interest centers.

John by his first wife had an only child, William, born in 1489, died 1544, without issue, leaving widow Alice his inheritance in Staffordshire for life, to revert at her death to William, the second

son of his brother Edward. In 1534 he was a resident of Hunningham but when he made his will he styled him, gentleman of Southstocke, County Warwick. He was appointed Clerk of the House of Commons by Letters Patent of Jan. 14, 1509/10, which office he held for more than four years. In 1514 he is mentioned as an attorney of the Court of Common Pleas and as an Exigenter of the Court, in 1519 and in 1523-4, he was a member of the Commission for Subsidy for Warwickshire. In 1526-7 he was granted the wardship of his half-nephew Edward (the Hot-Gospeller) whom he failed to name in his will.

Thomas Underhill, the eldest son of John and Agnes (Porter) Underhill, was born before 1486 and died in 1520. He married Anne Wynter, daughter of Robert, the head of an armigerous family of Huddington in Worcestershire. After his death, she married Edmund Lydiard, who purchased land in Bagington in 1545, and who administered her estate in 1546. By him she had two sons, Thomas and Leonard. Before 1512 Thomas Underhill was located on the property purchased by his father in 1500, known as the Manor of Hunningham. Issue: Edward, Ralph, Thomas, Hugh, Elizabeth, Alice.

Edward, the second son of John and Agnes (Porter) Underhill, was of Nether Ettington and Lord of the Manors of Harbury and Ettington. He was born in 1486, married Margaret, daughter of Thomas Middlemore of Edgbaston, and died in 1547. She died in 1563. On the inner south wall of the tower of the ruined church at Nether Ettington are the brasses of a man and woman and four daughters. Above them is a wooden shield with the arms of Underhill and Middlemore. In his will he names his eldest son Thomas, other children William, Humphrey, John and seven daughters.

Thomas Underhill, the eldest son of Edward and Margaret Underhill, married Elizabeth Congreve. A tablet in the ruined church of St. Nicholas in Nether Ettington, displaying their arms, states they lived together over sixty-five years and had thirteen sons and seven daughters. On a tablet in the same ruin in memory of their son Anthony the arms of the Underhill family is alone and distinct.

William, son of Edward and Margaret Underhill, married first, Ursula, daughter of John Congreve. She died May 17, 1561, and he married second, Dorothy, sister of Sir Christopher Hatton and widow of John Newporte of Honningham. William made his will Dec. 1, 1569,

a little late



LOWER 'EATINGTON' MANOR HOUSE, 1738.
 UNDERHILL HOME 1509-1641, NOW KNOWN AS ETTINGTON PARK.
 AT THE RIGHT, THE SHIRLEY CHAPEL OF THE RUINED CHURCH OF ST. NICHOLAS
 (Vol. I, page 5)

as of Newbold Revell, and died March 31, 1570. He requested burial by his first wife in the parish church of Nether Ettington and mentions his Manor of "Idlicote." Names his children as William, Humphrey, Dorothe, Margaret and Anne. The son, William, married Mary, daughter of Thomas Underhill of Nether Ettington, and was buried at Fillongly, July 7 or 13, 1597. She was buried Nov. 10, 1590, at Idlicote, County Warwick. Their two sons, Fulke and Sir Hercules, were baptized at Idlicote, but their other children, Dorothy, Elizabeth, Valentine and William were baptized at Stratford-on-Avon. This William Underhill, Jr., sold his home, "New Place," in Stratford-on-Avon, to William Shakespeare in 1597, the original deed of which is now in the collection of Henry C. Folger of New York City, recently deceased. When William Underhill made his will July 6, 1597, he called himself of Idlicote and bequeathed his real estate to his son Fulke. Idlicote is now the property of Lord Southampton and is his seat in Warwickshire. (Recently sold to a Mr. Horton.)

In a side chapel in Idlicote is a scutcheon or hatchment, which evidently has been formerly in a position over the door of Idlicote House, where, no doubt, William Underhill, father and son both, resided as it bears the arms of Underhill (left) and Porter (three bells with chevron).

The village now named Ettington stands on a hill and was formerly named "Over Ettington," as distinct from "Nether Ettington," two miles away. The village of "Nether or Lower Ettington" was demolished in the late 18th century and the villagers were removed to the hill, ostensibly for their health's sake, but perhaps chiefly to clear the Park. All that now remains there is the Manor House itself, close by the ruins of the old church of St. Nicholas of Nether Ettington, together with the Shirley Chapel, standing in the middle of the Park about one and one-half square miles, sloping down to the River Stour which flows through the lower end.

Edward, the eldest son of Thomas and Anne (Wynter) Underhill, became known as "the Hot-Gospeller" who suffered imprisonment in 1553 for having published a Protestant manifesto. He served under Sir Richard Cromwell at Landrecies in 1543, at Boulogne in 1544 in the Royal Bodyguard, under King Henry VIII in person and at Calais in 1552 as Comptroller of the Ordnance

under the Earl of Huntingdon, as well as in the "Gentlemen Pensioners" during Wyat's Rebellion in 1554. In 1544 he sold his Hunningham estate in Warwickshire to Richard Newport who bequeathed it to his brother John Newport, said John's wife being Dorothy, sister to Sir Christopher Hatton. After John Newport's decease, his widow married William Underhill, son of Edward of Ettington, Attorney of Newbold Revell, whose first wife was Ursula Congreve, the latter becoming the mother of William who sold New Place to William Shakespeare. In 1546 Edward married Joan Speryne, widow of Richard Downes and they were the parents of at least eleven children. He is last found mentioned in 1576 when he is described as of Baginton, aged about 64 years.

Ralph Underhill, the second son of Thomas and Anne Underhill in his will of 1557, styles himself of Baginton, Gentleman, mentions his wife Marie; brother Edward, who came into possession of his property. No issue.

Thomas Underhill, the third son of Thomas and Anne Underhill, died in 1571. He married first in 1538, Christian Arnolde; second in 1542, Ann Wood of London, who died in 1603 as the widow of Thomas Elliott whom she married Feb. 16, 1576/7. Issue by first wife: Elizabeth, Christian; by second wife: Katherine, John, Thomas, Elizabeth.

Thomas Underhill was recommended by the Duke of Norfolk for the office of Sergeant at Arms in London June 1, 1540, and on June 6, 1543, the King ordered one hundred men properly clothed and armed shipped "to passe to Callice" and some discreet personage to lead them to Dover. Consequently the Common Council agreed and assented that Thomas Underhill one of the Lord Mayor's Sergeants should have that honor.

Hugh Underhill, the youngest son of Thomas and Anne (Wynter) Underhill, is first found mentioned in 1540 in the will of Richard Fowler, keeper of the King's Manor in Greenwich in which he made some forty bequests which included the following "Item, to hughe Underhill a sword and a buckler and iiij nobles in money." From the nature of this bequest it is fair to assume that by 1540, Hugh had reached his majority and was probably one of the junior retainers of the Royal Palace at Greenwich. Several references to him in the wills of persons indubitably connected



ETTINGTON PARK, TODAY, LOWER ETTINGTON, WARWICKSHIRE. ON THIS SITE STOOD THE UNDERHILL HOME 1509-1641.
THE RUINED ST. NICHOLAS CHURCH WITH THE SHIRLEY CHAPEL IS CLOSE BY
(Vol. I, page 3)



RUINS OF THE ANCIENT CHURCH OF ST. NICHOLAS, AT NETHER ETTINGTON, ENGLAND
(Vol. I, page 4)

with the Royal household at Greenwich indicate he was intimately acquainted with their families, but his position as one of the officials of the court is conclusively established when a vacancy occurred in the important office of the keeper of the wardrobe of Queen Elizabeth, by the death of Thomas Mayneman who died in 1563. A paper in the State Archives of England in the form of a Royal Warrant issued under the Great Seal, Feb. 6, 1563 reads as follows: "We let you wit, that in consideration of the true and faithful service heretofore done unto us by our well beloved servant Hugh Underhill, one of the officers of our wardrobe of beds, we have given and granted, and by these presents do give and grant unto the said Hugh Underhill the keeping or the office of keeper of our wardrobe within our manor of Greenwich in our county of Kent." Further provisions, made his appointment for life which he was to enjoy in "as large and ample manner" as any of his predecessors, all the profits and rights of his position. An inventory of the contents of the Palace at the time of the death of King Henry VIII occupied not less than twenty-five spacious pages which "are eloquently suggestive of the arduous labours of the official who was responsible for their custody." That Hugh Underhill enjoyed the special favor of Queen Elizabeth is inferred from the distinction bestowed upon him in 1590 when the Royal Grant set forth by the "special grace" of the Queen, that her "well-beloved subjects Hugh Underhill and Katherine his wife" were appointed to "the office of keeper of our garden in the manor of East Greenwich, County of Kent, commonly called the Queen's Garden"; that the office was to be exercised by themselves for their lives or the life of the survivor and they were to enjoy "all profits, commodities, advantages and emoluments pertaining to the office." The "Queen's Garden" was a territory outside the domain of the head gardener of the Palace and appears to have been open only to privileged friends of the Queen.

The name of the first wife of Hugh Underhill is unknown, but she was living in 1562 as the following Will of Thomas Mayneman of Greenwich indicates:

Extracts from the will of Thomas Mayneman of Greenwich. (Rochester Probate Registers, No. 13, ff. lix-lxii.) Dated 18th October, 1562: Proved 6th March, 1562-3. (N.B.—In the Letter Patent, dated

6th February, 1563, appointing Hugh Underhill Keeper of the Wardrobe in the Royal Manor of Greenwich, Thomas Mayneman is mentioned as one of his predecessors.)

After bequests of 2s/6 each to "mysteris Katharine Maning" and "mysteris Susanna Maning" "to by her a payre of Gloves"; and of 10s/- "vnto hughe vnderelles wyfe," there follows:

"Item I geve vnto my godsonne Thomas Underell iiij li in mony a beddstedd with turned postes Celer and Tester of blew damasce with flowre delucies spanged withe golde fringed with blew sylke with fyve curtaynes of blew satten of bridgis, a pallet case of Strawe a fetherbedd a bolster a pyllowe and one payre of Shetes . . . Item I geve vnto the same Thomas my new Testament my bybyll and all the Reste of my bokes Item I geve vnto him my seeve and my buckler a bowe and a sheaf of Arrowes, a black byll a Javalinge ij shawlinge bowes and a quiver with arrows Item I geve vnto him a payre of Almayne Revettes, a Callett belongynge with the same . . . And when my legacies and funeralles are done and payed All the Rest of my goodes moveables and unmoveables heare or wheresoever they be of what nature or kynde so ever they be I geve and bequeyeth vnto hughe Underell and John Wylkynson whom I mak my Whole Executors of this my last Will and Testament . . ."

Certainly this will evidences a closer relationship than friendship between its maker and the Underhills, than has been granted. The second wife of Hugh Underhill was Katherine, baptized April 3, 1548, Downe, Kent, daughter of Mr. George and Joan (Walles) Manning who were married there Aug. 13, 1543. She married second, Richard Goodman of Greenwich, Kent, and died in 1627, having lived as his widow from 1611.

The second marriage of Hugh Underhill is significant of his social status as her uncle was Sir Henry Manning, who was Marshal of the Household at Greenwich to Henry VIII and her first cousin, Margaret Manning, was the third wife of Thomas Howard, Viscount Bindon, who as second son of the third Duke of Norfolk, was a cousin of Queen Elizabeth. Hugh Underhill made his will Jan. 1, 1592/3, date of probate not given, but as his successor, Thomas Hickson, was appointed in February, he probably died in January, 1593. He bequeathed

twenty shillings to the poor of East Greenwich and his servant Thomas Lilly a like amount, and a gilt spoon to each of his overseers, "Mr. Harry Manning, Mr. John Tirrell and Anthony Holte"; mentions Hugh Underhill, "sonne of Thomas Underhill, my sonne deceased, one good bed well and thoroughly furnished." The residue was to be divided equally between his wife Katherine and his son George and they were made his executors. The only known children of Hugh Underhill were Thomas by his first wife and George by his second. The son Thomas Underhill, was born in 1545 and was the principal heir of Thomas Mayneman, his father's predecessor in office, and it may well be asked why said Mayneman passed over his brother, his cousin and others and left his treasured possessions to Hugh and Thomas Underhill and one other. Was not his "god-son" his grandson? If so, careful research in England has not yet so determined.

In the fall of 1563, Queen Elizabeth made a generous addition to the estates of her favorite, Lord Robert Dudley, by presenting him with Kenilworth Castle and Manor and a year later created him Earl of Leicester. As the palace at Greenwich was her favorite residence it was inevitable that he became well acquainted with Hugh Underhill and his son Thomas, and selected the latter to occupy a similar position at Killingworth Castle as the former held at Greenwich. The date of the appointment is uncertain, but Thomas and his wife were in possession of property there in October, 1571, and he was probably installed in his office several years prior to that date. The names Kenilworth and Killingworth were used indifferently in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries and "as it is so vital a link in the evidence of the ancestry of Capt. John Underhill, it is important to cite some examples of its employment as a synonym. When Queen Elizabeth visited Leicester in 1572, her secretary subscribed several official letters as having been written at "Killingworth." Laneham's description of the famous revels published in 1575, affected "Killingworth." Twenty years later, Shakespeare, who would be familiar with Warwickshire custom, wrote "Killingworth," and in 1609, 1611, 1616, and later that spelling persisted in official documents as a recognized substitute for the now more familiar "Kenilworth." There are many proofs that "Killingworth" was the form used during the period that Capt. John's ancestors resided there. In the British Musum is preserved Lord Burghley's own copy

Underhill Genealogy

Sister of Peter Manning

our Manning's is Kent

1st Underhill was first sister of Peter Manning's sister Katherine

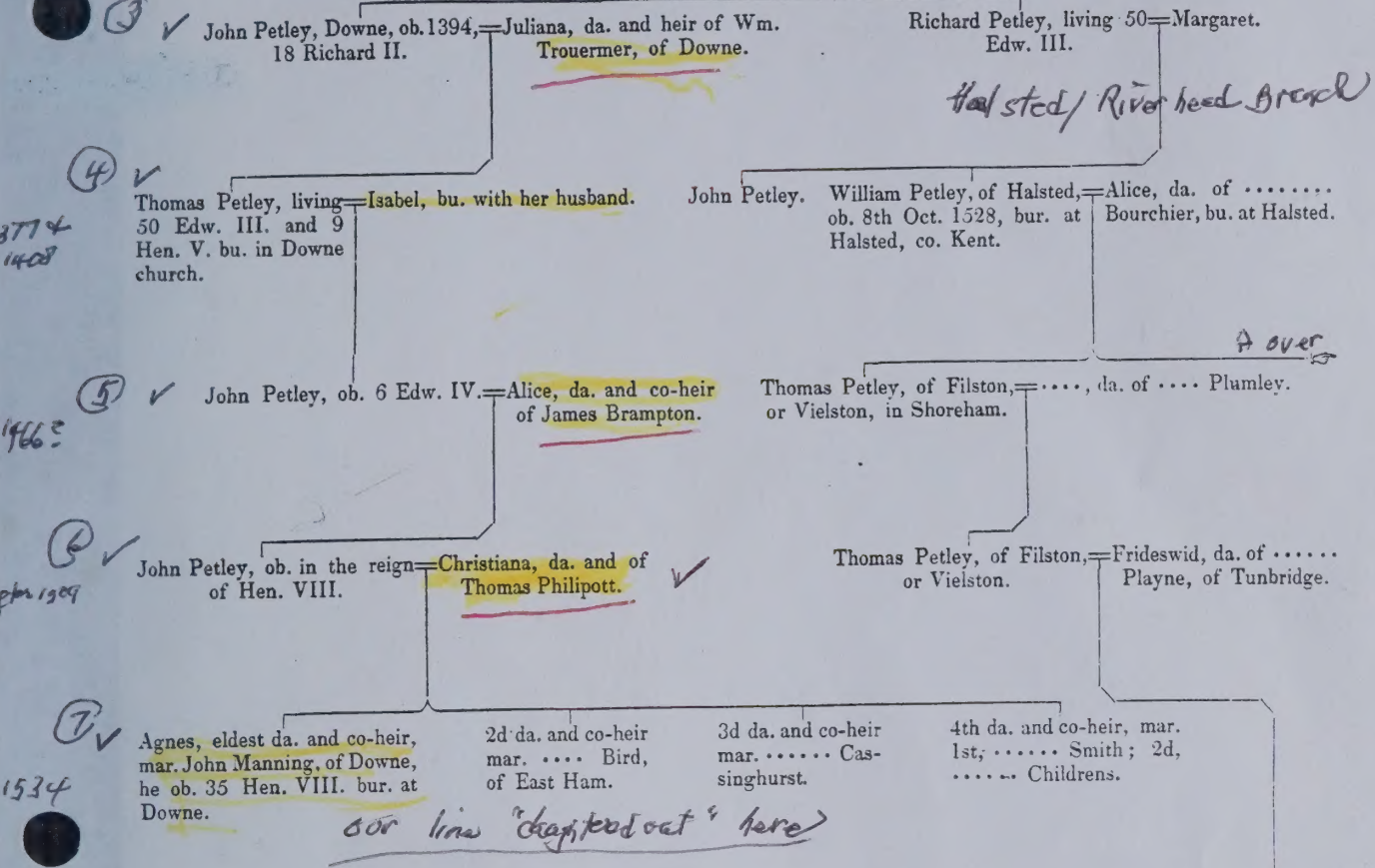
Visitation of Kent taken 1619-21 by John Philipps

Page Dragon

① RICHARD PETLEY
of Downe =
(1216-1272) (of Kent temp Hen. II)
(1272-1357) Edw. I
(Chart says John)

Richard Petley, of Downe, aforesaid, temp. Edw. I.

Manning / Petley



William Petley, ob. S.P. Edward Petley, mar. and left issue a son, George. Dorothy, da. of Michael Bashford, of Westerham. 1st wife. Thomas Petley, of Filston, or Vielston; living 1619. Elizabeth, da. of Ralph Came, of London. 2d wife.

Michael Petley, eldest son, æt. 24, 1619, mar. Mary, da. of Sir Edward Gilbourne, Kt. by, da. of Purefoy, of co. Leicester.
Thomas Petley. 2d son.
William Petley. 3d son.
Edward Petley, 4th son.

too late to help

THE LANDED GENTRY. pg 1600

PETLEY OF RIVERHEAD.

PETLEY, CHARLES RALPH CARTER, Esq. of Riverhead, Kent, b. 5 June, 1877, s. his grandfather 1890.

Lineage.—The family of Petley is one of great antiquity in Kent, and can be traced back to the time of HENRY III. It was originally seated at Downe, in that co. and afterwards at Halsted and Riverhead. About the year 1620,

RALPH PETLEY, son of Thomas Petley, of Filston, in Shoreham, a scion of the Halstead family, m. Elizabeth Cam, of London, and became the owner of Riverhead, 1625, he was father of—

RALPH PETLEY, Esq., b. 1645, who was of Riverhead, Kent, and served as High Sheriff 1680. He m. 1667, Jane, dau. of Sir John Seyliard, Knt. of Chiddingstone, Kent, and d. 25 July, 1704, aged 59, having had issue,

1. Thomas, of Riverhead, m. Margaret, one of the three daus. and co-heirs of Thomas Gifford, Esq.; and had issue,

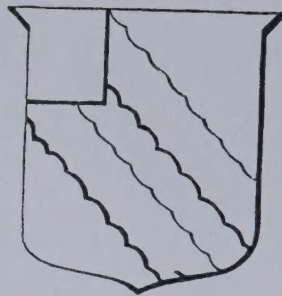
1 Gifford, d. unm.
2 RALPH, of Riverhead, d. unm. Sept. 1751, having bequeathed his estates to his cousin, CHARLES PETLEY, Storekeeper of the Ordnance.
1 Jane, d. unm.

II. JOHN, of whom presently. III. Ralph, d. unm.
1. Jane, m. 1st, Edmund Fowler, Esq. of Ashe, and 2ndly, Stephen Lushington, Esq.

The 2nd son, JOHN PETLEY, m. Jane Lockyer, and (besides a dau. Jane, who d. unm.) had a son,

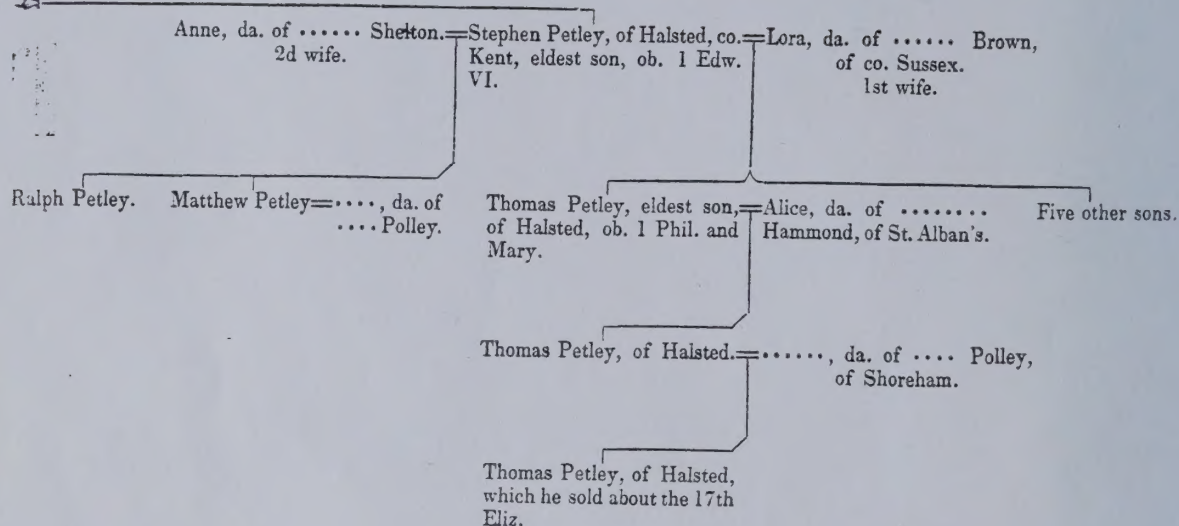
CHARLES PETLEY, Esq., Storekeeper of the Ordnance atatham, afterwards of Riverhead, m. 13 June, 1752, Elizabeth, dau. of Robert Paul, Esq. of Ewart, co. Northumberland, and

This shows our lineage. Petley arms but on reverse

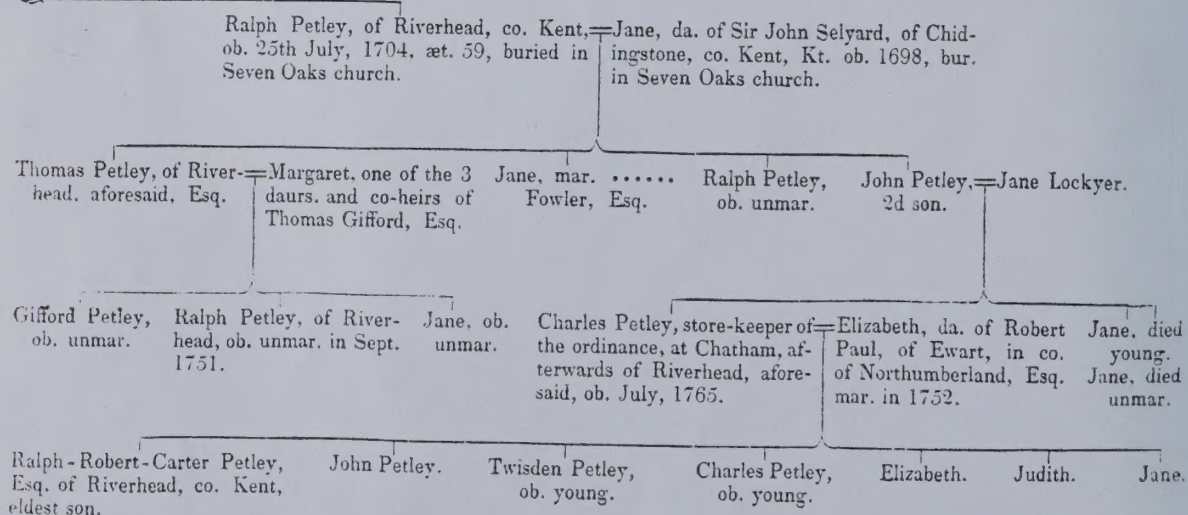


Arms.—Ar. two bends, engr. sa. a canton of the last.

A over



B over



Kent = 216-1272

Edw I = 1272-1307

Richard I = 1377-1400

RICHARD PETLEY, of Downe, co. Kent, temp. Hen. III.

(coat of arms over)

Richard Petley, of Downe, aforesaid, temp. Edw. I.

John Petley, Downe, ob. 1394, 18 Richard II. Juliana, da. and heir of Wm. Trouermer, of Downe. (Trowmer)

Richard Petley, living 50 Edw. III. Margaret.

Thomas Petley, living 50 Edw. III. and 9 Hen. V. bu. in Downe church. Isabel, bu. with her husband.

John Petley. William Petley, of Halsted, ob. 8th Oct. 1528, bur. at Halsted, co. Kent. Alice, da. of Bouchier, bu. at Halsted.

John Petley, ob. 6 Edw. IV. Alice, da. and co-heir of James Brampton.

Thomas Petley, of Filston, or Vielston, in Shoreham., da. of Plamley.

John Petley, ob. in the reign of Hen. VIII. Christiana, da. and of Thomas Philipott.

Thomas Petley, of Filston, or Vielston. Frideswid, da. of Playne, of Tunbridge.

Agnes, eldest da. and co-heir, mar. John Manning, of Downe, he ob. 35 Hen. VIII. bur. at Downe.

2d da. and co-heir mar. Bird, of East Ham.

3d da. and co-heir mar. Cas-singhurst.

4th da. and co-heir, mar. 1st, Smith; 2d, Childrens.

William Petley, ob. S.P.

Edward Petley, mar. and left issue a son, George.

Dorothy, da. of Michael Bashford, of Westerham. 1st wife.

Thomas Petley, of Filston, or Vielston; living 1619.

Elizabeth, da. of Ralph Came, of London. 2d wife.

Michael Petley, eldest son, aet. 24, 1619, mar. Mary, da. of Sir Edward Gilbourne, Kt. by da. of Purefoy, of co. Leicester.

Thomas Petley. 2d son.

William Petley. 3d son.

Edward Petley. 4th son.

Bennetta. Elizabeth.

Thomas Petley, eldest son. Elizabeth, eldest da. and co-heir of James Pery, of Lenham, co. Kent.

Michael Petley, 2d son.

Pery Petley, eldest son, living 1649, ob. unmar.

Thomas Petley, 2d son, ob. unmar.

James Petley, 3d son, mar. Elizabeth, da. of Abbot, of St. Mary-Cray, co. Kent.

Mary, mar. Richard Walter, of Staplehurst.

Elizabeth, mar. Thos. Major, S.P. Katherine, mar. Benjamin Major, of London, stationer. Dorothy.

* Shown on pg 11, reverse (our ancient cousin), but does give coat of arms.

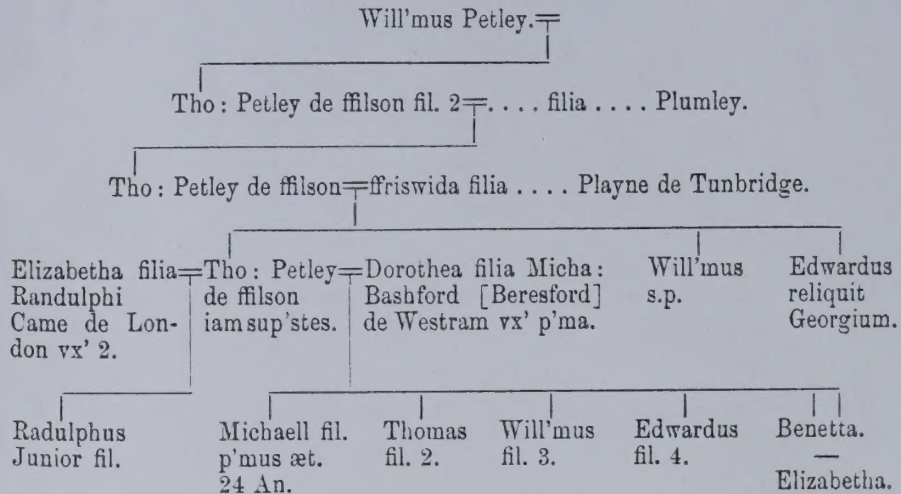
Petley

Petley.

P 177

ARMS.—*Argent, two bends engrailed and a canton sable.*

CREST.—*[A cubit arm in armour erect proper, garnished or, grasping a scimitar by the blade argent, hilted of the second.]*²



¹ Stowe.

² MS. *penes* Somerset Herald.

" Pedigrees of some of the Emperor

upon Charlemagne's Descendants

by A L Langston & J O Bachs (GPC 1986)

include Mary Wentworth, wife of Elder William Brewster
Elder William Brewster - Mayflower 1620

Chapter LXIV

~~WENTWORTH BREWSTER BARTLETT~~
~~CHURCHILL MUNCERTORD~~

CHARLEMAGNE, King of the Franks and Emperor of the West, father of,

LOUIS I, the Pious, King of the Franks and Emperor of the West; m. (first) ca. 794, Ermengarde (Irmgard), d. Oct. 3, 818, dau. of Ingeramun (Ingram), Count of Hasbaye.

LOTHARIUS I, King of Italy and Emperor of the West, b. ca. 795; d. Sept. 29, 855; m. (first) Oct. 15, 821, Ermengarde, (Irmgard), d. Mar. 20, 851, dau. of Hugo II, Count of Tours, (or of Alsace),

LOTHARIUS II, King of Lorraine (Lotharingien—Lothierregne—Lotharingia), b. ca. 835; d. Aug. 8, 869; m. (secondly) ca. 862, Waldrade (formerly his concubine), who d. as a nun in Remiremont ca. 868,

PRINCESS BERTHA, b. ca. 863; d. Mar. 8, 925; m. (first) ca. 879, Theobald (Thibault), Count of Arles,

BOSO, Count of Arles, 926-31; Markgraf of Tuscany, 931-36; b. ca. 885; d. ca. 938; m. Willa,

WILLA, m. ca. 936, Berenger II, King of Italy, Markgraf of Ivrea, d. Aug. 6, 966, son of Adalbert, Markgraft of Ivrea, and his wife Princess Gisela, dau. of Berenger I, King of Italy and Emperor of the West,

PRINCESS SUSANNA, (often referred to as Rosela), m. (first) Arnolph II, *Le Jeune*, Count of Flanders, son of Baldwin III, Count of Flanders, and his wife Mathilda, dau. of Hermann Billung, Duke of Saxony,

Charlemagne's Descendants

Vol II

BALDWIN IV, *Le Barbu*, Count of Flanders, b. ca. 980; d. May 30, 1035; m. (first) ca. 1012, Ogive (Otgive), d. Feb. 21, 1030, dau. of Frederick, Count of Luxemburg,

BALDWIN V, the Pious, Count of Flanders, b. ca. 1012; d. Sept. 1, 1067; m., ca. 1028, Adele (Adelheid), d. Jan. 8, 1079, dau. of Robert II, King of France, and widow of Richard III, Duke of Normandy,

MATHILDA (or MAUD) of Flanders, b. ca. 1032; d. Nov. 2/3, 1083; m., ca. 1050/53, William I, Duke of Normandy, The Conqueror, King of England, b. ca. 1027; d. Sept. 9, 1087,

HENRY I, *Beauclerc*, King of England, b. 1068; d. Dec. 1/2, 1135; m., first, Nov. 11, 1100, Princess Mathilda, b. 1079; d. May 1, 1118; dau. of Malcolm III, *Canmore*, King of Scotland, by his second wife, Saint Margaret, dau. of Prince Edward, the Exile, and his wife, Agatha,

PRINCESS MATHILDA (or MAUD), b. 1104; d. Sept. 10, 1169; widow of Henry V, Emperor of Germany, m. (secondly) May 22, 1127/8, Geoffrey Plantagenet, Count of Anjou, b. Aug. 24, 1113/4; d. Sept. 7, 1151,

HENRY II, King of England, b. Mar. 5, 1132/3; d. July 3, 1189; m. May 1, 1152, Eleanor, Duchess of Aquitaine and Queen of France, d. Mar. 31, 1204, the divorced wife of Louis VII, King of France, and dau. of William, Duke of Aquitaine and Count of Poitou,

JOHN, Lackland, King of England 1199-1216, b. Dec. 24, 1166; d. Oct. 19, 1216; m. (his second wife) Aug. 24, 1200, Isabella of Angouleme, b. 1188; d. May 31, 1246,

HENRY III, King of England 1216-1272, b. Oct. 1, 1207; d. at Westminster, Nov. 16, 1272; m. (his first wife) at Canterbury 1236, Eleanor of Provence, b. 1217; d. at Amesbury, Jan. 24, 1291; dau. of Raymond Berenger, Count of Provence,

PRINCE EDMUND, surnamed "Crouchback," M.P. 1276, Earl of Lancaster, Leicester and Derby, b. at London, Jan. 16,

(King Edward I ruled)
1272-1307

Correct
arms of

Richard Brockhill

Nicholas de Brockhull, Esq. 1st son, of Aldington, in Thurnham, ob. 1461. Will proved May 27, 1461.

William de Brockhull, Esq. of Aldington, ob. 1512, 3d Hen. VIII. = Elizabeth, da. of Thomas Hever.

Edward de Brockhull, Esq. of the same. = Mildred, da. of Ellis, of Kennington.

Henry de Brockhull, Esq. of the same, ob. 1596, æt. 63, bu. in Kented Church. = Margaret, da. of Hugh

Ann Brockhull. = John Taylor, of Thurnham, gent.

Martha Brockhull. = William

Brockhull Taylor, settled in Ireland.

Thomas Taylor.

Elizabeth, mar. John Gratwicke.

Eleanor, mar. W. Heath, of Mayfield.

Jane, mar. Stephen Gibbs, gent.

Ann, mar. William Thwaits, of .. Blean, gent.

Bennett, mar. Ambr. Warde, of Sandgate-Castle, gent.

John Tournay, of Brookland, mar. 1599; 1st son.

Elizabeth, da. Solomon Wilk and sister and of David Wilk of Tonge, in Kent re-mar. to John Bodolph.

Thomas Tournay, of Brockhull, will dated 1637, bur. in the north aisle of Saltwood Church. = Abigail, da. of Thos. Browning, of Postling.

Alice, mar. Richard Bargrave.

John Tournay, bo. 1607.

Thomas Tournay.

Elizabeth.

Abigail.

Frances.

Rebecca.

Alice.

Ann.

.....

John Tournay, sold Brockhull to James Brockman, Esq. of Beachborough.

Robert Tournay, of Hythe, attorney-at-law, ob. 1747, unmarried.

Thomas Tournay, of Ashford, grocer, ob. 1767, S. P. unmarried.

John Tournay. = Ann Worger, da. of

Elizabeth, ob. 1792.

John Tournay, of Hythe, unmarried.

Robert Tournay, Rector of New Church, ob. 1785.

Ann Sivyver, mar. 1759.

Mary, of Hythe, unmarried.

Thos. Sivyver Tournay, = ... widow, of Brookland, grazier. of Secker.

Ann, mar. Wm. Lewis, of Hythe, surgeon; she ob. S. P.

Stephen Tournay, of Ashford, grocer, unmar. 1796.

Robert Tournay, of Lydd, farmer and grazier.

John Tournay, = ... da. of Ashford, ... Smith, of Cranbrook grocer.

Thos. Tournay, = Amey, da. of John of Hythe, Esq. Forster, D.D. rector attorney-at-law, of Elton, co. Huntingdon, mar. 1786.

Robert Tournay, of New Buildings, afterwards of Eastry-Court, = Christiana, da. of Canterbury, co. Kent, Esq. took the surname and arms of Claudius Clare, clerk. BARGRAVE in addition to those of TOURNAY, by Royal Sign Manual, dated 23d Aug. 1800, ob. 19th May, 1825.

Christian, bo. 1782, mar. Wm. Bridger, of Eastry-Court, co. Kent.

Sarah, bo. 1784, mar. 1st, Richard = Sir Thomas Staines, K.C.B. of Dentdelion, Halford, of Canterbury. = co. Kent, a captain in the Royal Navy. 2d husband.

Bargrave Bridger.

Christian-Bargrave.

Sarah-Bargrave.

Mary-Bargrave.

Charlotte-Frances-Bargrave.

The Brockhull

Our John Mannings died 1430. Probably he married Juliana Brockhull about 1400 or earlier. She was daughter of Richard Brockhull, not shown here. Probably he was brother of Sir John the Sheriff of Kent.

John Mannings m. Juliana Brockhull d. 1430

Our John Mannings
died 1436. Probably he
married Juliana Brockhill
~~abt~~ 1400 or earlier.
She was daughter of
Richard Brockhill, not
shown here.
Probably he was brother of
Sir John the Sheriff of Kent —

John Manning
D. 1430

(Key Edward I ruled)
1272-1307

Correct
arms of

See

Richard Brockhull

Thos. S.P.

Nicholas de Brockhull, Esq. 1st son, of Aldington, in Thurnham, ob. 1461. Will proved May 27, 1461. Catharine, da. of Adam Wood.

William de Brockhull, Esq. of Aldington, ob. 1512, 3d Hen. VIII. Elizabeth, da. of Thomas Hever.

Edward de Brockhull, Esq. of the same. Mildred, da. of Ellis, of Kennington.

Henry de Brockhull, Esq. of the same, ob. 1596, æt. 63, bu. in Kented Church. Margaret, da. of Hugh Catlyn.

1596
(dth)

Ann Brockhull. John Taylor, of Thurnham, gent.

Martha Brockhull. William Cumber, of Shermanbury, in Sussex.

Brockhull Taylor, settled in Ireland.

Thomas Taylor.

Elizabeth, mar. John Gratwicke.

Eleanor, mar. William Heath, of Mayfield.

Mary, relict of George Elliott, ob. S.P. at Strawford.

Jane, mar. Stephen Gibbs, gent.

Ann, mar. William Thwaits, of .. Blean, gent.

Bennett, mar. Ambr. Warde, of Sandgate-Castle, gent.

John Tournay, of Brookland, mar. 1599; 1st son.

Elizabeth, da. of Solomon Wilkins, and sister and heir of David Wilkins, of Tonge, in Kent, re-mar. to John Bodolph.

Margaret, mar. Wm. Collins, ob. 1595.

Alyce, mar. John Baker, of Tenterden, gent.

Thomas Tournay, of Brockhull, will dated 1637, bur. in the north aisle of Saltwood Church. Abigail, da. of Thos. Browning, of Postling.

Alice, mar. Richard Bargrave.

Ann, mar. William Herring.

John Tournay, bo. 1607.

Thomas Tournay.

Elizabeth.

Abigail.

Frances.

Rebecca.

Alice.

Ann.

.....

John Tournay, sold Brockhull to James Brockman, Esq. of Beachborough.

Robert Tournay, of Hythe, attorney-at-law, ob. 1747, unmarried.

Thomas Tournay, of Ashford, grocer, ob. 1767, S. P. unmarried.

John Tournay. Ann Worger, da. of

Elizabeth, ob. 1792.

John Tournay, of Hythe, unmarried.

Robert Tournay, Rector of New Church, ob. 1785.

Ann Sivyver, mar. 1759.

Mary, of Hythe, unmarried.

Thos. Sivyver Tournay, ... widow, of Brookland, grazier.

Ann, mar. Wm. Lewis, of Hythe, surgeon; she ob. S. P.

Stephen Tournay, of Ashford, grocer, unmar. 1796.

Robert Tournay, of Lydd, farmer and grazier.

John Tournay, of Ashford, grocer.

... da. of ... Smith, of Cranbrook

Thos. Tournay, Amey, da. of John of Hythe, Esq. Forster, D.D. rector attorney-at-law, of Elton, co. Huntingdon, mar. 1786.

Robert Tournay, of New Buildings, afterwards of Eastry-Court, and Canterbury, co. Kent, Esq. took the surname and arms of BARGRAVE in addition to those of TOURNAY, by Royal Sign Manual, dated 23d Aug. 1800, ob. 19th May, 1825.

Christiana, da. of Claudius Clare, clerk.

Christian, bo. 1782, mar. Wm. Bridger, of Eastry-Court, co. Kent.

Sarah, bo. 1784, mar. 1st, Richard Bargrave Halford, of Canterbury. Sir Thomas Staines, K.C.B. of Dentdelion, co. Kent, a captain in the Royal Navy. 2d husband.

Bargrave Bridger.

Christian-Bargrave.

Sarah-Bargrave.

Mary-Bargrave.

Charlotte-Frances-Bargrave.

The broad (lane)
"Saghol" est. to the
Towers fens. (Bran)
Elizabeth

(King Edward I ruled)
1272-1307

Correct
arms of

Richard Brockhull

Thos. d.s.p.

Nicholas de Brockhull, Esq. 1st son, of Aldington, in Thurnham, ob. 1461. Will proved May 27, 1461.

Catharine, da. of Adam Wood.

William de Brockhull, Esq. of Aldington, ob. 1512, 3d Hen. VIII.

Elizabeth, da. of Thomas Hever.

Edward de Brockhull, Esq. of the same, ob. same.

Mildred, da. of Ellis, of Kennington.

Henry de Brockhull, Esq. of the same, ob. 1596, æt. 63, bur. in Kented Church.

Margaret, da. of Hugh Catlyn.

1596
(JCH)

Ann Brockhull, John Taylor, of Thurnham, gent.

Martha Brockhull, William Cumber, of Shermanbury, in Sussex.

Brockhull Taylor, settled in Ireland.

Thomas Taylor.

Elizabeth, mar. John Gratwicke.

Eleanor, mar. William Heath, of Mayfield.

Mary, relict of George Elliott, ob. S.P. at Strawford.

Jane, mar. Stephen Gibbs, gent.

Ann, mar. William Thwaites, of .. Blean, gent.

Bennett, mar. Ambr. Warde, of Sandgate-Castle, gent.

John Tournay, of Brookland, mar. 1599; 1st son.

Elizabeth, da. of Solomon Wilkins, and sister and heir of David Wilkins, of Tonge, in Kent, re-mar. to John Bodolph.

Margaret, mar. Wm. Collins, ob. 1595.

Alyce, mar. John Baker, of Tenterden, gent.

Thomas Tournay, of Brockhull, will dated 1637, bur. in the north aisle of Saltwood Church.

Abigail, da. of Thos. Browning, of Postling.

Alice, mar. Richard Bargrave.

Ann, mar. William Herring.

John Tournay, bo. 1607.

Thomas Tournay.

Elizabeth.

Abigail.

Frances.

Rebecca.

Alice.

Ann.

.....

John Tournay, sold Brockhull to James Brockman, Esq. of Beachborough.

Robert Tournay, of Hythe, attorney-at-law, ob. 1747, unmarried.

Thomas Tournay, of Ashford, grocer, ob. 1767, S. P. unmarried.

John Tournay, Ann Worger, da. of

Elizabeth, ob. 1792.

John Tournay, of Hythe, unmarried.

Robert Tournay, Rector of New Church, ob. 1785.

Ann Sivyver, mar. 1759.

Mary, of Hythe, unmarried.

Thos. Sivyver Tournay, of Brookland, grazier, ... widow, of Secker.

Ann, mar. Wm. Lewis, of Hythe, surgeon; she ob. S. P.

Stephen Tournay, of Ashford, grocer, unmar. 1796.

Robert Tournay, of Lydd, farmer and grazier.

John Tournay, da. of of Ashford, ... Smith, of Cranbrook, grocer.

Thos. Tournay, Amey, da. of John of Hythe, Esq. Forster, D.D. rector attorney-at-law, of Elton, co. Huntingdon, mar. 1786. ob. S.P.

Robert Tournay, of New Buildings, afterwards of Eastry-Court, and Canterbury, co. Kent, Esq. took the surname and arms of BARGRAVE in addition to those of TOURNAY, by Royal Sign Manual, dated 23d Aug. 1800, ob. 19th May, 1825.

Christiana, da. of Claudius Clare, clerk.

Christian, bo. 1782, mar. Wm. Bridger, of Eastry-Court, co. Kent.

Sarah, bo. 1784, mar. 1st, Richard Halford, of Canterbury. = Sir Thomas Staines, K.C.B. of Dentdelion, co. Kent, a captain in the Royal Navy. 2d husband.

Bargrave Bridger.

Christian-Bargrave.

Sarah-Bargrave.

Mary-Bargrave.

Charlotte-Frances-Bargrave.

The broader (last)
"Inscribed" to the
Brockhull
Elizbeth

About Brockhill

- Arms.—TOURNAY.—Ar. a chev. betw. three bulls, passant, sa.
 Crest.—A bull's head, erased, ar. armed and collared or.
 Quarterings.—1. SELLYNG.—Vert, a chev. betw. three griffins' heads, erased, or.
 2. BROCKHULL.—Gu. a cross, engr. betw. twelve cross crosslets, fitchée, ar.
 3. KYRIELL.—Ar. two chev. and a canton gu.
 4. WILKINS.—Ermine, on a bend sa. three martlets or, on a canton of the last, a rose gu.



Does not mention
 Weelys or Manning

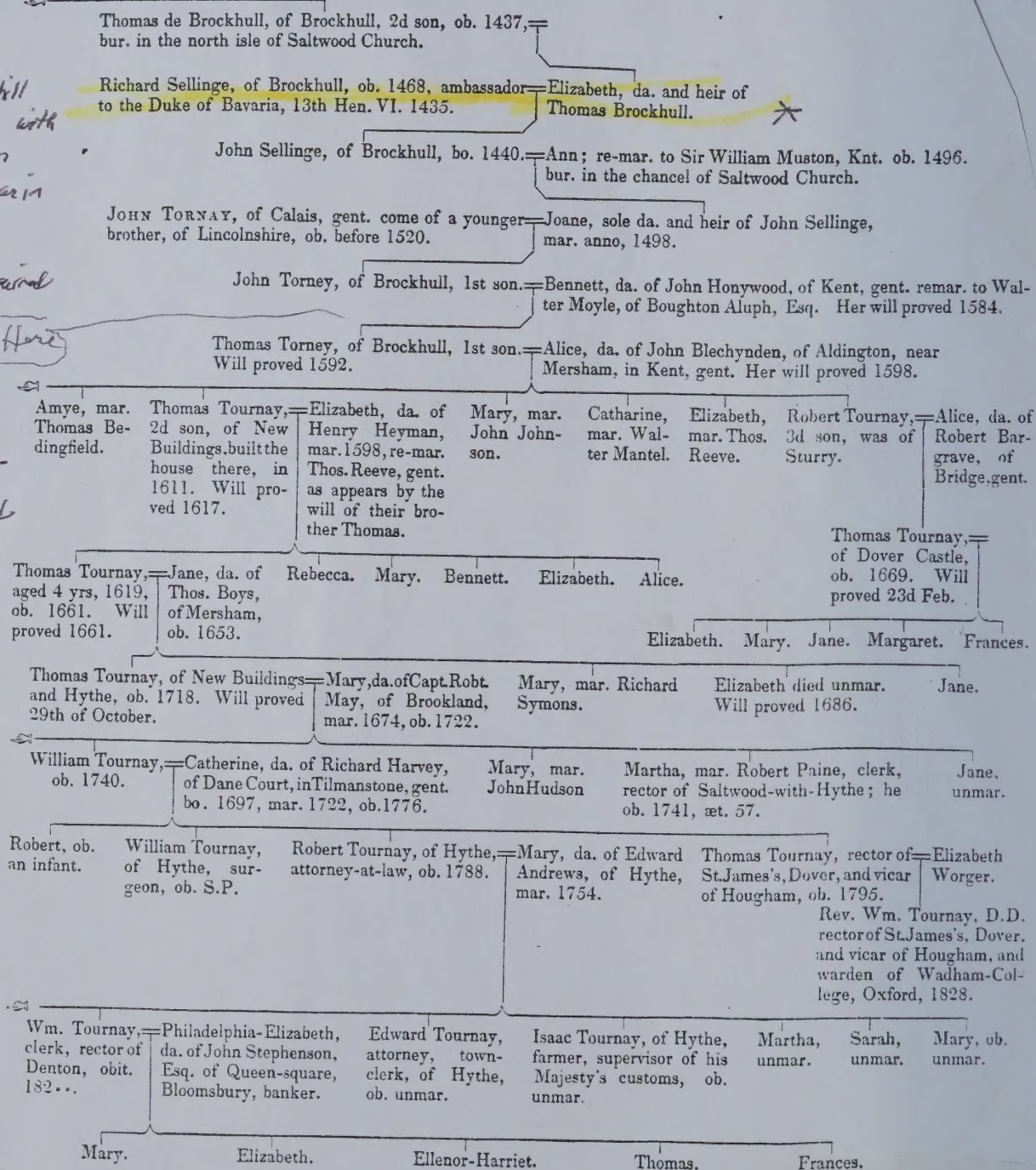
Is this Richard
 Brockhill's younger
 brother?

Thomas de Brockhill
 (2nd son) d. 1437 with
 no son. Lived in
 Saltwood Kent, near
 church there.

Dav's husband acquired
 manor

Before Here

Thus it seems that
 both brothers died
 without male
 descendants



Sir William de Brockhull, Knt.
of Brockhull.

Brockhill

The org

Sir Thomas Brockhull, Knt. sheriff of Kent,
6th, 7th, & 11th of Edw. III. knight of the shire,
13th, 14th, 15th, & 27th of Edw. III. conservator
of the peace, 12th & 27th of the same reign.

Thomas de Brockhull, of Calehill, which establishment he,
with Joan his wife, in consideration of £500 and an annu-
ity of £20 during their joint lives, conveyed to John Da-
rell, Esq. 12th Hen. IV. Thomas and Nicholas, sons and
heirs of William de Brockhull, son of Sir John Brockhull,
of Saltwood, Knt. joining in the deed of feoffment now
preserved in the Surrenden Library. The seal appendant
is a cross, engrailed, between twelve cross crosslets fitchée.

Sir John de Brockhull, Knt. = Ida, da. of Sir John Kyrill,
sheriff of Kent, 42d Edw. III. Knt.

William de Brockhull, Esq. = Margaret.
ob. about 1396.

about 1396

Richard Brockhill
not listed but
dec 1810.
must have been
of this family

Nicholas de Brockhull, Esq. 1st son, of Aldington, = Catharine, da. of Adam Wood.
in Thurnham, ob. 1461. Will proved May 27, 1461.

William de Brockhull, Esq. of Aldington, = Elizabeth, da. of Thomas Hever.
ob. 1512, 3d Hen. VIII.

Edward de Brockhull, Esq. of the same, = Mildred, da. of Ellis, of Kennington.
same.

Henry de Brockhull, Esq. of the same, = Margaret, da. of Hugh Catlyn.
ob. 1596, æt. 63, bu. in Kented Church.

Ann Brockhull. = John Taylor, of Thurn-
ham, gent.

Martha Brockhull. = William Cumber, of Sherman-
bury, in Sussex.

Brockhull Taylor, set-
tled in Ireland.

Thomas Taylor.

Elizabeth, mar. John
Gratwicke.

Eleanor, mar. William
Heath, of Mayfield.

Mary, relict of George Elliott,
ob. S.P. at Strawford.

Jane, mar. Ste-
phen Gibbs, gent.

Ann, mar. Wil-
liam Thwaits, of
.. Blean, gent.

Bennett, mar.
Ambr. Warde,
of Sandgate-
Castle, gent.

John Tournay,
of Brookland,
mar. 1599;
1st son.

Elizabeth, da. of
Solomon Wilkins,
and sister and heir
of David Wilkins,
of Tonge, in Kent,
re-mar. to John
Bodolph.

Margaret, mar.
Wm. Collins,
ob. 1595.

Alyce, mar.
John Baker,
of Tenter-
den, gent.

Thomas Tournay, of Brockhull, = Abigail, da. of
will dated 1637, bur. in the Thos. Browning,
north aisle of Saltwood Church. of Postling.

Alice, mar. Richard
Bargrave.

Ann, mar. William
Herring.

John Tournay, =
bo. 1607.

Thomas Tournay.

Elizabeth.

Abigail.

Frances.

Rebecca.

Alice.

Ann.

.....

John Tournay, sold Brockhull
to James Brockman, Esq. of
Beachborough.

Robert Tournay, of Hythe,
attorney-at-law, ob. 1747,
unmarried.

Thomas Tournay, of Ashford,
grocer, ob. 1767, S. P. un-
married.

John Tournay, = Ann Worger,
da. of

Elizabeth,
ob. 1792.

John Tournay,
of Hythe, un-
married.

Robert Tournay, = Ann Sivyver,
Rector of New mar. 1759.
Church, ob. 1785.

Mary, of Hythe,
unmarried.

Thos. Sivyver Tournay, = ... widow,
of Brookland, grazier. of Secker.

Ann, mar. Wm. Lewis,
of Hythe, surgeon; she
ob. S. P.

Stephen Tournay,
of Ashford, grocer,
unmar. 1796.

Robert Tournay,
of Lydd, farmer
and grazier.

John Tournay, = da. of
of Ashford, Smith,
grocer. of Cranbrook

Thos. Tournay, = Amey, da. of John
of Hythe, Esq. Forster, D.D. rector
attorney-at-law, of Elton, co. Hun-
ob. S. P. tingdon, mar. 1786.

Robert Tournay, of New Buildings, afterwards of Eastry-Court,
and Canterbury, co. Kent, Esq. took the surname and arms of
BARGRAVE in addition to those of TOURNAY, by Royal Sign
Manual, dated 23d Aug. 1800, ob. 19th May, 1825.

Christiana, da. of
Claudius Clare,
clerk.

Christian, bo. 1782, mar. Wm. Bridger,
of Eastry-Court, co. Kent.

Sarah, bo. 1784, mar. 1st, Richard = Sir Thomas Staines, K.C.B. of Dentdelion.
Halford, of Canterbury. = co. Kent, a captain in the Royal Navy.
Richard Bargrave Halford, ob. young, in 1828. 2d husband.

ave Bridger.

Christian-Bargrave.

Sarah-Bargrave.

Mary-Bargrave.

Charlotte-Frances-Bargrave.

delicate

See over

From:

Some Feudal Costs of Arms:

by Sarah Foster

John Manning d. 1436 m. Julian = Brackhill

Brackhill, d. Richard, (later of Wintlethys)

The family, probably Normans, took their
surnames from their residence. "Brack"
means badger - showing that many badgers must
have creased out their little noses there.

Oxford Dictionary of English Place Names
page 57

Brack-hall, Northants. (probably 1086)

Dunby Book. Old English name meant
a badger hole.

Sir Thomas, listed first, was
our relation - probably the
man who died 1437 who fought
Maidenheath, where Sir Elizabeth
m. Selling, ambassador to Bologna
(Richard 2 of Brackhill)

Shows that Halbrook & Brackhill/
Brackhale are ^{versions of} the same name.

The arms above are all very similar.

Question. Did the Kent branch
adopt a cross instead of a chevron to
distinguish themselves from a Suffolk
branch?

Henry III 1216-1272

Henry IV 1399-1413

Edward II 1307-1327

Henry 6 - 1422-1461

OCT 26 1950

County Genealogies.



PEDIGREES



OF THE

FAMILIES

IN THE



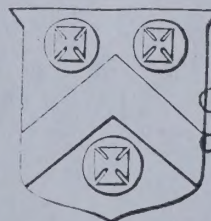
COUNTY OF KENT;

COLLECTED FROM THE HERALDIC VISITATIONS AND OTHER AUTHENTIC
MANUSCRIPTS IN THE BRITISH MUSEUM, AND IN THE POSSESSION
OF PRIVATE INDIVIDUALS, AND FROM THE INFORMATION
OF THE PRESENT RESIDENT FAMILIES.

By WILLIAM BERRY,

FIFTEEN YEARS REGISTERING CLERK IN THE
COLLEGE OF ARMS, LONDON,

AUTHOR OF THE ENCYCLOPEDIA HERALDICA, GENEALOGIA ANTIQUA, AND OTHER WORKS UPON
HERALDRY AND GENEALOGY, HISTORY OF GUERNSEY, ETC. ETC.



GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY
OF THE CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST
OF LATTER-DAY SAINTS

40094

LONDON:

PRINTED BY W. MARCHANT, INGRAM-COURT,

PUBLISHED BY SHERWOOD, GILBERT, AND PIPER,
PATERNOSTER-ROW.

1830.

April 2, 1955
DATE MICROFILM

ITEM ON ROLL
1st

CAMERA NO.
SLC-11
CATALOGUE NO.

Q
942.23
D2 ber

Q
942.23
D2 ber

(Chaucer) (Menning)

late 14th-15th

(Chaucer)
Here are the early beginnings
of the Chaucer line, if only we
can fill in the blanks.

Simon Menning, living 1382 in
Cedham, Kent, married
Catherine Chaucer, sister of
the great poet, Geoffrey Chaucer
author of Canterbury Tales -
also a fine diplomat of King
Edward III of England and his
queen.

The General Army:

Chaucer, (Geoffrey)
Chaucer of Woodstock, the
father of English poetry, R.G.
par pale and G.C., a bent
bent counter changed.

CEEST - A ~~tor~~ ~~tor~~ ~~tor~~
A tortoise pass., ppr
Chaucer (London) same

→ Some
Tales (Poets of Arthur)

SEE OVER R

Line 946

1 Sir Payne Roet, (ca 1360),
m.

ch. Philippa Roet, m. Geoffrey Chaucer,

2. Catherine Roet.

Sir Payne Roet (Sir Paon de Roët) was King-of-Arms in Guienne, one of the knights of Queen Philippe's household. His daughter, Philippa, married the poet, Geoffrey Chaucer. Payne de Roet was from Hainault, the Queen's wealthy little Netherlands country, but he had married a French girl from Picardy who had died in childhood. After her death Payne had left his two little daughters with their grandparents when he followed the Queen to England. Payne had been a dashing, handsome man inclined to dress above his station and thus well fitting his nickname of Paon, the peacock. He found favor with King Edward, who appointed him one of the royal Heralds—King-of-Arms to represent the province of Guienne—then finally so distinguished himself fighting in France just before the peace in 1360 that King Edward had knighted him on the field, along with many other deserving soldiers.

Sir Payne did not live long enough to enjoy either his knighthood or the truce, for a Norman arrow pierced his lungs during a skirmish outside the walls of Paris, and he died with an anguished prayer for the future of his two little daughters in Picardy. Queen Philippa heard of this later when the King returned to England, and was saddened. Soon she sent a messenger across the Channel with letters to Bruges and she entrusted him with various other commissions along the way. The messenger stopped off at a farm in Picardy and found that Sir Payne's family was indeed desperate for help. The plague had returned for a second time that winter, and had recently struck the household. The grandparents had died of it, and all the servants. No one was left but Payne's two small daughters, and one, the younger, had been stricken too, but had miraculously recovered, though she was still very ill. They were being reluctantly tended by a neighbor. These little girls were aged thirteen and ten. The elder was named Philippa, for the Queen who had been her father's patroness, and the younger was Catherine. Finding them completely orphaned, and knowing the Queen's good heart, the messenger carried the children back to England with him.

Of this voyage across the Channel and her arrival in a foreign country, or of the jolting ride through pouring rain to the royal palace at Eltham, and eventual reception by the Queen, Catherine remembered almost nothing, for she had been ill the whole time with a wasting fever and

*Re: Chaucer's wife - not our ancestors,
but interesting*

bloody flux. The Queen had her carried to a forester's cottage where the goodwife, skilled with herbs, had managed to nurse the child back to health. By that time the Queen had moved to her favorite palace of Woodstock and had taken little Philippa with her in her household. When told that Catherine had recovered, she sent letters arranging for the child's admission at Sheppey Priory. There Catherine spent the next five years. She was summoned by the Queen, before her sixteenth birthday, and became the bride of Sir Hugh Swynford.

Anya Seton, *Katherine*, Boston (1954)

2. Catherine Roet, (ca 1350-1403),

m.(1) ca 1366, Sir Hugh Swynford, son of Thomas Swynford,

ch. Blanche Mary Swynford,
Thomas Swynford,m.(2) 1396, John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster,
son of Edward III, King of England, [1-38]ch. 3. John Beaufort, Earl of Somerset,
m. Margaret de Holand, [2-40]

Henry Beaufort, Bishop of Winchester,

Thomas Beaufort, Duke of Exeter, m. Margaret de Neville,

Joan Beaufort, m.(1) Robert de Ferrers:

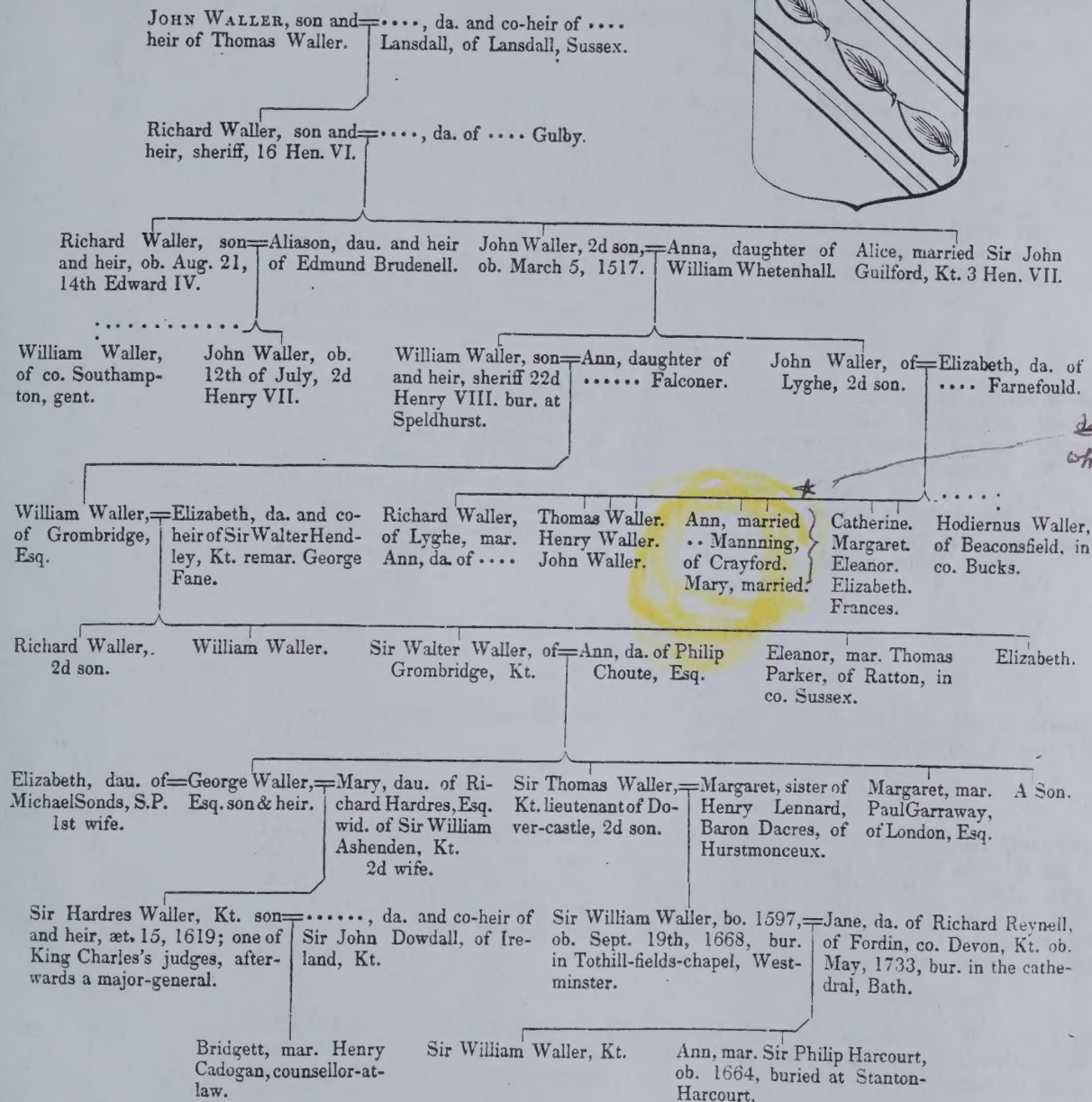
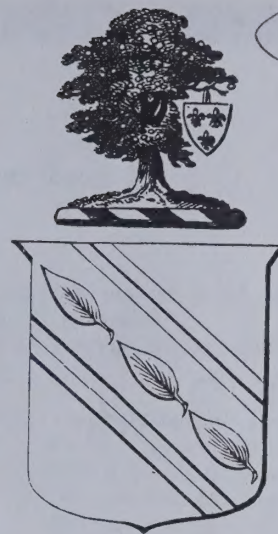
m.(2) Ralph de Neville, [1-40]

Catherine Roet was born about 1350, probably in Hainault. She married first, when she was about 16 years old, Sir Hugh Swynford, who died about September 1371. She married second, on 13 Jan 1396, as his third wife, John of Gaunt. Catherine, who had been governess to his children, lived openly as mistress of John of Gaunt for many years, although his second wife did not die until 1394. All of their children were born before their marriage. John of Gaunt astonished the world and scandalized the members of the royal family by marrying his concubine. His estrangement from the King did not last long. The children were legitimated by Pope Boniface IX, in September 1396, and, as a mark of favor, King Richard enacted the legitimation of the children in England, with the consent of parliament, in February 1397. John of Gaunt died in 1399, 59 years of age. Catherine died in Lincolnshire, 10 May 1403, and was buried in Lincoln Cathedral. Catherine's sister, Philippa, was the wife of the poet, Geoffrey Chaucer.

(To England Line 1-39)



Arms.—Sa. three walnut-leaves or, betw. two bendlets ar.
Crest.—On a mount vert a walnut-tree ppr. fructed or. Augmentation of honour, pendent on the sinisterr side, an escocheon of the arms of the Duke of Orleans, taken prisoner by Richard Waller, of Grombridge, at the battle of Agincourt, az. three fleurs-de-lis or.
Quartering.—Az. a chev. componée, or and sa. betw. three crosses molines of the second, for LANSDALL.



*Ann Waller
 dau. of
 which Manning?*

despite "Waller" being similar to "Walls" and the marriage of Ann, dau. John Waller to ? Manning, this seems not to be part of our pedigree.

Alice da:
and co-
heire of
Jo. Roo-
bertes
was
married to
Arthur
Clerke of
Bere-
church in
Essex.

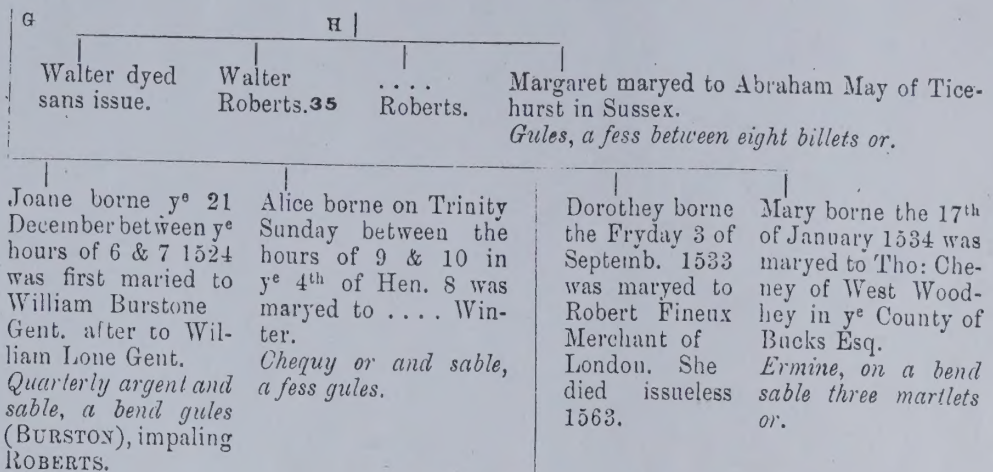
te
of Wal-
bertes
ce
as
th by

ement.

George
Rooberts
sonne of
Walter
Roobertes
and Alice
Naylor.

: of Tho:
t at lawe
aryed to
Sir Walt:
Richard
astly to

ill picks



Katherine da: of George Fane = Walter = Frances da: and coheire of John = William
of Badsell in Kent Esquire = Roberts = Maynard Esq. Sherif of London = Birde Esq
first wife of Walter Roobertes = of Glas- = was borne when Charles V. was = Customer
maryed 22 January 1555 died = tonbery = in England. The said Emperor = of London
11th January 1558 buried in = sonne = was her Godfather. = Second
Cranbroke. (See p. 175.) = and = *Argent, a chevron quarterly per = husband of
Azure, three sinister gauntlets, = heire of = chevron azure and gules between = Frances.
backs to the front, or. = Thomas. = three dexter hands, palms to the = front, gules.*

(See p. 175.) (See p. 175.)

John Mainarde of Stoke Damerall in
Devonshire.
Sable, three dexter hands argent.

Randall Del birds of Chorlton in Cheshire.
*Argent, a cross paty between four martlets
gules, a canton azure.*

John Maynarde of Stoke Damorel
Esquire married da: and
heire of Tho: Filley of Devon-
shire.⁷ MAYNARD, impaling
*Gules, a fess vair between six
crosses formy or.*

Ralph Birde of Chorleton married Mary da: and
heire of John Hanton and of his wife the da: &
coheire of Ric^d Massie.⁶ BIRD, impaling
*Quarterly of 4: 1 and 4, Vert, an eagle displayed
or, armed sable; 2 and 3, Quarterly gules and or,
in the first and fourth three fleurs-de-lis argent.*

John Maynarde of Stoke Damerell Esqr married the daughter
and heire of Hewis of Devonshire.⁸ MAYNARD, impaling
Argent, fretty gules, a canton ermine.

William Birde of
Chorlton Esquire
maryed Margery.

Henry Maynard of Stoke Esquire maryed the
daughter & heire of Robert Lyons of Devonshire.⁹
MAYNARD, impaling *Argent, a chevron sable between
three lions dormant gules, their tails between their legs.*

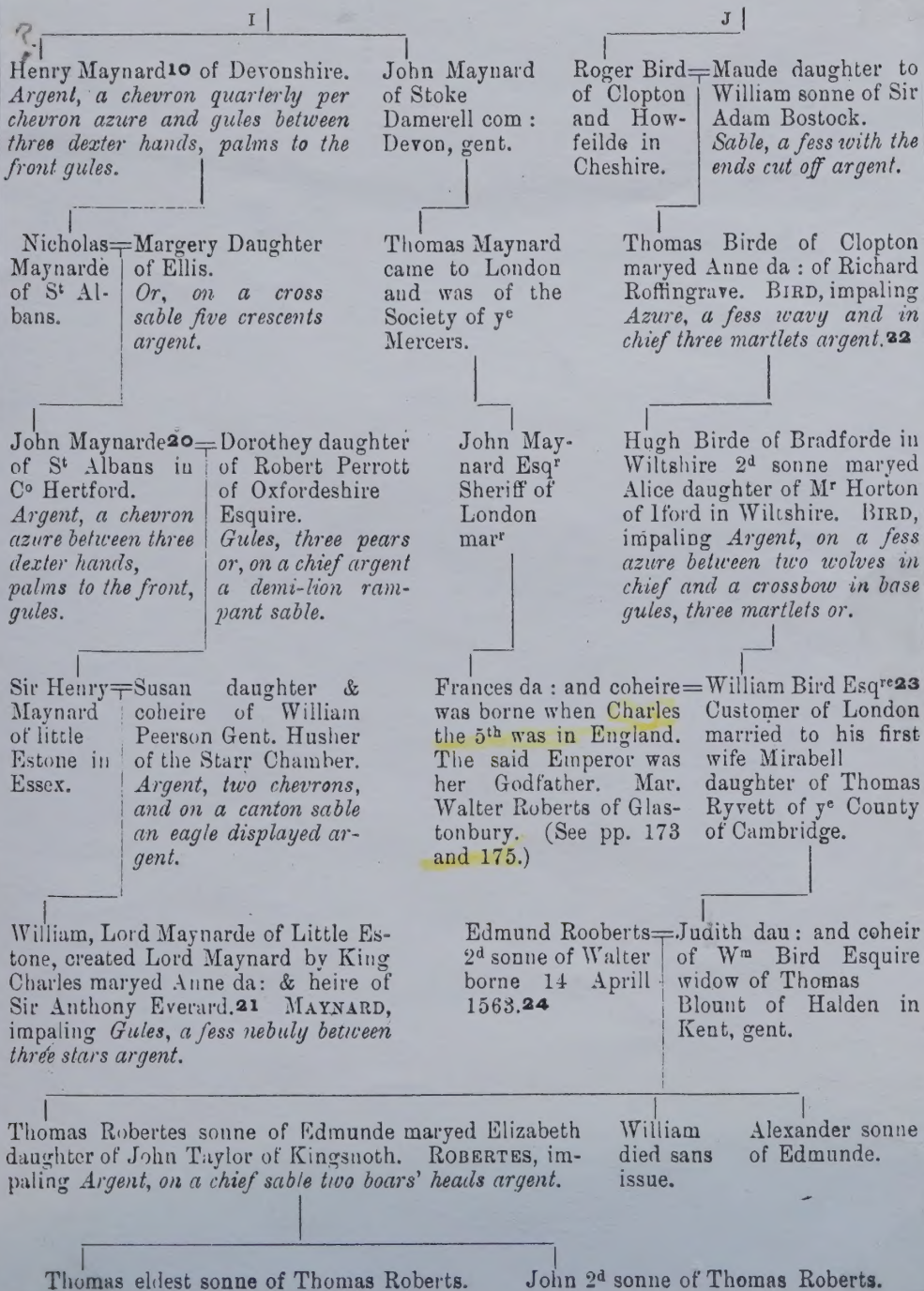
Thomas Bird maryed the Da: and
heire of John Rode of Cheshire.
BIRD, impaling *Argent, two tre-
foils in fess vert, a chief sable.*

I |

J |

could this be Symonds related?

in Shropshire?



George Fane of Badsell in Kent mar^d . . . da: of . . . Waller. *Azure, three sinister gauntlets, backs to the front, or, impaling Sable, three walnut leaves or between two bendlets argent.*

Sir Thomas Fane of Badsell in Kent married . . . Katherine = Walter Roberts of Glastonbery sonne and heire of Thomas (For 2nd wife see below.) 1st Wife. (See p. 173.)

Lozengy gules and azure, an orle of martlets or (HENLEY)³¹.

Sir Thomas Fane of Badsell K^t married Mary dau: and sole heire of Henry Nevill, Lord of Aburgaveny. FANE, impaling *Gules, on a cross argent a rose gules.*

Elizabeth da: of Walter Roberts and Katherine Fane borne on Tuesday . . . 1558 married to George³⁶ Culpeper Esq. and after to John (Barlow ?) of London gent. *Argent, a bend engrailed gules, impaling ROBERTS.*

Mary borne on the 4th September 1557 dyed in the yeare 1558 buried in the Choyre of Pembery.

Francis Earle of Westmorland Lord Le Despencer and Burghurst mar: Mary daughter and sole heire of Sir Anthony Mildmay. *Argent, three lions rampant azure, armed and langued gules (MILDMAY OF ESSEX).*

Mildmay E. of West- = Grace da: of Sir William Thornehurste of Kent, and of his Wife morland Lord Le da: & coh: to . . . Howard Viscount Dinton. Despencer and Burg- Quarterly: 1 and 4, *Ermine, on a chief gules two leopards' heads argent, for THORNHURST*; 2 and 3, *Gules, a bend between six crosslets fitchy argent, for HOWARD.*

Katherine Fane = Walter Roberts of Glastonbery = Frances Maynard = William Birde. (See above.) (See p. 173.) (See pp. 173 and 174.)

John 5 th sonne borne 10 th October April 13 th he dyed.	Eleanor borne 30 August 1560 first married to Ellis Longforde after to Robert Philpott. Three coats impaled: 1, <i>Paly or and gules, a bend argent, for LONGFORD</i> ; 2, ROBERTS; 3, <i>Sable, a bend ermine, for PHILPOTT.</i>	Grisilde borne 1566 died 9 April 1571 buried in Cranbroke.	Grisilde borne 14 June 1574 first married to Gervas Gibbon after to Sir Robert Poyntz
---	---	--	---

Anne borne 3^d September 1565 married to Joseph Birchett of Gowdhurst gent. *Sable, a fess dancetty between three eagles displayed or.*

Mary borne 1564 was married to Thomas Henley of Corsehorne in Cranbroke Esq^r

Edwarde 2^d (sic) sonne dyed sans issue.

Richarde 6th sonne borne 6th November 1575.

Our Mannings were originally de Maignon, in Normandy
 Thus they were Normans, not Germans! In Kent by 1210

Manning Family

Brave and Valiant, Meaning of Name—Early Grants of Land in
 England—Knighthood in the Holy Wars



MANNING is from an old Norse word—manningi—mean-
 ing a brave or valiant man, and one of the first forms
 of the name was Mannin; another orthography was
 Mannyng.

One historian gives a Saxon origin for the
 family, which he calls "ancient and noble." Accord-
 ing to him, Manning was the name of a town in Saxony, and from
 thence the family of Great Britain sprung. Others make Mannheim,
 Germany, the cradle of the family; and begin its history, with Ranulph,
 or Rudolph de Manning, Count Palatine, who having married Elgida,
 aunt to King Harold I., of England, had a grant of land in Kent. His
 name is also written de Mannheim—Rudolph of Mannheim.

His place in Kent was Downe Court, and there the Mannings
 have been a power ever since. Simon de Manning, called a grandson
 of Ranulph, was the first of the English barons to take up the cross,
 and go forth to the Holy Wars. He was a companion of Richard I.,
 Cœur de Lion, and knighted on the battlefield. We can easily see
 where the cross, of the coat-of-arms illustrated, comes from. At
 Downe Court these arms are seen graven upon tombstones of the
 Mannings. But the thirteenth century the family was well represented
 in over a score of countries, and several towns bear their names—
 Manningham, Yorkshire, and Mannington, Norfolk.

In the "new world" the Mannings have always been well repre-
 sented. In 1634, William of Kent, made a home at Cambridge,
 Massachusetts; about the same time we find John and Thomas at
 Ipswich; another John and George at Boston; in 1662, Nicholas at
 Salem, Massachusetts, and in 1676 Jeffrey Manning in New Jersey.
 The story of a forefather who "ran away" should come in right here,
 but details are lacking to make the story complete, and where he ran
 from or what he ran for must be left to the imagination.

William of Cambridge is regarded as the ancestor of the Man-

All these Mannings had the same crest
 as our photo!

MANNING FAMILY

nings of Vermont, Connecticut, and New York. His grandsons were
 Ohio pioneers.

A few years ago, and perhaps at the present, the house Samuel,
 grandson of William, built at Billerica was standing; for 175 years it
 was the home of the Mannings, and possibly it, or the other, is still
 owned by the family. The house, a frame one, was built of brick on the
 north side, like all houses of the time.

William, of Cambridge, and Susannah, his wife, had one son,
 William, born 1614, in England—perhaps their only child. He mar-
 ried Dorothy, and they had five children—two were sons. He was a
 surveyor, selectman, member of the grand jury, and one of the pillars
 of the church. When it was decided to call a new pastor, he was sent
 to England to ask Reverend Urian Oakes to accept the position, which
 he did, and later he became president of Harvard. To William Man-
 ning, Jr., and John Cooper was entrusted the task of collecting funds
 for the building of Harvard Hall.

In 1635, Thomas and John Manning, born in England, were liv-
 ing in Virginia. Stephen Mannering (not Manning, although this may
 have been the correct spelling), in 1677, confessed, with others: "We
 have bin notoriously actors in ye late horrid rebellion, set on foot by
 Nathaniel Bacon." We confess ourselves traitors and will never, no
 never do so again, is the sum and substance of the confession, al-
 not exactly thus worded.

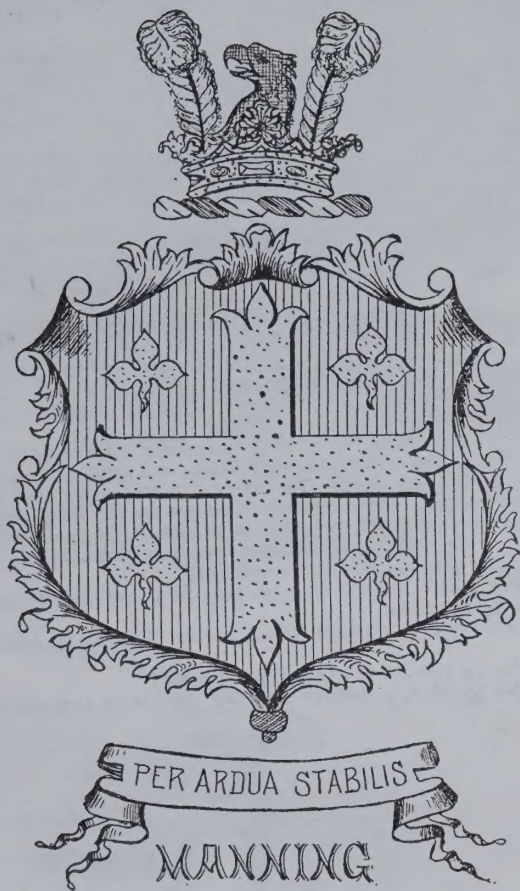
Mme. Washington, wife of Colonel John Washington, said to
 Manning, "If you had been advised by your wife you would not have
 come to this pass." "Madame," he replied, "if I were to doe, I could
 doe it again." We all admire his spirit, and, in passing, we ask, did
 any man ever follow his wife's advise; indeed, did he ever ask it?

In Spottsylvania County, Virginia, Andrew and James Manning
 were living about 1770, and in Princess Anne County, Henry K. Man-
 ning. The family was prominent in South Carolina, where there is a
 town, Manning, in Clarendon County, Thomas Manning was one of
 the Council of Safety, South Carolina, in 1775.

The picturesque figure of this story is Captain John Manning,
 whose career, on both land and water, was noteworthy. He was born
 in England. In 1667 we find him high sheriff of New York City, a
 judge, and a commander on the high seas, "fit for any employment in
 the militia," as the Earl of Clarendon wrote to the King. In 1673,

Samuel of American ancestry - 1775 182





MANNING FAMILY

the Dutch fleet arrived with the enterprising purpose of annexing Manhattan Island.

Demanding the surrender of Fort James, it was given up, and straightway Captain John returned to England to explain to the King how impossible it was to hold the fort with but a handful of men. The King, turning to the Duke of York, said, "Brother, the ground could not be maintained with so few men." Manning was thus exonerated, and returned to New York in the same ship with Governor Andros. At one time the Captain was fined twenty shillings, because it was said that he had traded with the Dutch, and his vessel was advertised to be "sould at Milford, on Tuesday next, at three o'clock in ye afternoon by an inch of a candell, he that offers most to have her."

The Captain spent his last years on what is now called Blackwell's Island, New York City. He owned the island, and it was called Manning, or Manningham. His stepdaughter, Mary, married, in 1676, Robert Blackwell, and the island has since gone by this name. It is not known whether the Captain had any children.

The family has its war record, and one to be proud of. Representatives are found in all colonial wars. Benjamin, Daniel, David, Thomas, and Samuel were among the number. Diah of Connecticut, was a drummer of Washington's Life Guards. Lieutenant Lawrence Manning, of the Continental army, was father of Richard Irvine Manning, Governor of South Carolina, where he was born, at Hickory Hill, Clarendon county. Governor Manning entertained Lafayette upon his second visit, and his wife is recorded as the wife, sister, niece, aunt, mother, and foster-mother of a governor. John Lawrence, son of Richard Irvine, was one of South Carolina's Governors, and his wife was the daughter of General Wade Hampton.

Captain Ephraim Manning of Connecticut was in the "Lexington Alarm." Hezekiah, a soldier, who died in 1802, has the epitaph:

"Praises on tombs are
Trifles vainly spent,
A man's good name
In his best monument."

As scholars the Mannings have few equals, and many have been bright and shining literary lights. The first "popular" history of

England was written by Robert Manning, in the time of Edward III., whom he calls "Edward of Ingland."

Owen Manning, of the early part of the eighteenth century, was called the historian of Surrey.

Thomas Manning, the explorer, visited Napoleon at St. Helena. He was a friend of Lamb, who mentions him in the "Essays of Elia." The family also has its statesmen—one of recent years having been a member of the Cabinet. The founder of Brown University, Rhode Island—or one—was James Manning, born 1738, in New Jersey.

Marriage connections include the Ainsworths, Averills, Lockharts, Dempseys, Frosts, Cheney's, Darbys, and Darlings. Favorite names are Alonzo, Anthony, Adella, and all the other names beginning with "A"; Dorcas, Nancy, Elona, Lucius, and Unity, and all the other names beginning with "U"; Mahala, and other like unpronounceable names.

✓ The coat-of-arms illustrated is blazoned: Gules, a cross-flory, between four trefoils, slipped, or.

Crest: An eagle's head, sable, between two ostrich feathers, argent, issuing from a ducal coronet, or.

Motto: Per ardua stabilis—"Steady in difficulties."

A cross often denotes Crusader ancestry; trefoils, peace, joy, and hope; an eagle, one occupied in high and weighty affairs; ostrich feathers, willing obedience.

This coat-armor was borne by William Manning, of Cambridge. ✓ Burke gives several arms for the Manning family, but all are similar for the Kent, Sussex, Chester, and Norfolk Mannings.

The Mannings of New York bear the same arms as the descendants of William—that is the one here illustrated.

The bookplate of a William Manning is still extant. It is in a publication entitled "The British Theatre," dated London, 1791. The bookplate is quarterly; azure and gules, a cross-flory, argent, between four trefoils, slipped, or.

Crest: An eagle's head, sable, between two ostrich feathers, argent.

It is suggested that William, owner of the bookplate, may at one time have lived in Virginia, and may have been the William Manning who, during the Revolution, was in correspondence with John Laurens, aide to Washington. Many of their letters have been preserved.



Pedigree of Petley.

FROM THE 'VISITATION OF KENT, 1663-8.'

Eliz., dau. of Randolph—Thomas Petley of Filson—Dorothy, dau. of Michael Bashford
Came of London, 2 wife. in com. Kent. of Westram, 1 wife (Berestford).

Michael Petley of—Mary, dau. of St Edward Gilbourne Ralph Petley, junr. Mar. Frances, dau.
Filson, g^t. of Shoram in com. Kent, Kt. of [David] Polhill of Otford.

Thomas Petley of Filson in—Elizabeth, dau. and coheir of James Perry of Ralph. Francis.
com. Kent, gent., 1663. Lenham in com. Kent, g^t.

Perry Petley, son and heir, of Fil-
stone, et. 13, an. 1663.
2. Thomas.
3. James.
1. Elizabeth.
2. Mary.
3. Anne.
4. Dorothy.
5. Katherine.

T. PETLEY.

This record for Petley's Chart

all too late

WILLS.

Randall Came, Citizen and Salter of London. Dated 5 Nov. 1589; proved 15th day of Nov. 1589 by Anne, the relict and executrix. Residue of my goods, chattels, and debts shall be divided into three equal parts according to the laudable custom of the Citie of London, one equal parte to Anne my wife, the second part thereof to William Came and Roger Came my sonnes and Elizabeth Came my da. equally amongst them, the other part of the said three parts I will for the satisfaction of all their legacies—the children of my da. Lewce Warner, wife of Robert Warner of London, Draper—the children of my bretheren Robert Came, Richard Came, William Came, John Came, and Nicholas Came—William Lodlam, son of my sister Alice Lodlam—the two youngest children of my deceased brother Robert Came—the daughters of my brother William Came—Thrustone Came—the children of my brother John Came—the children of my brother Nicholas Came—to my sister Alice Lodlam a poor woman's gowne, and to her husband a poor man's gowne—the children of my said sister Alice Lodlam—my son-in-law Robert Warner, my da. his wife—my brother Southe, my sister Southe—I will that William

Adm'on of the Will of Robert Petley granted 24 Dec. 1647 to Ellen Petley, relict of Robert Petley.

Ralph al's Radolphus Petly of Rethered in the parish of Seavenock, co. Kent, Esquire. Dated 12 Aug. 1650; adm'on granted 12 Oct. 1650 to David Polhill, Esquire, during minority of ex'or; Will proved in London 3 Feb. 1665-6 by Ralph Petley, the ex'or, letters of adm'on during his minority having expired. My body to be buried in the church of that parish where it shall please God to take me out of this mortal life—to Ralph Petley, my eldest son, and his heires my manors, lands, etc., in the counties of Kent and Surrey, or elsewhere within the Realme of England, and the reversion of the said farm in Shoreham, co. Kent—my two younger sonnes, Francis Petly and Michael Petly—my father-in-law, David Polhill, Esquire, and my brother-in-law, his sonne, John Polhill, gent.—to my kinsman M^r Thomas Pettly of Filston and Michael Petley his brother, Elisabeth Chamberlain my niece, Bennet Sheward my niece, and Jane Finche my niece, to each a sum of money to be bestowed by them in gold rings to be worne in remembrance of me—to my servant Bennet Petley for her life one farme with the lands thereof situate in Shoreham, co. Kent, which I purchased of George Cawston. Ralph Petly, my eldest son, to be sole ex'or.



Not an ex'or — later Petley

Ralph Petley

Late

(Seal and signature of Ralph Petley of Sevenoaks, co. Kent, Esq., to an Indenture made 10 Sept. 13 Charles I.—Petley Muniments.)

Adm'on of Will of Ellen Petley, late of Chichester, co. Sussex, granted 13 Oct. 1654 to Matthew Petley, the lawfull son of Ellen Petley.

Adm'on of the Will of Thomas Petley granted 29 July 1654 to Joane Petley, the relict of Thomas Petley, late of St. Peter's in Sandwich, co. Kent, deceased.

Anthony Petley of the parish of Chelsfield, co. Kent, yeoman. Dated 11 July 1655; pr. by Anne Petley, the relict and sole executrix, 21 June 1656. My bodie to be interred in the parish church of Chelsfield, near the corps of my deceased father—I bequeathe 40s. to the mendinge of the chancel of the parish of Chelsfield—my wife Anne—my nephew Robert Smith and his two sisters, my nieces Mary and Elisabeth Smith—my niece Sarah Account al's Gardiner—my brother Robert Petley and his heires—to my wife house and lands in Orpington, countie Kent, and my meadow in St. Mary's Cray, co. Kent. Witnessed by Mary Petley.

Christopher Petley, of the parish of James, Clerkenwell, co. of Midd., Esquire. Dated 20 May 1658; pr. 16 Feb. 1660 by Robert Tompkins, sole ex'or. My bodie to be interred at Beaconsfield, by my deare and lately deceased wife Cicelia—my son-in-law Robert Tompkins of Lincoln's Inn, co. Midd., the only son of my said deceased wife, my sole heire and ex'or—to my da.-in-law Anne Hide £50 to buy her a ring—Goods and chattels, tenements and hereditaments (not described).

Rob^t Petley of Chelsfield, yeoman. Dated 30 May 1668; pr. 11 Aug. 1668. To be bur^d at Chelsfield. Rob^t Smith sister's son—my cousin Mary, wife of Henry Pearce—my cousin Eliz. Smith—my cousin John, son of John Hibbin—Joane Hibbin, sister of said John—my kinsman Richard Thomas of Deptford—my said wife sole ex'trix.

John Petley, Citizen and Haberdasher of London. Dated 9 Oct. 1668; pr. 10 Nov. 1668 by Anne Morris, the mother and executrix. My bodie to be interred where the church late called St. Bridget's al's Bride's in Fleet St. London—"my children"—my loving mother Anne Morris to be sole executrix—my cousin Matthew Petley.

Benedicta Petley of Sandwich, sp^t. Dated 9 May 1674; pr. 20 May 1674. My cousin Rich^d Jewell, jun^r—my cousin Ann Charwood (?), dau. of my cousin Rich^d Jewell—my cousin Eliz. Allen—my cousin Mary Barton—6 children of my cousin Berresford: Geo., Tho^s, Mich^l and John, Jane Savage, and Eliz. Coxo—children of cousin Ann Green—cousin Ralph Petley—cousin Ann Farrent—cousin Elizab. Cobbet.

Peter Petley of Eltham, carpenter. Dated 9 May 1674; pr. 20 May 1674. My wife Anne—my dau. Elizth Elliott—my dau. Mary, wife of Wm. Bridges—my dau. Sarah, wife of Rich^d Lilley—my son Philip—residue to John Petley my son, sole ex'or.

John Petley of Eltham, co. Kent. Dated 11 Aug. 1677; pr. 5 June 1679 by Sara Bewley, executrix. To my deare, pretious, and truly beloved friend M^r Sarah Bewley of Eltham, widow, all my messuages, lands, etc., in the said parish of Eltham, and all my estate, real and personal, to her and her heires, and I make M^r Sarah Bewley executrix, desiring her to get the same executed according to this my direction, then I hope my soule will find rest (faire well my joy)—my sister Mary Bridges—my sister Sarah Lilley. (This Will was proved anew 18 Feb. 1683

Wife / Manning

Came my son shall have and hold that messuage and tenement wherein I now dwell in Friday Street in London, and all houses—my son Roger Came and his heirs—my cousin Warner King and his wife—I bequeathe to my sonne William Came my freedom of and in the Company of the discovery of new trades—Coppie hold lands and tenements in Hammersmith—my brother Symon Came—Anne my wife only ex'or—Henry Gye, John Yardley of London, Salters—my plate and household stuff, both of London and Hammersmith—lease of house and grounds at Hammersmith, co. Midd.

Stephen Petley of Dover. Will pr. 2 March 1594. My sister Dorothy—to my brother John Petley the advowson and presentation of the parsonage of Swanscombe, last in the gift of John White of Otham, with all my writings belonging to the same—appoints M^r Thomas Harflete of Ash and M^r George Tuck of Westcliff overseers. Witness, Geo. Fane.

Anne Beresford, late the wife of Randall Camme, late Citizen and Salter of London, deceased, and now the wife of Michael Beresford, Esquire. Dated 21 May 1597 (39th Elizabeth); proved 9 May 1598 by Roger Camme the son. To my da. Elisabeth nest of silver potts gilt, bracelets of gold, ring of gold set with turkis, latin andirons, fire shovel and tongue—Anne Beresford, my da. Elisabeth's da.—to my son William Camme money, goods, and chattels, nest of gilt bowls, diamond ring—to my son Roger Camme one basin and ewer of silver part gilt, and sealing ring of gold—my cousin Roger Clarke, my cousin his wife—my sister Southe—my brother Thomas Call—Anne Warner, Milicent Warner. My cousin Roger Clarke, my son Roger Camme, ex'ors. Overseer of this my will my loving husband Michael Beresford. Testator born at Odiham, co. Southampton.

Michael Beresford of Westerham, co. Kent, Esquire. Dated 28 Feb. 1607, and proved by George Beresford the son 30 April 1608. Dorothy my wife—Jane Lee my grandchild—my son Thomas Seyliard—my son Thomas Beresford—my son Henry Beresford—my son George Beresford and his heirs—my son Tristram Beresford—my son William Beresford and his heirs male—my two da.s Jane and Mary Beresford—my son Sir Thomas Hartlett, Knight—my brother M^r George Byng, Esquire—my son Richard Beresford—my manors, lands, tenements, etc.—the manor of Ellinden, co. Kent—my manor of Broxham—my house of Squirries—my house at London—my plate and dozen of spoons called Apostle spoons—my brass and pewter—the plate my wife brought with her—I will that the gift of the Parsonage of Otford stand good to my son Richard Beresford. My son George Beresford sole ex'or. Witnessed by Thomas Seyliarde, by Ny. Seyliarde, and Cor. Beresforde.

Dorothee Beresford of Westerham, co. Kent, widow, late wife of Michael Beresford of Westerham aforesaid, Esqre. Dated 9 Jan. 1611; proved by John Seyliarde 5 Nov. 1613. My son William Beresford—my son George Beresford—my da.s Jane and Mary Beresford—Dorothy Beresford, da. of Cornelius Beresford and of my da. Elisabeth, deceased—my son Thomas Seyliard—my son John Seyliard—my son James Seyliard—my son Will'm Seyliard—my son Francis Seyliard—my da. Anne Seyliard—my brother Byng—my sister Byng, wife of the said George Byng—my brother Sir James Crowmer, Knight—Certain lands not described, money, best snocks, best hood and ruffles, cheyne bordures, rings, buttons of gold, other jewels. My son John Seyliard sole ex'or. Witnessed by George Byng, Jane Byng, John Seyliard. Testator to be buried in parish church of Westerham, and a gravestone to be laid upon her body in the church.

Adm'on to the Will of John Petley of London, of the parish of St. Faith the Virgin, granted to the relict, Jane Petley, 6 Dec. 1624.

Thomas Petley of Violeston al's Filston, parish of Shoreham, co. Kent, gent. Dated 22 Oct. 1628 (4th Charles); pr. 7 Sept. 1635 by Radolphus Petley, the son and ex'or. Elisabeth, my well-beloved wife—my da. Bennet—my da. Finche's son—my son Thomas Petley, his son Thomas Petley—Bennet Petley, my kinswoman and servant—George Cawston, my kinsman and servant—to Rose Petley, my kinswoman, twentie nobles—my godson Thomas Elliot, my sister Elliot's son—my son Raph Petley sole ex'or—my manors, lands, etc., in the co.s of Kent and Surrey—my lands, etc., in the parishes of Beddington and Bandon or elsewhere within the co. of Surrey—to my son Raph Petley and to his heirs my manor called Boxham al's Broxham Parke, and all lands, etc., belonging to the said manor of Boxham al's Broxham, or being in the severall parishes of Brasted, Eatonbridge, Westerham, Heaver, and Chiddingston, and the lands that I purchased from Michael Beresford, Esquire, and my manor of Hewet al's Heaver and the lands thereto belonging in Chellisfield, Shoreham, and my farm called Gilmans Brimstons, purchased of Edward Petley—House and lands in Otford—the three children of my son Thomas Petley, Thomas, George, and Elisabeth—my late son Michael Petley, deceased—the eldest son of my son Michael—the youngest son of my son Michael. (Codicil dated 13 May 1631, but no other names mentioned in it.)

Rose Petley of Bradborne, in the parishes of Sevenoaks, co. Kent. Dated Sunday, 19 Oct. 1634; proved by Bennet Petley, the sister and executrix, 8 Jan. 1634 (old style). "My estate," not described—my brother Thomas Petley—my sister Anne Brookes: her three children, Richard Harling, Edward Harling, and Barbara Harling—the three daughters of my sister Mistress Dorothy Beresford, Elisabeth, Anne, and Rose—my sister Mildred Petley—my cousins Samuall Overly and Anne Overly—to Sir Raph Bosville, Knight, and his lady, and for my cousin M^r Thomas Petley of Filston and his wife, and for my sister Mistress Dorothy Beresford, to buy rings withall, for either of them the some of ten shillings—for a ring for M^r James Bosville five shillings. Witnessed by Ra. Bosville, Leukenor Bosville.

by Sarah Bewley, executrix, and the letters of adm'on granted to Elisabeth Elliot, wife of Thomas Elliot, sister of the deceased, revoked.)

Adm'on of the Will of John Petley granted 14 Nov. 1633 to Elisabeth Elliot, wife of Thomas Elliot, sister of John Petley of Eltham, co. Kent, deceased. Afterwards revoked.

Tho^s Petley of Shoreham, Esq., now of Staplehurst. Dated 26 May 1687; pr. 15 May 1690. To be buried by my grandfather Thomas Petley, in my chancel at Shoreham. My son James Petley—my eld^t dau. Eliz. Major—my 4th dau. Catherine Major—my 3^d dau. Ann Leigh—my 2^d dau. Mary, wife of Rich^d Walter, res^d leg^e and sole ex'trix.

Matthew Petley of London, gentleman. Dated 30 Nov. 1687 (3rd James II.); pr. with the Codicil 7 Jan. 1687-8 (English style) by Frances Petley, the relict. My wife Frances Petley my ex'or—my eldest da., Mattheia Petley, and her heires—my da. Elisabeth, wife of George Wheeler, gent.—my da. Katherine, wife of Randolph Ashenhurst, Esquire—my cousin Matthew Pyne, the three children of my cousin Matthew Pyne—my cousin Ambrose (a lady)—the three da.s of my cousin Mary Burdett—Lease of houses in Great Wood Street, parish of St. Peter Cheape, London—Houses in Great Wood Street, one lying at the corner of Goldsmith Street, the other called the King's Head—Lease of Castle Tavern, between Milk Street and Wood Street—my estate, real and personall, lands, monies, tenements, plate, hangings (lands not described)—my picture set in gold—several "broad pieces" of gold bequeathed—my wife full and sole ex'or. Codicil made 2 Dec. 1687. The first child of my da. Elisabeth Wheeler—Catherine Ashenhurst, my grandchild—to my cousin Rebecca Moore 20s. for a ring—Walter Harris of London, D^r of Physicke, my cousin—to the poore of Wandsworth, where some of my relations were born and are buried (a sum of money).

Adm'on granted to the Will of Roger Petley 23 Jan. 1688-9 to Maria Petley, the relict of Roger Petley of Rotherhithe, co. Surrey, who died on board the ship "Sedgemoor" at sea.

Francisca Petley of London, widow. Dated 23 March 1690 (3rd William and Mary); pr. 5 Oct. 1691 by Matthea Petely, the da. and sole ex'or. My body to be buried in the parish church of St. Olave Jewry, as neere my deceased husband as conveniently may be—my son-in-law M^r Wheeler, his wife, each of her children—my da. Ashenhurst, her child—my estate, ready monies, plate, rings. Witnessed by William Burdett, etc.

James Petley of Shoreham, Kent, Gent. Dated 20 Apr. 1694; pr. 25 Sept. 1694. To be bur^d near my relations at discretion of my wife Eliz. sole ex'trix—my dau. Eliz. Petley, and if she die to my son James Petley—my kinsmen Ralph Petley and Thomas Petley his son—my sister Eliz. Major, wife of Thomas Major.

George Gifford, parish of Fawkeham, co. Kent, Esquire. Dated 25 Jan. 1695; pr. by Thomas Gifford, the son, 3 Nov. 1704. My son Thomas Gifford—my grandchild Margaret Petley and her husband—my granddaughter Mary Gifford—my granddaughter Jane Gifford—my niece Mary Reyns, my brother's da., her husband, such children as her sister did have who shall be alive at my death, altho' I know not one of them—Rose Chandler, da. of my sister Harriett—my cousin John Wells—real and personal estate, lands—my beloved son Thomas Gifford full and sole ex'or—"To be buried by the grave of my beloved da. Margaret, in the chancel of the parish church of Eynsford, co. Kent."

Geo. Petley of Tunbridge, gent. Dated 13 Nov. 1702; pr. 14 June 1705. Eliz., now wife of Tho^s Day, and dau. of Gilbert Wood by Eliz. my sister—Eliz. Day, dau. of s^d Thomas Day, and her sister Sarah—my godda. Sarah Wood, dau. of Gilbert Wood—Eliz., wife of Tho^s Hutchinson, and dau. of Jane my sister, dec^d—my only brother John Petley—John, son of said Gilbert Wood by Eliz. my sister—George Wood—my brother John Petley—John Wood and Sarah Wood, my ex'ors.

Ralph Petley the elder of Riverhead, Esq. Dated 28 April 1704; pr. 8 Nov. 1704. To be bur^d at Sevenoaks near my dec^d wife—my 2 sons, John and Ralph—my dau. Jane Fowler—my son Thomas Petley's wife—and my kinsman Eliz. Leigh—residue to my eld. son Thomas Petley, ex'or.

Adm'on to the Will of Gifford Petley granted 24th of Sept. 1712 to Thomas Petley, the natural and lawful father of Gifford Petley, late of Seavenoaks, Kent.

James Petley of Westerham, inkeeper. Dated 22 Sept. 1714; pr. 17 Nov. 1720. W^m Baker of Bursted and his brother Giles Baker—Ann Baker of Newington Butts—residue to wife Alice, sole ex'trix.

Jane Petley of Riverhead, in parish of Sevenoaks, spinster. Dated 18 July 1743; pr. 23 Nov. 1743. Serv^{ts} of my brother Ralph—my cousin Charles Petley, son of my uncle, John Petley—Multon Perry, son of Rev. M^r Perry—residue to brother Ralph Petley, my ex'or.

Ralph Petley, late of Riverhead, Esq., bachelor. Adm'on granted 10 Oct. 1751 to Jane Nicholls, widow, the aunt, and one next of kin.

John Petley of Plumstead, victualler. Dated 3 Aug. 1754; pr. 23 Dec. 1754. I give all my relations one shilling to be divided among them—residue to my wife Margaret, my sole ex'trix.

Elizth Petley, late of St^t Mary in Sandwich, widow, dec^d. Adm'on granted 18 M^{ch} 1755 to John Petley the son.

Cha^s Petley. On 23 Aug. 1763 adm'on of goods of Cha^s Petley, late of Riverhead, Esq., granted to Eliz. Petley, widow, the relict.

SEVENOAKS.



Arms: Petley impaling Seyliard.

Here lye the Bodies of Ralph
Petley late of this Parish
Esq and of Jane his wife
Daughter of St John Seyliard
of Chiddingstone in this
County Barront who left

Thomas
Issue Between them John
Jane and Ralph she Dyed
the 6th of June 1698 Aged 49
he the 25th of July 1704 Aged
59.

Petley
1814

Charles Carter Petley	
Born	Died
30 th Jan ^y 1780	24 th Aug ^t 1830
Ellen, wife of the above	
Born	Died
8 Nov ^r 1781	3 rd Dec ^r 1839
Catherine Ellen, daughter of	
Charles Robert Carter Petley	
Born	Died
24 th Feb ^y 1850	5 th Aug ^t 1852.

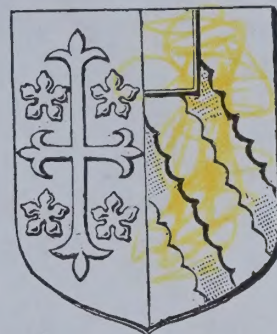
Arms: Petley. Motto: Toujours pret.

Petley.

MONUMENTAL INSCRIPTIONS.

Downe.

Hic jacent Thom's Petle Et Isabella
bror eius quor' aiab's p'piciet' de' Ame'



Hic Jacet Johan'es Man'ing et Agnes bror
eius filia et coheres Joh'is Petle de Trowem^{or}
qui quidem Johes obiit A^o Dⁿⁱ M^{CCCC}
xliij quor' aiab's p'piciet' Deus Amen.

HALSTEAD.

Brass.

Pray for the soules of Will'm Petley and Alys his wyf the
whiche Will'm decessed the viij day of October the yere of our
lord god m^{cccc}xxviij on whose soule Jh'u haue mercy amen.

ADDINGTON (MAIDSTONE).

Near this Place are Inter'd y^e Body's of
John Petley Esq^r and Jane his wife
He died June y^e 28th 1747 Aged 75
She died Sept^r y^e 6th 1766 Aged 74
Also the Body of Jane their daughter
who died Feb^y y^e 10th 1762 Aged 44
Erected October 1766.

custody of the said Edward during said nonage four pound by the year &c. and after the said Edward shall come to the age of twenty one years then these lands &c. shall remain to him and his heirs male of his body lawfully begotten; failing such then to my brother William &c. and next to my brother Richard Mannyng. Proved by Hugh Mannyng the executor. Consistory Court of London.

Book Wymesley (1548-1556) L. 168.

Dr. 866.
HUGHE MANNYNGE of Todington (sic) in Middlesex, gentleman, 28 July 1557, proved 9 May 1558. To be buried in the church of Todington. The high altar there. I will that mine executors shall distribute among the poor people at the day of my burial in bread the tiar (?) of one bushel of wheat and a kilderkin of double beer and as much cheese as shall be thought convenient to be eaten with the said bread. To son Richard my house and tenement with the land appertaining &c. being in the parish of Downe in Kent, with remainder to the next heir. To my son William my tenement sometime Peter Larkes with ten acres of land thereunto belonging, with two garden plots adjoining to the same tenement, with all that my garden plot adjoining to my house wherein I now dwell (and other lands). My daughter Julian Cherrye. Elizabeth Mannyng my brother's daughter. Emme Mannyng. My daughter Mary. My son Thomas at eighteen. The residue to son William and to daughter Mary the wife of Stephen Domynnycke als Domrycke whom I make my sole executors. And I make and ordain my brother George Mannyng and my brother Henry Mannyng to be my overseers, to whom I give for their pains twenty pence apiece. Commissary Court of London.

Book Darbyshire (1555-59) L. 36.

Shelly
JONE SHELLY of Westminster Middlesex, widow, 26 January 1558, proved 9 February 1558. To be buried in the parish church of St. Margaret in Westminster. Servants named. My daughters children Dorothy Mannyng, John Nedam, William Nedam and Jane Nedam to be executors and my goods to be equally divided unto them and to be delivered to every of them at the day of their marriage or to the men children at the age of twenty one years and to the women at the age of eighteen years. Mine overseers to be Edmund Tymewell and George Gate who shall have the governance and bringing up of my said executors till they and every of them come to their lawful age as is aforesaid.

The overseers were granted administration during the minorities of the executors named in the will. Welles, 40.

Dr. 3 Cope
JOHN MANNYNGE of Lambeth Surrey 5 March 1566, proved 9 May 1567. To be buried in the church of Lambeth. I give to my brother George Mannyng a ring of gold of the value of twenty shillings or better with a dead man's head graven in it and to his wife ten shillings. I give to my brother Harry ten shillings and my lute. To my brother Harry's wife ten shillings in gold or silver. Godson John Frauncis. My goddaughter — Barton. My god daughter — Disher. The poor of the parish of Downe. To Peter Mannyng my godson all my copyhold land in Lambeth, in a field called the "Ote Arsche" holden of the manor of Kenyngton. All my houses in Lambeth which be free hold and that I and my wife did purchase of Richard Ide of Camberwell, after the decease of Agnes my wife, shall be sold by my brother George and by my neighbor

John Cawstone &c. And after my debts paid, my funeral and legacies performed and paid I give to Elisabeth Mannyng my brother George's daughter three pounds. To Isabell Bowdre four pounds. To Agnes Capon my "suster" Popes daughter three pounds. To Richard Pope forty shillings. To Margaret Hogges ten shillings. The residue to wife Agnes whom I make sole executrix. And I desire my brother George and my neighbor Cawston to be my overseers.

Commission issued at above date to George Mannyng supervisor &c. to administer the goods according to the tenor of the will for the reason that Agnes the relict and executrix renounced. Stonarde, 16.

ERASMUS KIRKNER of East Greenwich Kent, armorer, 4 September 1566, with a Codicil dated 27 May 1567, proved 2 June 1567. My kinsman Leonard Geball. My godson Erasmus Waller. I give and bequeath unto Katherine Mannyng my daughter in gold twenty shillings to make a ring for a memory. The same to daughter Anne, to daughter Susan, and to my son in law William Mannyng. To every child of every of my daughters twenty shillings apiece. To Henry Mannyng my son in law three yards of crimson satin to make him a doublet. The residue to wife Agnes whom I make my sole executrix. And my overseers I make my sons in law Henry Mannyng, William Michell and William Mannyng. Lands and tenements in White Friars in the parish of St. Dunston's, London, to my wife for life and then to my three daughters Katherine Mannyng, Anne Michell and Susanne Mannyng. Lands and tenements at East Greenwich, Kent, in the same manner, with remainder to my kinsman Leonard Geball. Stonarde, 20.

WILLIAM MANNYNGE of Todington Middlesex, gentleman, 4 October 1573, proved 12 February 1573. The poor of the parish of Chevinge. The poor of Greuwich and of Todington. To my brother Richard a bed furnished except curtains which I myself did commonly use to lie in and also a cupboard standing in the kitchen. To Margaret Manninge a silver spoon to the value of ten shillings. To my daughter Anne twenty nobles of lawful money to be paid unto her at the lawful years of marriage or else at the age of twenty one years, which cometh first. My god daughter Anne Manning at fourteen and Katherin her sister. As concerning all my lands both freehold and copyhold I will it shall remain as I have already disposed it and as for all my evidences and writings I will they shall remain in the custody of my uncle Harry Manninge gentleman. The residue of my goods to my wife Susan whom I make my whole executrix. And I make to be my overseers Harry Manninge gent, my uncle and Richard Mannyng my brother.

Wit: Harry Manning gent., Griffin Lloyd parson of Chevening and William Toothe. Martyn, 6.

THOMAS DUNMOLL of Einsforde, Kent, yeoman, 22 November 1581, with a codicil written 3 January 1581, proved 27 January 1581. The Vicar of the parish church and poor householders of Einsforde and other poor people there. The poor of Shorham in said county. The household stuff in my now dwelling house in Einsford shall be divided into two parts whereof one part I give to Jane, now my wife, and the other moiety I give to Henry, John and Thomas Dunmoll my sons to be equally divided between them. To wife Jane lease of lands in Horton Kyrby and Sutton at Hone. Lease

1567
cousin line

Mary
(Mick)
don
Manning's
want to Arrive.
but keep
the house.

of the manor of Southcourt, lately taken by my good friend Francis Roger gent. of the demise and grant of my very good friend Mr. Sir George Harte kn^t. I give to my son Henry. Son Thomas at twenty one. Son Richard and Thomas Dunmoll, his son. Jane daughter of the said Richard. Every of the children of my daughter Fridiswide wife of Henry my son. Servants Thomas Younge and Isabel Plumleye. I make sons Henry and John my executors and my loving and faithful friends Francis Sandbage, Francis Roger, Richard Mannyng of St. Mary Craie and William Hinde gent. to be supervisors. Then follows disposition of real estate at Sutton at Home, Emsforde and Shoreham in Kent and Warlingham, Surrey. Lands, tenements &c. in Nockholt, Kent, which I sometimes purchased of William Tothe late of Nockholte deceased. Lands in Chelsfield, Kent, late purchased of Raphe Pettleye. In the codicil he speaks of lands in the parish of St. Mary Craye. Robert Mannyng was a witness. Tirwhite, 5.

EDWARD MANNYNG of Gray's Inn, Middlesex, gent., 15 March 1581, proved 19 March 1581. To be buried in the Cathedral church of St. Andrew in Rochester. I will that there be distributed amongst the poor people of Rochester, Stroode and St. Margaret's at the day of my burial four marks and to the poor of St. Mary Craye forty shillings. To Edward Mannyng my son my lease, interest and term of years of and in the Parsonage or Rectory of Iclesham, Sussex, with all the glebe lands, tythes &c. to the same belonging. To Edward my said son one hundred and ten pounds in the hands of William Carew. And my brother Richard Mannyng shall bestow and employ the said sum unto the use of my said son until he shall accomplish the age of one and twenty years. I will and bequeath unto Edward Godin (Goodwin) my cousin, now my servant, forty shillings. To Samuel Mannyng, my godson, forty shillings. To Percival Wilborne one of the prebends of Rochester forty shillings. I make my well beloved brother Richard Mannyng my sole and only executor, to whom I give for his pains twenty pounds. I make my well beloved friend Mr. Francis Rogers of Dartford gent. and my cousin Henry Mannyng of St. Mary Craye supervisors. Then follows the will disposing of real estate. Lands, tenements &c. in St. Mary Craye, Pooles Craye and St. Margaret's near unto the city of Rochester. The lands &c. in St. Mary Craye and Pooles Craye to wife Anne for term of her natural life and after her decease to remain to my son Edward Mannyng and his heirs forever. The lands and tenements in St. Margaret's to the said Anne so long as she shall live sole and unmarried. And if it happen the same Anne to marry then I will the same lands and tenements shall remain unto my said son Edward &c. And I will the tuition and governance of my said son Edward unto my brother Richard Mannyng with all his lands and goods until he shall accomplish the age of twenty one years.

Rochester Wills, Vol. XVI. (1578-84), L. 175.

Rochester Wills, Vol. xviii. (1591-1605), L. 549.

THOMAS MANNINGE of Fooks Craye in Kent yeoman, 17 January 1601, proved 24 February 1603. To be buried in the churchyard of St. Mary Craye near unto the place where my ancestors do lie in the same churchyard. The poor of Fooks Craye and of St. Mary Craye. To wife Agnice the house in Fooks Craye wherein I now dwell, with the land belonging (which lieth in Fooks Craye and Chiselhurst) during her natural life. To

used in
Manning Pedigree charts

JOHN MANNYNG of St. Mary Craye in the County of Kent, gent., 28 April 1583, proved 10 May 1583. To be buried in the churchyard of St. Mary Craye between the place where my father lieth buried and the chancel wall. Money bestowed upon deeds of charity. The ringers that ring at my burial. To my sister Ursula twenty marks to be paid at the day of her marriage. My brother Richard Manninge. The reparations of the church of St. Mary Craye. My cousin Richard Mannyng of St. Mary Craye and his wife. Every one of my brother's children. Frances Botley my mother's maid. My sister James Manninge's wife. I make my well beloved mother (Elizabeth), my brother Henry Manninge and my youngest brother Martyn (Manning) mine executors and my well beloved cousin Richard Manninge of Kevingtonne and my brother Hugh Mannyng overseers. Then follows will disposing of real estate. Lands, tenements &c. in St. Mary Craye, Orpingstone, Fooks Craye, Sutton at Home, Sennock and Chevenyng in Kent. My mother shall have and enjoy all my lands &c. during her natural life, doing and performing all things as I am charged by my father's will. After her decease the remainder of my lands in Fooks Craye to my brother Hugh, paying to my brother Martyn forty pounds. Lands in Sutton to brother Henry, paying to said Martyn forty pounds. Lands in Chevening and Sennock to brother William, paying to brother Richard ten pounds. Two houses in St. Mary Craye, after my said mother's decease, to brother Martyn, he paying to my brother Thomas and my brother James twenty pounds apiece.

Rowe, 26.

parish of Sisham after the decease of Mary Manninge my wife. To brother Matthew Manninge my house and six yard lands in Sisham &c. and to his heirs male &c. with remainder to Henry Manninge's son in Kent according to a deed made between us. The children of my sister Slemaker. My brother Matthew Maninge his children. My brother Simon Maninge his children. Sister Katherin her children. Sister Agnes Swallowe her children. Henry Maninge his children in Kent. John Maninge, my brother Simon's son. Lease of the farm and mill in Clifton to brother Matthew who shall leave the same to his son John, with remainder to John son of Simon. Philip Manninge daughter of Matthew at one and twenty. Brother in law David Jones. Wife Mary to be executrix and if she refuse then brother Matthew to be executor. My overseers to be Henry Manninge of Greenwich, John Welshman, Henry Maninge of Kent and Simon Busbie. Leicester, 9.

ROBERT MANNYNGE of Fooks Cray (Kent) 9 September 34th Eliz., proved 3 February 1592. I give my lands and tenements &c. at Crokenhill in the parish of Aynesford in the County of Kent to my daughters Elizabeth and Anne and to their heirs forever, their several parts to come to them as they accomplish the age of twenty one years. And my will is that my wife shall enjoy the said lands until their several ages, as is said. My said wife Lucy to be my full and whole executrix.

Rochester Wills, Vol. xviii. (1591-1605), fol. 214.

[The above name appeared as Mannering all through the registered copy of this will, but the original will on file in the Somerset House, gives it Mannyng, as appears by an official note on the margin of the Register.—H. F. W.]

AGNES KIRKINER of East Greenwich, Kent, widow, 3 September 1591, proved 25 January 1593. My body to be buried near the place where my husband Erasmus Kirkiner lieth buried in the parish church of Greenwich. My daughter Manning, cousin Susanna Hinde. William Michell my daughter's son. Erasmus Michell and Robert Michell. I make my daughter Katherine Manninge and her son Mr. Doctor Mannyng executors.

Proved by Katherine and Henry Mannyng, Doctors of Laws &c. through an attorney. Dixy, 2.

WILLIAM MANNYNGE of St. Mary Craye in the County of Kent, gent, 14 January 1596, proved 26 January 1596. To be buried in the churchyard of the parish church of Craye as near the place where the bodies of my father and brother John were buried as may be conveniently. The reparation of the church. The poor of the parish. To brother Harry Mannyng a messuage &c. in Kevinge town in the parish of St. Mary Craye which were late the lands of John Marshall, now in the tenure &c. of Thomas Standley or his assigns, upon condition that the said Harry pay yearly to my brother James Mannyng the sum of forty shillings during the natural life of the said James. Other considerations named. To my brother Hugh Mannyng a messuage &c. in Coodham, Kent (and other land there) upon condition that the said Hugh pay to my brother Thomas Mannyng twenty pounds within one year next after my decease and to my sister Ursula Botley ten pounds. To my brother Martin Mannyng a tenement commonly called Masters in St. Mary Craye now in the tenure &c. of Harry Mannyng my brother and another tenement now in the tenure

1583 THOMAS MANNINGE of St. Mary Craye in Kent, yeoman, 7 November 1582, proved 14 June 1583. To be buried in the church of St. Mary Craye. The poor of that parish and of Orpington, Chelsfield and Eynsford. Son George. Son Richard and his wife Anne. Anne wife of my son George. Lucy wife of my son Robert. My daughter Margaret Restone. Daughter Elizabeth Payne. Daughter Jane Dunmoule. Daughter Anne Lawnce. Daughter Cicilie Dunmoule. Son in law Edward Payne. Daughter Bridget. Daughter Johane. To son Richard my silver salt cellar to be taken after the decease of Elnor my wife to whom I give the use of the same during her life. Sundry servants named. A sermon to be preached to the glory of God and comfort and edification of good people gathered together at the day of my burial. Wife Elnor and son Richard to be executors and Mr. George Smythe, pastor of Chelsfield, Edward Payne and Thomas Lawnce to be overseers. Then follows disposition of real estate. Samson Manninge son of my son Robert and of Lucy his wife. Rowe, 33.

EDMOND MANNINGE of Clifton in the parish of Dadington in Oxon, gentleman, 8 May 1588, proved 21 November 1588. To be buried in the church of Dadington near my ancestors. I give to my cousin Henry Manninge his son of Kent, which I am godfather unto, a parcel of ground in the

* See will of John Mannyng of Lambeth, Surrey, *ante*, pp. 301-2.—H. F. W.

&c. of my brother James Manninge and another piece of ground called Clays in the occupation of the said Harry Mannyng. To my brother Harry certain lands in Cheevenminge and Sevenacke, in Kent, sometimes the lands of one William Toothe, the said Harry paying unto my brother Richard Mannyng twenty pounds and to my sister Ursela Botley ten pounds. Other considerations. I give and bequeath unto Jeremye Mannyng, my brother Harry Mannyng's son, four pounds. To my godson Peter Mannyng, the son of Peter Mannyng of Downe, forty shillings. To Anne Botley, my sister Ursela's daughter, three pounds. To Elizabeth Starte forty shillings. To John, my brother James Mannyng's son, forty shillings. To John Starte the younger twenty shillings. Thomasin Walter, my brother Harry's maid. Elizabeth, my brother James his daughter. I appoint my brother Martyn Mannyng sole executor and will and desire my well beloved cousins Mr. Doctor Mannyng and Mr. Peter Mannyng of Downe to be overseers, and to each of them for their pains my will is that my executors shall give a gold ring of ten shillings apiece. Cobham, 6.

1594
KATHERYNE MANNYNG of Downe in Kent 4 February 1594, proved 26 January 1596. To my daughter Dorothy Mannyng my house in East Lane in East Greenwich, Kent, now in the tenure of William Stanton, with remainder to my son Henry Mannyng, Doctor of Law, and to his heirs forever. To the Lady Margaret, my daughter, Viscountess of Byn-den forty shillings to make her a ring to wear for my sake. To my daughter Anne Ayelmer a piece of plate worth five pounds. To my daughter Mildred Fortune Whitefeilde a piece of plate price five pounds and five pounds more in recompence of a gown promised her by her father. To my son Erasmus Waller five pounds. To my goddaughter Katherine Ayelmer twenty shillings and to my goddaughter Katherine Whitefeild ten shillings. To my cousin Catheryn Underhill of Greenwich twenty shillings to make her a ring. To my servant Anne Lambard ten shillings. All the rest of my goods &c. I give and bequeath unto my son Henry Mannyng whom I appoint my sole and only executor. And I appoint and ordain my son in law Thomas Whitefeilde and Peter Mannyng, my cousin, overseers of this my last will and testament and for their pains my will is that they shall have one silver gilded spoon apiece.

Cobham, 6.

WILLIAM TOTHE of East Greenwich, Kent, yeoman, 31 March 1597, proved 3 May 1597. Mary Payne wife of John Payne. Wife Elizabeth. A messuage late burnt, a barn and buildings and garden and the old hall &c. in Chepsted (and other lands there) in the parish of Chevenyng said county. All these to the said Elizabeth my wife during her natural life and after her decease to my cousin Henry Mannyng of St. Mary Craye, gent. The rest of my goods to my wife whom I appoint executrix. Rochester Wills, Vol. xviii. (1591-1605), L. 549.

THOMAS MANNINGE of Foots Craye in Kent yeoman, 17 January 1601, proved 24 February 1603. To be buried in the churchyard of St. Mary Craye near unto the place where my ancestors do lie in the same churchyard. The poor of Foots Craye and of St. Mary Craye. To wife Agnice the house in Foots Craye wherein I now dwell, with the land belonging (which lieth in Foots Craye and Chiselhurst) during her natural life. To

my godson Thomas Manninge son of my brother Hugh and to my godson Thomas son of my brother Richard ten pounds each, to be paid unto them by him who shall have the next estate in remainder of the said messuages, lands &c. within two years and one quarter of a year next after the decease of me and of Agnice my wife. To Agnice Botlye, daughter of John Botlye late of St. Mary Craye deceased, five pounds (to be paid by the holder of the remainder &c.) if she shall marry according to the liking of me and of my brother Henry Manninge. My brother James Manninge. Agnice Sparrowe daughter of Robert Sparrowe. Matthew Manning son of my brother Henry to have all the messuages, lands &c. after the decease of me and Agnice my wife, with remainder to Jeremias Manninge son of my brother Henry, next to John Manninge son of my brother Henry and lastly to my brother Henry and his heirs forever. Wife Agnice and brother Henry to be executors.

Rochester Wills, Vol. xix. (1597-1614), fol. 342.

NICHOLAS VERCELINI dwelling in London (translated out of Italian) 25 May 1600, proved 21 March 1603. Son Nicholas (of the age of seven years). Brother Jasper, dwelling at Venice, and his children if he have any. The children of James my brother, of London. To Elizabeth the wife of Mannyng, my niece, fifty pounds and to Mary my other niece, the wife of Palmer, forty pounds. To Helen the mother of my son Nicholas forty pounds, to wit four and twenty pounds in ready money and the rest being the sum of sixteen pounds which her husband doth owe unto me by obligation for so much lent him in ready money. My moveables to be sold for making a mass thereof, part being divided among my nieces.

Harte, 31.

RICHARD MANNYNGE of Kevingtowne in the parish of St. Mary Cray, in the County of Kent, gentleman, 16 August 1604, proved 1 March 1604. My body to be buried in the church yard of St. Mary Cray near unto the place where my ancestors ly buried there. The reparations of the church there. The poor of St. Mary Cray, Paulius Cray, Orpington and Chellisfield. My godson Francis Mannyng son of my cousin Hugh Mannyng. My godson Nicholas Mannyng son of my cousin Peter Manninge. My two sisters Agnes Godding and Alice Barker. To my cousin Richard Manninge of Curepedes (?) Cross my ring of gold which my cousin William Death gave unto me. To Agnes his wife one angel of gold. Thomas Woode late of Waldens and Joane his wife. William Barker son of my sister Alice and Edward Barker his brother. Agnes Barker daughter of sister Alice. The son of Francis Pierce deceased. My nephew Edward Mannyng. Edward Goodwin. My brother Clerke. George and William Wyborne sons of William Wyborne. Wife Rachell and nephew Edward Mannyng to be executors and my good friends Mr. Richard Barton and my cousin Richard Manning the elder to be overseers. Then follows disposition of the real estate. To Rachell my wife my mansion house where in I dwell at Kevingtowne and land late Ellen Starte's deceased (and other estates, &c.) during her natural life and after her decease to remain to my nephew Edward Mannyng, next to Edward Goddin son of my sister Agnes Goddin, then to Samuel Goddin another of the sons of said sister Agnes and lastly to my right heirs forever. Other lands to nephew Edward Mannyng, with remainder to Anthony Hardinge one of the sons of my sister Jane, next to my godson Francis Mannyng son of my cousin Hugh Mannyng and his heirs forever. Other real estate settled. Hayes, 18.

1604

JACOB VERSELLIN of London Esq. and free denizen of England, 29 May 1604, sealed and subscribed 31 May 1604 with a Codicil bearing date 9 September 1606, proved 20 January 1606. My body to be buried in the Chapel of Downe in Kent and over my grave I will shall be laid a marble stone wherein I will shall be graven the pictures of myself and my loving wife, with our Arms and some other remembrance or epitaph, upon which I will shall be bestowed the sum of twenty pounds. Every of my tenants dwelling in Downe. The poor there. The poor in the parish of St. Olaves in Hart Street in London where at this present I am abiding. Christs Hospital. Other hospitals &c. The children of my late brother Jasper Versellin late whilst he lived dwelling in Venice in the parts beyond the seas. Elizabeth Guado, my wife's goddaughter now dwelling with me, at her marriage, if with the consent of my executrix. The residue of my personal estate to Elizabeth my dear and well beloved wife whom I nominate &c. my full and sole executrix. And I nominate &c. my trusty and well beloved friends James Deane, William Petula, Richard Langley and Thomas Fytch overseers. Then follows the disposition of landed property, manors, lordships, farms &c. To eldest son Francis forty pounds a year out of my manor or lordship of Downe and out of my capital messuage called Valence in Westraham and Brasted. A similar annuity to son Jacob. My capital messuage called Downe Court in Kent. Elizabeth their said mother. To wife Elizabeth all my manors, messuages, lands &c. in Kent except only those lands, tenements &c. which I purchased of my son in law Peter Mannyng, called Randall woods. Messuages &c. in Marte Lane als Mark Lane in the City of London which I late purchased of Richard Lee. A messuage in occupation of Hugh Hammersley, merchant, which I assured to or for the use of my daughter Mary Palmer at her marriage. Messuages &c. in Downe &c. which I purchased of John Smith of London Esq. and Symon Smith of London gen^t. Lands &c. purchased of Sir William Cornewallis knight to my daughter Elizabeth Mannyng, wife of the said Peter, with remainder to my godson Jacob Mannyng, their eldest son, then to Nicholas Mannyng, another son, then to Bartholomew, another, lastly to the right heirs of my said daughter Elizabeth. A lot of other real estate to them. Capital messuage &c. in Chevening, Kent, bought of Christopher Willoughby of Penshurst to Michael Palmer citizen and grocer of London and Mary his wife, my daughter. Their son John Palmer. To John Nowell son of my late son in law John Nowell Doctor of Physick, begotten upon the body of Katherine his late wife my daughter deceased, fifty pounds at age of twenty one. Elizabeth Nowell daughter of said John and Katherine.

Hudleston, 7.

Sentence to confirm the above will was promulgated 16 May 1607 following upon litigation between the relict and executrix of the one part and the four children of the other.

Hudleston, 40.

RICHARD MANNYNGE the elder of St. Mary Craye Kent, yeoman, 10 April 1605, with a codicil dated 24 July 1605, proved 27 November 1605. A sermon to be preached on the day of my burial. The poor of St. Mary Craye, of Orpington and of Crokenhill. Francis Tresse late of Hoo in said county, yeoman deceased, made me his sole executor. His children Francis, Anne and Ellen Tresse. My wife Agnes to be sole executrix and my brothers in law John Humfrey and Henry Dunmowle to be overseers. To wife Agnis my mansion house in St. Mary Craye &c. and other

lands there and in Orpington, for the term of her natural life. After her decease I give my said mansion house &c. to my nephew Tobye Mannyng youngest son of Robert Mannyng my late brother deceased, with remainder to Richard Mannyng second son of my brother George. Whoever shall first enjoy said lands after my wife's decease shall pay unto Sampson Mannyng, elder brother of said Tobye, five pounds and five pounds apiece to Jane and Agnes Mannyng daughters of my said brother Robert.

In the Codicil he refers to his wife as already stricken in years. Edward Mannyng and John Humfrey were witnesses to the will.

Hayes, 74.

1607

ELIZABETH VERSILYN of London widow, late the wife of Jacob Versilyn late of London Esq. deceased, her will made 5 September 1607 proved 27 October 1607. My body to be buried within the parish church of Downe in Kent near the place where the body of my said late husband Jacob Versilyn was interred. To son Francis Versilyn the three messuages &c. in Mark Lane in London which late were the inheritance of the aforesaid Jacob. To my son Jacob Versilyn one hundred marks. To my daughter Elizabeth Manning twenty pounds. To my daughter Mary Palmer twenty pounds. To my grandchild Elizabeth Nowell fifty pounds within a month next after she shall attain and accomplish her full age of twenty and one years or within a month next after the day of her marriage, which of them first happening. My kinsman James Mace. My goddaughter Elizabeth Guado whom I have brought up of a child. Mr. Simpson parson of St. Olaves in Hart Street, London, and Mr. Robinson in Mark Lane and Mr. Langley of Merchant taylors Hall. The poor of St. Olaves Hart Street where I dwell. The poor of Downe in Kent. Son Francis to be sole executor.

Hudleston, 77.

MARTYN MANNING of St. Mary Craye in Kent, gentleman, 28 June 1613, proved 24 November 1613. I give and bequeath my goods &c. unto Sir Thomas Norton knight of Norwood in the County of Kent to be disposed to the use of John Manning my son and Elizabeth my wife as to him shall seem good and convenient for their behoof. And I make the said Sir Thomas Norton my sole and whole executor. Capell, 110.

HENRY MANNYNGE, Doctor of Laws and Chancellor of the Diocese of Exeter, 14 June 1614, proved 29 October 1614. Freehold lands and tenements in Pagham, Sussex, and my lease for the term of twenty years of the parsonage of Pagham to be sold and the money thereof coming to be employed for and about the payment of my debts and legacies. To every of my younger sons one hundred pounds, to be paid them when they have

accomplished their age of twenty and four years or shall have fully served and ended their apprenticeships or other service. To Henry my eldest son, at age of twenty four or when he shall have fully served out his apprenticeship, the sum of two hundred pounds. To eldest daughter Katherine in two hundred pounds at twenty one or within six months after her day of marriage. To every of my younger daughters one hundred pounds (as above). The residue to all my said daughters. I do make and appoint executors of this my last will and testament my well beloved brothers Thomas Whitfield of Morteloke in the County of Surrey Esq., Emanuel Badde of Farchame in the County of South: Esq. and Edward Haydon of Bradley in Wilts gentleman. And I desire Mr. Doctor Edwardes Chancellor of the City of London, Mr. Doctor James and Mr. Doctor Burde to be overseers.

Henry Whitfield and William Jeffereie were witnesses. Lawe, 99.

JOHN MORSE of Aylesford, Kent, gen^t, 24 April 1615. Wife Joane. My four daughters Anne, Dorothy, Mary and Elizabeth Morse. Sister Mary Clumpard. Father in law Mr. Henry Barnewell. Brother in law Edward Mannyng gen^t, and brother Matthew Morse to be executors. Mr. George Barnewell. Probate not given in Register.

Rochester Wills, Vol. XIX. (1597-1614), Part I. fol. 537.

HENRY MANNINGE of St. Mary Craye in the County of Kent, gen^t, 18 July 1610, proved 8 November 1620. To be buried in the church of St. Mary Cray. My daughter Margaret Manninge at day of marriage or full age of twenty and one years. My two sons Edward and Jeremy Manninge. To son John Manning all my books and twenty pounds to be paid him at his full age of twenty one. To my brother Hughe Manninge of Foots Cray in Kent, gentleman, twenty shillings to make him a ring of gold to wear in remembrance of me. The residue of my goods to my son Matthew Manninge whom I make full and sole executor. And I make my very good friends the said Hughe Manninge and Henry Kightley (of Orpington, Kent, yeoman) overseers. To my said son Matthew my messuages &c. where I now dwell called Waldens, in St. Mary Craye and Orpington, and a messuage now in the tenure or occupation of Thomas Standley, in St. Mary Craye, and my messuage, tenement or inn called the Black Boy, now in the occupation of Sibbell Eaton, widow, situate in the said parish. Lands in Becksley, Kent, to Matthew and to daughter Margaret. To son Edward a messuage in Eltham, Kent (and other real estate there), and a messuage called Copthall in St. Mary Craye. To son Jeremy certain real estate in Becksley and Sutton at Home in Kent. To son John a messuage at Keveingetowne, in said parishes of St. Mary Cray and Orpington, and all those my messuages, lands, tenements and hereditaments in the County of Northampton which I have now in possession and which hereafter of right shall come to me by reversion after the decease of Matthew Manninge of ——— in the County of Northampton, gentleman, and of ——— now his son. To son Matthew two pieces of woodland in Chiselhurst, Kent. Soame, 97.

JOHN WERBE of East Wickham in the County of Kent, yeoman, 29 April 1624, proved 1 February 1625. To Dorothy my wife my house at Welling wherein now George Hampe dwelleth, during her natural life; and after the decease of the said Dorothy I give the same to my two young-

er sons Peter Webb and John Webb to be equally divided between them. I give unto Oliph Webb my eldest son five shillings. To my son Peter Webb five shillings. To my son John five shillings. To my daughter Anne Best five shillings. To my youngest daughter Jane wife of Henry Barnard five shillings. The residue to wife Dorothy whom I make sole executrix. And I do ordain and appoint for overseers of this my last will and testament my well beloved "brothren" in law Thomas Manning and William Plasse and I give to either of them for their pains five shillings apiece.

Wit: Tho: Manninge, William Plasse, George Hampe.
Rochester Wills, Vol. XXI. (1606-81), fol. 176.

GEORGE MANNING of Skeethi in the parish of Orpington in the County of Kent, yeoman, 30 July 1624, proved 23 December 1624. To be buried in the churchyard of St. Mary Cray near unto the place where my father Thomas Manning and grandfather Richard Mannyng lie buried. The poor of said parish and of Orpington, of Chelsfield and of Crockenhill in the parish of Eynsford. To son Thomas (among other bequests) the twenty pounds which is owing to me by Henry Dunmole the elder and Francis Dunmole of Eynsford. Youngest son John Mannyng. Ellen Mannyng daughter of my son Richard. The residue to my second son Richard Mannyng. Touching my lands and tenements in Lullingstone or elsewhere in England I wholly give and bequeath (them) unto the aforesaid Ellen Mannyng, daughter of my said son Richard, with remainder to the right heirs of my said son Richard. The supervisors to be Francis Dunmole and Thomas Humphrey my kinsmen and I give to each of them for their pains to be taken six shillings eight pence apiece. Will somewhat altered 28 October 1624. Edward Mannyng and Henry Dunmole among the witnesses. Byrde, 109.

RACHEL FEERBY of Pawllins Cray in Kent, widow, 28 March 1625 proved 18 February 1625. To be buried in the chancel of the church of St. Mary Cray, in the said County, by my former husband Mr. Richard Manninge. The four children of my cousin Edward Manninge, viz^t. Richard, Thomas, Edward and Anne, at their several ages of one and twenty years. My cousin William Barker of Sundridge and William, his son. My cousin Thomas Godwyn of Saddlesworth and his sister Bridget Godwyn. Mr. John Turner of Staple Inn. My cousin Faith Lane. Certain copyhold lands and tenements in Hamsted, Middlesex, being my own inheritance. My nephew William Clarke and his eldest son Richard. The term of seven years,—which was the time and space of my abode and education in Hamsted in my younger years. My nephew Francis Clarke and his eldest son Thomas. My well beloved cousin Edward Manninge of Kevington the elder in St. Mary Craye gentleman to be executor. Hele, 33.

ANNE BARNEWELL of St. Mary Cray, Kent, widow, 11 December 1627, proved 26 June 1628. My daughter Joane Biggs wife of Jeremie Biggs of Colchester gen^t. Her eight children, that is to say the four which she hath by the said Jeremie Biggs her now husband and the four which she had by her former husband John Morse gen^t. Anne Biggs one of her children. Mary Morse another and Elizabeth Morse another. The four children of my son Edward Manning of St. Mary Cray gen^t. My nephew William Downes of Maidstone. My kinswomen Elizabeth Little and Rachel

Apr 16 24
Whe Dorothy
(Money?)

16-lan
Tos k
Wm Plasse

Little. Loving friend Edward Staple and his five children. Susan Wyborne wife of George Wyborne of St. Mary Cray. My god daughter Mary Legg the daughter of Robert Legg of the Hithe near Colchester. Barrington, 62.

HENRY MANNING citizen and tallow chandler of London, 31 August 1632, proved 8 September 1632. To my daughter Elizabeth Manning my walnut tree bedstead with the crimson curtains and valence and canopy all of silk Turkey grogran and fringed &c. My wife's sister Elizabeth Beven. Money owing unto me by William Bayley of Ludlow in Salop. My cousin Edward Manning. I do freely give and forgive unto Thomas Manning of London grocer the sum of twenty shillings which he now oweth unto me. My godson Henry Manning.

Item I give unto my cousin Richard Waters the sum of ten shillings. The residue of all my goods &c. I give to my loving wife Ellianor Manning whom I make and ordain to be my full and whole executrix. I do suppose that upon account between my mother Elizabeth Manning widow and myself there will be due unto her about fifteen pounds and ten shillings, which will be due unto her from me at Michaelmass next.

Among the witnesses were Edward Manning, Richard Waters and John Baues (by mark). Audley, 91.

JOHN CANON of Chiselhurst in Kent, 22 August 1630, proved 14 September 1630. To Peregrine Brittain all my lands in Middlesex. Susan and Anne daughters of Richard Brittain. Jane wife of John Canan and her son John and her daughter Susan Canan. House in Greenwich. Richard Teton. To Richard Manning and his heirs forever Dalton's house and the books. To Martin Manning my sword. To Martin Manninge and Richard Manninge Waters' house and land after the death of my wife. Other bequests to these Mannings. Thomas Streete and his wife. Twitnam where I was born. My will is that my wife shall enjoy my house and land at North Cray during her life, and after her death I give it unto Peregrine Britayne and his heirs forever, they paying unto the parish of Chiselhurst ten shillings per annum forever. The poor of Chiselhurst and of Foot Cray. The wife of Martin Manninge. Wife Susanna to be sole executrix, and if she die I appoint Martin Manninge and Richard Manninge joynt executors. Proved by the widow. Scroope, 80.

SUSAN CANNON of Footscray in Chiselhurst, Kent, widow, 19 February 1635, proved 19 August 1637. To be buried in the church here near late husband John Cannon. I will and bequeath to my son Richard Manninge that house which I bought of late from Mrs. Holt, with remainder to my son Martin Manninge during his life and after his decease to his son Richard. My daughter Jane Cannon. My son in law John Cannon. Daughter Jane Cannon's children. My god daughter Susan Manninge at one and twenty. Richard Manninge the younger at one and twenty. Nicholas Manninge his brother, at same age. My daughter in law Barbara Manninge. My sister Joane Wakrel. Richard Brittain. Elizabeth Streete and her husband. My two sons Richard and Martin Manninge to be full executors. Goare, 118.

JEREMY MANNING the elder of St. Mary Cray in the County of Kent, yeoman, 23 May 1651, proved 25 June 1651. The poor of the parish of St. Mary Cray wherein I now dwell. My daughter Ann Petly the wife of

Anthony Petly of Chelsfield yeoman. My wife Cicely Manning. Anne Brooke, Joane Brooke and Mary Littlegroome the three daughters of my daughter Margaret Littlegroome wife of John Littlegroome of Bromley yeoman. Henry, James, Sara and Joane Gardiner four children of my daughter Isabel Gardiner wife of Henry Gardiner of Kingsdowne yeoman. Anne and Sara Manning the two daughters of my son Jeremy Manning of St. Mary Cray yeoman. My grandson Jeremy Manning. Susanna Manning mother of my said grandson. Gray, 124.

EDWARD MANNING of Kevington in the parish of St. Mary Cray, Kent, Esq., 14 April 1687, proved 22 October 1689. To be buried in the chancel there as near to my loving wife as conveniently may be. Eldest son Edward and his wife Ann Mannyng. My daughter Elizabeth Austen and her husband Edward Austen. My own daughter Ann Mannyng. Youngest son Thomas Mannyng to be executor. Ent, 143.

[Cowdham, Downe, Orpington, St. Marys Cray, Pauls Cray and Foots Cray, parishes in which these Mannings chiefly had their homes, are all in the Hundred of Ruxley in the County of Kent. Among the places which I have named the earliest home to which this family can be traced was Cowdham, in which parish we are told (in Hasted's History of Kent) Richard de Cherholt had anciently some property, in the hamlet of Bertrey, or Bettred, as it was afterwards called, and held the reeveship of the manor of Bertrey under Geoffrey de Say who discharged him from this office in the 15th year of K. Edward II., anno 1321 &c. He died without issue male, and his daughter and heir carried the estate which he held in it, in marriage, to William de Manning, who died in the 17th year of K. Edward III., anno 1342. From him it descended to Hugh Manning, who settled at St. Mary Cray, and left two sons (says Hasted) of whom John, the elder, was of Downe and Richard, the younger, of Kevington in St. Mary Cray, where his posterity remained till within a few years. The pedigree which I found in the British Museum (in Harl. MS. 1548, fo. 29) gives this Hugh Manning a third son Robert. Hasted gives the following note about William de Manning, above.

"He was the son of *Stephen de Manning*; of whom there is mention in old deeds of the time of K. Edward I., who was descended from *Simon de Manning*, to whom *John Silvester* of *Westerham* demised land by deed in the 14th year of K. Richard I. and who (as is recorded in an old pedigree relating to this family) was engaged in the holy war against the *Saracens* under that King.

"They are said to be descended of an antient and noble family which took its name from *Manning*, a town in Saxony, from whence they came into *England* before the conquest, and some of them are said to have settled in *Friesland*. They bore for their arms—*Gules, a cross potence, or flory, between 4 cinquefoils or*. Guillim, p. 138." (Hasted's Hist. of Kent, Vol. I., p. 124.)

In his account of St. Mary Cray, Hasted (Vol. I., p. 141) describes Kevington as a manor and seat in that parish, "now (he says) vulgarly called Kevington." This estate was for some generations the residence of the Mannings. Here also the reader may find some account of this family. He speaks of John Manning as settled in the parish of Cowdham in the reign of K. Henry IV., "his son, of the same name, was also of that parish and died anno 14 K. Henry VI. leaving by Juliana his wife, daughter and heir of Richard Brockhill relict of William Wallys, one son, Hugh Manning, who was of St. Mary Cray and married the daughter of Sir William Brandon, knt. kinswoman to Charles, Duke of Suffolk, by whom he had two sons, John, who settled at Downe, from whom descended the Mannings of Downe, Halsted and Westerham—and Richard, who continued at St. Mary Cray, and had three sons." He then continues his account of this younger branch of the family who remained at Kevington down to Richard Manning Esq., who resided at Kevington, of which he died possessed, April 24, 1753, without issue, bequeathing it by his last will to his Nephew Denzil Onslow, Esq., son of Denzil Onslow, Esq., of Drungwick, Sussex, by Mary, his sister. This Denzil Onslow, Esq., the son, resided at Kevington and

The Genealogist

10. CP 2:543 (in Appendix B).
11. Durand, *supra* note 7, pp. 29, 297.
12. CP 2:544 (in Appendix B).
- ✓ 13. Napier, *supra* note 2; Sir John Bernard Burke, *A Genealogical History of the Dormant, Abeyant, Forfeited and Extinct Peerages of the British Empire* (London, 1883, repr. Baltimore, 1962) s.v. Suffolk; CP 12(1):443-48.
14. By C. L. Kingsford. DNB 16:50-56.
15. Napier shows that this William was in fact son of the 2nd Duke.
16. Anselme de Sainte-Marie (Pierre de Guibours), *Histoire généalogique et chronologique de la maison royale de France...* (3d ed., 9 vols., Paris, 1726-33, repr. Paris, New York, 1967), 5:734.
17. CP 12(1):450.
18. CP 12(1), Appendix I, p. 22, n. (c).
19. Samuel Tymms, ed., *Bury St. Edmund's Wills & Inventories* (Camden Society, 49, London, 1850), pp. 87-88, 91.
20. Napier, *supra* note 2, p. 183.
21. CP 12(1), Appendix I, pp. 22-23.
22. *Id.*, pp. 24-25.
23. CP 3:630 (in Appendix C).
24. CP 1:30-33 (Abergavenny), 2:72-73 (Bedford), 3:260-61 (Clarence), 7:479-80 (Latymer), 11:397-98 n. (1) (George, Archbishop of York).
25. CP 12(1):443-48.
26. "The Merchant's Tale", line 20.

[Editor's note: we wish to acknowledge the kind permission of C. H. Humphery-Smith to publish this slightly altered version of an article which first appeared in *Family History*.]

Facsimile copy of
 inscription of de Clareville
 No 308-9 of Norman
 People or make a new
 copy - it gives a brief
 outline of the history of
 the de Clareville family
 of Medford

Indeed, in 1505-6 Lord Richard of Suffolk wrote to his elder brother, Lincoln's survivor Edmund Earl of Suffolk (formerly 3rd Duke, and Lord Richard styles him "Your Grace" in the letter), signing himself "your loving Brother, Richard Suffolk."²⁰ After Earl Edmund had been beheaded, Lord William of Suffolk was committed to the Tower for life, dying there in 1539,²¹ while Lord Richard of Suffolk, now styling himself duke and called *White Rose* as nearest Yorkist claimant to the throne still at large, was slain on the side of France at Pavia in 1524/5.²² These facts are perhaps relevant in demonstrating the contemporary significance of the name of the family as Suffolk, and not as Pole, from the point of view of subsequent Durfort chroniclers, and as illustrating the use of the surname Suffolk by the ducal family itself. The only other English family known to have used the surname "Suffolk" at all near this period was a non-armigerous Warwickshire family of yeomen and butchers in 1589, hardly likely to have supplied a wife to a Gascon lord who was a Knight of the Garter during the Wars of the Roses.

A minor, yet perhaps relevant, pointer is that the Duc de Lorge tells me that the name "Georges", borne by the third son of Gailhard de Durfort and Anne of Suffolk, was very rare in 15th century France (an exception that leaps to mind is Georges de la Tremouille, who lived much earlier and was politically on the opposite side). There is evidence that at that period the name "George" was equally rare in England despite her patron saint.²³ However, any historian will at once recall a marked exception in the immediate family of Cicely Nevill, Duchess of York and mother of Kings Edward IV and Richard III and of the Duchess of Suffolk. This included: her own brother George Nevill, Lord Latymer, of age in 1431; her nephews George Nevill, Archbishop of York, born about 1443, and George Nevill, 4th Lord Bergavenny, born about 1440; also her grandnephews George Nevill, Duke of Bedford, born about 1457, and George Nevill, 5th Lord Bergavenny, born about 1469. Above all, they included her own son George Plantagenet, Duke of Clarence, born in 1449 (and fated for that death in a butt of Malmsey wine in 1477), brother of the Duchess of Suffolk.²⁴ In view of the great rarity of the name in both France and England, it may therefore not seem too unreasonable to suggest that the Duchess of Suffolk's brother George, Duke of Clarence, K.G., was the godfather of Anne of Suffolk's son Georges de Durfort -- the more especially as there was then only one family bearing the surname of "Suffolk" among the whole nobility and gentry of England.

That Lady Anne of Suffolk's French marriage should have passed unnoticed by modern English genealogists may be partly explained by her husband's degradation from the Garter by the Yorkists when he returned to his French allegiance in 1476, followed soon after in 1485 by the overthrow of the Yorkists themselves.

However, the matter is of more than usual genealogical importance. For there are otherwise no known descendants of Alice, wife of William de la Pole, 4th Earl and first Duke of Suffolk, K.G., P.C., also Earl of Pembroke and Comte de Dreux, Lord Chamberlain and Lord High Admiral of England.²⁵ He was born 16 October 1396, succeeded his brother the 3rd Earl who had been slain at Agincourt in 1415 (and whose body was then "parboiled through the night till the flesh came away and the bones were then dried for removal with the Army to England"), led the party for peace with France, and then was seized in the Channel by political enemies on his way to temporary exile in May 1450 and his head hacked off clumsily on the gunwale of an open boat with half a dozen strokes by a rusty sword.

And Alice, the duchess of the first Duke of Suffolk, the widowed Countess of Salisbury whom he had married by a license of 11 November 1430, was the only child of Thomas Chaucer, M.P., Speaker of the House of Commons, son and heir of Geoffrey Chaucer the poet.

As Chaucer himself wrote: "For Wedlok is so esy and so clene".²⁶

NOTES

1. *The Complete Peerage* [CP] (new ed., 13 vols. in 14, London, 1910-59), 7:110 n. (b); see Wm. Addams Reitwiesner, "Margaret de la Pole and Her Parentage", *The Genealogist* 3:171-74 (1982).
2. A. S. Harvey, *The De la Pole Family of Kingston upon Hull* (York, 1957); Henry A. Napier, *Historical Notices of the Parishes of Swyncombe and Ewelme...* (Oxford, 1858), *passim*; CP 12(1):434-54.
3. CP 9:94-97, 11:399-402.
4. CP 6:252-53 (Hambleton), 13:293 (Birkenhead).
5. CP 12(1):446-47 n. (k), citing *Hist. MSS. Comm.*, 3rd Rep., pp. 279-80.
6. Suffolk yielded himself up in surrender to the Franco-Scottish forces of Joan of Arc at Jargeau on 12 June 1429.
7. Yves Durand, *La maison de Durfort à l'époque moderne* (Fontenoy-le-Comte, 1975), pp. 28-30.
8. The second was No. 493 in the list of the Order: Louis de Durfort (called de Duras), Marquis de Blanquefort and Earl of Feversham, British Ambassador to France -- nominated 30 July and installed 25 August 1685, vice No. 476 who was Henry Bennet, Earl of Arlington, the Arlington of "The Cabal".
9. Durand, *supra* note 7, p. 297. More recently the will of Gailhard, the marriage contract of his son and a few other documents were published by Nicole de Peña, *Documents sur la maison de Durfort (xi-xv^e siècle)* (2 vols., Bordeaux, 1977); she says (p. xxxix) that the marriage of Gailhard to the daughter of the Duke of Suffolk is "attesté par la tradition". It is not attested by any of the documents published by her.

Buch" have also produced Chaucer's still thriving offspring. The way of it is this.

Professor Yves Durand has given us a recent account⁷ of the career of Gailhard de Durfort, Seigneur de Duras, Blanquefort & Villandraut, one of the two members of this great Gascon family to have been Knights of the Garter.⁸ Later Durand gives a shorter summary of his career as part of the Durfort genealogy appended.⁹

Gailhard de Durfort, Seigneur de Duras, came of an old seigneurial family which had risen to prominence in Aquitaine through a maternal relationship to Pope Clement V (Avignon, 1305-14). Gailhard lived in London during his youth. Torn between his particular allegiance to the Duke of Aquitaine (King Henry VI of England, who claimed also to be King of France) and his more general allegiance to King Charles VII of France, he negotiated in 1451 the surrender of Bordeaux to the French, who failed, however, to keep their part of the bargain; whereupon he renounced in 1452 the homage he had done to Charles VII and joined in the pro-English revolt of the province of Guyenne. After the crushing defeat of the English cause at Castillon in 1453 his lands were forfeited and he fled to England. There at first "le proscrit fit fort mal".

Puis commence la guerre des Deux-Roses; Gaillard de Durfort choisit le parti d'York, celui qui finit par triompher. Edouard IV le fait chevalier de la Jarretière et gouverneur de Calais. Ses revenus s'augmentent de rentes dans le duché de Lancastre. Il épouse une Anglaise, Anne, fille du duc de Suffolk.... [There follows an account of his conduct of important military and diplomatic missions to Brittany and Burgundy.] Survient alors la paix de Picquigny en 1457, et Louis XI octroie son pardon en juin 1476 aux exilés de 1453. Gaillard de Durfort recouvre alors Duras, Blanquefort et Villandraut.... Il mourut en 1481, après avoir demandé dans un testament rédigé à Duras un an auparavant, d'être enterré dans le tombeau de sa famille, chez les Frères Mineurs de Bordeaux.⁷

In a list of the successive Knights of the Garter¹⁰ no. 193 is "Galhard de Durfort, Seigneur de Duras. Nom. before 22 Apr. 1463, degraded 4 Nov. 1476, d. 1487 [sic]." It may be noted that he was nominated by the victorious King Edward IV vice No. 110, namely, Erik, King of Denmark, Norway and Sweden, who had died in 1459, the year before the Yorkists' temporary eclipse. Moreover, it is interesting to note that Edward IV's six nominations in 1463 were, in the following order: No. 192 Ferdinando, King of Naples; No. 193 Galhard de Durfort, Seigneur de Duras; No. 194 John, Lord Scrope of Bolton; No. 195 Francesco Sforza, Duke of Milan; No. 196 James, Earl of Douglas (exiled from Scotland where his family had been next to the King in power); No. 197 Sir Robert Harcourt -- and that no further Garter was given until 1465, when the Sovereign's own brother Richard Plantagenet, Duke of Gloucester, afterwards Sovereign of the Garter himself as King Richard III, was first nominated.

The extraordinary honor thus paid to this exiled Gascon lord is most easily accounted for if his wife was indeed "Anne fille du duc de Suffolk", as Professor Durand tells us and traces her Durfort descendants down to the present-day Armand de Durfort, Duc de Lorge.¹¹ For in April 1463, when Durfort received the Garter from Edward IV, she could have been none other than sister of John de la Pole, second Duke of Suffolk (not then 21, as he was born 27 September 1442) who before October 1460 had married King Edward IV's own sister Elizabeth (daughter of Richard, third Duke of York, K.G., Protector of England, Regent of France and Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, slain in battle December 1460). Young Suffolk himself had to wait for the Garter until he was thirty.¹²

There is no mention of Anne, Dame de Duras as such in any of the ordinary English works on the Suffolk family.¹³ But the article on the first Duke of Suffolk in the DNB tells us of his children by his only wife Alice:¹⁴

Her son John succeeded his father as second Duke of Suffolk. She is credited with another son, William,¹⁵ and a daughter Anna.

If Professor Durand's French sources are correct, as the very grand circumstances in which the Seigneur de Duras received the Garter suggest, we have in this lady Anna de la Pole the prolific Anne, Dame de Duras.

Sir Anthony Wagner, then Garter Principal King of Arms, in a letter to the present writer about this Durfort-Suffolk marriage, writes:

whereas I have found no reference to it in any English record so far, I have found it in Père Anselme....¹⁶ where it is stated that the wife of Galhard de Durfort IV, who died in 1487 [sic] was "Anne de Suffolk, fille du Duc de Suffolk en Angleterre". The authority for the statement is unfortunately not given, but Anselme is generally most reliable and as everything seems to fit I should be surprised if he were not basing himself on some good authority. One would have thought that when the English genealogists of the Seventeenth Century came to look at the pedigree of the Earl of Feversham, K.G., they would have spotted who this lady was, but in fact I find a pedigree of Feversham in Simon Segar's Manuscript Baronage here [the College of Arms] giving her simply as "Anne of the House of Suffolk in England".

In this context it may be worth observing that, at some time after the marriage of the second Duke of Suffolk to the sister of Kings Edward IV and Richard III, the family seems to have preferred the surname "of Suffolk" or simply "Suffolk" to that of "atte Poole" or "de la Pole". Whether this was only after the Suffolks' eldest son John, Earl of Lincoln, had been declared next heir to the Crown by his uncle Richard III in about May 1485¹⁷ is not clear. But for instance, two of their younger sons appear in an official list in 1500 as Lord William of Suffolk and Lord Richard of Suffolk.¹⁸ Nicholas Talbot's testament prove in 1501 makes bequests to "my Lord William of Suffolk".

Chaucer

*We are searching Chau cer's
SISTER, not his descendants*

Copyright © 1983
Association for the Promotion of Scholarship
In Genealogy, Ltd.

BOARD OF TRUSTEES

Robert Charles Anderson, F.A.S.G.
Winston De Ville, F.A.S.G.
Neil D. Thompson, F.A.S.G.

Belchertown, Massachusetts
New Orleans, Louisiana
New York, New York

Secretary

Henry B. Hoff, F.A.S.G.

New York, New York

Library of Congress No. CS 1.G393

ISSN 0197 - 1468

Published bi-annually by
Association for the Promotion of Scholarship in Genealogy, Ltd.
P.O. Box 1058
Rockefeller Center Station
New York, N.Y. 10185

Subscription information: \$25.00 per year (two issues and index); \$45.00 for two years.

The Association and Editor assume no responsibility for errors of fact or opinions expressed or presented by contributors but welcome correction of proven errors of fact.

To Subscribers: Please notify A.P.S.G. at least three months in advance, if possible, of changes in your mailing address.

Printed and Bound in the United States of America

THE DESCENDANTS OF CHAUCER

Sir Iain Moncreiffe of that Ilk, Bt., Albany Herald

Until recently, scholarly genealogists were convinced that the progeny of the world-famous poet Chaucer were extinct. Now, it would seem, we've found them a-plenty, alive and kicking in that part of France which long thought of itself as English (to the fury of us Francophile Scots), and with any luck further research will perhaps trace some of them -- besides the Durfort-Duras earl of Feversham -- back to England itself.

There have already been two-fold false hopes. Everybody remembers that the great Captal de Buch was a Founder Knight of the Garter. Most experienced genealogists will also remember the exciting prospect we once mistakenly viewed of a continuing Chaucerian descent through the marriage of a later Captal de Buch (also given the Garter when he was created Earl of Kendal in 1446), a prospect demolished when it was demonstrated that his wife Margaret de la Pole was a niece and not a daughter of that Duke of Suffolk who married the Chaucerian heiress.¹

(It is of course essential that scholars following my text don't muddle the de la Poles with the Poles, as is so easily done by the unwary with only a superficial knowledge of that period. The "atte Poole" or de la Pole mercantile family, that rose to be dukes of Suffolk and to which this article refers,² ended its role on the European stage when "White Rose", the general whom François I had recognized as "King Richard IV of England", was slain commanding a division at Pavia in 1525. This family had no connection whatsoever with that of Pole lord Montague, a completely different but equally Yorkist semi-royal family epitomized by Cardinal Reynold Pole, and whose name was pronounced "Polle" and not "Poole".³ For a genealogist to confuse the two families would be like attributing to W. H. Smith the descendants of F. E. Smith because both Hambleton and Birkenhead have "grass roots" coronets.⁴)

The second false clue was the ancestress of the Stonors of Stonor, now Lords Camoys. For it turned out that, although she was indeed the daughter of William de la Pole, then earl and future first Duke of Suffolk who was in 1430 to marry Alice Chaucer, the Stonor lady was begotten thus:⁵

The night before that he was yolden⁶ he laye in bede with a Nonne whom he toke oute of holy profession and defouled, whose name was Malyne de Cay, by whom he gate a daughter, now married to Stonard of Oxon-fordshire.

Curiously enough, if there's no flaw in the third line of enquiry now to be set out here, it would appear that the historically Anglophile family of Durfort who later inherited for a while that *chanson de geste* title of "Captal de

The Royal Descents of 500 Immigrants

12. Gilbert Pecche = Joan de Creye
13. Margery Pecche = Sir Nicholas de Criol
14. Sir Nicholas de Criol = Rohesia ----
15. Sir John de Criol = Lettice ----
16. Ida de Criol = Sir John Brockhull
17. William Brockhull = Margaret ----
18. Nicholas Brockhull = Katherine Wood
19. William Brockhull = Elizabeth Hever
20. John Brockhull = ----
21. Edward Brockhull = Mildred Ellis
22. Marion Brockhull = Thomas Harfleet
23. Henry Harfleet = Mary Slaughter
24. Martha Harfleet = John Halsnode
25. John Halsnode = Margaret Ladd
26. Margaret Halsnode of N.J. = John Denn(e).

Sources: *LDBR* 1, pp. 5-6, and Salem, N.J., Quaker Monthly Meeting records, which show that John and Margaret Denn(e) were in Salem by 1679 (Vital data for their children are recorded at St. Alphage, Canterbury and the Quaker records of Folk(e)stone, Kent. Their daughter Elizabeth, born 19 Mar. 1662/3, died 18 Oct. 1666; the wife of Richard Hancock of Salem, N.J., was probably their daughter Margaret, born 4 Dec. 1664); Arthur Adams, *Richard Hancock and The Founding of Bridgeton, New Jersey* (1936, reprinted from *Proceedings of the New Jersey Historical Society* 54[1936]:209-17); James Robinson Planché, *A Corner of Kent, or Some Account of the Parish of Ash-Next-Sandwich* (1864), pp. 339-40, 347 (Harfleet); *Berry's Kent*, p. 106 (Brockhull); *MGH*, 5th ser., 6(1926-28):255-56 and *Publications of the Bedfordshire Historical Record Society* 14(1931):chart opp. p. 133 esp. (Criol); *CP* (Pecche) and *AR* 7, line 148. Material on the immediate family of Mrs. Margaret Halsnode Denn(e) is being collected (for a possible future monograph) by Mary Ann Nicholson of Belmont, Mass. A detailed examination by Col. Charles M. Hansen of the Pecche to Halsnode descent, an article which includes John Brockhull, generation 20 above, will appear in a forthcoming issue of *TAG*.

The Royal Descents of 500 Immigrants

1. Cynfyn, Prince of Powys = Angharad II, Queen of Powys
2. Rhywallon, Prince of Powys, d. 1070 = ---
3. Sionet of Powys = Ednyfed ap Llywarch Gam
4. Rhys Sais ab Ednyfed = Efa ferch Gruffudd Hir
5. Elidir ap Rhys Sais = Nest ferch Lles
6. Sandde ab Elidir = ---
7. Hwfa ap Sandde = ---
8. Hwfa Gryg ap Hwfa = ---
9. Hwfa Fychan ap Hwfa Gryg = ---
10. Iorwerth ap Hwfa Fychan = ---
11. Madog Foel ap Iorwerth = ---
12. (possibly illegitimate) Rheinallt ap Madog Foel = --
13. Owain ap Rheinallt = ---
14. Robert ab Owain = ---
15. William Coetmor = ---
16. Ieuan Coetmor = ---
17. Lewys ab Ieuan = Anne Wilson
18. Andrew Lewis = Mary Herring
19. Thomas Lewis of Maine = Elizabeth Marshall of Maine, ARD, SETH.
20. Judith Lewis = James Gibbins
21. Hannah Gibbins = --- Hibbert
22. Mary Hibbert = Joseph Jewett
23. Nathan Jewett = Deborah Lord
24. David Jewett = Sarah Selden
25. Elizabeth Jewett = Anselm Comstock
26. Betsey Comstock = Daniel Butler
27. George Selden Butler = Elizabeth Ely Gridley
28. Amy Gridley Butler = George Manney Ayer
29. Adele Augusta Ayer = Levi Addison Gardner

